





Gc  
974.402  
Sa32pe  
v.1  
1626-1637  
1236190

GENEALOGY COLLECTION



GEN

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01115 3720





















*A.W. Elson & Co., Belmont, Mass.*

*Jo. Endecott*

THE  
HISTORY OF SALEM  
MASSACHUSETTS

By SIDNEY PERLEY

*Author of*

History of Boxford; Goodridge Memorial; Poets of Essex County;  
Historic Storms of New England; Dwellings of Box-  
ford; Indian Land Titles of Essex County;  
Hovey Book; Plumer Genealogy; etc.

---

VOLUME I

1626—1637

---

SALEM, MASS.  
SIDNEY PERLEY

1924





## PREFACE

---

1236190



ANYONE who makes an investigation of the history of Salem will come to the conclusion that no one person can write it. The history of Salem is so varied, so connected with almost everything in this country and much across the sea, so interesting and important historically, that when the work was once begun, the writer would be bewildered by the breadth and depth of the subjects and the mass of authority. The collection of the sources of information would occupy a score of years and to secure the material would take as long and the preparation of the data into form for printing with the frequent demand for new research would consume many years.

More than thirty years ago, the writer began systematic examination of the titles to land in original Salem, to discover the first grants and layouts of lands, and also the location of roads and lanes, of houses, tracts of field, pasture and woodland, and the area of land and water at the time of the first settlement. Local history is so largely connected with the places where incidents have occurred and people have lived that it is necessary to know the true locations.

The history of the men and women before they came here and the part they had in the development and life of the settlement are most important. Whenever available the portrait and autograph of each of the settlers and the genealogy of his descendants as far as Salem is concerned are given. These genealogies are contained in footnotes, a paragraph being devoted to each generation, and the names of the sons whose families are



given in the succeeding paragraph are indicated by being printed in italics.

This work is based entirely upon research and original sources, regard being had to modern writings only for references and clues to sources, except those which are the result of actual research in records. It is also exhaustive, including everything in records and original memoranda which should be preserved.

During all the years of this scientific research the Essex Institute, through its presidents and other officers and members, has assisted materially in the work; and Mr. William C. Endicott, who is now president, has generously donated the photogravure frontispiece, the portrait of Gov. John Endecott, taken directly from the original painting in his possession. The Institute has paid for the photographs from which a considerable number of the illustrations have been engraved, and also the cost of many of the engravings. The friends who have helped in various ways are so many that it would be a task to mention them all and it is unfair to select a part of them for commendation.

SIDNEY PERLEY.

Salem, Mass., March 6, 1924.

# CONTENTS

---

Chapter I.	NATURAL CHARACTERISTICS.	Page 1
II.	THE INDIANS.	24
III.	DISCOVERIES, EXPLORATIONS AND PATENTS.	51
IV.	THE OLD PLANTERS.	60
V.	THE COMING OF ENDECOTT.	89
VI.	IMMIGRATION OF 1629.	102
VII.	INSTITUTION OF GOVERNMENT.	143
VIII.	FOUNDING OF THE CHURCH.	151
IX.	MILITARY DEFENCE.	171
X.	SICKNESS AND DEATH.	177
XI.	SEAT OF GOVERNMENT REMOVED FROM SALEM.	185
XII.	LABOR, ETC.	199
XIII.	COMING OF ROGER WILLIAMS.	227
XIV.	THE RED CROSS INCIDENT.	259
XV.	BANISHMENT OF ROGER WILLIAMS.	264
XVI.	COMING OF HUGH PETER.	278
XVII.	ESTABLISHMENT OF THE TOWN.	309
XVIII.	LIFE IN THE COLONY.	320
XIX.	ESTABLISHMENT OF THE COURT.	334
XX.	FISHING AND SHIPBUILDING.	365
XXI.	THE FERRIES.	404
XXII.	THE PEQUOT WAR.	409
XXIII.	THE NOTORIOUS VENNER.	417
XXIV.	HERESY.	437
	APPENDIX :	
	Land Grants. A.	454
	Land Grants. B.	460
	INDEX.	467





## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

---

Portrait and Autograph of Gov. John Endecott.	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Relief map of original Salem.	Page 1
Gale's Point rocks, Manchester.	2
Town head, Manchester.	3
Castle rock, Marblehead Neck.	4
Naugus head, Marblehead.	5
Singing Beach, Manchester.	7
Devereaux Beach, Marblehead.	7
Wenham Lake.	8
Glacial groove, Mack Park.	9
Kettle hole, Marblehead.	10
Ship rock, Peabody.	10
Agassiz rock, Manchester.	11
Wigwam rock, Peabody.	12
The Butts, Peabody.	12
Remains of the Indian fort, Marblehead.	28
Throgmorton Cove, Marblehead.	31
Site of shell heap, Marblehead.	32
Stone implements, etc.	35
Stone bear.	37
Portrait of Edward Winslow.	64
Sheffield patent.	67
Autograph of Thomas Gardner.	68
Autograph of Roger Conant.	79
Danvers River.	81
North River.	81
View of North fields.	82
Autograph of John Balch.	83
Map of Old Planters settlement.	84
Autograph of Peter Palfrey.	84
Site of Old Planters settlement.	85
Capt. John Smith's map.	87
Autograph of William Allen.	87
Autograph of John Norman.	88
Autograph of Dea. Charles Gott.	94
Autograph of Capt. Richard Davenport.	94
Autograph of Capt. William Trask.	94
Autograph of Thomas Graves.	106
Autograph of John Brown.	107

Autograph of Samuel Brown.	107
Autograph of William Dixey.	107
Chart of Beverly Harbor.	113
Title-page of New-Englands Plantation.	115
Autograph of William Dodge.	116
Autograph of Robert Moulton.	117
Autograph of Lawrence Leach.	118
Autograph of John Norton.	119
Massachusetts Bay Colony charter (first sheet).	145
Colonial seal.	149
Autograph of Dea. John Horne (Orne).	152
Sempringham Church, England.	155
Tattershall, England.	156
Autograph of Samuel Skelton.	157
Pike.	173
Autograph of John Holgrave.	174
Sword of Gov. John Endecott.	175
Deed of parsonage.	179
Charter Street burying ground.	181
Plan of Charter Street burying ground.	183
Cromwell gravestone.	183
Portrait of Gov. John Winthrop.	188
Portrait of Sir Richard Saltonstall.	192
Stocks.	204
Autograph of John Legg.	205
Autograph of Francis Johnson.	206
Autograph of Samuel Archer.	213
Autograph of William Ager.	217
Autograph of Jeffry Massey.	217
Autograph of John Devereaux.	218
Autograph of Rev. Roger Williams.	228
Autograph of Isaac Allerton.	232
Map of Cradock and Allerton lands, Marblehead.	234
Autograph of John Lyon.	235
Autograph of Moses Maverick.	235
Palisade fence.	239
Stone wall.	239
Half-high wall.	239
Pole fence.	240
Split-rail fence.	240
Board fence.	240
Part of a page from the Psalm Book.	244
Part of William Wood's map.	245
Autograph of John Marsh.	252
Plan of site of the meeting house.	257
Ensign.	260
Autograph of Thomas James.	270
Letter of Rev. Hugh Peter to Church in Dorchester.	271
Autograph of John Black.	278
Autograph of Elias Stileman.	278
Autograph of George Williams.	279

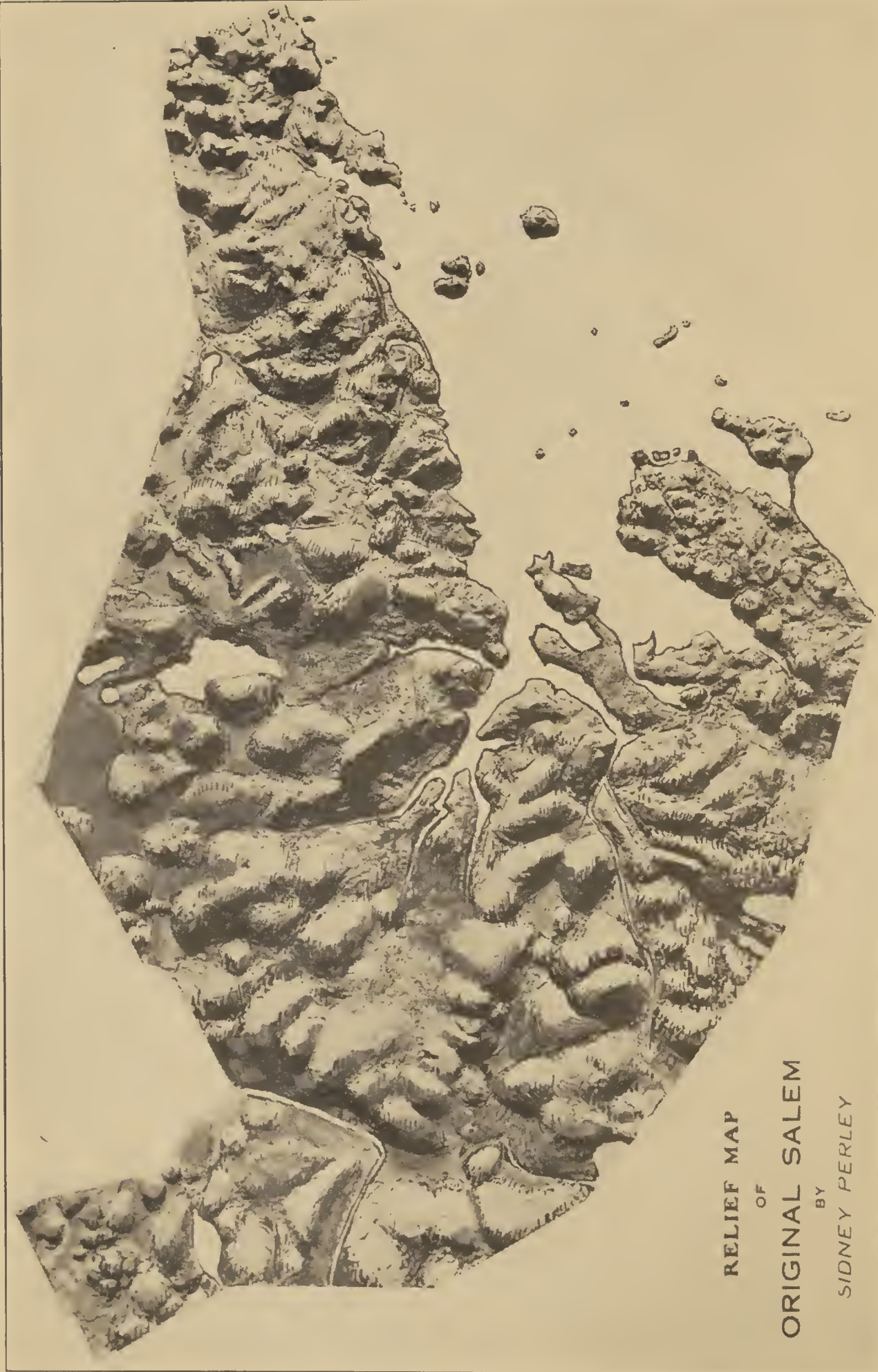


Autograph of Edward Giles.	280
Autograph of George Norton.	282
Autograph of Jacob Barney.	283
Autograph of Capt. Thomas Lothrop.	284
Autograph of Maj. William Hathorne.	285
Autograph of John Hardy.	287
Map of Endecott lands, Danvers.	289
Autograph of Townsend Bishop.	294
Autograph of Edmond Batter.	294
Rev. William Walton's spring, Marblehead.	297
Portrait and autograph of Rev. Hugh Peter.	299
Autograph of John Woodbury.	301
Plan of grants at Suntaug Lake, Peabody.	302
Autograph of Gervas Garford.	302
Autograph of John Blackleach.	303
Autograph of Robert Cotta.	303
Autograph of Philip Verrin.	303
Autograph of Thomas Scruggs.	304
Autograph of John Galley.	304
Autograph of Henry Herrick.	305
Autograph of William Lord.	306
Autograph of Nicholas Merritt.	307
Autograph of John Thorndike.	308
The ancient ways.	309
Map found in British Museum.	311
Ancient road in Highland Park.	312
Layout of the Town.	313
Layout of the North field.	315
Layout of the South field.	317
Autograph of Thomas Trusler.	321
Trask chest.	322
Putnam sideboard.	323
Osborn chest.	323
Massey cradle.	323
Candle stick.	324
Tin lantern.	324
Pewter porringer.	325
Flax brake.	327
Hour marks on window sill.	332
Governor Endecott's sun dial.	332
Mrs. Endecott's sampler.	332
Hourglass.	332
Plan of Humphrey and Peter grants, Marblehead.	335
Plan of the thousand acres granted to Old Planters, Beverly.	337
Plan of Cole and Read grants, Peabody.	340
Autograph of Richard Bishop.	340
Plan of Blackleach and Horne grants, Beverly.	341
Autograph of George Ropes.	342
Autograph of Richard Raymond.	355
Autograph of Thomas Goldthwaite.	356
Portrait of Gov. Henry Vane.	360

Autograph of John Barber.	365
Autograph of William Browne.	366
Autograph of John Alderman.	368
Autograph of Pasco Foote.	368
Autograph of Edmund Grover.	370
Autograph of Robert Leach.	370
Autograph of Robert Morgan.	370
Autograph of Francis Perry.	372
Autograph of William King.	373
Autograph of Thomas Rootes.	373
Autograph of Benjamin Parmiter.	374
Map of Salem Neck and Winter Island.	376
Autograph of Richard Waters.	382
Autograph of John Burton.	384
Autograph of Nathaniel Porter.	385
Autograph of Richard Walker.	388
Autograph of Michael Shaffin.	390
Autograph of Francis Skerry.	390
Autograph of Dr. George Emery.	390
Autograph of William Goose.	391
Autograph of Thomas Watson.	392
Autograph of John Bourne.	392
Autograph of John Symonds.	393
Autograph of John Pickworth.	402
Ferry landing at head of Bass River, Beverly.	405
Ferry landing at Butt point.	407
Autograph of John Abbe.	417
Autograph of Edward Burcham.	418
Autograph of John Pickering.	420
Plan of Hathorne grant, Danvers.	421
Autograph of Christopher Youngs.	423
Portrait and autograph of Thomas Venner.	425
Autograph of Thomas Chadwell.	426
Autograph of James Standish.	426
Autograph of John Fiske.	429
Autograph of John Browne.	430
Autograph of Henry Skerry.	433
Autograph of Thomas Spooner.	433
Autograph of William Vincent.	434
Autograph of Joseph Grafton.	435
Autograph of Job Swinerton.	438
Portrait and autograph of Col. Stephen Winthrop.	439
Autograph of John Gedney.	440
Autograph of John Herbert.	441
Autograph of Thomas Oliver.	443
Autograph of Thomas Paine.	444
Autograph of James Underwood.	444
Autograph of Erasmus James.	449
Autograph of Francis Lawes.	449
Autograph of William Charles.	449
Autograph of Anthony Buxton.	450







# HISTORY OF SALEM

---

## CHAPTER I.

### NATURAL CHARACTERISTICS.



WHEN Roger Conant and his companions left Cape Ann and built their little houses in what is now Salem they had no thought of limitation or boundaries of the territory of which they then took possession. So far as they knew, there was no claimant of the forest in any direction. Originally, it included the present cities of Salem, Beverly and Peabody, the towns of Wenham, Manchester, Danvers and Marblehead and parts of Middleton and Swampscott. Until nearly a decade later, when other settlements were made near them, the question of the boundaries of Salem did not arise. The line between the village of Salem and the hamlet of Lynn had to be legally determined, also between Salem and Ipswich and Salem and Gloucester. When this had been done, the location of Salem was known and fixed. Only a strip of land along Ipswich River, in the extreme southern part of Middleton, was originally a part of Salem. Except as above stated, Salem did not extend northerly of Ipswich River until 1661, when a certain private grant was added to it. The area of this tract of land was about eighty-six square miles or fifty-five thousand acres, its extreme length being about twenty-two miles and its extreme width about fifteen miles. The geographical location of the present city of Salem is north latitude  $42^{\circ} 33' 10''$  and west longitude  $70^{\circ} 53' 40''$ . In places the land rises gradually from the bay, where the green sward and the water meet; but numerous bold cliffs of varying height form a large portion of the shore — a representative part of the “rock-bound coast” of New England.

The bed-rock of Marblehead is principally hornblende diorite, with outcrops of quartz diorite on the outer shore. The slates and sandstones on the Neck are metamorphosed by veins and masses of hornblende granite and felsitic porphyries. Three interesting and attractive natural features are found on the Marblehead shore — the rocky bluffs at Clifton Heights, and





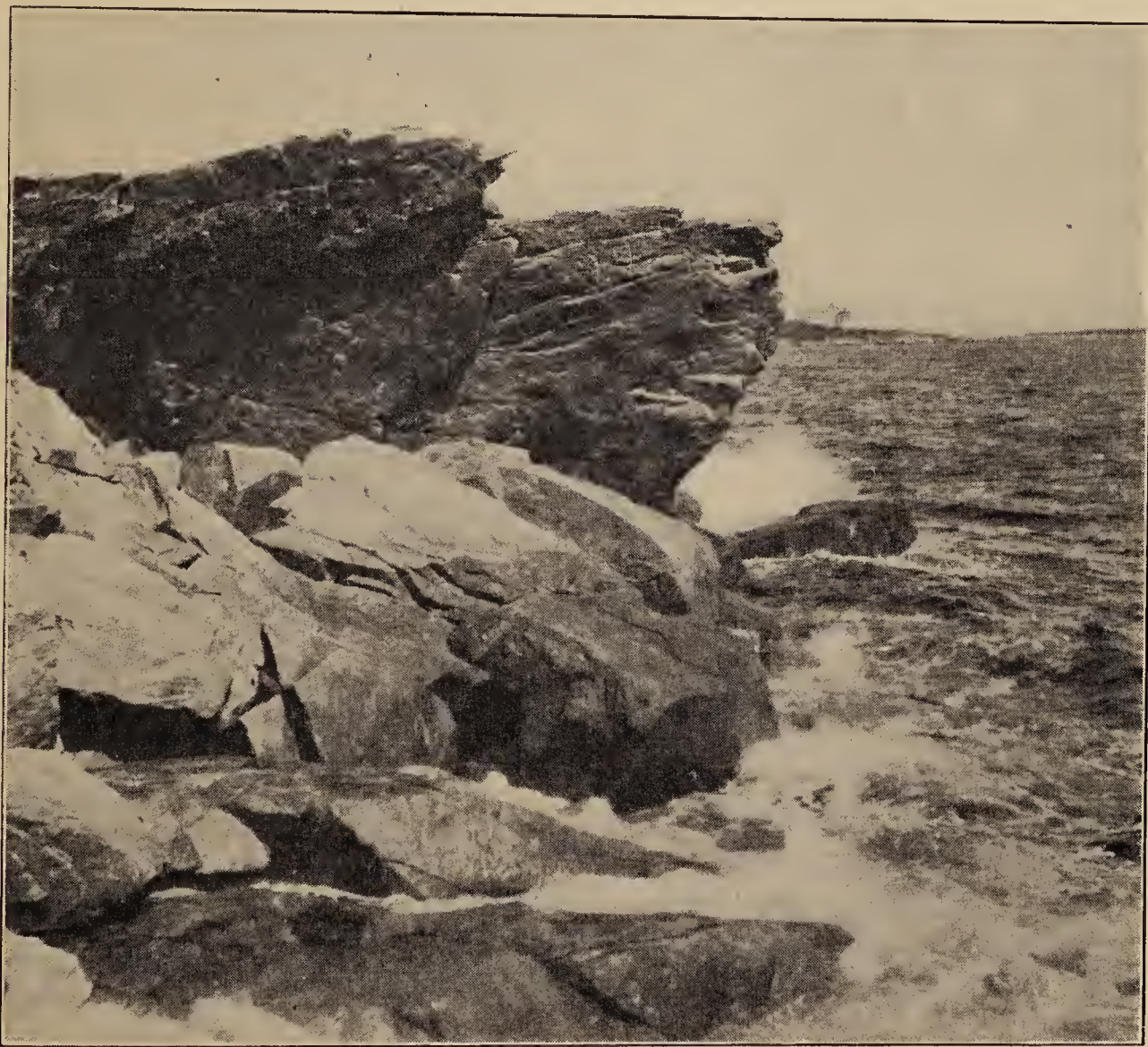
GALE'S POINT ROCKS, MANCHESTER.

Castle rock and the "churn" on the Neck. The latter is a fissure in the rocks about thirty feet deep, and a yard wide, into which the incoming tide rushes with a roar, sometimes throwing the spray to a height of fifty feet. Remains of the Cambrian rocks are to be seen at Naugus Head, in Marblehead, on Pickering's point, in Salem, and at the base of Goat Hill, in Beverly. Hornblende diorite is also the out-cropping bed-rock in Salem. Castle, Legg's, Gallows and Ledge hills, in Salem, and the bed-rock hills in Peabody and Danvers are composed of this diorite. Salem Neck and Winter Island, however, contain much syenite. The western end of Buxton's Hill, in Peabody, the ledges between and including Folly Hill, in Danvers, and Cherry Hill, in Beverly, east of Wenham Lake from North Beverly and Montserrat to the sea, and from Pride's Crossing to Beverly Farms are of hornblende granite. So are Great Egg rock and Graves Island, off Manchester. The latter was connected with the mainland a century ago, but is now an eighth of a mile away, with deep water between. The highest points where the syenite rocks occur are Briscoe, Poor-house and Bald hills, in Beverly, and Ram and House islands, in the harbor, which are composed of augite syenite.

There are thirteen hills within the original territory of Salem that rise more than two hundred feet above mean sea-level, eight



of them being in Peabody, four in Danvers and one in Middleton. In Peabody is Prospect Hill, which is more than two hundred feet high, and Orne's Hill<sup>1</sup> which is two hundred and sixty-five feet. The latter is one of the largest of the bed-rock hills, and great boulders lie scattered upon this immense ledge even to its summit. Northwest of the railroad station in South Peabody is a hill, two hundred and forty feet high, in the heart of the woods and about a mile from any highway. The ascent is so gradual that the incline is hardly noticeable. Its pointed top rose above the surrounding trees, and furnished an unobstructed view for several miles in every direction. The summit is now passing away before



TOWN HEAD, MANCHESTER.

the blasts of the quarrymen. Walden Hill, also in Peabody, two hundred and twenty feet in height, is the most southern of the great drumlins in the western portion of original Salem. Next

<sup>1</sup>Orne's Hill is the eastern end of Dog Pond rocks and is a coast survey station. It affords a broad and delightful prospect for fifty miles along the coast.





CASTLE ROCK, MARBLEHEAD NECK.

is Upton's Hill, also in Peabody, two hundred feet high; and beyond that, south of the paper mills, is Pine Hill, a large drumlin of similar height. On the line between Peabody and Danvers, near the bend in Ipswich River, is Bald Hill,<sup>1</sup> also a drumlin, rising two hundred feet. Easterly from this eminence, a series of elevations extend for nearly four miles. The highest part of this range is Mount Pleasant (Hog Hill) which rises two hundred feet above mean sea-level. This is an elevation of bed-rock diorite, having at its summit a ledge of hornblende granite, almost entirely exposed. Folly Hill,<sup>2</sup> in Danvers, is a drumlin two hundred and seven feet high. It is long, with steep sides, while at either end the ascent is gradual. From its top, Salem Harbor is presented picturesquely with its islands and shores, and the various rivers of Danvers and Salem are so plainly and fully seen that the view

<sup>1</sup>Bald Hill was so called as early as 1669.

<sup>2</sup>For many years this elevation was known as Long Hill, and in 1692 it bore the name of Leach's Hill, from the principal owner. About 1740, William Browne of Salem erected a great mansion house upon its summit. The people of the time regarded its location and construction as extravagant and foolish, and shortly characterized the incident and structure as "Browne's folly." Subsequently, the name was applied to the hill, in the abbreviated form of "Folly hill." In 1752, it was within the territory which was then set off from Salem and annexed to Beverly, but, in 1857, by a change in the town lines it became a part of Danvers. It has been a coast survey station since 1848.

furnishes a better idea of their courses and environment than can be obtained otherwise. Thomas' Hill, also in Danvers, is a drumlin two hundred and twenty feet in height, and north of it is Hathorne's Hill,<sup>1</sup> which measured two hundred and fifty-eight feet high until 1876, when it was cut down eighteen feet for the site of the Danvers State Hospital. The hill is a drumlin; its sides are abrupt; and from its summit, on clear days, Mount Monadnock, in New Hampshire, and several of the higher elevations in Massachusetts are plainly seen. Easterly from this hill is another drumlin, two hundred feet high, known as Putnam's Hill.<sup>2</sup> Wills Hill,<sup>3</sup> in Middleton, is also two hundred feet high.



NAUGUS HEAD, MARBLEHEAD.

The most northern point of Marblehead is a headland, ending in a round elevation. It occupies a prominent position on the southeasterly side of Salem Harbor, and has attracted attention from the very first settlement. It resembles the headland on the right of the river Wey, in Dorsetshire, England, as the stream enters the English Channel.<sup>4</sup> The English headland was in the

<sup>1</sup>This hill was early in the possession of Maj. William Hathorne, from whom its early name was derived. While it was owned by the Dodge family, the last private owner, it was known as Dodge's hill.

<sup>2</sup>A large portion of this hill has been in the possession of the Putnam family since 1647.

<sup>3</sup>This hill was so named because it was the site of the wigwam of old Will, the survivor of the Indians in that locality.

<sup>4</sup>The river Wey runs from above Dorchester, through the ancient parish of Radipole, which originally bounded on the Channel. In a deed given by



possession of the Darby or Derby family at the time of our settlement,<sup>1</sup> and it was occupied by a castle. As early as 1633, the hill in Marblehead was known as Darby fort, probably because of the resemblance of the two headlands.<sup>2</sup> It was so called as late as about 1700. In 1709, a new name appears in the records—"Nogg's head."<sup>3</sup> This is the English word "nog", which means "the angle of a stream."<sup>4</sup> The water of Salem Harbor along the whole length of the northwestern side of Marblehead was called Forest River in the days of the early settlement. Vessels sailing out from this section proceeded in a northeasterly direction until they reached this headland, when the course was changed at almost a right angle. This was indeed the angle of the stream. In its derivation and meaning this word is similar to the word knob, which means "a protuberance of any kind";<sup>5</sup> "a rounded protuberance";<sup>6</sup> or "a rounded protuberance at the end of anything," as of a rounded hill at the end of a stretch of land. It was called "Nogg's head" as late as 1826;<sup>7</sup> and this name later drifted into "Naugus head," by which it has been known for many years.

There are several areas of level upland which early received notice. The larger tracts are "The Plains," in Danvers, and Johnson's Plain, in Peabody.<sup>8</sup> The former has an area of about five hundred acres, while the latter is somewhat smaller. Trask's Plain, in Salem, and Stone's Plain, in Peabody, are smaller, but well-known by those names in the early times.

There is a small beach on Marblehead Neck, and longer stretches of sand are at Beverly and Manchester. The longest is West Beach, in Beverly, which is narrow and about a mile in length. At Manchester is a long and wide beach, in shape a

John Calley, of Marblehead, mariner, March 18, 1720-1 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 38, leaf 107), he states that the land conveyed is "in Ratterpol or most Commonly called y<sup>e</sup> Ferry in Marblehead." Probably many of the early settlers of Salem and Marblehead were well acquainted from the earliest days with the shores of the Wey, which was the way by water from the Puritan city of Dorchester, and noticed the similarity of the English and American headlands.

<sup>1</sup>None of the Darby or Derby families appeared in New England until 1676.

<sup>2</sup>New Englands Prospect, by William Wood, 1633.

<sup>3</sup>In a deposition of John Dixcy of Marblehead, May 4, 1709 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 21, leaf 57), he called this headland "a place known by y<sup>e</sup> name of Nogg's head."

<sup>4</sup>English Dialect Dictionary, by Joseph Wright, 1903.

<sup>5</sup>Royal Standard Dictionary, 1794.

<sup>6</sup>Thesaurus Dictionary, by Francis A. March.

<sup>7</sup>In a deed given by Thomas Haskell, conveying some land at this place, April 7, 1826 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 241, leaf 179), this hill is called "Nogges head."

<sup>8</sup>Johnson's Plain was so called because Francis Johnson received, in or before 1634, a grant of nine score acres of it from the town of Salem.





SINGING BEACH, MANCHESTER.

crescent, which has at either end craggy rocks, forming bold promontories. It is called the "singing beach" because of the peculiar musical, rasping sound produced when a person walks or shoves his feet upon the sand. This motion causes to be rubbed together the sharp projecting points of a hard mineral substance, which constitutes much of the sand. There are several small shingle beaches, but the only one of considerable extent is Devereaux Beach, in Marblehead, which is wide and about half a mile long.



DEVEREAUX BEACH, MARBLEHEAD.



Comparatively little salt marsh and fresh meadow are within the original limits of Salem, the largest area of low land being the Wenham swamp and great meadows, which together contain about two thousand acres.

The several rivers are tidal waters and virtually arms of the sea.<sup>1</sup> Ipswich River, at the northwestern part of the territory, however, is a small and slowly flowing stream. Into these various rivers flow brooks which have their origin in springs.

In 1634, William Wood wrote as follows of the water supply of this region: "For the Countrey it is as well watered as any land under the Sunne, every family, or every two families having a spring of sweet waters betwixt them, . . . besides these springs, there be divers spacious ponds in many places of the Countrey, out of which runne many sweet streams, which are constant in their course both winter and summer, whereat the Cattle



WENHAM LAKE.

quench their thirst."<sup>2</sup> The planters sought the springs in the early days, and built their houses as near to them as possible. The most noted of these sources of water supply is Cold spring,<sup>3</sup> in North Salem, and Jeggles' spring,<sup>4</sup> in South Salem.

<sup>1</sup>North River was so called very early, and Wooliston (Danvers) River in 1635. The Indians called the latter Orkhussunt River. They called Forest River Massabequash River; Waters River Soewamapenessett River; and Crane River Conambsquenoocant River. Bass River was so called as early as 1635. Porter's River was called by the Indians Pouomeneucant River; and by the English, as early as 1637, Frost-fish River.

<sup>2</sup>New Englands Prospect, by William Wood, 1634, chapter V.

<sup>3</sup>Cold spring was so called as early as 1793. It was known as Goodale's spring as early as 1658, because Robert Goodale owned it and lived in the field northeasterly of it at that time.

<sup>4</sup>Jeggles' spring is near the southerly end of Forest River Park, and it was known by that name very early, as the land in which it is situated was owned by William Jeggles, who died in 1659.





GLACIAL GROOVE AT MACK PARK.



Wenham Lake is the only large sheet of fresh water within the original bounds of Salem. It is forty feet above mean sea-level, and has an area of two hundred and fifty-five acres. Its greatest depth is fifty feet. It was called the great pond in 1635. Suntaug Lake, Pleasant Pond, Beaver Pond, Spring Pond, Brown's Pond, Coy Pond and Muddy Pond are smaller sheets of water. There was a pond in the rear of West Beach, in Beverly, about three-fourths of a mile in length, and known as Long Pond. It broke into the sea in 1696, and never filled again. A brook now runs through the former bed of the lake, but a large portion of the area which it covered has been filled with earth.

Both Salem and Marblehead harbors are spacious and deep, and Salem Harbor is well sheltered. Rev. Francis Higginson called Salem Harbor Marvel Harbor in 1629.

Of the islands off the shore, the largest is Misery Island, which contains about eighty acres. It is sandy toward the mainland and rocky seaward. Nearby is Little Misery Island, of four or five acres in extent, which is mainly an outcrop of hornblende gabbro rock. Baker's Island is nearly as large as Misery Island, and is a massive outcrop of quartz diorite rock. Cat, or Lowell Island, off Marblehead, the next in size, is about nine acres in extent. Eagle Island, of about four acres, has less than an acre of soil, its southern end being of a slate formation. Tinker's Island contains about two acres, and oceanward its shore is a ragged rock. Cunny Island contains about one and one-half acres, little more than half of it being soil. House Island has an area of about five acres; and Kettle Island, off Manchester, is considerably smaller.

#### GLACIAL ACTION.

The topography of this region—its hills, ponds and level areas—is largely traceable to formations of the glacial period. In many places the bed-rock exhibits the striæ of glacial movement, the most remarkable example being a groove, thirty feet long, more than a yard wide and five inches deep, in a hornblende diorite ledge beside the carriage road in Ledge Hill Park, in Salem. In the groove and on the ledge beside it are long, deep scratches, fine striæ and chatter marks. A typical ice-contact, with alluvium filling in the front of a glacier, is well represented in the formation of the kame topography known as the dungeons on the south side of Forest River, in Marblehead.<sup>1</sup> Ridges, called eskers, composed chiefly of boulders, coarse gravel and sand, the result of glacial action, are prominent surface features; and in the vicinity of Beaver Pond, in Beverly, are some extraordinary specimens of these formations.

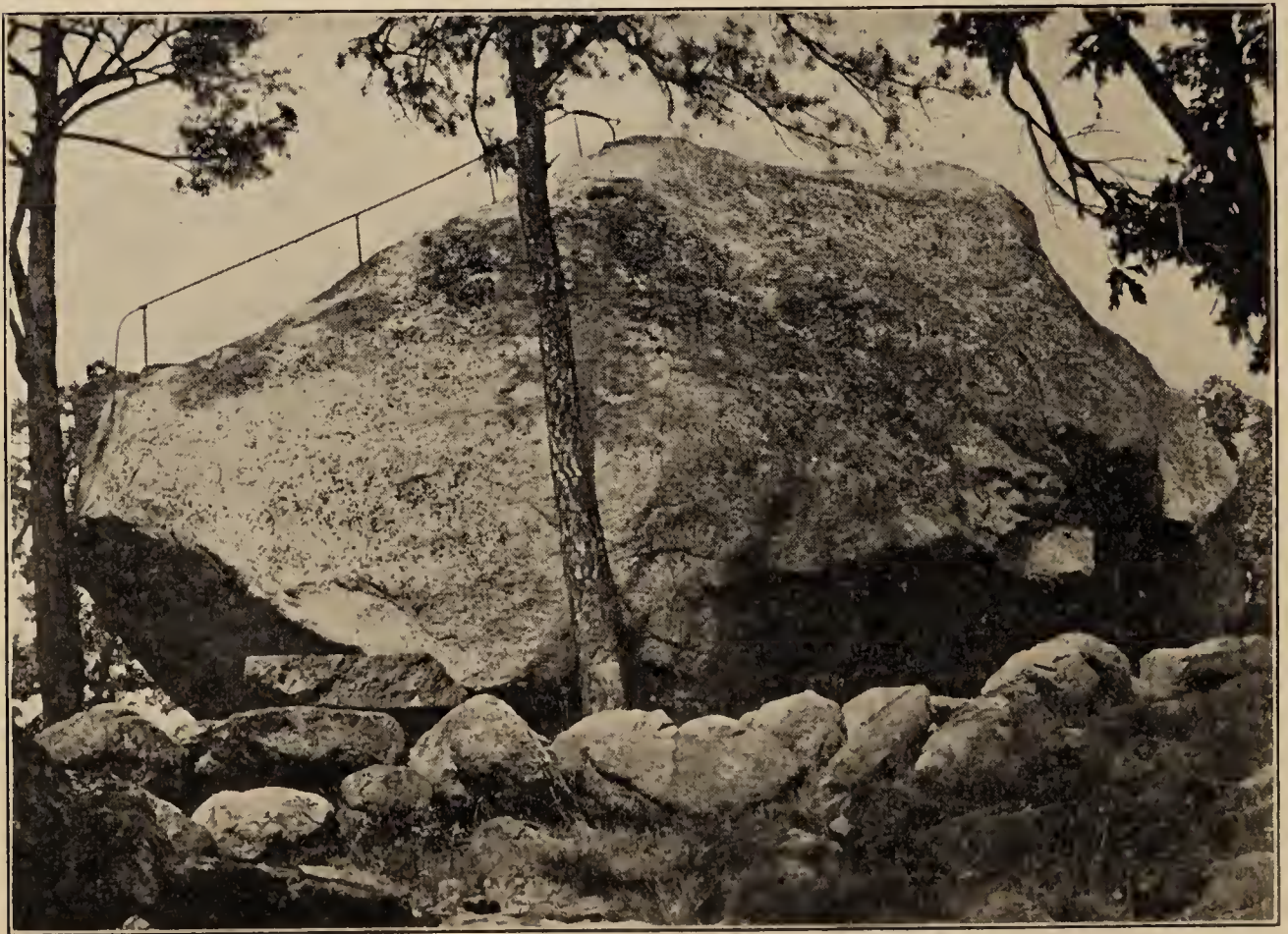
<sup>1</sup>This formation was caused by detached bergs of ice which became buried in the outwash gravel, leaving steep-sided holes when the ice melted.





KETTLE HOLE, MARBLEHEAD.

There are many great boulders upon elevations of bed-rock, having been deposited there as the huge fields of ice moved across these immovable protuberances. The largest and most noted of these boulders is Ship rock, in Peabody. It is composed of horn-



SHIP ROCK, PEABODY.



blende granite, and measures forty-five feet in length and twenty-two feet in height. It stands upon the brow of a steep hill, on a ledge which is about one hundred feet above sea level.<sup>1</sup> In the woods of Manchester, on a high elevation of granite, is Agassiz rock,<sup>2</sup> another great boulder, which is cubical in shape and



AGASSIZ ROCK, MANCHESTER.

measures about fifteen feet on each side. Its position is one of its most interesting features. One of its edges rests upon the ledge,

<sup>1</sup>Ship rock was so called as early as 1708 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 26, leaf 40). It was conveyed to the Essex County Historical Society Nov. 3, 1847 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 390, leaf 19), and upon the establishment of the Essex Institute, by the union of the Essex County Historical Society with the Essex County Natural History Society, in 1848, it became the property of the Essex Institute. An iron ladder enables the visitor to go readily to the top, from which an extended view of the sea is obtained. Some say that the name was derived from its resemblance to a ship; and tradition is that it was so called because it was used by pirates to watch the movements of vessels going in and out of the harbors along the shore.

<sup>2</sup>Prof. Louis Agassiz visited this boulder about sixty years ago, and expressed a good deal of interest in it. It was then called Sunset rock. At





WIGWAM ROCK, PEABODY.

it being raised nearly three feet on the opposite side of its base and held there by a wedge-shaped stone. Wigwam rock,<sup>1</sup> on Summit Street, in Peabody, is shaped like a three-sided pyramid, resembling a tent. Each of its lines measures about fourteen feet.



THE BUTTS, PEABODY.

a field meeting of the Essex Institute, held at Manchester Oct. 2, 1874, it was voted that the boulder be thereafter known as Agassiz rock.

<sup>1</sup>Wigwam rock is so called in the records in 1652 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 15).



The Butts<sup>1</sup> is a boulder, also in Peabody, in Tapley's brook, near the junction of Washington, Lynn and Lynnfield streets.

#### MINERALS.

Of the useful minerals in this section, clay has always been important. Here was the beginning of the brickmaking and earthenware industries of New England; and the locality has always been noted therefor. Most of the bricks produced here have been made in Danvers and Salem, and the earthenware in Beverly, Salem and Peabody. In a brick-clay pit at Danversport the clay is eighteen feet deep below the level of the adjoining marsh; and a deposit on Liberty Street in the same locality is over forty feet thick. On Bridge Street, in Salem, near Beverly bridge, it is seventy-two feet thick.

The principal quarries of the region are in Peabody, and they yield a profitable income. The hornblende granite is the most valuable, being easily rifted and readily worked into excellent building stone. It is also capable of a fine polish. The beds of granite in that section extend northerly to Danvers, and southeasterly to Marblehead Neck. Another section of granite outcrops is in Danvers and Wenham, and still another is in Beverly and Manchester.

On both sides of Nichols brook, which flows into Ipswich River, are several outcrops of red granite, boulders of which are often seen in the boulder-till of Beverly and Danvers. One outcrop is quite massive, and stands at an elevation of one hundred and twenty feet.

Graphite is found in Danvers and Middleton, nickel in the augite syenite at Poor-house Hill and chalcedony at Prospect Hill, in Beverly.

Thomas Morton, in his *New English Canaan*, wrote, relative to minerals which were found here by the first settlers, "first of the Marble for building; whereof there is much in those parts, in so much there is one bay in the land that beareth the name of Marble harbor, because of the Plenty of Marble there."<sup>2</sup>

Of the minerals in this neighborhood, William Wood wrote,<sup>3</sup> in 1634, "that it is reported there is Iron stone; and the Indians informe us that they can leade us to the mountaines of blacke Lead, and have showne us lead ore, if our small judgement in such things doe not deceive us: and though no body dare confidently conclude, yet dare they not utterly deny, but that the Spaniards

<sup>1</sup>The Butts were so called as early as 1638. In the early days the logs or wood floating down the brook above were held back by this boulder, and this fact gave it its name.

<sup>2</sup>*New English Canaan*, by Thomas Morton, page 83.

<sup>3</sup>*New Englands Prospect*, chapter V.



blisse may lye hid in the barren Mountaines, such as have coasted the countrey affirme that they know where to fetch Sea-cole if wood were scant; there is plenty of stone both rough and smooth, usefull for many things, with quarries of Slate, out of which they get covering for houses, with good clay, whereof they make Tiles and Bricks, and pavements for their necessary uses."

Capt. John Smith wrote, in 1631: "For the building houses, townes, and fortresses, where shall a man finde conveniency, as stones of most sorts, as well lime stone, if I be not much deceived. as Iron stone, smooth stone, blew slate for covering houses, and great rockes we supposed Marble, so that one place is called marble harbour."<sup>1</sup>

#### VEGETATION.

The upland soil is of various depths, and the underlying strata consists of formations of gravel, sand, clay, etc.<sup>2</sup> According to a writer at the time of the first settlement, in some places the soil or black mould is over a foot deep, and so fertile that the vegetation is rank;<sup>3</sup> and the woods are "accounted better ground than the Forrests of England or woodland ground, or heathy plaines. . . . This ground is in some places of a soft mould, and easie to plow; in other places so tough and hard, that I have seene ten Oxen toyled, their Iron chaines broken, and their Shares and Coulters much strained: But after the first breaking up it is so easie, that two Oxen and a Horse may plow it."<sup>3</sup>

Forests were almost universal on hill and plain when the first planters came,<sup>4</sup> and there were open spaces of upland as well as lowland where grass grew. Some of the islands were heavily wooded, and others free from trees. Rev. Francis Higginson, teacher of the church in Salem, wrote,<sup>5</sup> in 1629, that "though all the Countrey bee as it were a thicke Wood for the generall, yet in diuers places there is much ground cleared by the Indians, and especially about the Plantation." Where the forests were thickly grown the timber was straight and tall, and the lowest branches of many of the trees were thirty feet from the ground.<sup>5</sup> Undergrowth was rare except in the swamps. Forest trees were of many kinds,<sup>6</sup> the principal one being oak,<sup>6</sup> of which there were four

<sup>1</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, 1631, page 26.

<sup>2</sup>At first New England was regarded in England as a most barren rocky desert.—*Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, Etc.*, page 12.

<sup>3</sup>New Englands Prospect, chapter IV.

<sup>4</sup>The name of Forest River is suggestive of forests upon its banks.

<sup>5</sup>New Englands Plantation, by Rev. Francis Higginson, 1629.

<sup>6</sup>A Description of New England, by Capt. John Smith, 1616, page 39.

varieties. Pine came next in quantity, and then walnut, chestnut, ash, beech, maple, spruce, fir, cypress, birch, cedar,<sup>1</sup> willow, juniper and elm.<sup>2</sup> Among the fruit trees were mulberry and plum trees; and alder, hawthorne, hazel, osier, aspen, sassafras and sumach were among the smaller trees and shrubs.

Grass grew in every open area, as Rev. Francis Higginson wrote,<sup>3</sup> from Salem, in 1629, "verie thicke, verie long, and verie high; . . . but it groweth verie wildly with a great stalke and a broad and ranker blade because it neuer had been eaten with cattle, nor mowed with a Sythe and seldome trampled on by foot." The salt marshes and fresh meadows were covered with grass, which the cattle readily ate.<sup>4</sup>

Native edible vegetables were of a number of varieties, as leeks, onions, turnips, parsnips and carrots. They were of con-

<sup>1</sup>Along the ocean front, the locality on both sides of Sallow's brook, in Beverly, was called "Cedar stand" as early as 1636. The name seems to indicate the presence of many cedars.

<sup>2</sup>"The Wallnut tree is something different from the English Wallnut, being a great deale more tough, and more serviceable, and altogether as heavie: and whereas our Gunnes that are stocked with English Wallnut, are soone broaken and cracked in frost, being a brittle Wood; we are driven to stocke them new with the Country Wallnut, which will indure all blowes, and weather; lasting time out of minde. These trees beare a very good Nut, something smaller, but nothing inferior in sweetnesse and goodnesse to the English Nut, having no bitter pill. . . . The Cedar tree is a tree of no great growth, not bearing above a foot and a halfe square at the most, neither is it very high. . . . This wood is more desired for ornament than substance, being of colour red and white like Eugh, smelling as sweete as Iuniper. . . . For that countrey Ash, it is much different from the Ash of England, being brittle and good for little, so that Wallnut is used for it. The Horne-bound tree is a tough kind of Wood, that requires so much paines in riving as is almost incredible. . . . This tree growing with broad spread Armes, the vines winde their curling branches about them."—*New Englands Prospect*.

<sup>3</sup>New Englands Plantation.

<sup>4</sup>The fresh meadows grew "as much grasse, as may be throwne out with a Sithe, thicke and long, as high as a mans middle; some as high as the shoulders, so that a good mower may cut three loads in a day. But many object, this is but a course fodder: True it is, that it is not so fine to the eye as English grasse, but it is not sowre, though it grow thus ranke; but being made into Hay, the Cattle eate it as well as it were Lea-hay and like as well with it. . . . Furthermore, whereas it hath beene generally reported in many places of England, that the Grasse growes not in those places where it was cut the fore-going yeares, it is a meere falsehood; for it growes as well the ensuing Spring as it did before, and is more spiery and thicke, like our English Grasse: and in such places where the Cattle use to graze, the ground is much improved in the Woods, growing more grassie, and lesse weedy. The worst that can be sayd against the meddow-grounds, is because there is little edish or after-pasture, which may proceede from the late mowing, more than from any thing else; but though the edish be not worth much, yet is there such plenty of other Grasse and feeding, that there is no want of Winter-fodder till December, at which time men beginne to house their milch-cattle and Calves."—*New Englands Prospect*.



siderable size and flavor. Pumpkins,<sup>1</sup> gourds, muskmelons, watermelons, cucumbers<sup>2</sup> and some other vegetables were common. Besides the plums and mulberries already mentioned, cornel berries, cherries, gooseberries and currants, bilberries, blueberries, grapes, raspberries, blackberries, huckleberries and strawberries were common, the latter being abundant. Beans and peas are mentioned by the early writers, as though they grew wild, but probably they were found in cultivation among the Indians in association with maize. Many excellent pot-herbs grew wild in abundance amongst the grass and in the woods, as strawberry leaves, winter savory, brook-lime and water cresses; pennyroyal, yarrow, sarsaparilla, liverwort and several other kinds of medicinal herbs; besides an abundance of bay, sweet marjoram and other sweet herbs, and sweet single damask roses.<sup>3</sup> Hemp and

<sup>1</sup>These were early called "pompions."

<sup>2</sup>These were early called "cow-combers."

<sup>3</sup>There was growing "all manner of Hearbes for meate, and medicine, and that not onely in planted Gardens, but in the Woods, without eyther the art or the helpe of man, as sweet Marjoram, Purselane, Sorrell, Peneral, Yarrow, Mirtle, Saxifarilla, Bayes, &c. There is likewise Strawberries in abundance, very large ones, some being two inches about; . . . In other seasons there bee Gooseberries, Bilberies, Resberries, Treackleberies, Hurtlethose that our Grocers sell in England: This land likewise affoards Hempe and Flax, some naturally, and some planted by the English, with Rapes if they bee well managed. . . . [The Hornebound tree] growing with broad spread Armes, the vines winde their curling branches about them; which vines affoord great store of grapes, which are very big both for the grape and cluster, sweet and good; These be of two sorts, red and white, there is likewise a smaller kind of grape, which groweth in the Islands which is sooner ripe and more delectable; so that there is no knowne reason why as good wine may not be made in those parts, as well as in Burdeuax. . . . The Cherrie trees yeeld great store of [choke?] Cherries, which grow on clusters like grapes; they be much smaller than our English cherries, nothing neare so good if they be not very ripe; they so furre the mouth that the tongue will cleave to the rooffe, and the throate wax horse with swallowing those red Bullies (as I may call them,) being little better in taste. English ordering may bring them to be an English Cherrie, but yet they are as wilde as the Indians. . . . The Plummes of the Countrey be better for Plummes than the Cherries be for Cherries, they be blacke and yellow about the bignes of a Damson, of a reasonably good taste. The white thorne affords haves as bigge as an English Cherrie, which is esteemed above a Cherrie for his goodnesse and pleasantnesse to the taste."—*New Englands Prospect*.

Capt. John Smith, in "A Description of New England," wrote, in 1616: "The hearbes and fruits are of many sorts and kindes: at alkerms [not a fruit?], currans, or a fruit like currans, mulberries, vines, respices, gooseberries, plummes, walnuts, chesnuds, small nuts, &c. pumpions, gourds, strawberries, beans, peas, and mayze: a kinde or two of flax."

Rev. Francis Higginson, in *New Englands Plantation*, wrote from Salem, in 1629, that "wee abound with such things . . . as muckmillions, watermillions, Indian pompions, Indian pease, beanes, and many other odde fruits that I cannot name. . . . Excellent vines are here up and downe in the woods. . . . Also, mulberries, plums, raspberries, corrance, . . .



flax grew in considerable quantity, producing a fibre from which good cordage and cloth were made.

Of nuts, the earliest settlers found the chestnut, filbert or hazel and large and small walnuts.

The botany of the regions bordering on the sea-shore is much more varied and interesting than that inland, on account of the diversity of soil and situation. Here were the open country, deep woods and swamps as well as the shore; the algæ of the ocean and of the fresh water pond; the plants of the salt marsh and of the fresh meadow. Though the hills are not very high, Salem lies just within the limits of the northern flora. The algæ of the sea is also that of the Arctic ocean; and is beautiful in color and form, as well as useful. In the early settlement few knew of its beauty, but all had learned of dulse, rockweed, Irish moss, kelp, etc., and it all was to them simply "sea-weed."

#### ANIMALS.

The forest was the home of large numbers and many kinds of beasts, birds and reptiles. The bear was one of the heavier animals. Its flesh was regarded as being better than venison; and its skin furnished excellent outer clothing. The fur was black. Bears were fierce in strawberry time, when their offspring were young; but they never preyed upon the English cattle nor attacked any person except in self defence. Indeed this was true, generally, of all of the wild animals, and the early settlers could roam in safety through the woods. In the winter, bears lived among the rocks and in thick swamps where they were sheltered from the cold, and would have been very numerous had not wolves killed them for food.

Several varieties of deer, the largest being the moose,<sup>1</sup> ranged the woods, and would have been abundant, as they were good breeders, had they not been the prey of wolves. Their flesh was good for food, and their hides furnished excellent material for clothing. The common deer were found in greatest numbers near the sea-shore in the winter season. Apparently, they sought the water at that time for protection from the wolves, as when chased

. hurtle berries, and hawes of white thorne neere as good as our cherries in England, they grow in plentie here."

<sup>1</sup>William Wood wrote in his *New Englands Prospect*, chapter VI, in 1634, that moose were "headed like a Bucke, with a broade beame, some being two yards wide in the head. . . . The English have some thoughts of keeping them tame, and to accustome them to the yoake, which will be a great commoditie; First because they are so fruitfull, bringing forth three at a time, being likewise very uberous. Secondly, because they will live in winter without any fodder."

they swam to the islands. They were fat even in winter, when they were most frequently caught. Venison was much liked, and deer were thus very helpful in supplying the larders of the old planters.

The greatest enemy that the settlers had among the animals was the wolf, which preyed upon the cattle as well as many of the defenceless and useful wild animals. The wolves generally traveled and hunted in packs of ten or twelve. Their prolonged howls, late at night, or in the early morning, calling their companions together, always tended to produce terror in both man and beast, though in the early days they were never known to attack men or women, nor horses and cows. But they preyed upon swine, goats and red calves. They probably supposed that the latter were deer. This was so general that red calves were cheaper than black ones. Wolves were most troublesome in late autumn and early spring, when they followed the deer to and from the shore.<sup>1</sup>

Besides the common fox, the black variety was sometimes caught, their fur being much esteemed.<sup>2</sup> The shiny black fur of the otter, which also inhabited the fresh waters, was sought by the traders in furs more than any other. The flesh of the otter was hardly desirable as food, but oil produced therefrom was useful in many ways. The fur of the beaver was also in great demand. The English rarely killed beaver, not being sufficiently patient, and all skins of that kind obtained in the earlier days were secured by the Indians who had had long experience in their capture.<sup>3</sup>

The raccoon<sup>4</sup> was another thick-furred beast of the woods, its meat being esteemed as equal to lamb. They slept in hollow trees in the daytime, and on moonlit nights went to the tidal flats when the water was low to dig and feed on clams. At such times, the old planters hunted them with dogs. The red-eyed ferret, skunk and martin and the musquash were small fur-bearing animals whose pelts were also sought.

The wild cat was one of the dreaded denizens of the forest. It was about as large as an ordinary dog, and its nature fierce. It was more dangerous to meet than any other creature, fearing neither dog nor man. The English killed many of these animals,

<sup>1</sup>Wolf island, in Wenham great swamp, was probably a favorite resort of these animals.

<sup>2</sup>Foxes were troublesome as early as 1660, when bounties were paid by Salem for their destruction.

<sup>3</sup>Beaver brook, in Danvers, and Beaver Pond, in Beverly, suggests the presence of beaver here in the early days. Beaver Pond was so called as early as 1642; and dams were early constructed by the beavers in Danvers and Manchester.

<sup>4</sup>The name of Raccoon swamp, in Bevevrly, and Raccoon rocks, in Manchester, suggest their presence.



and the species has now become extinct. Their skins had thick fur, spotted white and black under the body.<sup>1</sup>

The porcupine was also found. It was small, similar to and a little larger than the English hedgehog, which, as William Wood wrote,<sup>2</sup> "stands upon his guard and proclaimss a Noli me tangere, to man and beast, that shall approach too neare him, darting his quills into their legges, and hides." The brown rabbit and large white purblind hare were common, and squirrels skipped about everywhere. Of the latter, there were three varieties, the large grey, small red and flying squirrel.

Birds and fowls, both land and water varieties, were very plentiful. The English settlers found all the kinds they had known in their homeland and many that were new to them. The largest birds were the eagles,<sup>3</sup> with white heads and tails, the larger of them being called gripes. Their prey were ducks<sup>4</sup> and geese and fish that were cast upon the sea-shore. There were several kinds of sea and land hawks,<sup>5</sup> their prey being fish, hens, ducks and partridges. Turkeys were abundant, and larger than those in England, being fat, and having plenty of food all the year through, as strawberries and other berries, fruits and acorns. Sometimes they went in flocks of some four score; and were often killed and eaten. They did not migrate, and in winter, when snow covered the ground, they resorted to the sea-shore at low tide for shrimps and similar small fish. Their feathers were black, but their meat was white. Pheasants were rare, heathcock and partridges common and pigeons and wild geese, ducks and teal abundant. The geese were of the white and gray varieties, and the brant.<sup>6</sup> The white geese came from the north in great flocks about October, sometimes two or three thousand in a flock. After stopping about six weeks, they flew south, returning in March and staying about six weeks more, returning again to the northward. The great gray geese, with black necks and black and white heads, strong in flight, migrated as regularly as the white variety and remained away from October to April. They fed on fish and acorns.

Cormorants, which were common, greedily destroyed great

<sup>1</sup>Several localities recall the wild cats, as Cat brook, in Manchester, Cat swamp, in Beverly, and Cat Cove, at Salem Neck. Cat Cove was so called in 1638, and Cat swamp in 1658.

<sup>2</sup>New Englands Prospect, chapter VI.

<sup>3</sup>The name of Eagle head, in Manchester, suggests that high rocky promontory as the place of an eyrie.

<sup>4</sup>Crane River, in Danvers, was called Duck River in 1632.

<sup>5</sup>William Wood wrote in New Englands Prospect, in 1634, that a "certaine blacke Hawke that beates" the eagle was "much prized of the Indians, being accounted a Sagamores ransome."

<sup>6</sup>There be likewise many Swannes which frequent the fresh ponds and rivers, seldome consorting themselves with Duckes and Geese."—*New Englands Prospect*.



quantities of small fish; but they were not worth shooting, as the rank and fishy taste of their meat made them undesirable for food. Cranes were common in the summer season, but migrated winters.<sup>1</sup> Loons, gulls, bittern and hern were in considerable numbers.

Owls were of two kinds, one being small and speckled like a partridge, and the other almost as large as an eagle. Their meat was as good as that of the partridge. The uncanny cry of the screech-owl was ominous to the early settlers.

Blackbirds, or stares, were larger than those in England, and as black as crows, being the most troublesome and injurious of the birds, pulling up the young corn by the roots, especially near reedy or sedgy localities, which they frequented. They feared neither guns nor the bodies of their fellows suspended upon poles in the field. Crows, ravens and thrushes, including robins, the swift-winged swallows and beautiful little humming-birds, sought a welcome from the first settlers.

The waters, both salt and fresh, ocean, bay, river and pond, abounded with fish in great variety.<sup>2</sup> There were seals, or sea calves, the skins of which were useful, and oil extracted from their bodies was burned in the lamps of the settlers. Sharks<sup>3</sup> were taken, but never used except as fertilizer. Sturgeon, skate, thorn-back, haddock, hake, mullet, shad and herring were abundant. Salmon was one of the most common fishes, being found in the rivers as well as in the bay.<sup>1</sup> Halibut were sometimes two yards long and a foot thick.<sup>2</sup> The heads and fins were most desired as food, being stewed or baked. The chief fish of commerce, however, was cod, which were of large size. Here were also frost-fish, smelts and catfish in abundance. The flesh of bass was delicate and sweet and most desirable for continuous consumption. They were sometimes three or four feet in length; and the settlers salted them for winter use.<sup>3</sup> When alewives passed up the rivers bass were caught in the streams, in lobster time at the rocks, in

<sup>1</sup>Crane River, in Danvers, was so called as early as 1650.

<sup>2</sup>Some sharks were "as bigge as a horse, with three rowes of teeth within his mouth, with which he snaps asunder the fisherman's lines, if he be not very circumspect: This fish will leape at a man's hand if it be over board, and with his teeth snap off a mans legge or hand if he be a swimming."—*New Englands Prospect*.

<sup>3</sup>Description of New England, by Capt. John Smith, London, 1616, pages 35 and 36.

<sup>4</sup>According to tradition, North River, in Salem, was stocked with salmon.

<sup>5</sup>New Englands Prospect, chapter IX. "The ffish of theis parts is noe where excelled and bringes into England yearly great store of ready money from ffrance and Spaine."—*A True Relation concerning the Estate of New England*, written about 1635.

<sup>6</sup>The great numbers of bass occasioned the name of Bass River, in Beverly, as early as 1635.

mackerel season in the bay, and in the autumn in the sea. They were generally caught with hook and line, but as they went in and out of the rivers and creeks with the tide, the English, at high water, placed long seines or bass nets across the stream or creek, stopping the fish from going out with the tide. In this way, thousands were sometimes taken at one tide. Alewives, which were similar to herring, went up fresh water streams to ponds in great numbers in the latter part of April to spawn. Nothing could turn them back, though the water in some places was so shallow that they were hardly able to swim.<sup>1</sup> Frost fish gave name to Porter's brook and river, in Danvers, as early as 1637. Mackerel were of two kinds and caught by hook and line, baited with red cloth. In the spring of the year they were large, measuring sometimes eighteen inches in length, but from the first of May to the first of September smaller ones were caught.<sup>2</sup> Salt water eels were abundant, especially where grass grew. They were caught with pots made of osiers, baited with a piece of lobster, into which pots the eels readily entered, but could not get out. Eels were either eaten fresh or salted for winter use. The lamprey-eels were disliked.

Of shell fish, lobsters of large size were plenty, some weighing over twenty pounds.<sup>3</sup> They were taken among the rocks<sup>4</sup> at low water, and were excellent for food, especially the smaller ones, though they were little eaten for years because there was a great supply of better fish. Indians used them for bait for fishing and for food when they could not get bass. Oysters were plenty<sup>5</sup> and large, being a foot in length, and their breeding places were banks that were bare at spring tides. Clams<sup>6</sup> were abundant, and were fed to swine, both summer and winter; and as soon as the hogs became accustomed to the flats they watched the tide and at ebb rooted their dinner out of the sand and mud. Mussels were also eaten by the swine. The perewig, tortoise,<sup>7</sup> crab and wilk were also found.

Snakes were in great numbers, and were large and of colors new to the settlers.<sup>8</sup> The largest and most dangerous was the

<sup>1</sup>Alewive brook, in Beverly, was so called as early as 1702.

<sup>2</sup>Mackerel Cove, in Beverly, indicates the presence of mackerel in the cove as early as 1636.

<sup>3</sup>Lobster Cove, in Manchester, indicates the presence of lobsters at that spot.

<sup>4</sup>July 7, 1792: "Yesterday the Beverly merchants erected a handsome Beacon on the inmost point of Lobster Rocks towards their Town."—*Diary of Dr. William Bentley*, volume I, page 380.

<sup>5</sup>New English Canaan, by Thomas Morton, chapter VII.

<sup>6</sup>Description of New England, by Capt. John Smith, 1616.

<sup>7</sup>Turtle Pond, at Turtle Hill, in Beverly, was so called as early as 1673.

<sup>8</sup>According to the records, Beverly seems to have been the most noted place for snakes. Snake Hill was so called as early as 1673.



rattlesnake, which would not run away from man as would the other varieties of snakes.<sup>1</sup> Its sting was so mortal that persons bitten died almost immediately.<sup>2</sup> Cows were sometimes bitten. There were other kinds of snakes, as black snakes, two yards in length, and many others that molested neither man nor beast.

There were great numbers of frogs and toads, including tree toads, and spiders, ants, wasps, wild bees and flies. The latter were of several varieties, including the large green head of the salt marsh, the midget and mosquito. Butterflies and many other varieties of insects were common.

#### CLIMATE.

When the settlement of New England was contemplated, at the beginning of the seventeenth century, it was supposed by Englishmen that this climate was too severe for their permanent residence; but they soon learned that a short experience would enable them to become accustomed to it.

Lying between the torrid and frigid zones, the climate of this section often changes suddenly, from that of one zone to that of the other—from the hot wind and air of the south to the snow and ice and cold of the north.

The average temperature of the year is about forty-six degrees Fahrenheit above zero, but it is liable to great and sudden changes—sometimes dropping or rising fifty-five degrees in twenty-four hours. The range of temperature is from one hundred degrees above zero in summer to twenty degrees below zero in winter.

The prevailing wind is from the northwest; and when it blows from that quarter the weather is generally pleasant and the air pure, dry and invigorating. The most uncomfortable wind is the northeast, being chilly from the dampness brought in from the ocean. Easterly winds are often attended with rain, sleet or snow, according to the season.

The climate is conducive to health, though injurious to persons having a tendency to pulmonary diseases; but it produces strength and longevity, and has much to do in maintaining the high moral tone and active, enterprising spirit of the inhabitants.

The climate is not a dry one, as more rain falls here than in Europe, but in much less time, so that here the first English settlers found more sunshine than in England.

<sup>1</sup>Rattlesnake Hill, in Beverly, was early so called; and the point of land near Chubb's Creek was called Rattlesnake point in 1702.

<sup>2</sup>The root of a plant called snake weed was the common antidote in such cases, the person bitten chewing it and swallowing the saliva, and applying the root to the wound.

The summers are generally dry and delightful, and when the air becomes oppressive it is relieved by thunder showers or easterly winds.

A season peculiar to the region is that known as Indian summer, a period of two or three weeks' duration in October. It comes after the early frosts, when the wind is southwesterly, and the air is delightfully mild and sweet. The sky is singularly transparent, pure and beautiful.

The winter season is from the first of December into March, and is usually cold and rigorous, the temperature usually falling below zero several times in each season. Snow lies on the ground nearly all winter, falling most deeply in the northeast storms, which are generally longest in duration. The shortest and most violent storms, generally quickly moderating, occur when the wind is from the southeast, snow usually turning to rain and the storm clearing in a few hours.

Storms accompanied by strong wind are occasional, and have proved disastrous to forests, buildings and shipping. The coast of Salem is not exposed sufficiently to cause it to be the scene of ship-wrecks. Rain storms have sometimes produced freshets; and cyclonic winds and earthquakes<sup>1</sup> of slight extent are not uncommon.

<sup>1</sup>The earthquakes of 1727, 1744 and 1755 were severely felt, and caused chimneys to fall and dishes to be jarred from the shelves in many instances.



## CHAPTER II.

### THE INDIANS.



THE Indians who were living within the territory of original Salem when the English took possession and began their settlement were the survivors of a race that had been numerous, but which, by disease, had become weak and few in number.

These aborigines were tall and erect, with black eyes, which were far-sighted, high foreheads, strong limbs, long and slender hands, broad shoulders and small waists and feet.<sup>1</sup> Their straight black hair was very long, but nothing could induce them to wear a beard. From the time that down appeared upon the chin of an Indian youth, he plucked out each hair. It was deemed useless, cumbersome and opprobrious.

Their clothing was scanty. An Indian's breeches consisted of a piece of cloth a yard and a half long, tied with a snake's skin about the waist. In the winter, the more aged wore leather drawers, made like trousers, and fastened under their girdle with buttons. In cold weather they wore shoes, which reached above the ankle, and were made of moose hide. Many of them wore on one of their shoulders skins of bear, moose, beaver, otter or raccoon, but most of them had thick-furred skins of wild cats, like a long large muff.

They had pride, which manifested itself in a longing for ornaments, as pendants in their ears, and forms of birds, beasts and fishes, carved out of bone, shell or stone, with long bracelets of their curiously wrought wampumpeag, which they put about their necks and loins. These they esteemed a rare kind of decoration. Many of the prominent adults bore upon their cheeks portraitures of beasts, as bears, deer, moose and wolves, or of fowls, as eagles and hawks, which were not a painting merely but incisions in the skin, made by some sharp instrument, in which

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation, by Rev. Francis Higginson, 1630; and New Englands Prospect, by William Wood, 1634.

black ink was inserted, making the desired form apparent and permanent. By hot irons, others seared their flesh with a row of star-shaped designs along the outside of their arms and on their breasts. It is not known whether these markings were foils to assist in manifesting beauty, or whether they were indulged in for other purposes. But no king ever was prouder than an Indian chief with a humming bird in his ear for a pendant, a black hawk on his head for a plume, a large amount of wampumpeag around his loins, his bow in his hand and his quiver at his back.

The Indians were affable and courteous and well-disposed, ready to devote the best of what they had to the general good. There seemed to be a bond of affection between them personally, which was affected only by ingratitude. They could not endure the thought of wrongs done to their countrymen, and quickly and stiffly assisted in their defence, pleading strongly in their behalf, and justifying one another's integrity in any warrantable action.

There were no cross, reviling or provoking words among them, and garrulity was unknown. They spoke but little, and then with gravity and euphony. They loved only him who spoke few words and opportunely, and whose word could be relied upon. They rarely laughed or smiled. Though they had a friendly manner, they were wary in their friendships. They hated a churlish disposition and dissimulation. The English settlers neither feared nor trusted them. Into the houses of the English, sometimes half-a-dozen of them came together in time of meals, but they asked for nothing and took only what was given to them.<sup>1</sup>

They were apparently insensible to ordinary pain. They manifested no sign of its presence, even when they were beaten or whipped. They were healthy, and gray hair and wrinkled brows were unknown among them until they had passed the age of fifty. This was the result, apparently, of freedom from severe labor, annoying cares and abuse of plenty. They were born somewhat light in color, and in the open air and sunshine became tawny. Their skin was smooth,—the effect of frequent anointing of their bodies with fish oil, or fat of eagles or raccoons. They did this in summer to keep their skin from blistering in the scorching sun, and for protection against mosquitoes, and in winter to stop the pores of their bodies from the nipping cold.

Their language was that of the Algonquin race, and difficult to learn, because of its peculiar pronunciation, its chief grace, and few of the English in this vicinity became able to speak any of it. It was unwritten and was of course only known phonetically. It was in general euphonious, the words being constructed of short syllables which usually terminated in a soft or vowel sound, as Co-che-co and She-ne-we-me-dy (Topsfield).

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation.



Their sense of the beautiful is manifest in the appellations they gave to places and persons. The names of many lakes and localities throughout the great Algonquin territory begin with the syllables Winne, which means beautiful. Others, which have the quality of being almost beautiful, begin with Wonne, and still some begin with Wunne, which means pleasant or desirable. Not only were these terms applied to water and land, as Winnepe-saukee and Wonnasquam, but to human beings, as Winneperket and Wonnalansit.

Each succeeding generation was like its predecessor: its practices, manners and habits remained as the fathers had been.

Their chief ruler was called a sagamore, and the government was similar to a monarchy. The right to rule came by inheritance, descending from father to son. If, at the father's death, there were no son, the widow reigned as queen; and if there were no widow, the next blood royal took the reins of government. The importance and power of the chief depended upon the number of his subjects. The sagamore about Salem, in 1629, had less than three hundred men.<sup>1</sup> The number of subjects was very large until the year 1617, when a fatal disease was so destructive that very few were left.<sup>2</sup>

They had no laws and no revenue, though half of the possessions of the subjects, and also their persons were at the disposal of the sagamore, to whom they were loyal, obeying him freely.

Abuses were restrained generally by reproof and admonition; but in serious cases the matter was investigated by the sovereign and some of his wisest men; and if found to be guilty, the culprit was condemned to punishment. If the offence were one worthy of death, the condemned was executed with a hatchet or club; and his friends buried him.

No condition of society is so simple as to afford absolutely no occasion for the exchange of commodities. The Indians had a circulating medium for trade, called wampumpeag, which consisted of cylindrical pieces of shell. Some were round and made from the Quahog shell and others more than a quarter of an inch long and probably made from the Buccinum shell. The former were about three-eighths of an inch in diameter and the latter about a quarter of an inch. The thin ones had a hole drilled in the center and the others were drilled lengthwise through the middle. They were usually strung upon a thread. The pieces were of two colors, white and violet, one being reckoned of greater value than

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation.

<sup>2</sup>Historical Collections of the Indians in New England, by Daniel Gookin. 1674, in Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society, volume I, page 150.

the other. They were used also as an ornament, and ten thousand of them are known to have been wrought into a single belt, four inches wide.<sup>1</sup>

The Indians had no military exercises, at least after the old men were swept away by the pestilence, and the survivors had found protection among the settlers. William Wood, who personally knew the Indians in this neighborhood, wrote,<sup>2</sup> in 1634, that "they doe not now practice anything in martiall feates worth observation, saving that they make themselves Forts to flie into, if the enemies should unexpectedly assaile them. These Forts some be fortie or fiftie foote square, erected of young timber trees, ten or twelve foote high, rammed into the ground, with undermining within, the earth being cast up for their shelter against the dischargements of their enemies, having loopeholes to send out their winged messingers. . . . These use no other weapons in warre than bowes and arrowes, saving that their Captaines have long speares, on which if they retorne conquerours they carrie the heads of their chiefe enèemies that they slay in the wars. . . . When they goe to their warres, it is their custome to paint their faces with diversitie of colours, some being all black as jet, some red, some halfe red and halfe blacke, some blacke and white, others spotted with divers kinds of colours, being all disguised to their enemies, to make them more terrible to their foes, putting on likewise their rich Iewels, pendants and Wampompeage, to put them in minde they fight not onely for their Children, Wives, and lives, but likewise for their goods, lands and liberties; Being thus armed with this warlike paint, the antique warriors made towards their enemies in a disordered manner, without any souldier like marching or warlike postures, being deafe to any word of command, ignorant of falling off, or falling on, of doubling rankes or files, but let fly their winged shaftments without eyther feare or wit; their Artillery being spent, he that hath no armes to fight, findes legges to run away."

Remains of several forts of the natives have been discovered. One of these was situated on a low hill in a pasture on the north-westerly side of Humphrey Street, in the rear of the Maple Street schoolhouse, in Marblehead. It was circular in shape, about fifty-two feet in diameter, and built of palisades in the manner described by Mr. Wood. This fort is mentioned in the deed of Thomas

<sup>1</sup>Money was so scarce in the colony that, Nov. 15, 1637, the general court ordered that wampumpeag be treated as currency at six for a penny for any sum under twelve pence; and in 1641, the amount was extended to future debts of ten pounds. This use of wampumpeag by the English settlers was continued more than a score of years, when, May 23, 1661, because of the "much inconvenience of the law" the general court ordered that it should be legal tender no longer.

<sup>2</sup>New Englands Prospect, part 2, chapter XIII.



Oliver to John Bradstreet, dated July 5, 1658.<sup>1</sup> It is therein called "an old Indian fort." Castle Hill, in South Salem, principally a huge ledge, which is now being blasted away, was so called in the records of Salem as early as 1636; and it is said to have been the site of a fort of Nanepashement, chief of the Massachusetts tribe.

The Indians here were engaged in a great war with the Tarrantines from the eastward in the year 1615, which proved disastrous to the local tribe. Nanepashement had been obliged to retreat from Saugus to a hill on the border of Mystic River, where he afterwards resided. Four years later, the Tarrantines killed him at his dwelling place.



REMAINS OF INDIAN FORT, MARBLEHEAD.

They worshipped two gods, one of whom, their good god, was called Ketan,<sup>2</sup> and the other, a god whom they feared would do them hurt, was called Squantum. To Ketan, after a bountiful harvest, they sacrificed; and also invoked of him for fair weather; or in time of drought for rain, and for the recovery of the sick.

The Indians often attended the religious services of the settlers, and sat soberly, though they had slight apprehension of the doctrines preached. They readily believed, as they said, the story of creation, and the origin and fall of man.

<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 2, leaf 82. Nearly three-fourths of the site of this fort has been dug away as a part of a gravel pit, birches having since grown up in the pit.

<sup>2</sup>New Englands Plantation.

They were greatly afraid of a spirit called Abamacho; and because of him they would not leave their dwellings in the night, especially in evil enterprises. They had rather stay all night with an Englishman than go a quarter of a mile to their dwelling in the dark. From this fear of the dark, however, they were soon freed by the practices of the settlers.

Their medical men were called powwows. They set broken limbs, and used such medicines as roots and herbs. But they were most prominent because of the peculiarities of their practice. As disease was supposed to be caused diabolically it was natural to believe that any means which would influence the evil one were useful in warding it off or curing it. The medicine men, therefore, were esteemed to be familiar with the evil cause, and were regarded as conjurers. Their service was rendered principally in mutterings and exorcisms and incantations. This practice was forbidden by the English.

The Indians greatly feared death. If they believed that the pain they were enduring was the prelude to death, the thought of which was so terrible to them, they were exceedingly agitated.

The burial of their dead took place after a period of manifestation of excessive grief. Over the grave was shed many a briny tear, with groans and howls. Annually, this was repeated, the faces of the mourners having been painted with some black pigment. They were apparently without hope, though they said that they believed the soul to be immortal, and that it passed to the southwest Elysium. With the body they buried the bows and arrows of the deceased and a considerable amount of wampumpeag to purchase prerogatives in paradise. They said that their enemies and the unworthy among their own people passed to the infernal dwellings of Abamacho to be punished.

Graves of the Indians have been found in many sections of original Salem, but the more extensive burial places are in Marblehead. The larger of these are situated at the north side of the road to Swampscott and in the Upper division of the common lands. In each of these localities thirty or more graves were found. Several have been discovered on the high hill, now a part of the Waterside cemetery, which was evidently the burial place of the later Indians as the skeletons were in good state of preservation,<sup>1</sup> and with them were articles of foreign manufacture. Graves are usually indicated by circular depressions about ten inches deep; and the skeletons are about eighteen inches below the surface in earth almost black in color. Generally, the bodies

<sup>1</sup>These skeletons are now in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem; and there are deposited, also, skulls and other portions of the anatomy of Indians found at Fort Lee, and on Turner Street, in Salem, and in Danversport and Beverly.



were buried with their heads to the west. With some Indian bones found in Beverly, about 1827, was a square wrought iron rod, together with several black earthen jars. In one grave in Beverly were several large plates of mica, which is unusual. In the autumn of 1803, the bones of some Indians were discovered in Buffum's field in North Salem.<sup>1</sup> Some bodies were also found in Forest River Park, in Salem, in 1809.<sup>2</sup>

From graves are obtained the more valuable objects for study. From such may be determined the date of burial and the articles of the deceased and those in contemporary use. A copper kettle or Venetian bead indicates a period for the grave from the year 1500 to 1600, while a number of graves containing only stone implements and pottery would appear to be of a date prior to 1500. Graves are also the best indication of the character of the permanent occupants of the region.

In Manchester, a century ago, there were two mounds which attracted attention from their peculiar shape and surroundings. One was located southeasterly from the Congregational meeting house, and was removed about 1825. Another, situated at the head of tide water, on the site of the steam mill of Kelham & Fitz, about one hundred and fifty feet in diameter and about eight feet above the adjoining marsh, was taken away in 1835. It was conical in shape, and was entirely surrounded by a moat, which was filled with water at very high tides. In this mound were found large quantities of bones, but so much decayed that they were cut with a spade or shovel as easily as the ground in which they were imbedded. The remains appeared to have been interred promiscuously and in an erect position; but no Indian implements were found. In 1845, when a slight elevation of land was removed for the purpose of levelling a lot for Union cemetery, below the soil were found in many places of about six feet in diameter, deposits of ashes, charred wood, burnt stones, etc., from sixteen to eighteen inches in depth, apparently the remains of wigwam fires long continued. For some feet around each of these deposits the earth was of a reddish-yellow color. In a sandy and gravelly knoll about twenty-five rods southerly from the place last mentioned, a gravel pit was opened in 1864; and in it were found buried four entire skeletons, three of adults and the other of a youth. One of them was very large. They were nearly side by side, their heads being toward the west, but raised sufficiently to face the east. They were about fourteen inches below the surface, which had been plowed many times. The head of one of the skeletons rested upon a round piece of copper about sixteen inches in diameter, and where the head touched the copper the skin and

<sup>1</sup>Diary of Rev. William Bentley, under date of Oct. 24, 1803.

<sup>2</sup>Diary of Rev. William Bentley, under date of 1809.

hair adhered firmly to the skull. The hair was black and bright, and about two and one-half feet long. With them were found an iron hatchet, an iron knife-blade much decayed by rust, some coarse cloth made of flags or rushes, a short-stemmed smoking pipe, and a large number of bone arrow heads preserved by the copper in fine condition. Some stone arrow-heads, large and in the form of a heart, some lobsters' claws, a fishing line in good form but very rotten, and a line of larger size, both made from some fibrous plant, a wooden ladle or bowl and some wooden spoons were also found.<sup>1</sup> These remains may have belonged to more than one period or race, apparently some of them being of comparatively late date.



THROGMORTON COVE, MARBLEHEAD.

Beautiful Throgmorton Cove, off Salem harbor, in Marblehead, was the place in original Salem most sought by the Indians for their summer sojourn at the sea-shore. Between the hills to the west of the cove was a huge collection of shells, which indicates that the occupation of this spot must have been for a long time.<sup>2</sup> Shell heaps like this also furnish evidence similar to graves. This great heap of shells was removed about the year 1850, for utiliza-

<sup>1</sup>John Lee, in *History of Manchester*, 1895. This find was the most interesting ever unearthed in Essex County, but the relics were never put in a permanent collection and hence were lost to science. The burial was no doubt in early colonial times or just before, as the objects found must have been obtained from the whites—colonists or voyagers.

<sup>2</sup>*Bulletin of Essex Institute*, volume XV, page 86.



tion of its material as a fertilizer. It contained about thirty cords of shells and ashes, among which were found bones of a large deer, together with pieces of crudely ornamented pottery, bits of copper and stone implements. There were a few shells of the



SITE OF SHELL HEAP, MARBLEHEAD.

oyster, but most of those found were clam shells, some being of species now extinct in this vicinity. There were other small shell heaps on Salem Neck and near the "mill pond" of the South River. There were a few in Beverly. As they were but waste piles no perfect implements, except those which had been lost, were found in them.

The typical dwelling of the Indians here was the conical wigwam, small and plain. It was made with small poles, stuck into the ground, and bent and fastened together at the top with the tough bark of walnut trees. On the sides they were covered with mats of boughs, reeds, long flags or sedges, sewed together with needles made of the splinter bones of a crane's leg and thread made of native hemp. Their houses were often the merest sort of shelter, hardly more than the simplest booth of the woodsman. The better houses were made on frames formed like a garden arbor, round or oval. These were sometimes sixty feet in length and thirty feet in width.<sup>1</sup> They were strong, and some of them

<sup>1</sup>Historical Collections of the Indians in New England, by Daniel Gookin, 1674, in Massachusetts Historical Collections, volume I, page 150.

handsome, being covered with mats so closely woven that both wind and rain were excluded. At the top was a hole for the smoke from the central fire within to escape and for a draft. Some of the long houses, according to their length, had two or three fires, and a corresponding number of holes in the top for the smoke to escape. In rainy weather the apertures were covered; and then the smoke collected in the wigwam, almost suffocatingly. The large houses would accommodate about as many persons as could lie around the fires.

They never used chairs or stools, and slept on mats, with covering of skins of deer, otters, beavers, raccoons or bears, which they had dressed with the hair on. For light, they used the pitchy splints of the pine trees, cloven in two, which burned clearly.<sup>1</sup> They had water pails made of birch bark, and also, baskets, dishes, pots, spoons, etc. The shells of gourds were employed for storage and carrying, as water jugs, dippers, spoons and dishes, and also for pottery smoothers, roof drains, masks, parts of ornaments, etc.

Their food was scanty usually. In summer they lived on all kinds of birds, sea-fish, and berries; and in winter on a great variety of fowls, animals, pond fish, nuts, acorns, roots, corn, beans and clams. They boiled their food in substantial earthen pots which they had wrought, or roasted it on the end of sticks stuck into the ground before the fire, turning these natural spits from time to time as it became necessary. Sometimes a row of such roasts extended around a fire. They had no salt, and preserved flesh by fumigation or temporarily, in the winter, by burying it in the snow. They rarely, if ever, made corn bread, but seethed the corn whole, sometimes using beans with it. This combination was called succotash. They preserved their surplus corn in the ground in baskets made of rushes and osiers, protected with mats. The holes in the ground were as large as a hogshead. In summer, when the dry corn was gone, they used a small variety of squash for bread. Sometimes, they ate all the food they had, and then went without for two or three days apparently lacking in prudence in this respect, both for themselves and their families. Their drink was water. They all met as friends at their meals. Married women were not allowed to eat with them, but were kept back, getting such fragments as they might. When traveling, their principal food was corn, which they had parched in hot ashes, and after sifting the ashes from it, beat to powder in a stone or wooden mortar. It was moistened with water and made into a paste which they called nookkek, and was carried in a leather bag, slung at their back, from which they ate in small

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation,



quantities three times a day, but having no set meals. When ordinary food was scarce, Indians living near tidal waters secured a supply of food from the clam banks. Though food might be scanty, the Indians freely shared it with other Indians or the English, strangers or acquaintances. When one killed a deer, he sent for his friends to enjoy it with him; this generosity was so manifest with other possessions as well that the English declared an Indian would freely give his friend anything he had, except his wife.

Their marital relations were controlled by certain rules or laws. The king, or the great powwows, could have two or three wives, but they seldom exercised the right. Other men had only one wife. When a man wished to marry he obtained the consent of the woman whom he wished to become his bride, and then of her friends; and, if approved by the king, the dowry of wampumpeag was paid, and the marriage was consummated by the king joining the hands of bride and groom. There was no divorce, except for adultery.

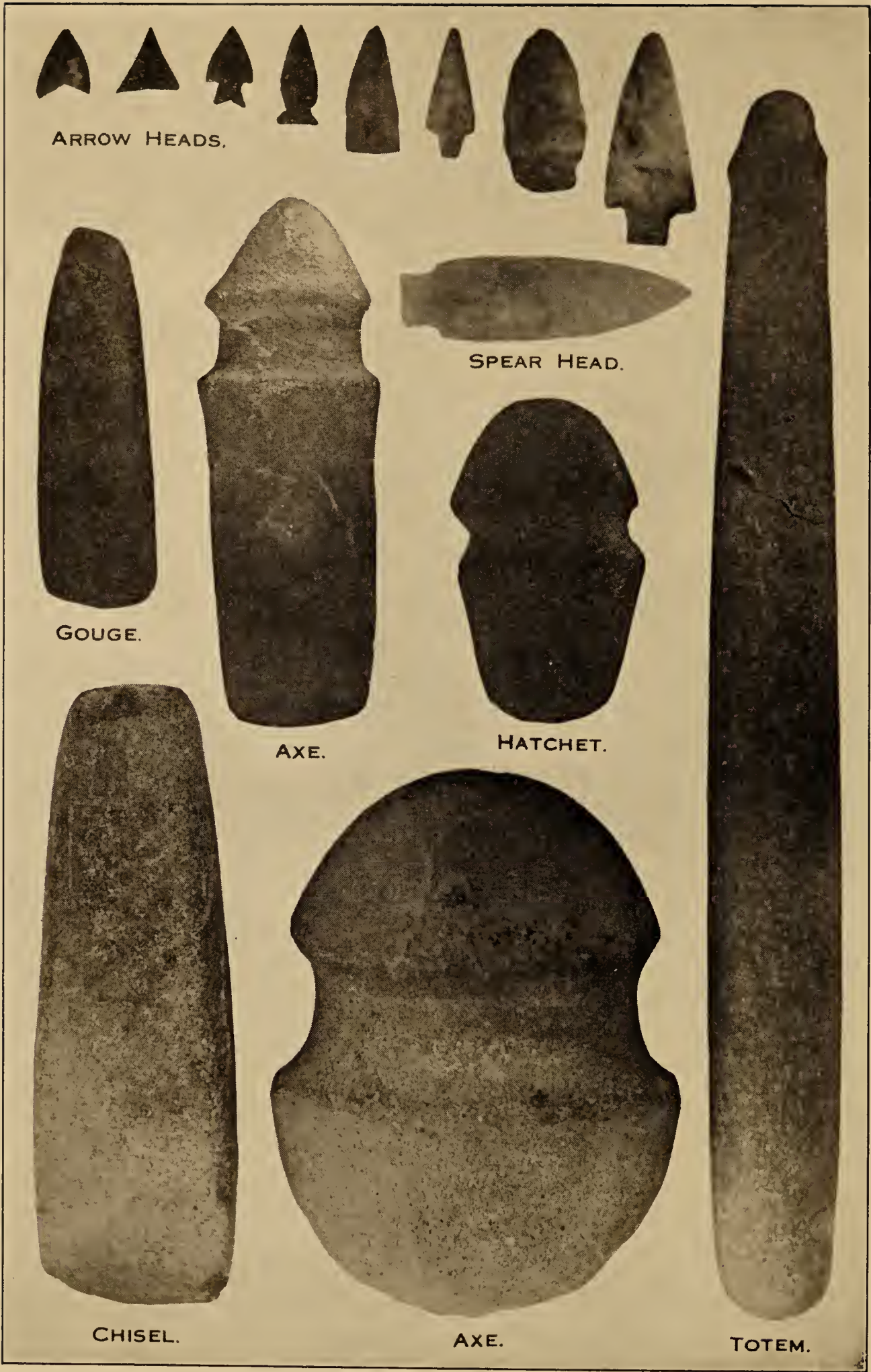
Generally, the Indians were idle, except when hunting or fishing. Their wives or squaws, as they were called, constructed the house, planted the corn, fished for bass and codfish, and caught lobsters for bait for their husbands. They caught the bait daily, whether the weather was hot or cold, the waters calm or rough, diving for the lobsters. They also dried lobsters to keep for winter use, and also bass and other kinds of fish without salt. In summer they gathered flags, of which they made mats for their dwellings, and hemp and rushes of which they made curious woven and coiled baskets with designs of antique imagery and colored with dye stuffs. This was the primitive textile art.

The Indians dressed all kinds of skins by scraping and rubbing, and then painting them with antique embroidery, in unchangeable colors, sometimes taking off the hair. Their bows were of graceful shape, and strung with sinews of the moose. They made arrows of young elder, feathered by eagle's wings and tails, the heads, heart or triangular shaped, being fastened in a slender piece of wood six or eight inches long, and placed loose in the elder arrow from which the pith had been removed wholly or partly, to accommodate it. The arrows were tipped with stone or bone.

The Indians wondered at the mechanical appliances of the settlers, and greatly praised their inventions. The windmill, which ground corn so fine, was esteemed to be marvelous. They watched the motion of the arms, moving about, now in one direction and then in another, to catch the wind; and saw the sharp teeth bite the corn into indistinguishable pieces. The first plowman turning up more ground in a day than they, with their clam shells, could







ARROW HEADS.

SPEAR HEAD.

GOUGE.

AXE.

HATCHET.

CHISEL.

AXE.

TOTEM.

STONE IMPLEMENTS, ETC.



scrape up in a month, was little less than the work of Abamacho himself. When they had become accustomed to these things they showed considerable ingenuity and invention in making things for themselves. If they had continued here in considerable numbers and for a lengthened period, they could have become proficient in the trades, having strong memories, quick discernment and dexterity in the use of the axe and hatchet and such tools. There was but one hindrance, and that was the confirmed habit of idleness.

Their canoes were the only means of artificial locomotion. These were produced in two ways. One kind was the dug-out, which they shaped out of the trunks of pine trees by repeatedly building fires on one side of the log sufficient to char the wood, which they scraped out with clam or oyster shells, and the outside they formed with stone hatchets. The largest of these boats was two feet wide and twenty feet long. The other kind of canoe was made of birch bark, close-ribbed on the inside with broad thin hoops. They were so light that a man could carry one a mile. The Indians took them on long trips in order to cross rivers and lakes.

Many thousands of stone implements and some of bone have been found within the territory of original Salem.<sup>1</sup> The most common are arrow heads, which are of many shapes and sizes from the diminutive tips or points to those large enough for use as spears. In the plate showing some of the principal stone implements found here, the row of arrow heads are representative. All of these, probably, were made here, several places where the arrow-makers produced them being known. One is on the western side of Legg's Hill, and another is on the western side of the ledge at the southwestern corner of Forest River Park, in Salem. Near "the churn" on Marblehead Neck is a place in a ledge of felsite rock, which was undoubtedly worked by the aborigines. Myriads of clippings lie about it, and half-formed relics have been found there. Stone spear heads are also common,<sup>1</sup> and varied in size and shape. The one shown in the illustration was found on the shore of the lake in Wenham. Some are seven or eight inches in length, three inches in width and not more than three-eighths of an inch in thickness. Spear heads made of bone have been found in Marblehead. The stone knives of the Indians were often shaped like a spear head, and with them the hunter skinned and dressed a deer almost as quickly as an Englishman with his hunting knife. A typical semi-lunar slate knife, five inches in length, thin and beautifully finished, was found in Salem.<sup>2</sup> It is a perfect specimen; its back is about half an inch

<sup>1</sup>Many of these are deposited in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem.

<sup>2</sup>This is preserved in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science.



thick, and a little more than a quarter of an inch at the center, being finely brought to a sharp cutting edge. Grooved hammers are also common. They were made by cutting a groove around a large smooth oblong pebble. The handle was fastened to the stone by passing thongs, etc., in the groove around the stone and wooden handle. Small hammers were often used without handles, being held in the hand. Stone axes, generally made of a heavy, close-grained material, susceptible of polish, are not uncommon. They are of many sizes and shapes, and deeply ridged and grooved for the reception of handles by cutting a groove or by leaving ridges toward the head. In the plate is illustrated one of the larger size of axes. It weighs eight and one-quarter pounds, and was found in North Salem.<sup>1</sup> Another specimen shown in the plate was found on the Pickman farm, in Salem. It weighs two and one-fourth pounds, has a pointed head and its blade is narrow with parallel sides.<sup>1</sup> A hatchet, found in Danvers, weighing one and one-fourth pounds, is also shown in the plate.<sup>1</sup> This has a fine cutting edge. Axes have also been found at Liberty Hill, in Salem, on the Brown farm, in Marblehead, on Baker's Island, and in Peabody, Beverly and Danvers.<sup>2</sup> Some of them are sharp enough to cut wood; but it must have taken an Indian a long time to fell an ordinary tree, whether it was soft or hard wood. Several early authors speak of the handing down, from father to son, of the cherished stone axe. Gouges, made of stone, have been found in Marblehead, Wenham, and on Bridge Street and Gallows Hill and elsewhere in Salem.<sup>2</sup> The gouge shown in the plate was found at Beverly Farms, and is one of the best specimens ever secured.<sup>1</sup> Chisels with flat cutting surfaces have been found in Beverly and Peabody and at Fort Pickering in Salem.<sup>3</sup> The specimen shown in the plate was found in Marblehead and is of large size.<sup>1</sup> An adze blade was found at Beverly Farms. Drills and awls of stone and of bone are sometimes found. Four spoons, made of bone, were found in an Indian grave on Lagrange Street, in Salem. One of these, four and one-half inches in length, and of a peculiar pattern, was carefully shaped from a portion of the jaw of a porpoise. The handle was ornamented elaborately by incised lines, placed at regular distances, producing a pleasing effect. Plummets of stone are common, being of the same general pear-shaped pattern, and varying in weight from an ounce to several pounds. Many of these stones are probably sinkers, and some are pestles. Others may have been used as weights in spinning or twisting cords. Mortars were made of wood or stone. Pestles were generally pebbles from the sea-shore, or made by

<sup>1</sup>This is preserved in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem.

<sup>2</sup>These are preserved in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science.

pecking pieces of slate or some soft stone into the proper shape. The Indians were in the habit of suspending the pestle from the limb of a tree, which acted as a spring, and lifted it from the mortar. Personal ornaments have been found in Peabody, and are of various designs.<sup>1</sup> A number of totems have been found here. The one shown in the plate is twenty inches in length, with a snake's head, and was found in Beverly.<sup>1</sup> Another totem, found at the corner of Essex and Boston streets, in Salem, about 1830, represents a bear, and is about six inches in height.<sup>1</sup> In several graves in Beverly, pipes, made from a single piece of stone, were found by Prof. Frederick W. Putnam.<sup>2</sup> The bowls are three inches high and the bottom five and one-half inches long. In these graves were arrow heads and large pendants. In one of them was also a thin slab of smooth sandstone with scratches upon it like a ladder, such as a child might make.



STONE BEAR.

The pottery of the Indians was made from clay, some of it being plain and some ornamented with various conventional designs. Only fragments have been found here.

Fire was one of the best servants of the Indians in working wood, from the fashioning of the water dug-out to the small corn mortar. Trees were felled and cut into sections by fire, and then with stone axes, chisels or gouges, fashioned into a variety of wooden articles. Fire was used to char that part of the material to be removed by these implements. Dishes were thus made.

John Brereton, a contemporary of the Massachusetts Indians when they were in the zenith of their strength and power, wrote, in 1602, that "they strike fire in this manner; every one carrieth about with him in a purse of tewed leather, a mineral stone (which I take to be copper) and with a flat emery stone (where-with glaciers cut glass, and cuttlers glaze blades) tied fast to the end of a little stick, gently he striketh upon the mineral stone, and within a stroke or two, a spark falleth upon a piece of touch wood (much like our sponge in England) and with the least spark he maketh a fire presently."<sup>3</sup> Probably the primitive method of the

<sup>1</sup>See collections in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem.

<sup>2</sup>These pipes are deposited in the museum of the Peabody Academy of Science in Salem. A soapstone pipe has also been found on Salem Neck, and deposited in this museum.

<sup>3</sup>Brief and True Relation of the Discovery of the North Part of Virginia, by John Brereton, London, 1602.



savage was the rubbing together of two pieces of wood,—elm, maple and buttonwood being used in this region. Willow catkins, frayed cedar bark, dried fungi, grass and other easily ignited materials received the spark which was produced. Touchwood of punk obtained from decayed trees were used for preserving fire. From the spark to a blazing camp-fire considerable labor, skill and forethought were required. Fire-making was an important feature in a number of ceremonies as well as necessary for warmth and cooking of food.

Though most of the land in this region was covered with forest, the English found that much ground had been cleared by the Indians<sup>2</sup> for the cultivation of maize, pumpkins, beans (the variety now called seiver), a species of sunflower which had an esculent tuberous root, resembling the artichoke in taste, and cucumbers and water melons. One tool sufficed for their meager husbandry. This was a kind of hoe made of a clam shell or of a shoulder-blade of a moose, fastened to the end of a wooden handle. The Indians fertilized their land, if at all, with fish, placed with the seed in the hill.

The chief animals they hunted were deer, moose and bears; and they also took wolves, wild cats, raccoons, otters, beavers and musquash, trading both skin and flesh to the English. They set deer traps, which were formed of springs made of young trees, and smooth cord that they had wrought. In these traps, besides deer, moose and bears, wolves, wild cats and foxes were caught. Traps of other kinds were made for beavers and otters. They were expert fishermen, knowing when to fish in the river, at the rocks, in the bay and out at sea. They curiously wrought their fish lines of hemp and hooks of bone, and also made strong nets for sturgeon fishing, sometimes taking specimens from twelve to eighteen feet in length, in the daytime. In the night, they went out in their birch canoes, carrying a forty-fathom line, with a sharp bearded dart, fastened at one end. When out where they thought sturgeon would be found, they lighted a torch made of birch bark, and waved it, blazing, by the side of the canoe. On seeing the light the sturgeon approached the boat with manifest delight and excitement, trembling and playing and turning up their white bellies into which the fisherman thrust his lance, the back being impenetrable, and drew their struggling prize to the shore.

For sports they had target and other shooting; and, those involving much physical exercise, football and feats of running and swimming. In football, their goals were a mile long and placed on the level sands. The ball was the size of a hand ball, which they sometimes kicked with their naked feet.

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation.

They had two games, puim and hubbub. The first was a gambling game, played by fifty or sixty pieces of the reed or grass known as bent, a foot long, divided among the participants, after being shuffled between the palms of their hands. Hubbub was played with five small bones like dice, but somewhat flatter, being black on one side and white on the other. They placed these pieces of bone in a small smooth tray or platter, which they put on the ground. By hitting the platter violently they caused the dice to rise and fall, changing their position, and also by the motion of their hands they caused a current of air to assist in turning over the dice as they rose and fell in the tray. While playing they smote their breasts and thighs, crying "Hub, hub, hub," making so much noise that they could be heard a quarter of a mile.

The comet which disturbed Europe in 1616 was noticed by the Indians here. It was to them a messenger of "some strange things to follow." The next summer, "the ancient report, there befell a great mortality among them, the greatest that ever the memory of Father to Sonne tooke notice of. . . . Their Disease being a sore consumption, sweeping away whole Families, but chiefly yong Men and Children, the very seeds of increase their Powwows, which are their Doctors, working partly by Charmes, and partly by Medicine, were much amazed to see their Wigwams lie ful of dead Corpes, and that now neither Squantam nor Abbamocho could helpe, which are their good and bad God and also their Powwows themselves were oft smitten with deaths stroke, howling and much lamentation was heard among the living, who being possest with great feare, oftines left their dead unburied, their manner being such that they remove their habitations at death of any, this great mortality being an unwonted thing, feare them the more, because naturally the Country is very healthy etc."<sup>1</sup> The pestilence continued three years, sweeping away more than nine-tenths of the native population, along the sea-coast for about one hundred miles and in some localities it destroyed nearly every man, woman and child.<sup>2</sup> The body became exceedingly yellow before the patient died and also afterward.<sup>3</sup> Mention is made of "a three yeares Plague, which swept away most of the inhabitants all along the Sea Coast, and in some places utterly consumed man, woman and childe, so that there is no person left to lay claim to the soyle. . . . In most of the rest the Contagion hath scarce left alive one person of an hundred."<sup>4</sup> Morton said: "The hand of God fell heavily upon them, with such a mortal

<sup>1</sup>A History of New England: Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour, book I, chapter 8.

<sup>2</sup>The Planters Plea, 1630; Hutchinson, I: 38, note.

<sup>3</sup>Historical Collections of the Indians in New England, by Daniel Gookin.

<sup>4</sup>The Planters Plea, London, 1630, Chapter IV.



stroake, that they died on heapes.”<sup>1</sup> Capt. John Smith wrote that it seemed as if God had “provided this Country for our Nation, destroying the natives by the plague, if not touching an Englishman, though many traded and were conversant amongst them; for they had three plagues in three years successively neere two hundred miles along the Sea coast, that in some places there scarce remained five of the hundred, and as they report thus it began: A fishing shipe being cast away upon the coast, two of the men escaped on shore; one of them died, the other liued among the natives till he had learned their language: then he perswaded them to become Christians, shewing them a Testament, some parts thereof expounding so well as he could, but they so much derided him, that he told them hee feared God would destroy them: whereat the King assembled all his people about a hill, himselfe with the Christian standing on the top, demanded if his God has so many people and able to kill all those? He answered yes, and surely would, and bring in strangers to possesse their land; but not so long they mocked him and his God, that not long after such a sicknesse came, that of five or six hundred about the Massachusetts there remained but thirty on whom their neighbors fell and Slew twenty-eight: the two remaining fled the Country till the English came, then they returned and surrendered their Countrey and title to the English: if this be not true in every particular, excuse me. I pray you, for I am not the Author; but it is most certaine there was an exceeding great plague amongst them: for where I have seene two or three hundred, within three yeares after remained scarce thirty, but what disease it was the Salvages knew not till the English told them, never having seene nor heard of the like before.”<sup>2</sup> The symptoms resembled yellow fever, but whether it was that or small pox or some other pestilential disease will probably never be known. It was malignant, and raged in both cold of winter and heat of summer. It practically destroyed the shore tribes from Penobscot River to Narragansett Bay.

When the English settled here, the region was practically unoccupied, as the Indians, being few in number, needed but a small portion of the land for cultivation and the chase. It is impossible to understand and appreciate the thoughts and feelings of the red men of the forest as they saw whole tribes disappear before relentless disease, and very, very few individuals left in any of the tribes. Despondency settled over them, as all hope of future enjoyment was forever banished, their spirit broken, and life robbed of its greatest attraction and comfort—human regard,

<sup>1</sup>New English Canaan, by Thomas Morton, chapter III, page 23.

<sup>2</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, 1631, page 9.

sympathy and affection which are found only in society. When the English came, no resistance was offered, nor any claim of title to the land made or thought of. The red men were simply passive, waiting for the end.

The Indians in this region belonged to the great Algonquin race, called by William Wood<sup>1</sup> and other early writers Aberginians, probably meaning aborigines. They were mainly a sedentary and agricultural people. The territory of original Salem was situated within the jurisdiction of two distinct tribes, the dividing line running from the bay up Danvers River, then between the ancient grants of Endecott and Porter, and then northerly on the northeasterly side of Wills Hill, in Middleton. To the east of this line was the land of the Agawams,<sup>2</sup> and to the west that of the Massachusetts.<sup>3</sup> In the town records of Salem is recorded a statement of four Indians, describing the territory of the Massachusetts tribe, as follows:—

Natick: 5: 7<sup>br</sup>: 1684:

these may fertyfie whom it may Concern y<sup>t</sup> we whose names are vnder Riten can testsyfie y<sup>t</sup> the Land w<sup>ch</sup> Is caled by the Name of Salem w<sup>h</sup> Is In Endyan Caled by the Name Naomkag & frost fish Riuer betw<sup>n</sup> the farmes formmy of m<sup>r</sup> Ennekod & farmer porthers farm thence to westward ouer Epswech Riuer the North side hill Caled Wills hill & toward to Andeuor & about meet anny Cross ouer the Road from Salem & the south side the andevor towne soe away toward Shassinck Riuer to the farmms of m<sup>r</sup> Danell & the North said towne of opon & from thence to uppoind to marlden town Lyne Run the south side spoot pond & soe towne to Marlden mill & from thence to wend wenessemett wards all these fower old Endyan men they can testyfie the Land belongs: the saemin not only seallom but also all other town part of this towne all this fower ald Endyan men can testyfie the Land this Is apone ritten this tractt of Land et belongs & properly to won-oppanoshow & Sagmen George ths hee Is her rite there this trak Land & this wittnes hee put his hand Euery one

JN <sup>o</sup> WOUTTAWASHAM	his ? mark
OLD MAGUSS	his C mark
OLD MAWANAT	his † mark
OLD JOHEJEKIN	his ‡ mark

further full vnderstand about that Land or y<sup>e</sup> trak Land so now these two women sagamore George his dafter one her Name Susan and one her Name Sarah & the yong men one his Name dauied & Sam & Jn<sup>o</sup>. This the yong men Sagamorn George his grand Child so this all hee right his Land y<sup>e</sup> trak Land becaus Sagamorn George hee dead this truth no want other wittnes

this Is a true Copey taken of a Endyan the 7th 7br 1686.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Prospect, chapter V.

<sup>2</sup>Agawam means fish-curing place.—*Hewitt*.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts means "at or about the great hill."—*Trumbull*.

<sup>4</sup>Salem Town Records, volume V, pages 93 and 94.



In the registry of deeds at Salem the following depositions were recorded June 19, 1696:—<sup>1</sup>

EVIDENCES RELATING TO NAUMKEEGE

James Rumney Marsh aged about fifty yeares y<sup>e</sup> Son of Jn<sup>o</sup> Indian Testifieth that on his Certaine knowledge that y<sup>e</sup> riuer that runns vp between y<sup>e</sup> Townes of Salem & Beuerly Called Bafs riuer hath allwaies within his remembrance for about forty fue yeares past been knowne & Caled by y<sup>e</sup> name of Naomkeage riuer & that riuer which lyeth between y<sup>e</sup> Towns of Salem & Marblehead now Caled fforrest Riuer: was formerly Caled by y<sup>e</sup> name of Mafhabequa James Rumny-mash perfonaly appeared tendring his Oath to y<sup>e</sup> Truth of y<sup>e</sup> aboue written whom upon Examination I found well to understand y<sup>e</sup> Nature of an Oath & accordingly I admitted him: who made Oath to y<sup>e</sup> Truth of y<sup>e</sup> aboue written this 7. 7<sup>br</sup> 1686. before me Barth<sup>o</sup> Gedney one of his Maj<sup>ties</sup> Councill for his Territory & dominion of New England.

Sufannah Potoghoontaquah daughter of Sagamore George afirmed y<sup>e</sup> truth of y<sup>e</sup> aboue written Euidence of James Rumney Marsh this 7<sup>th</sup> September. 86.

The 17<sup>th</sup> of September 1686.

Thomas Queakufsen alias Cap<sup>t</sup> Tom Indian now liuing at wamefit neare Patucket Falls aged about Seenty fue yeares Testifieth & Saith that many yeares Since when he was a youth he liued with his father Deceased named Poquanium who Sometime liued at Sawgust now Called Linn he married a Second wife & liued at Nahant and himfelfe in after times liued about Miftick & that he well knew all thofe parts about Salem Marblehead & Linn & tthat Salem & y<sup>e</sup> riuer running vp between that Neck of land & Bafs Riuer was Caled Naamkeke & y<sup>e</sup> Riuer between Salem & Marblehead was Caled Mafhabequash alfo he Sais he well knew Sagamore George w<sup>th</sup> no Nofe who married y<sup>e</sup> Deponents Owne Sister Named Joane who died about a yeare Since & Sagamore George No Nofe left Two daughters Named Sicilye & Sarah & Two grand Children by his Son Nonnumpanumhow y<sup>e</sup> one Caled David & y<sup>e</sup> other wuttannoh & I My Selfe am One of thier kindred as before & James Rumnimafhs mother is one of Sagamore George his kindred & I know Two squawes more liuing now about pennekooke one Named Pahpochkfitt & y<sup>e</sup> others name I know not & I know y<sup>e</sup> Grandmother of Thefe 2 Squawes Named Wenuhuf She was a principle proprietor of thofe lands about Naamkege & Salem all thefe perfons aboue named are Concerned in y<sup>e</sup> Antient propriety to y<sup>e</sup> lands aboue mentioned

the marke of  
THOMAS U QUEAKUSSEN  
alias CAP<sup>t</sup> TOM:

Thomas Queakufsen alias Cap<sup>t</sup> Tom: psonaly appeared before me at Cambridge The Day & yeare aboue written & being an Indian of good repute & profefsing y<sup>e</sup> Christian Religion & being Examined

<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 11, leaves 131 and 132.

Knew y<sup>e</sup> nature of an Oath did depose vnto y<sup>e</sup> Truth of what is aboue written y<sup>e</sup> 17<sup>th</sup> of 7<sup>ber</sup> 1686. before me Daniel Gookin Sen<sup>r</sup> appointed & authorifed by y<sup>e</sup> prefident & deputy prefident of his Maj<sup>ties</sup> Territory in New England to be y<sup>e</sup> Ruler among y<sup>e</sup> Christian Indians

Thomas Queakvisen alias Cap<sup>t</sup> Tom affirmed y<sup>e</sup> Truth of his aboue written Euidence on y<sup>e</sup> former Oath before me

BARTHO. GEDNEY *one of y<sup>e</sup> Councill*

The Testimony of old Mahanton aged about ninety yeares Saith that y<sup>e</sup> Land that is Testified about by Seuerall ancient Indians that are Deceased which did belong to Sagamore George as is Expresed in y<sup>e</sup> Euidence is y<sup>e</sup> Truth & properly doth now belong to Dauid that is old Sagamore George his Grandchild & Scicily & Sarah y<sup>e</sup> daughters of Sagamore George & y<sup>e</sup> wife of John Owufsumug now a widow Peter Ephraims wife & y<sup>e</sup> wife of Appooquahamock thier daughter & old Mahanton & James Rumney Marsh by right of his mother a neer kinsman of Sagamore George in his lifetime & This he y<sup>e</sup> Said Nahan-ton doth offer to Testify vpon Oath

Taken vpon Oath the Seauenth Day of October by old Mahanton before me at Cambridge as attes<sup>t</sup>: Daniel Gookin Sen<sup>r</sup> J: of peace & Ruler of y<sup>e</sup> Indians

Dated y<sup>e</sup> Seuenth Day of October 1686.

The Testimony of Daniel Tookuwompbait & Thomas Wauban Saith that Sagamore George when he came from Barbados he liued Sometime and dyed at y<sup>e</sup> house of James Rumley Marsh y<sup>e</sup> Said Daniel heard y<sup>e</sup> Said Sagamore George Speake it & y<sup>e</sup> Said Thomas Saith he heard his father Old Wabun Speak it that all that land that belonged to him that is from y<sup>e</sup> Riuer of Salem alias Nahumkeke riuer: vp to Malden mill brooke running from a pond Called Spott pond that before his death he left all this land belonging to him vnto his kinsman James Rumley Marsh vpon y<sup>e</sup> Condition that he would looke after it to procure it This they offer to Testify vpon Oath y<sup>e</sup> 2<sup>d</sup> day of October 1686. as Witnis thier hands

DANIEL TOOKUWOMPBAIT  
THOMAS WAUBAN

The Two persons aboue named viz Daniel Tookuwompbait pastor of y<sup>e</sup> Church at Natick aged about 36 yeares & Thomas Waban a member of y<sup>e</sup> Church aged 25 yeares being Examined touching y<sup>e</sup> Nature of an Oath they both made Oath before me this Second of October 1686 vnto y<sup>e</sup> Truth of the aboues<sup>d</sup> Testimony as is Attested p me Daniel Gookin Justice of peace & Ruler of y<sup>e</sup> Christian Indians.

John Waabaquin alias John Magus of Natick aged about fiuety fiue yeares doe Testifie that I haue not only heard my aged father lately Deceased yt almost a hundred yeares of Age when he dyed Say But I know my Selfe that those lands where Salem Stands & parts adjacent was y<sup>e</sup> rightful possefsion & Inheritance of Sagamore George no nose Called winnepurkin & his father & ancestors: & doth now belong to his Children & grand Children viz Sicily & Sarah his Two daughters & Dauid his Grandson by his father Deced Ma-na-tach-que and Dauid



had another Brother but I haue not Seen him lately And thier other kindred are Thomas Quehufson & James Runny marsh alias Munminquash and alfoe I haue understood that Naamkeke is y<sup>e</sup> riuer that runns vp on y<sup>e</sup> North East of Salem Towne w<sup>ch</sup> is now as I understood named Bafs riuer

Taken upon Oath before me by John Magus who is a Christian Indian & a Ruler of them at Natick & well understand the Nature of An Oath: Taken y<sup>e</sup> Seuenth Day of October 1686. before me Daniel Gookin J: of peace & Ruler of y<sup>e</sup> Indians p order

The Testimony of John Devoreux of Marblehead aged about Eighty years Testifieth & Saith yt about y<sup>e</sup> yeare of our Lord One thoufand Six hundred & Thirty I came ouer from old England to New England & y<sup>e</sup> place of my abode and refidence has been at Salem & Marblehead Euer Since & when I came hither here was an old Sqwaw Called old Sqwaw Sachem y<sup>e</sup> Sqwaw of y<sup>e</sup> Deced Sachem which had three reputed Sons viz John James & George whoe were y<sup>e</sup> Reputed Sachems & Owners of all y<sup>e</sup> Lands in thefe parts as Salem Marblehead Linn & as farr as Miftick & in thofe dayes y<sup>e</sup> Land where Salem Towne now Stands & y<sup>e</sup> Lands adjacent was Called Nahumkege by y<sup>e</sup> Indians & English Then Inhabiting in thefe parts: Sworne marblehead December y<sup>e</sup> 24. 1694. before vs.

JOHN HATHORNE *Just. P<sup>o</sup> & Coram*  
 BENJAMIN BROWNE } *Just<sup>o</sup> peace*  
 JOHN HIGGINSON

To y<sup>e</sup> best of my Remembrance when I came Ouer with my father to this place in y<sup>e</sup> yeare 1629 being then about 13 yeares old there was in these parts a widow woman Called Sqwaw Sachem who had 3 Sons Sagamore John kept at Miftick Sagamore James at Saugust & Sagamore George here at Naumkeke Whether he was Actual Sachem here I Cannot Say he was young then about my Age & I thinke there was An Elder man y<sup>t</sup> was at least his Guardian but y<sup>e</sup> Indian Towne of Wigwams was on y<sup>e</sup> North Side of y<sup>e</sup> North riuer not farre from Simondes's & y<sup>n</sup> both y<sup>e</sup> north & South Side of that Riuer was together Called Naumkeke So that I remember Seuerall that wrote ouer Then to Their friends in England s<sup>d</sup> y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Indian name of y<sup>e</sup> place where they were building a Towne Called Salem was Naumkeke:

JOHN HIGGINSON

Att A Generall Sessfions of y<sup>e</sup> peace holden at Salem December y<sup>e</sup> 25<sup>th</sup> 1694: m<sup>r</sup> John Higginson Pastor of y<sup>e</sup> Church at Salem made Oath to y<sup>e</sup> Truth of y<sup>e</sup> aboue written Euidence to which [h]is name is Subscribed

Jurat in Court

attest STEPH. SEWALL *Clere*

After mentioning various tribes to the north, Captain Smith wrote: "To those are alied in confederacy, the Countries of Aucocisco, Accominticus, Passataquak, Augawoam and Naemkeck, all these for anything I could perceiue differ little in language or anything, though most of them be Sagamos, and Lords

of themselves, yet they hold the Bashaber of Pennobscot the chiefe and greatest amongst them."<sup>1</sup>

The only Indian settlement in original Salem whose location can be identified from records was near the corner of North and Osborne streets in Salem. Rev. John Higginson, who came to Salem in 1629, stated, in 1694, that "y<sup>e</sup> Indian Towne of Wigwams was on y<sup>e</sup> North Side of y<sup>e</sup> North riuer not farre from Simondes's"<sup>2</sup>

The only sagamore of the Agawams known to history was Masconomet,<sup>3</sup> sometimes called John. Rev. William Hubbard wrote,<sup>4</sup> in 1680, that when Gov. John Winthrop arrived in Salem, in 1630, "Masconomo with one of his men came aboard, being the sagamore, (which is the lord proprietor) of that side of the country towards Cape Anne, to bid them welcome, staying with them all the day." Although the next year,<sup>5</sup> he was banished from every Englishman's house for the space of one year, on the penalty of ten beaver skins,<sup>6</sup> he was always kindly disposed and a peaceable neighbor to the whites, and with four sachems he voluntarily signed an agreement, March 8, 1643-4, submitting himself to the government, and promising to be true and faithful thereto, aiding in its maintenance and willing to be instructed, from time to time, in the knowledge and worship of God.<sup>7</sup> He signed the deed to John Winthrop, in 1638, with his mark. He died before June 18, 1658; and was buried on Sagamore Hill, now within the bounds of Hamilton, his gun and other implements being interred with his body. On the sixth of March following, curiosity and wanton sport prompted a person to dig up the remains; and to carry his skull about the highways in Ipswich.

Masconomet left a widow and several descendants. Thomas Tyler of Martha's Vineyard, in 1673, was a son.<sup>8</sup> Three grandsons, John Umpee, Samuel English and Joseph English, were

<sup>1</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, 1631, page 14.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book II, leaf 132. Mr. Symonds' house occupied the present site of the Upham School building.

<sup>3</sup>Also spelled Masconomo, Masquenomenit, Muschonomet and Musquonomet.

<sup>4</sup>History of New England, by Rev. William Hubbard of Ipswich, 1680, page 130.

<sup>5</sup>July 5, 1631.

<sup>6</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 89.

<sup>7</sup>This submission is printed in full in the Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 55; where is also given the questions and answers as to religious belief, etc.

<sup>8</sup>Thomas Mayhew wrote, in 1673, that "y<sup>e</sup> Said Thomas Tyler is y<sup>e</sup> Sonne of y<sup>e</sup> Sagamore of Agawum, a known man in y<sup>e</sup> Countrey he Sold y<sup>e</sup> Towne of Ipswich all or y<sup>e</sup> most part of it all y<sup>e</sup> old planters know him that had ought to do with y<sup>e</sup> Indians in those daies: George Can Inform Concerning him he that hath lost his nose."—*Essex Registry of Deeds, book 8, leaves 106 and 107.*



living in Middlesex County in the winter of 1700-1. "Joe" English was faithful to the whites, and had been captured in Dunstable, and taken to Canada, but escaped and returned to Dunstable. The hostile Indians determined that he should die, and pursued him constantly. Lieutenant Butterfield and wife, while riding on horseback between Dunstable and Chelmsford, with "Joe" on foot, as a companion and guard, were fired upon by the savages. The horse was killed and the lieutenant and his wife fell. "Joe" and the lieutenant escaped. One of the Indians was left in charge of Mrs. Butterfield, and the other followed "Joe" who ran for his life through the woods. At length a shot struck his arm, breaking it. His gun fell, and he redoubled his speed, but as he gained the thick woods another shot struck him in the thigh and he fell. He heard a shout of triumph of his pursuers, and then a hatchet ended his earthly career. This was on July 27, 1706, and the place was "Joe English hill" in New Boston, N. H.<sup>1</sup> On behalf of the widow of "Joe," the province of Massachusetts Bay was petitioned Aug. 14, 1706, that some provision might be made for her, "for his [Joe's] good service in giving intelligence of ye enemies motions" and "being lately killed in the Country's service." She was given four yards of Duffields to make blankets for herself and two children.<sup>2</sup>

Nanepashemet, the sagamore of the Massachusetts, lived in Saugus, and was killed in an attack by another tribe about 1619. His widow succeeded him in the government, probably because of the youth of his children. She was called by the English "squaw sachem" and she lived most of the time at Concord. They had five or six children and a number of their descendants became professed Christians.<sup>3</sup>

The Indians founded neither state nor city, and engaged in no regular commerce. Here are some of their graves and sites of their habitations and fortifications; but the only impress that they left upon anything was in the names they gave to rivers and localities, which from time immemorial had been their dwelling places.<sup>4</sup>

Toward the English settlers of Salem the Indians then residing here always showed great courtesy and affection, negating the idea then current that they were envious and possessed of rancor and an inhuman disposition. They liked the coming of the white men, probably because their frequent wants might be relieved by them, and in them would be found a new defence

<sup>1</sup>History of New Boston, N. H., by Elliott C. Cogswell, 1864, page 304.

<sup>2</sup>Laws of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, volume I, chapter 61.

<sup>3</sup>See deeds from the Indians to Marblehead (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 7, leaf 1), Salem and other towns.

<sup>4</sup>See Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, volume 2, pages 5 and 6.

against their eastern enemies.<sup>1</sup> They assisted the settlers in many ways, giving them advice and help which were of great advantage to them. The Indians instructed them in the planting of corn, teaching them to select the finest seed, to observe the best season, to plant in hills at a distance from each other and to dress and cultivate it through the season.

Within a few years after the first settlement by the English, the Indians became their wards, and in 1640 laws were enacted by the general court for protection of the corn and rights of the Indians.<sup>2</sup> Numbers of them, as Masconomet, signed a submission to the government of the colony and its laws, agreeing to be bound thereby and faithful thereto. They also promised to forsake their gods, both good and evil, and be instructed in the knowledge and worship of God. In a letter<sup>3</sup> from the Company of the colony, evidently to John Endecott, dated Feb. 16, 1628-9, they wrote: "wee trust yo<sup>u</sup> will not be vnmindfull of the mayne end of our plantacon, by indevoringe to bringe y<sup>e</sup> Indians to the knowledge of the gossell: w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>t</sup> it maye be speedier & better effected, y<sup>e</sup> earnest desire of our whole comp<sup>a</sup> is, y<sup>t</sup> yo<sup>u</sup> have dilligent & watchfull eye on our owne people, that they live vnblameable & wi<sup>th</sup>out reproofe, & demeane themselves iustlye & curteous towards y<sup>e</sup> Indians, thereby to drawe them to affect our psons, & consequentlye our religion as alsoe to endeavour to gett some of their children to trayne up to readinge, & consequentlye our religion, whilst they are yonge; herein to yonge or olde to omitt noe good opportunitye y<sup>t</sup> maye tend to bringe them

<sup>1</sup>Richard Brackenbury of Beverly who came to Salem in 1628, stated, in 1680, that the settlers in Salem and Beverly never had been disturbed by the Indians (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 107); and Humphrey Woodbury of Beverly, who also came in 1628, stated, in 1680, that "when we settled, the Indians never then molested us, in our improuement or sitting downe, either at Salem or Beuerly sides of the ferry but shewed themselves very glad of our company, & came and planted by us, & often times came to us for shelter, saying they were afraid of their indians up in the contry, & we did shelter them when they fled to us, & wee had their free leave to build & plant where we have taken up lands" (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 108). William Dixie of Beverly, who arrived in Salem in 1629, stated, in 1680, that "when wee came to dwell heare the Indians bid us welcome, & shewed themselves very glad that wee came to dwell among them, & I understood they had kindly entertained the English that came hither before wee came, & the English & the Indians had a feild in comon fenced in together, & the Indians fled to shelter themselves under the English oftentimes, saying they were afraid of their enemy Indians in the contry: in p'ticular I remember sometime after wee arrived the Agawam Indians complained to Mr. Endecott that they were afraid of other indians caled as I take it Tarrateens: Hugh Browne was sent with others in a boat to Agawam for the Indianes reliefe, & at other times we gave our neighbour Indians protection from their Inemy Indians" (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 107).

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 293.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 384.



out of y<sup>t</sup> woefull state and condicon they now are in." To emphasize their extreme accountability to God, a law was passed by the general court, Nov. 4, 1646, making blasphemy, by both English and Indians, punishable with death.<sup>1</sup> The powwows also received the attention of the general court, which decreed, on the same day. "y<sup>t</sup> no Indian shall at any time powwow or pforme outward worship to their false gods, or to y<sup>e</sup> devill, in any pt of o<sup>r</sup> iurisdiction, wheth<sup>r</sup> they be such as dwell here, or shall come hith<sup>r</sup>." In each case, the powwow was to be fined five pounds, the procurer, a similar amount, and each assistant twenty shillings.<sup>2</sup>

In the first general letter of the governor and deputy of the New England company to the governor and council for London's plantation in the Massachusetts Bay, dated at Gravesend, April 17, 1629, it says: "take heede of beeing too secure in trusting the Indians, w<sup>ch</sup> wee againe comend to yo<sup>r</sup> care," etc.<sup>3</sup>; and also suggests that they "bee not p<sup>r</sup>mitted to come to yo<sup>r</sup> plantacon but at certaine tymes and places to bee appointed them."<sup>4</sup> March 1, 1630-1, the general court "ordered, that whateuer pson hath receaued any Indian into their ffamylie as a serv<sup>t</sup> shall discharge themsleues of them by the 1<sup>th</sup> of May nexte; & that noe pson shall hereafter intertaine any Indian for a serv<sup>t</sup> without licence from the court." This order was repealed May 22, 1646, being unnecessary, because Indians would rarely enter into service. June 10, 1644, the general court passed a law prohibiting Indians from coming into any town or house of the English upon the Lord's day, without leave, except to attend public meetings; or at any Englishman's house on any day, unless they first knock at the door and then not to enter until they are given leave. They were also to meet in certain places to be instructed in the gospel by some of the English Christians.

The authorities early regarded the possession, by the Indians, of guns and ammunition as dangerous; and the court of assistants ordered, Sept. 28, 1630, "that noe pson whatsoeu<sup>r</sup> shall, either directly or indirectly, imploy or cause to be imployed, or their power pmitt, any Indian to vse any peece vpon any occacon or pretence whatsoeuer, vnder payne of x<sup>l</sup> ffyne for the first offence, & for the 2 offence to be ffyned & imprisoned att the discrecon of the Court."<sup>5</sup> Repair of guns of Indians was also prohibited, and

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume 11, page 176.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume 11, page 177.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 386.

<sup>4</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 394.

<sup>5</sup>Sept. 4, 1632, the general court ordered "that Richard Hopkins shalbe seuerely whipt, & branded with a hott iron on one of his cheekes, for selling peeces & powder & shott to the Indeans. Hereupon it was ppounded if this offence should not be punished hereafter by death. Referred to the nexte Court, to be determined."

selling or giving guns or any military weapon or ammunition was included in the prohibition May 17, 1637.<sup>1</sup>

By a law enacted by the general court, May 14, 1656, no horses were allowed to be sold to the Indians under a penalty of one hundred pounds. Boats, as they were a "means to disturb our peace and quiet," were also prohibited to be sold to the Indians, under a penalty of fifty pounds, by an act passed on the fourteenth of the succeeding October.

The settlers soon learned the evil effect of the use of intoxicating liquors by the Indians, and July 2, 1633, the general court passed a law that "noe man shall sell, or (being in a course of tradeing) giue any stronge water to any Indean." Nov. 13, 1644, this law was so far modified that the sale of wine to the Indians was permitted. In the language of the records, their drunkenness became "swinish" and Oct. 18, 1654, to prevent it, the general court ordered that neither wine nor other strong liquor be sold to them, except by certain persons, under penalty of twenty shillings per pint. In Salem and other towns that had been set off from Salem, no one was appointed to this right.

May 9, 1657, becoming convinced that the Indians could not use liquor moderately, and that "the fruites whereof are murder and other outrages," the general court prohibited its sale to them, under a penalty of forty shillings per pint. May 23, 1666, liquor in the possession of Indians was ordered to be seized; and drunken Indians were to be confined until they told where and of whom the liquor was obtained, and fined ten shillings.

In the letter of the Company in England to the governor of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay in New England, dated at Gravesend, April 17, 1629, already mentioned, says: "If any of the saluages ptend right of inheritance to" the lands endeavor to purchase their titles "that wee may avoyde the least semple of intrusion;"<sup>2</sup> and this was repeated in the second letter of the Company, dated at London May 28, 1629.<sup>3</sup> The general court ordered, March 4, 1633-4, that "noe pson whatsoever shall buy any land of any Indean without leaue from the Court." The policy of the colonial government always was to treat the Indians fairly. It was discussed by the general court, and finally, Oct. 19, 1652, it was ordered, that, being "willing that there may be a free passage of justice for their right amongst us," as well as for the English, what lands the natives have by possession or improvement, by subduing the same, they have just right unto, and that if they come

<sup>1</sup>Oct. 7, 1647, "Upon y<sup>e</sup> petition of y<sup>e</sup> sagam<sup>r</sup> of Agáwam, for lib<sup>r</sup>ty for one of o<sup>r</sup> smiths to amend his gun, it is ord<sup>r</sup>ed y<sup>t</sup> warrant shalbe granted."—*Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 163.*

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 394.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 400.



and dwell with the English and live civilly and orderly, they shall have allotment among the English, according to the custom of the English; and if there be enough for a township of themselves, upon their request to the general court, they shall have grants of land undisposed of for a plantation as the English have.”<sup>1</sup>

The court of assistants, held at Boston March 1, 1630-1, ordered “that if any pson within the lymitts of this pattent doe trade, trucke, or sell any money, eith<sup>r</sup> silver or golde, to any Indian, or any man that knows of any that shall soe doe, & conceale the same, shall forfeit twenty for one.”

All trading with the Indians within the colonial territory was forbidden, except to those men to whom the government had appointed the right by an order of the court passed Sept. 8, 1636. Nov. 13, 1644, this right was placed in the hands of commissioners for the period of ten years.<sup>1</sup> Because of the sale to the Indians of liquor, guns, powder, shot, etc., trade with them was made more limited, and license to do so was permitted only by an act passed April 29, 1668, upon condition that the colonial treasury receive a share of the profits. This act was repealed July 9, 1675. On account of the war with King Philip, all trade with the Indians was forbidden, May 3, 1676, upon the penalty of the forfeiture of all the estate of the person so trading, and in the absence of any estate he was to suffer banishment upon pain of death.

By an order of the general court passed May 14, 1656, no Indian was allowed to train in the militia; but when the Indian war was in progress it was ordered that the Indians be armed for military service.

May 26, 1647, an act of the general court was passed, establishing a court for the Indians. It was to be presided over by one or more of the magistrates as the latter shall agree, once a quarter at such place or places where the Indians ordinarily assembled for religious worship, to hear and determine all civil and criminal causes (except capital) concerning the Indians, and Indian sachems were given liberty to take order in the nature of summons or attachments to bring into such court any of their own people. The quarterly courts might refer criminal matters to them. The fines paid into these courts were to be used toward building meeting houses, educating their poorer children or other public use.

With the passing of the race, laws relating to them disappeared, until in less than two generations neither were in current thought or record.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 86.

## CHAPTER III.

### DISCOVERIES, EXPLORATIONS AND PATENTS.



THE discovery of America by Columbus was followed by many voyages to learn the topography and conditions of the new land, to secure portions of it to the sovereign patrons of the adventurers and to further colonization.

The first explorer to see the islands and shores of Salem, probably, was Giovanni Cabota,<sup>1</sup> a native of Genoa, who had removed to Venice, and subsequently to Bristol, in England, and was afterward known by the anglicised form of his name, John Cabot. He was bold and adventurous, and obtained from King Henry VII a patent to make a voyage of discovery, March 5, 1496.<sup>2</sup> With his sons he sailed in the ship *Matthew* of Bristol, in 1497; and in July passed by the shores of Massachusetts, but probably did not enter Salem Bay nor make a landing in this region.<sup>3</sup>

The next navigator who sailed along the coast was Giovanni de Verrazzano,<sup>4</sup> a Florentine, formerly a corsair, preying upon the Spanish. He was sent by France to prosecute discoveries in the northern parts of America; and in July, 1524, he passed from Cape Cod to Cape Ann, apparently not entering the bay.<sup>5</sup>

The reign of Queen Elizabeth of England was most conspicuous for its zeal in discovery and adventure. Bartholomew Gosnold, in 1602, visited Cape Cod and the islands to the south.<sup>6</sup> At that time no European had a home in any part of America north of Mexico.

<sup>1</sup>Or, Zuan Cabot.

<sup>2</sup>This patent is given in Rymer's *Fœdera* XII, folios 595 and 596.

<sup>3</sup>The *Principal Navigations, Voyages and Discoveries made by the English Nation*, by Richard Hakluyt, London, 1589, volume I, page 511.

<sup>4</sup>John Verrazzano.

<sup>5</sup>The *Principal Navigations, Voyages and Discoveries made by the English Nation* (1600), volume III, page 295.

<sup>6</sup>See Strachey's *Historie of Travaile into Virginie*, London, 1850, chapters 5 and 6.



The next year Martin Pring sailed along the coast for the fuller discovery of the New England portion of the original grant of Virginia. He had two vessels, the ship *Speedwell*, of about fifty tons, and the bark *Discoverer*, of twenty-six tons. The promoters of this voyage were Richard Hakluyt, Sir Walter Raleigh, the mayor and aldermen and some of the large merchants of Bristol, in England, who had raised a fund of one thousand pounds for that purpose. The *Speedwell* carried thirty men and boys and the *Discoverer* thirteen men and a boy, and they had supplies for eight months. Captain Pring sailed from Milford Haven, April 10, 1603. Arriving on the coast of Maine, he sailed southwestward and was the first navigator to enter the bay of the Massachusetts.<sup>1</sup>

Henry IV of France granted to Pierre du Gast, Nov. 3, 1603, the American territory from the forty-first to the forty-sixth degrees of north latitude, making him lieutenant-general of it with power to colonize and rule it, and to subdue and Christianize the natives.<sup>2</sup> But he only took possession of the country north of the present territory of New England.<sup>3</sup>

Samuel Champlain of Brouage in France, sailed from Acadie south, as far as Cape Cod, in 1604, and immediately retraced his course as the natives appeared numerous and unfriendly and his company was small.<sup>4</sup>

King James, seeking a northwest passage, sent out for that purpose a ship under the command of George Weymouth, sailing from the Downs, with twenty-eight persons, the last of March, 1605. May 14, they came to land at the southern part of Cape Cod, and sailed northward to the coast of Maine probably following the shore.<sup>4</sup>

The accounts carried to England by the several explorers were commendatory of the numerous safe and spacious harbors and bays of this coast, of its healthy climate, of the peaceable disposition of the natives, and of the abundant means of subsistence. They also stated that the waters abounded with cod larger than those of Newfoundland, and the hills and valleys of the land were full of animals, furnishing valuable skins and furs, in which a profitable trade had already been commenced. After this time

<sup>1</sup>Purchas, *His Pilgrimage*, by Sampel Purchas, London, 1626, volume V, pages 1654-1656.

<sup>2</sup>Purchas, *His Pilgrimage*, volume V, pages 1619 and 1620.

<sup>3</sup>Purchas, *His Pilgrimes*, by Samuel Purchas, London, 1625, volume I, pages 751 and 752; and Purchas, *His Pilgrimage*, volume V, pages 1620-1626.

<sup>4</sup>Purchas, *His Pilgrimage*, volume V, page 1622; and *Second Voyage of Sieur de Champlain*, 1604.

<sup>5</sup>Purchas, *His Pilgrimes*, volume I, page 755; and Purchas, *His Pilgrimage*, volume V, pages 1659-1676.

regular navigation was continued over the watery track between the two countries.

Possessing such right to dispose of the territory as Cabot's discovery and that of subsequent English explorers could give to the English crown, James I, upon the petition of Richard Hakluyt, then prebendary of Westminster, granted to the Virginia Company, by a patent dated April 10, 1606, the lands on the new shore between the thirty-fourth and forty-fifth degrees of north latitude.<sup>1</sup> By subsequent grants and occupancy the limits of that colony were fixed two hundred miles to the north, a point just south of Long Island, the Virginians having virtually abandoned the New England portion of their original grant.

Until the year 1614, probably no English foot had pressed our soil. Capt. John Smith, who had won fame in the planting and sustaining of the Virginia colony, turned his attention and devoted his energy and influence to the founding of a settlement farther north. He was sent out from England, with two ships and forty-five men and boys, at the expense of four Englishmen, with instructions to remain in the country and keep possession. He left the Downs March 3, 1614, and arrived on the Maine coast the last of April. He built seven boats, his crew fished, and he, in one of the boats, with eight men, ranged the coast southward as far as Cape Cod, bartering with the natives for beaver and other furs. From the observations, which he made, while on this voyage, of the shores, islands, harbors, and headlands, he subsequently prepared a map<sup>2</sup> which he presented to Prince Charles, who confirmed the name of New England.<sup>3</sup> Captain Smith did not plant a colony here, but his earnest and well-directed efforts to do so, and the employment of his pen and influence to encourage colonization in this part of the country, merit and will always receive the grateful regard of his nation. In 1616, he published his *Description of New England*,—a work especially designed to

<sup>1</sup>This patent is printed in full in *The History of the first Discovery and Settlement of Virginia*, by William Stith, Williamsburg, Va., 1747, appendix, page 1; and in *Historical Collections*, consisting of State Papers and other Authentic Documents, intended as Materials for an History of the United States of America, by Rev. Ebenezer Hazard, Philadelphia, Pa., 1792, volume I, page 50.

<sup>2</sup>This was the first map of the New England coast that was at all accurate or in detail. Before he made this exploration he collected all the information he could from previous sailors, but it was so imperfect and contradictory that he declared it was "even as a coast unknown and undiscovered." He added soundings, and marked sands, rocks and landmarks as he "passed close aboard the shore in a little boat" (*Description of New England*, page 205). For several years this was the only guide of voyagers to this coast.

<sup>3</sup>*History of Virginia*, by John Smith, volume I, page 205; and *History of New England*, by Rev. William Hubbard, page 84.



awaken interest in the settlement of the country.<sup>1</sup> He passed the summer after the publication of the book in distributing copies of it among the gentry of the principal towns of Cornwall and Devonshire, the maritime counties of England, in order to incite colonization. Of the coast of Massachusetts, he said: "Of all the four parts of the world I have yet seen uninhabited, could I have but means to transport a colony, I would rather live than anywhere else."

There were sea rovers or pirates along this part of the American coast at this early period, and against them Capt. John Mason and William Bushnell were commissioned, May 29, 1620, by the court of admiralty, to suppress them in the neighborhood of Newfoundland.<sup>2</sup>

The shores of the country were rocky and barren, but inland were attractive rivers and forests and fertile fields; and only enterprise and industry seemed necessary to convert the more favorable spots into flourishing settlements. But the first colonization of New England was ultimately to be from far different motives. While the Europeans were planning expeditions for this purpose, the ever-memorable Mayflower sailed, in 1620, from the port of Plymouth, in England, with a company of Pilgrims, who undesignedly made the first settlement in New England. Their objective was southerly of the Hudson River, but the shoals and breakers off Cape Cod made them fearful, and therefore they determined to settle within the bay. Beside this colony at Plymouth it is not known that a single European was at that time anywhere in the country between Hudson and Penobscot rivers.

The emigrations of the Pilgrims caused a fresh interest in the colonization of our shores. King James was not unwilling to grant a charter for North Virginia, as the northern portion of original Virginia was called, for, contrary to his expressed wish, the Virginia Company had elected to the office of treasurer Henry, Earl of Southampton, one of the influential patriots of the House of Lords. This brought the Company into disfavor with the monarch, and Sir Ferdinando Gorges turned this dissatisfaction to the benefit of North Virginia.<sup>3</sup>

A new patent, called the great patent of New England, was granted by King James, Nov. 3, 1620, the day of the incorporation of the company, to the duke of Lenox, the marquises of Buckingham and Hamilton, the earls of Arundel and Warwick, and Sir Ferdinando Gorges, with thirty-four associates and their success-

<sup>1</sup>Capt. John Smith died in London in 1631, aged about fifty-two.

<sup>2</sup>Admiralty Records, Elizabeth, James I and Charles I, volume 237, folios 30-32.

<sup>3</sup>See Strafford Papers, I:21; and Peckard's *Life of Nicholas Ferrar*, Cambridge, 1791, pages 85, 89-168.

ors, styling them, "The Council established at Plymouth, in the county of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New England, in America." The patent conveyed absolutely all that part of the North American territory between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees of north latitude, in breadth, and "in length by all the breadth aforesaid throughout the mainland from sea to sea." The same authority and privileges, which had been given previously to the treasurer and company of Virginia, were now conferred on them and they were equally empowered to exclude all persons from trading within the boundaries of their jurisdiction, and from fishing in the neighboring seas.<sup>1</sup> Gorges was governor of the fort and island of Plymouth, and Capt. John Mason,<sup>2</sup> who had been in the naval service, was governor of Newfoundland from 1615 to 1621.

March 9, 1621-2, Captain Mason secured from this council a grant of all the land from the river Naumkeck around Cape Ann to the river Merrimack and up each of these rivers to its source; thence to cross over from the head of the one to the head of the other; with all the islands lying within three miles of the coast.<sup>3</sup> This tract of country he called Mariana; but no use was made of it in the way of settlement, or otherwise, by the grantee or those claiming under him.

March 19, 1627-8, the king gave a deed<sup>4</sup> to Sir Henry Roswell and others; and a charter, confirming the deed, was granted to them by the crown March 4, 1628-9, constituting them a corporation with power of government. This charter granted all that part of New England extending three miles north of every part of the river Merrimack and three miles south of every part of the river Charles, etc.

This grant of a portion of the territory already granted to Captain Mason caused confusion and trouble; and the situation was rendered more complicated by the grant of the council to Captain Mason, April 22, 1635, of all the land "from the middle part of Nahumkege River and from thence to proceed Eastward along the sea Coast to Cape Ann, & round about the same to Pischataqua harbour."<sup>5</sup> Captain Mason commanded the South

<sup>1</sup>Hazard, I: 103-118. See Documents of Colonial History of New York, 1853, volume III, pages 2 and 3.

<sup>2</sup>Capt. John Mason, only son of John and Isabella (Steed) Mason, was born in King's Lynn (Lynn Regis), an ancient port on the Great Ouse River, in England, and baptized in St. Margaret's Church Dec. 11, 1586. He married Anne, daughter of Edward Greene of London, a goldsmith.

<sup>3</sup>This grant is recorded in the British Public Record office, Colonial Entry Book, volume LIX, pages 93-100; and printed in Prince Society's John Mason, 1887, page 170.

<sup>4</sup>The reference to this deed in the charter is all that is known about it.

<sup>5</sup>This grant is printed in Prince Society's John Mason, page 209. See, also, York Deeds, volume II, pages 14-17.



Sea Castle, in Portsmouth Harbor, England, the last two years prior to his death, which occurred in November or December, 1635, leaving widow Elizabeth and daughter Jane, wife of Joseph Tufton. Mr. and Mrs. Tufton had sons John and Robert Tufton. To these grandsons, Captain Mason devised all his lands, houses, etc., providing that they took the surname of Mason. John Tufton died in his youth and all the estate of Captain Mason came to Robert Tufton who took the name of Mason.

Robert Tufton Mason was a royalist, and therefore could do nothing toward enforcing any claim he might have until Charles II came to the throne, in 1660. He then applied to the king for assistance, and the attorney-general reported that Mason had a good title to Mariana. The Lords of Trade, before whom the matter was pending, notified Massachusetts to come to court and answer the complaints of Mason. Messrs. Stoughton and Bulkley were accordingly sent over to England, and were heard by two lords,—chief justices,—in 1677. These decided that as the tenants of the soil had not been summoned to prove their titles, no conclusive opinion could be given. Whether or not the Mason claims were in the minds of the legislators when they passed the act of 1657, which held that adverse possession for five years after 1652 gave a good title to land, it was a defence that would have been sustained in the county courts against Mason.

A letter, dated Sept. 30, 1680, came from the king to the Massachusetts authorities, ordering the people to transmit to him, by colonial agents, proofs of their titles. Men were appointed for the embassy, but they declined to act, much to the displeasure of the king; but petitions were sent from the towns interested, asking for protection and the intercession of the king for them if Mason's claim was brought before him in council. The town of Beverly held a meeting Jan. 7, 1680-1, and in pursuance of its determination to resist the claims of Mason the following communication<sup>1</sup> was sent to the general court:—

The humble petition of the Inhabitants of Beuerly in the County of Essex in the Massachusetts Collony vnto the hono<sup>r</sup>able generall court of the Massachusetts Colony setting at Boston febr the 22<sup>d</sup>: 1680-1 humbly sheweth: That wee the Loyall subjects of our Dread Soueraign Lord King Charles the second, King of England Scotland, france & Irland defender of ye faith hauing seene his Royall Comand by his Letters bearing date september 30<sup>th</sup>: 1860 to the Inhabitants between merimack and neumkeag Riuers Requiring them to make Improuement of their Lawfull defence for the lands they possess before his highness in Counsell: And hauing Intimation that wee may possibly be concerned in M<sup>r</sup> Mason his Claime; doe humbly Declare that wee now not by his Majesties Letters that wee are Comprised vnder that

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Archives, volume III, folio 29.

Comand seeing there bee Sundry Rivers named Neumkeag and wee Know not which the Letter Refers vnto: wee Humbly Conceiue this Answer might suffice vntil m<sup>r</sup> Mason or some other in his behalfe do shew vs his grant or Some Exemplification thereof whereby wee may Know whither wee be Claimed be him or no: yet that wee may not Seeme vnto such as Suppose us to bee Comprehended to bee defective in our Alleageance, wee Add that we being many haue our seuerall perticular titles to produce Iff Robert Mason Esq<sup>r</sup> put vs upon it: And hee that hath but one Acre Expects A fair Legall trial for all that hee can Justly produce to plead for it: So that wee can produce quires yea Rheams of paper which wee Conceive it would be presumption in us to desire or Expect our Dread Soueraigne to bee diverted from the weighty Affairs of three Kingdoms for the hearing of: ffor we haue had Above fifty years possession, and Entered vpon the place with the good liking of the Indians the ancient Inhabitants of this Country, wee haue Adventured our liues and Estates, and worne out Much Time and strength in the subduing a wilderness, for the Increasing his Majesties dominions and Customes, And in the late warrs with the heathen haue Caried our lives in our hands to defend our possessions, with the Loss of about twelve English lives of our town, and ex[p]ended some hundreds of pounds to maintain o<sup>r</sup> lands: and in All this Tyme of Aboue 50 years, neither m<sup>r</sup> Mason nor any for him did either take possession, or disburs Estate, or made Demand of our Lands, or Expended one penny to defend them: Wee humbly Conceive his majesties Royall Justice intends not to put vs to the Charges of sending our deedes and Euidences three thousand miles before Any demand of m<sup>r</sup> Mason upon the place to try; at least, whether wee will own the lands his without puting vs to so much Charge: But that which wee humbly plead for is that who euer layes any Claim to our soyle his title may be tryed vpon the place by his Majesties government here: first becaus yo<sup>r</sup> Last messengers weer in England, the Lord Chiefe justices and others did judg it equall that whoeuer Laid Claime to any Soyle within the Limits of the patent, his Title Should be Tryed by his Majesties gouernment vpon the place, and seeing his Majesty was graciously pleased to Confirm this determination and Require all parties Concerned to acquies therein, wee humbly plead the benifitt of that determination.

Secondly Our Charter giues power to the gouerno<sup>r</sup> and Company of the Massachusets to make such Laws and ordinances for the good and wellfare "of the said Company and for the gouernment and ordering of the said Lands and Plantations, and People Inhabiting and to Inhabit them Same as to them from time to time shall be thought meete," now acording to the Laws and Ordinances made by this Royall Authority and direction, haue wee a title to plead for our Respective possessions humbly pleading our titles may be tryed by those laws by which our lands are to bee gouerned acording to our Charter.

thirdly Our gracious Soueraign was pleased by his Letters dated ffeba 15. 1660 Thus to signifie his pleasure viz "As wee Consider New England to be one of the Chiefest hauing enjoyed and grown vp in a long and Orderly Establishment so wee shall not Come behinde any of our Royall predecessors in a Just Encouragement and p<sup>r</sup>tection of all



our Louing Subjects there," &c Wee by this o<sup>r</sup> orderly Establishment did then hold our Lands. and by the said orderly Establishment haue since those letters, held Them twenty years more, and doe humbly desire and Expect to bee tryed by those Lawes here made, which are the means of your and our Orderly Establishment as a Branch of that Just Encouragement and Protection, which wee hope for by the gracious promis of our dread Soveraigne.

Wherefore our humble Request to this hono<sup>r</sup>d Court is thatt Iff Robert Mason Esq<sup>r</sup> pretends a title to any Lands in o<sup>r</sup> possession you will bee Instrumentall in o<sup>r</sup> behalf to present these our righteous please for the lands wee posess, for the just improument of o<sup>r</sup> Lawfull defence before his Majesty in Councill, Interceding that his Royall care and Tendernes Expressed Towards vs his meanest subjects, may bee still Continued to Confirm our Long Enjoyed priueledges granted by his Royall highness and Royall Predecessours, And wee Resolue through the grace of god with Our persons and Estates to approue ourselues his Loyall Subjects Euen to the death: praying to the throne of grace for the Choisest Blessings of heauen and Earth to bee powred upon his Royall head: And hart, and Remaine yo<sup>r</sup> hono<sup>r</sup>s humble petitioners.

In the name and P order of the town

PAUL THORNDYKE  
JOHN DODG  
JOHN HILL  
EXERCISE CONANT  
THOMAS WEST

May 24, 1681, the general court determined that the claim should be defended, the inhabitants to manage their own defence; and nine days later one hundred pounds was appropriated therefor out of the colonial treasury.<sup>1</sup>

Afterward, Mason asked to be allowed to bring suits in the Massachusetts courts, and prosecute holders of the lands he claimed. The general court consented on certain conditions, which Mason concluded not to accept at that time. When James II came to the throne in 1685, Mason thought he could accomplish his long-deferred purpose, and the people of Beverly feared that he might be successful. Some deeds<sup>2</sup> of release from the Indians were obtained to show title; but he died in September, 1688, without reaching the court he sought. His two sons, John Tufton Mason and Robert Tufton Mason, granted to Samuel Allen of London, merchant, the territory of Mariana Oct. 14, 1690; and a second deed is dated April 27, 1691,<sup>3</sup> but probably no proceedings for possession were brought by either of the parties, particularly as the general court, as soon as the charter of the province allowed,

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Archives, volume III, folio 31.

<sup>2</sup>The supreme court of Massachusetts has always construed these early Indian deeds as releases only—not conveying any title, but operating by way of estoppel only.

<sup>3</sup>New Hampshire Provincial Papers, volume II, pages 535-540.

in 1692, enacted a new law making adverse possession for three years a good defence against claimants.

No further steps were ever taken by any one to prosecute the Mason claim so far as it concerned the territory included within the town of Salem; although deeds from the Indians continued to be secured as late as 1701.



## CHAPTER IV.

### THE OLD PLANTERS.



At the beginning of the seventeenth century many Christians in England would not tolerate some of the rites and practices of the Church of England, which seemed antichristian and savored of Catholicism, and withdrew entirely from its services. Others, with no less dislike for the same offensive ceremonies, would not leave the church, but desired to purify it. The latter were called Puritans, and the former came to be known as Pilgrims, because of their subsequent wanderings. The Pilgrims organized themselves into churches, and were persecuted increasingly; some were hindered in earning a livelihood, and others were imprisoned.<sup>1</sup>

About 1608, a considerable number of the Pilgrims resolved to remove to Holland, where they had heard that religion was free, but found that the English ports were closed to them, and that they must leave in secret. They secured means of passage by paying mariners extraordinary prices, and in many cases were betrayed to the authorities, their goods intercepted and great trouble and expense caused.<sup>2</sup>

Forever separated from their native land, their homes and friends, they entered into that strange land, not even knowing the language of its inhabitants. Being plain husbandmen, they knew not how they would secure a livelihood among this commercial people. Very soon they saw grim poverty coming upon them, but met it with faith and patience, and were rewarded with a competency.<sup>3</sup> Others came out of England to them, until their congregation became great;<sup>4</sup> and they lived in peace with, and had the confidence of, the Dutch people, in every way.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 6.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, pages 7 and 8.

<sup>3</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 11.

<sup>4</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 13.

<sup>5</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 14.

After living in Holland twelve years, they found life there to be severe, and looked about for a place where they could find relief. The young, through their heavy work, began to grow decrepit, and the aged foresaw that soon they must abandon their labor, and all were more than ordinarily liable to become dissolute.<sup>1</sup> War between the Spanish and the Dutch was imminent, and preparations therefor were already begun, the call to arms being expected at any time.<sup>2</sup>

They were resolved to remove from Holland; and, ignorant of the perils and hardships of a stormy ocean voyage of three thousand miles and of wilderness life, fearlessly determined that America offered the asylum they sought. There, the young could be reared free from disastrous associations; no civil authority could interfere with their religion; they could follow their agricultural pursuits; and also be the means of salvation to the natives. The thought of the many failures of attempts at colonization almost overcame the faint hearted, but the strong ones were willing to assume the risk. They were pilgrims in Holland; and had neither lands nor homes to leave. The Spaniard might prove as cruel as the American savage, and famine and pestilence as severe in one place as the other. The majority decided to put the design into execution, and prosecute it by the best means possible.<sup>3</sup> Virginia was the objective place of settlement, as the English had already begun colonization there, and the Virginia Company was pleased to grant the desire of the Pilgrims and encourage their plans.<sup>4</sup> The Pilgrims requested of the king freedom of religious worship and, although he refused to grant their wish, he agreed that they should not be molested if they were peaceable.<sup>3</sup>

Thomas Weston of London, a merchant, was interested in American colonization and fisheries and establishment of trade in furs; and hearing of the desires of the Pilgrims at Leyden, he went to Holland to confer with them. In behalf of himself and several other merchants of his city, he offered to provide means for their voyage and to enter into a commercial partnership with them. It was finally agreed that the Pilgrims should establish a town at once, and begin fishing and trade and barter with the Indians; and at the end of seven years the capital and the profits of the colony—houses, lands, goods and chattels—were to be divided equally among the adventurers and Pilgrims.<sup>4</sup>

The Pilgrims sold what they did not wish to take with them, and put the proceeds into a common treasury. Two vessels were procured at the port of Plymouth, England, to carry them to their

<sup>1</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, pages 15 and 16.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 17.

<sup>3</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 19.

<sup>4</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 28.



distant haven. After sailing, it was found that the ship *Speedwell*, one of the vessels, leaked badly. The port was reentered, the passengers of the *Speedwell* and their belongings being transferred to the *Mayflower*. Although overloaded, and to the great inconvenience of all, the latter vessel left the shores of old England for the free land beyond the sea.

Being thus late in the beginning the voyage, winter set in before they had crossed the stretch of waters, and they thought it expedient to enter Massachusetts Bay, although the shore was covered with deep snow and the temperature was low, rather than continue longer on their weary journey. They landed in what they subsequently called the bay of Plymouth.<sup>1</sup>

As soon as possible the men constructed a house of general rendezvous, which was burned as soon as finished. Without shelter, they made the ship their dwelling until spring. Living within the narrow quarters of the over-crowded *Mayflower* for six months, the Pilgrims contracted diseases which swept away many of them—men, women and children. The fish they had agreed to secure and send back in the ship had not been secured, and, in April, when the vessel returned to England, it was empty. The merchants who had invested large amounts of money in the enterprise were greatly disappointed, and many of them refused to have anything more to do with the colony.<sup>2</sup>

The merchants generally were in sympathy with the Established Church and of course had little interest in the Pilgrims other than as colonists and associate adventurers. They caused the Pilgrims to establish a settlement for traffic in skins with the Indians at Nantasket as early as the autumn of 1621. Into Plymouth and Nantasket alike, the merchants introduced persons with religious opinions at variance with those of the Pilgrims, some of them being Puritans, who resided at Plymouth for awhile, and then, from dislike of the rigid religious separation of the Pilgrims, voluntarily removed, with their families, to Nantasket, which was more cosmopolitan.

Some of the merchants attempted to extend the fisheries, and had some vessels engaged in fishing off Cape Ann, where a stage had been constructed. The fishing and agricultural interests were sufficiently successful to arouse increased interest in New England colonization.

Rev. John White,<sup>3</sup> rector of Trinity Church, in Dorchester, Devonshire, England, endeavored to interest the merchants of

<sup>1</sup>Planters Plea, chapter VII.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, pages 61, 66, 74-76 and 78.

<sup>3</sup>Rev. John White, A. M., was born at Stanton, St. John, Oxfordshire, in 1576, and was rector of Trinity Church, in Dorchester, from 1606 to 1648.

that city and vicinity, who were his parishioners and friends and had prosecuted cod fishing and the beaver trade on the American shore for several successive years, to engage in a new plan. He declared that it would be more profitable to have men remain at a stage and make salt and carry on the fisheries while the ships were on their trans-Atlantic voyages. The fishermen were absent usually upon their voyages nine or ten months, and during that time were without religious services. Mr. White suggested to the merchants that it might benefit their own men as well as others frequenting these coasts to maintain a minister at such a place in New England. He also advocated that a colony here would facilitate their business. Many hands could be employed in the fisheries during the fishing season, and a portion of them could remain here until the next season, and in the meantime these men might be employed in building houses, making salt, and planting corn, which, with the fish, fowl and venison, would afford them abundant occupation and support. This would save the carriage of men and salt and furnish fresh provisions for the return voyages.<sup>1</sup>

In this attempt at salt making and fishing, the people of Plymouth met with disappointments and reverses,—their agent proved inefficient, the salt works were injured, the house burnt, and a series of difficulties embarrassed the enterprise. The disastrous loss of property sundered the only bond of interest between the Pilgrims and the merchants in London, who dissolved their association with, and discontinued their assistance to, the Plymouth colony. But some of the merchants, either with some lingering interest in the settlement, or, more probably, with the hope of retrieving their losses, wrote to the colonists, encouraging them that they were “the people that must make a plantation in those remote parts when all others failed,”<sup>2</sup> and consigned to them another cargo of goods, but at unreasonable and oppressive prices. Commercially, Plymouth was not a success.

The fishing at Cape Ann, however, was heralded as equal to that of any region, and attention was directed to that locality. The Pilgrims at Plymouth encouraged their friends in England to remove to the new world, extend the limits of their commercial

He was an eminent preacher, and was persecuted for his puritanic sermons, although he was loyal to the church. He died July 21, 1648, at the age of seventy-two. His remains lie buried in the porch of St. Peter's Church, in Dorchester. He was called “the patriarch of Dorchester.” Rev. William Hubbard of Ipswich, Mass., the early historian of New England, said Mr. White was “one of the chief founders of the Massachusetts colony in New England,” although he never saw America.

<sup>1</sup>Planters Plea, chapter VII.

<sup>2</sup>Chronological History of New England, by Thomas Prince, Boston, 1736, volume I, pages 146-148.



enterprises and establish new colonies. Edward Winslow,<sup>1</sup> a leader of the Pilgrims at Plymouth, was sent by them to England, as their representative, to further the cause of the fisheries. He sailed from Plymouth, for England, in September, 1623.



EDWARD WINSLOW.

Hearing the good account of Mr. Winslow relative to the general situation in New England, the merchants of Dorchester and vicinity no longer hesitated. They organized a joint stock

<sup>1</sup>Edward Winslow was of the best family of the Plymouth planters. He was son of Edward and Magdalen Winslow of Droitwich, Worcestershire, and was born at Droitwich Oct. 19, 1595. He joined the Pilgrims while at Leyden in 1617, and came to New England on the Mayflower in 1620. His wife and several children came with him. He was one of the most energetic and trusted men in the colony; and was chosen governor in 1633, 1636 and 1644. As agent of the Plymouth or Massachusetts colonies, he went to England in 1623, 1624, 1635 and 1646, after which he did not return to New England. In 1655, he was sent by Cromwell to superintend the naval expedition against the Spanish possessions in the West Indies, under command of Admiral Penn, and died at sea, near Hispaniola, May 8, 1655, at the age of fifty-nine, being committed to the deep with naval honors. Four of Edward Winslow's brothers came to New England, one of whom, Kenelm Winslow, who lived in Marshfield, died, while on a visit at Salem, in 1672, aged seventy-three.

company, with a capital of upwards of three thousand pounds.<sup>1</sup> This was generally known as the Dorchester Company.<sup>2</sup> John Humphrey, a son-in-law of the Earl of Lincoln, was chosen treasurer.<sup>3</sup>

An agreement<sup>4</sup> was made with Mr. Winslow, on behalf of the Pilgrim settlement at Plymouth, for occupancy of a part of the New England territory; and a patent was obtained from Lord Sheffield<sup>5</sup> of a tract of country that had been assigned to him in the division of New England. The latter was a leading statesman of England, and a prominent member of the Council for New England.

The patent of Nov. 3, 1620, conferred authority to enact laws, dispose of lands, try all criminal and civil cases, and enforce its decisions; and also extraordinary powers in cases of rebellion and hostile invasions. The unwary king thus opened a new source of trouble for himself, and by his rigid enforcement of the most odious exclusive privileges of the New England Company, was to the latter a prolific source of legal and parliamentary difficulties and popular dislikes, and seriously embarrassed its proceedings.

A division of the territory was made in 1622, respect being "had as well to the proportion of the adventurers, as to the special service, hazard, exploit or merit of any person so to be recompensed, advanced or rewarded." The patentees resolved that these parts should be counties, "to be by themselves or their friends planted at their pleasure or best commodity." They might enact laws "according to his majesty's royal grant in that behalf"; and, further, these "lords of counties may of themselves sub-

<sup>1</sup>Planters Plea, chapter VII.

<sup>2</sup>This new company was known by several designations; as "The New England Company"; "Dorchester Merchants"; "The Company of Adventurers for New England in America"; "The Adventurers for Plantacon intended at Massachusetts Bay in New England"; "The Company in New England"; and "The Dorchester Company."

<sup>3</sup>History of New England, by William Hubbard, page 106.

<sup>4</sup>General Historie, by Capt. John Smith, London, 1629, page 252.

<sup>5</sup>Edmund, Lord Sheffield, was born about 1566, of noble lineage; and was knighted for his good service in the contest with the Armada July 26, 1588. He was afterwards, for some years, governor of Briel, a fortified seaport in the Netherlands. About 1614, he obtained the presidency of the Council of the North, an institution created by Henry VIII. at York, in 1537, after the troubles which broke out in the northern counties, in consequence of the suppression of the lesser monasteries, to administer justice and maintain order in those counties, independently of the courts at Westminster. He held the office until January, 1618-9. The next month, he was appointed vice-admiral of the fleet then fitting out. He was connected with American affairs in 1609, being at that time one of the patentees named in the charter of the Virginia Company. He belonged to the Order of the Garter, and was one of the twelve eminent peers, all inclined to the popular party, who solicited from Charles I the convocation of the constitutional parliament of 1640, which assumed the sovereign power. He died in 1646.



divide their said counties into manors and lordships, as to them shall seem best." They also declared, that cities and inferior towns shall be incorporate and made bodies politic to govern their affairs and people."<sup>1</sup> The king tacitly approved of this scheme. Each shareholder thus became a lord proprietor of his portion, with an absolute title thereto, clothed with all the powers of government, originally in the king, and by him vested in them.

Lord Sheffield became interested in the pleas of Messrs. White and Winslow, and conveyed his part of the territory to "Robert Cushman and Edward Winslow for themselves, and their Associates and Planters at Plymouth in New England," by a patent dated Jan. 1, 1623-4. It conveyed "a certaine Tract of Ground in New England aforesaid lying in fforty-three Degrees or thereabout of Northerly latitude and in a known place there comonly called Cape Anne. Together with the free vse and benefitt as well of the Bay comonly called the Bay of Cape Anne, as also of the Islands within the said Bay And free liberty, to ffish, hawke, and hunt, truck, and trade in the Lands thereabout, and in all other places in New England. . . Together also with ffyve hundred Acres of free Land adjoyning to the said Bay to be ymployed for publig vses, as for the building of a Towne, Scholes, Churches, Hospitalls, and for the mayntenance of such Ministers, Officers, and Magistrats, as by the said vndertakers, and their Associates are there already appointed, or which hereafter shall (with their good liking) reside, and inhabite there And also Thirty Acres of Land, over and beside the ffyve hundred Acres of Land, before menconed To be allotted, and appointed for every perticuler person, Young, or old (being the Associates, or servants of the said vndertakers or their successo<sup>rs</sup>) that shall come, and dwell at the aforesaid Cape Anne within Seaven years next after Date hereof, which Thirty Acres of Land, soe appointed to every person as aforesaid, shall be taken as the same doth lye together vpon the said Bay in one entire place, and not stragling in dyvers, or remote parcells not exceeding an English Mile and a halfe in length on the Waters side of the said Bay, Yelding and Paying for ever yearely vnto the said Lord Sheffield, his heires, successo<sup>rs</sup> Rent gatherer, or assignes for every thirty Acres soe to be obteyned, and possessed by the said Robert & Edward their heires, successo<sup>rs</sup>, or Associates Twelue Pence of lawfull English money At the ffeast of St. Michaell Tharchaungell only (if it be lawfully demaunded). . . the said Vndertakers, and their

<sup>1</sup>This is contained in "A Brief Relation of the Discovery and Plantation of New England," published in England in 1622. The map of New England in the fourth volume of Purchas' "Pilgrims," published in 1624, gives the portions and names of the proprietors, and shows the vagueness of the boundaries of the various tracts.







Associats shall haue liberty and lawfull authority from tyme to tyme to make and establish Lawes, Ordynances and Constitucons for ruling, ordering and governing of such persons as now are resident, or which hereafter shalbe planted, and inhabitt there, And . . . That the said Vndertakers theire heires, and successo<sup>rs</sup> shall fore<sup>r</sup> acknowledg the said Lord Sheffield his heires and successo<sup>rs</sup> to be theire Chiefe Lord, and to answeare and doe service vnto his Lo<sup>pp</sup> or his Successo<sup>rs</sup> at his, or theire Count when upon his, or theire owne Plantacon, The same shalbe established and kept.”<sup>1</sup>

About two months after Mr. Winslow's arrival in England, supplies were provided for a colony and preparation made to extend the fisheries and transport persons “further to plant at Plymouth and in other places in New England,” especially “in a known place there commonly called Cape Anne.” He returned to New England in March, after an absence of six months.

Apparently while he was in England, Mr. Winslow wrote a pamphlet, entitled “Good Newes from New England,” which was published in England in 1624, a few months after he sailed for New England. He wrote: “What may the planters expect when once they are seated, and make the most of their salt there, and employ themselves at least eight months in fishing; whereas the others fish but four, and having their ship lie dead in the harbour all the time, whereon such shipping as belong to plantations may take freight of passengers or cattle thither, and have their lading provided against they come.”

A small ship, of fifty tons burden, was purchased for the purpose, and fitted with new sails. With a company of husbandmen, implements of farming and supplies for the new settlement on board, it was sent from England, and was soon discharged at Plymouth, and sent thence to Cape Ann,<sup>2</sup> taking a few Plymouth planters to aid in building fishing stages. A “great frame house” for the various purposes of the fishery was erected, and during the spring and summer (of 1624) the men were employed in making further improvements and in preparation for those who were to spend the winter there. The colony numbered fourteen.<sup>3</sup> The plantation was stocked with cattle, a house built for the company's use, salt works established and stagings and other structures erected.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup>The original instrument is in the possession of the Essex Institute at Salem, and a facsimile is given in *The Landing at Cape Anne*, by John Wingate Thornton.

<sup>2</sup>*Chronological History of New England*, by Thomas Prince, Boston, 1736, volume I, pages 146 and 147.

<sup>3</sup>*Planters Plea*, chapter VIII.

<sup>4</sup>*History of New Plymouth*, by William Bradford, page 116.



Partly "by y<sup>e</sup> lateness of y<sup>e</sup> year, and more espetially by y<sup>e</sup> basnes of y<sup>e</sup> m<sup>r</sup>, one Baker, they made a poore viage of it. He proved a very drunken beast, and did nothing (in a maner) but drink, & gusle, and consume away y<sup>e</sup> time & his victails; and most of his company followed his example; and though M<sup>r</sup> William Peirce was to over see the busines, & to be m<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> ship home, yet he could doe no good amongst them, so as y<sup>e</sup> loss was great, and would have bene more to them, but that they kept one a trading ther, which in those times got some store of skins, which was some help unto them."<sup>1</sup>

The Company employed<sup>2</sup> John Tylly<sup>3</sup> as overseer of the fisheries and Thomas Gardner,<sup>4</sup> of the plantation. Mr. Gardner

*Thomas Gardner Sen*

<sup>1</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 116.

<sup>2</sup>History of New England, by William Hubbard, page 106.

<sup>3</sup>John Tylly is thought to have come to Salem with Roger Conant, and to have taken the freeman's oath March 4, 1634. He was probably killed by the Indians in Connecticut in 1636.

<sup>4</sup>THOMAS GARDNER<sup>1</sup> was born about 1592; lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; married, first, probably Margaret Fryer; second, widow Damaris Shattuck; she died Nov. 28, 1674; he died Dec. 29, 1674; children: 1. *Thomas*,<sup>2</sup> 2. *George*,<sup>2</sup> 3. *Richard*,<sup>2</sup> 4. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1624; 5. *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1627; 6. *Joseph*,<sup>2</sup> captain of the foot company; married Ann Downing; killed in the Narragansett fight with the Indians Dec. 19, 1675; no children; she married, second, Gov. Simon Bradstreet.

LT. THOMAS GARDNER<sup>2</sup>; shoemaker; married, first, Hannah ———; second, Elizabeth Horne; died in 1682; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 2, 1643; 2. *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 25, 1645; 3. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 22, 1649; 4. *Abigail*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 20, 1651; 5. *Bethiah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 26, 1654; married Samuel Gaskell; 6. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. 24, 1657; 7. *Jonathan*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 12, 1664; 8. *David*,<sup>3</sup> living in 1695, in his father's house; 9. *Susannah*,<sup>3</sup> married George Flint; 10. *Dorcas*,<sup>3</sup> (Dorothy?); probably married Robert Carver. LT. GEORGE GARDNER<sup>2</sup>; removed to Hartford, Conn., in 1673; married, first, Ruth, widow of John Turner; second, Elizabeth (Allen), widow of Rev. Samuel Stone; died Aug. 20, 1679; children: 1. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Dec. 15, 1644; married John Buttolph; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 14, 1648; 3. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 10, 1653; married Habakkuk Turner; 4. *George*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 24, 1654; died Aug. 21, 1662; 5. *Bethiah*,<sup>3</sup> born June 3, 1654; 6. *Ebenezer*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 16, 1657; 7. *Mehitabel*,<sup>3</sup> born April 23, 1659; died May 8, 1659; 8. *Ruth*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 2, 1665; married John Hathorne. RICHARD GARDNER<sup>2</sup>; removed, in 1668, to Nantucket, where he was chief magistrate; married Sarah Shattuck; died March 23, 1688; she died in 1724, aged ninety-two; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> married Bethiah Macy; died in 1701; 2. *Richard*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 23, 1653; married Mary Austin; died May 8, 1728; 3. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> married Eleazer Folger; 4. *Deborah*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 12, 1658; married, first, John Macy; second, Stephen Pease; died in 1712; 5. *Damoris*,<sup>3</sup> died Nov. 25, 1662; 6. *James*,<sup>3</sup> born May 19, 1662; married, first, Mary Starbuck; second, Rachel (Gardner), widow of John Browne; third, Patience (Folger), widow of Ebenezer Harker; fourth, Mary (Coffin), widow of Richard Pinkham; died June 1, 1723; no children; 7. *Miriam*,<sup>3</sup> married John Worth; 8. *Nathaniel*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 16, 1669;

was then about thirty-two years old. Farmer states that he

9. Hope,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 16, 1669; 10. Love,<sup>3</sup> born May 2, 1672. CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>2</sup> removed to Nantucket in 1672; married Priscilla Grafton; died in May, 1706; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 20, 1653-4; married Susannah Green; 2. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born July 8, 1655; 3. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 6, 1656; married John Arthur; 4. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 3, 1658-9; died Aug. 23, 1662; 5. Rachel,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 3, 1661; married, first, John Browne; second, James Gardner; 6. George;<sup>3</sup> married Eunice Starbuck; died Feb. 17, 1750; 7. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born May 17, 1664; 8. Ann,<sup>3</sup> born "30: 12m: 1667"; married Edward Coffin; 9. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born 24: 7: 1668; 10. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born May 27, 1670; probably married Jethro Coffin; 11. Mehitable,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 24, 1674; 12. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 26, 1676. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married, first, Mary White; she died Sept. 12, 1675; married, second, widow Elizabeth Paine Aug. 2, 1680; he died Oct. —, 1689; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 5, 1658; died April 3, 1661; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born May 30, 1660; died Oct. 14, 1678; 3. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born June 29, 1662; married Joseph Henfield; 4. Margaret,<sup>3</sup> born July 14, 1664; married Deliverance Parkman; 5. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born June 9, 1666; died Aug. 10, 1683; 6. George,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 28, 1667-8; died Sept. 5 1668; 7. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born July 18, 1669; died in 1693; 8. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born April 16, 1671; married Maj. William Gedney; 9. Abel,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 1, 1673.

LT. THOMAS GARDNER;<sup>3</sup> merchant; married Mary Porter June 24, 1669; he died Nov. 16, 1695; she died Nov. 27, 1695; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 14, 1669-70; married Capt. William Bowditch; 2. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 25, 1671; mariner; married Mary Higginson, June 4, 1695; died in 1696; no children; she married, second, Dr. Edward Weld; and, third, Dea. James Lindall; 3. *Habakkuk*,<sup>4</sup> born April 25, 1673; 4. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 29, 1677; 5. Hapscot,<sup>4</sup> born July 22, 1679. CAPT. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>3</sup> baker; married, first, Elizabeth (Browne), widow of Joseph Grafton April 24, 1673; second, Susanna, widow of Stephen Daniel in or before 1690; died about 1723; children: 1. George,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 28, 1674-5; died in 1675; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born April 4, 1676; married John Higginson; 3. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. —, 1677; 4. George,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 9, 1679; 5. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born April 14, 1681; 6. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 12, 1683. EBENEZER GARDNER;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Sarah Bartholomew Nov. 7, 1681; she died Sept. 5, 1682; he died May 8, 1685; child: 1. Bartholomew,<sup>4</sup> born June 12, 1682; died Dec. 20, 1684. LT. ABEL GARDNER;<sup>3</sup> tanner and yeoman; married, first, Sarah Porter; she died Sept. 24, 1728; married, second, Sarah King in 1731; died Nov. 10, 1739; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born March 7, 1695-6; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 23, 1697-8; 3. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 21, 1699-1700; died April 13, 1700; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born March 30, 1701; married John Waters; 5. *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 14, 1705; 6. Israel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 5, 1707; 7. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 21, 1710; married Joseph Osborn; 8. *Abel*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 10, 1713; 9. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 1, 1715; 10. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 28, 1716; married Nathaniel Waters; 11. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 28, 1718.

CAPT. HABAKKUK GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> master mariner; married Ruth Gedney March 22, 1696-7; died Feb. 3, 1732-3; she died Aug. 23, 1737; children: 1. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born March 16, 1699; married John Nutting; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born June 22, 1701; 3. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 25, 1702-3; died Aug. —, 1703; 4. Mercy,<sup>5</sup> born April 28, 1705; died Jan. 7, 1732-3; 5. Habakkuk,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 3, 1707; master mariner; removed to Boston in 1738; married Mary Richards of Boston; 6. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 4, 1709; died Aug. 29, 1729. CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> married Elizabeth Weld Jan. 11, 1704; died in 1722; she died Sept. 27, 1770; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 14, 1705; married Jonathan Gardner; 2. *John*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 16, 1706-7; 3. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 7, 1708; died young; 4. *Daniel*,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 16, 1709; 5. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 12, 1711; married Samuel Holton; 6. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan.



came from Scotland; but it seems more likely that he

4, 1712-3; 7. Bethiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 15, 1714; married Nathaniel Ingersoll; 8. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 27, 1716; married, first, Bartholomew Putnam; second, Jonathan Goodhue; 9. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized July —, 1718; probably died young; 10. George,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 22, 1721; probably died young. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> married Sarah Adams of Ipswich (published March 21, 1719); died about 1737; she was living in 1748; children: 1. Sarah;<sup>5</sup> married Joseph Dennis; 2. Hannah;<sup>5</sup> 3. John;<sup>5</sup> blacksmith and mariner; married Mary Fabins (published June 16, 1744); died in 1750; no children; 4. Lydia;<sup>5</sup> married Benjamin Tucker; 5. Israel;<sup>5</sup> married Ruth Hodges Jan. 10, 1754; died in 1755; no children; she married, secondly, Capt. Edward Allen. JONATHAN GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> merchant; married, first, Elizabeth Gardner Dec. 2, 1725; she died April 20, 1752; married, second, Mrs. Mary Avery of Boston Jan. 8, 1755; she died April 20, 1755; married, third, Mary (Pickering), widow of Warwick Palfrey Nov. 17, 1757; died Nov. 20, 1783; she died Feb. 20, 1804; children: 1. ———<sup>5</sup> (son), born Dec. 19, 1726; died in infancy; 2. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born May 25, 1728; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 18, 1729; died, unmarried, May 6, 1818; 4. ———<sup>5</sup> (son), born Dec. 24, 1731; died Dec. 24, 1731; 5. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 4, 1732-3; died March 15, 1733; 6. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born March 25, 1734; married Capt. Joseph Bowditch; 7. John,<sup>5</sup> born March 19, 1736; 8. ———<sup>5</sup> (daughter), born Sept. 28, 1737; died Sept. 28, 1737; 9. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born March 19, 1739; married Jonathan Andrew; 10. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born March 19, 1739; married Richard Derby; 11. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 2, 1740; died at Monte Christi, of smallpox, Feb. 4, 1762; 12. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 2, 1741; died Oct. 6, 1742; 13. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 23, 1742-3; died, unmarried, April 28, 1786; 14. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 28, 1744; married Samuel Barton; 15. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 1, 1747; died Nov. 2, 1748; 16. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born April 11, 1749; died April 15, 1749. THOMAS GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> wheelwright and yeoman; married Eunice Waters Feb. 13, 1728-9; died about 1753; children: 1. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 31, 1729; married Jonathan Tucker; 2. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 13, 1731-2; lieutenant; husbandman; lived in Danvers; married Mary Buffington Nov. 13, 1755; died Sept. —, 1788; had children; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 14, 1734; married Humphrey Marsh; 4. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1737; potter; lived in Roxbury for a short time, then for some years in Aukpaque, Nova Scotia, and afterwards in Machias, Me.; married Damaris Merrill of Haverhill in 1769; died Nov. 21, 1832; had children; 5. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 6, 1740; married John Walcott; 6. Israel,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 22, 1744; potter; married Elizabeth Southwick Dec. 7, 1769; died about 1771; no children. ABEL GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> blacksmith; married Priscilla Stacey Aug. 16, 1734; died in or before 1756; children: 1. Abel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 27, 1736; 2. Priscilla,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 14, 1738-9; married Benjamin McLeroy; 3. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 1, 1740-1; married Joseph Symonds; 4. Simon Stacey,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 24, 1743; 5. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1745; cooper and mariner; married Sarah Brown July 31, 1769; no children; died in or before 1780; she married, secondly, Dr. Jacob Bacon; 6. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 17, 1748. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>4</sup> goldsmith; lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; married Mehitable Pope Sept. 29, 1741; died about 1779; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1743; 2. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 2, 1745-6; 3. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 31, 1747-8; married George Erving; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 21, 1750; 5. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 25, 1753; married William Symonds; 6. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 16, 1763; 7. Elizabeth;<sup>5</sup> married Nathaniel Symonds.

CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> farmer and miller; married, first, Elizabeth (Putnam), widow of William Putnam; she died Feb. 4, 1764; married, second, Elizabeth, widow of Capt. Benjamin Herbert Jan. 3, 1765; she died Oct. 23, 1772; married, third, Mary Peele Oct. 29, 1773; died Jan. 15,

was of Dorsetshire, England, and perhaps connected with the

1784; she died in 1826; children: 1. *John*,<sup>6</sup> born June 23, 1731; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1733; died, unmarried, April 20, 1754; 3. *Mary*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 13, 1774; married Abel Hearse. DANIEL GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> lived in Middle precinct, now Peabody; married Anna Putnam Dec. 23, 1734; died Sept. 15, 1759; she married, secondly, Andrew Conant of Concord July 19, 1764; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> born March 4, 1736-7; lived in the South parish of Danvers; married, first, Patty Williams of Lynn; second, Sarah Upton; died Sept. 1, 1818; had children: 2. *Anna*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 8, 1738; married Capt. Crispus Brewer; 3. *Benjamin*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1757; captain; yeoman; lived in Middleton until 1785, when he removed to Marblehead; married Molly Smith; died at Marblehead Sept. 17, 1813; she died there May 28, 1828; had children; 4. *Daniel*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 12, 1738; husbandman; lived in Lunenburg; married Emma Rea; had children; 5. *Ruth*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 21, 1740; married Samuel Estey; 6. *George*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 29, 1742; died in or before 1769; 7. *Lydia*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1757; married Hugh Clark; 8. *John*,<sup>6</sup> born before 1747; died in or before 1768; 9. *Ebenezer*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1757; married Sarah Whittredge; lived in Lyndeboro, N. H.; 10. *Sarah*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1757; married Elijah Hosmer; 11. *Esther*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1757; living in 1769; 12. *Elizabeth*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1757; living in 1769. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> H. C., 1732; merchant; married, first, Esther Orne Dec. 13, 1738; second, widow Elizabeth (Clarke) Winslow, (published May 27, 1758); died April 7, 1769; she married, third, Francis Cabot; children: 1. *Esther*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 13, 1739-40; married Francis Higginson; 2. *Lois*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 15, 1741; married Rev. Thomas Barnard, D. D.; 3. *George*,<sup>6</sup> born July 20, 1743; H. C., 1762; merchant; died, unmarried, Jan. 1, 1774; 4. *Weld*,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 3, 1745; merchant; died, unmarried, Nov. 2, 1801; 5. *Henry*,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 17, 1747; 6. *Elizabeth*,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 3, 1750; married Ebenezer Stevens; 7. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 12, 1756; died young. CAPT. JONATHAN GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> merchant; married Sarah Putnam Jan. 2, 1753; died March 2, 1791; she died Nov. 10, 1791; child: 1. *Jonathan*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1755. CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> merchant; married Sarah Derby April 13, 1769; she died Sept. 2, 1774; he died in Danvers Jan. 3, 1816; children: 1. *John*,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 12, 1771; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1773; married Hon. Jacob Crowninshield; 3. *Richard*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 28, 1774. ABEL GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> fisherman; married Abigail Chapman May 25, 1760; died about 1780; she married, secondly, Joseph Symonds; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> born about 1761; 2. *Abel Symonds*,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 1, 1774; 3. *Priscilla*,<sup>6</sup> born about 1768; married Edmund Upton; 4. *Mary*,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 1, 1774; married Richard Tufts. SIMON STACEY GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> married Rebecca Knapp Nov. 18, 1764; she died Feb. —, 1787; children: 1. *Simon*,<sup>6</sup> 2. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1767; 3. *Jonathan*,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 24, 1773; 4. *Samuel Knapp*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 7, 1781. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> married Anna Edee of Salem Dec. 7, 1772; children: 1. *Mehitable*,<sup>6</sup> married Daniel Knight; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> born about October, 1775; 3. *John*,<sup>6</sup> CAPT. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> master mariner; married Hannah Stevens of North Andover Jan. 31, 1788; lost at sea in 1796; she died in March, 1805; children: 1. *Rebecca*,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. —, 1789; married, first, Capt. John Allen of Salem; second, Ebenezer Goldthwaite; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1792; died, unmarried; 3. *Sukey Stevens*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 21, 1794; 4. *Hannah*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 28, 1796; married George Creamer.

CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>5</sup> master mariner; removed to Wenham in 1778; became a farmer; married, first, Mary Gale of Marblehead June 25, 1754; second, Elizabeth Pickering; died Oct. 27, 1805; she died Oct. 12, 1823; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 9, 1759; married Dr. Samuel Blanchard; 2. *John*,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 31, 1760; merchant; lived in Charleston, S. C., where he died Oct. 10, 1792; 3. *Samuel Pickering*,<sup>7</sup> born May 14, 1767;



family of Rev. John White, the Puritan preacher of Dorchester.

merchant; lived in Charleston, S. C., and Boston, Mass. CAPT. JONATHAN GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> merchant; married, first, Sarah Fairfield of Wenham Nov. 26, 1791; she died Dec. 23, 1795; married, second, Lucia Pickering Dodge Oct. 27, 1799; she died March 24, 1812; he died Sept. 26, 1821; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 8, 1793; died Dec. 17, 1795; 2. William Fairfield,<sup>7</sup> born in 1794; H. C., 1815; married Elizabeth G. Barker Jan. 11, 1827; died June 12, 1851. CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> master mariner and merchant; lived in Salem and South parish of Danvers; married Sarah West Nov. 9, 1793; she died Dec. 27, 1846; he died Aug. 25, 1847; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 3, 1795; died June 16, 1801; 2. John,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 6, 1796; 3. Thomas West,<sup>7</sup> born April 10, 1798; 4. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 28, 1802; died, unmarried, Jan. 7, 1865; Samuel,<sup>7</sup> born April 12, 1800; lived in South parish of Danvers and Ossipee, N. H.; died, unmarried, at Wolfboro, N. H., Sept. 7, 1856; 6. George,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 5, 1804; sea-captain; died, unmarried, at Somerville, Mass., in 1843; 7. Mary Eliza,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 6, 1806; died, unmarried, Aug. 13, 1875; 8. Henry,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 27, 1809; 9. Elizabeth Beckford,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 3, 1816; died, unmarried. CAPT. RICHARD GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> merchant and master mariner; removed to Boston about 1813; married, first, Elizabeth Ward July 29, 1797; she died April 14, 1815; married, second, Eliza A. Peirce of Gallipolis, O.; died March 10, 1836, at Utica, N. Y.; children: 1. Richard,<sup>7</sup> born May 22, 1798; 2. Hannah,<sup>7</sup> baptized Feb. 19, 1800; died Nov. 11, 1800; 3. Sarah Derby,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 26, 1809; married Walter Kirby Sexton of Sherburne, N. H.; 4. Charles Derby,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 10, 1821; 5. Daniel Peirce,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 26, 1823; 6. Harriet Kittridge,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 14, 1825; 7. Annie,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 11, 1828. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> cordwainer; married Sarah Neal Nov. 4, 1784; died about 1811; she died Sept. —, 1816; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born about 1785; 2. John,<sup>7</sup> born about 1789; died in New Orleans, La., Oct. —, 1817; 3. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> died Sept. —, 1816; 4. David,<sup>7</sup> born about 1792; 5. Benjamin,<sup>7</sup> born about 1795; 6. Abel,<sup>8</sup> born about 1800; died, unmarried, at sea, on board the *China*, in 1822. ABEL SYMONDS GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> carpenter and builder; removed to Charlestown about 1805 and subsequently to Chelsea; married Bethiah Pitman Oct. 6, 1785; died in Chelsea Oct. 9, 1836; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born July 12, 1786; married William W. Oliver; 2. Abel,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 10, 1788; baker; lived in Marblehead; married, first, Hannah Newhall Sept. 15, 1811; she died Oct. 17, 1811; married, second, Jane Bray July 24, 1815; he died May 27, 1872; had children: 3. Joseph Pitman,<sup>7</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1795; died at sea, unmarried; 4. Priscilla,<sup>7</sup> baptized Oct. 5, 1800; married John Wright; 5. Mary C.,<sup>7</sup> born in Charlestown. SIMON GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> married Mary Collins Oct. 7, 1787; died Oct. 30, 1801; she died May 22, 1844; children: 1. Rebecca,<sup>7</sup> born April 28, 1788; married John Dalrymple; 2. Simon,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. —, 1790; publisher of the *Boston Commercial Gazette*; lived in Boston; married Mary Jackson Delano Oct. 4, 1812; died in Boston April 15, 1824; 3. Jonathan,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. —, 1792; died in Pittsfield, Mass., Aug. 30, 1813; 4. John,<sup>7</sup> born in 1797; died Oct. 30, 1801. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> baker; married Elizabeth Bell Dec. 10, 1789; died Nov. —, 1830; she died Oct. —, 1831; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born March 8, 1791; 2. Eliza Peele,<sup>7</sup> born March 29, 1793; died, unmarried, Oct. 14, 1864; 3. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 17, 1795; married, first, Jonathan Berry; second, Jacob Wilson; 4. John,<sup>7</sup> born July 3, 1796; 5. Samuel,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 3, 1798; 6. Ann Peal<sup>7</sup> (Nancy), born July 17, 1800; married Samuel A. Tucker; 7. Mary Needham,<sup>7</sup> born March 18, 1802; married, first, John B. Martin; second, Andrew Dowbridge; 8. Daniel Bell,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 7, 1804; 9. Simon,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 1, 1806; 10. Rebecca Knapp,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 9, 1808; married Robert Marsh; 11. Margaret Hilliard,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 30, 1810; married Joseph B. Hoyt of Utica, N. Y.; 12. Henry Allen,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 20, 1815; 13. Caroline Lovett,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 2, 1818; married

The descendants of Thomas Gardner have principally remained in

Stacey R. Bott of Lynn. CAPT. JONATHAN GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> master mariner; married Rachel Brown Oct. 9, 1796; died in 1839; she died April 25, 1876, aged one hundred; children: 1. *Jonathan*,<sup>7</sup> born June 24, 1797; 2. *Benjamin Brown*,<sup>7</sup> born April 23, 1801; 3. *Charles*,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 22, 1802; 4. *Rachel*,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 20, 1805; married William B. Kehew; 5. *John*,<sup>7</sup> born March 2, 1807; 6. *Hannah*,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 13, 1809; married John Goodwin; 7. *Rebecca*,<sup>7</sup> born March 2, 1811; married Samuel W. Edgerly; 8. *Mary*,<sup>7</sup> born March 16, 1815; married Gurdon E. Denison; 9. *William Frost*,<sup>7</sup> born May 30, 1819. SAMUEL KNAPP GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married, first, Mary Marsh Sept. 2, 1798; she died July —, 1825; married, second, Betsey Marsh July 14, 1826; she died Aug. —, 1850; he died Aug. 16, 1850; children: 1. *William*,<sup>7</sup> 2. *Samuel*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1801; 3. *Mary*,<sup>7</sup> born May 3, 1803; married Nathan Bryant; 4. *Eliza*,<sup>7</sup> married Azel Thayer. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> baker; removed to Gloucester about 1806; married Mary Brown in 1802; died in Gloucester Sept. 21, 1848; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1802; married Lydia (Geadrick), widow of Joseph Greenleaf; died in Gloucester Aug. 26, 1870; 2. *Mary*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1805; married, first, Caleb Goodrich; second, Peter Hazel; 3. *William Luther*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1807; 4. *Eliza*,<sup>7</sup> 5. *Nancy*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1814; 6. *Edward Currier*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1815; 7. *Rachel*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1818; 8. *Abigail*,<sup>7</sup> born March 7, 1823. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>6</sup> baker; removed to Cambridge about 1821; married Martha Southwick Nov. 10, 1816; died in Cambridge Aug. 26, 1834; she died there Dec. 11, 1835; children: 1. *Martha Ann*,<sup>7</sup> born May 7, 1817; married Samuel Holt; 2. *Eben S.*,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 2, 1819; lived in Charlestown, Cambridge and Somerville; married Abigail Rice; died in Somerville July 7, 1896; 3. *John Wesley*,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. —, 1823; 4. *Harriet F.*,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 2, 1833.

CAPT. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> merchant; went to Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, about 1829, and after twenty years removed to New Brighton, Staten Island, N. Y.; married Maria Cecelia Endicott Aug. 19, 1822; died at New Brighton Feb. 17, 1870; children: 1. *John Endicott*,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 3, 1823; married Anna Rose Humber; died Nov. 22, 1864; 2. *Mary Putnam*,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 25, 1825; died Dec. 18, 1827; 3. *Emily Maria*,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 15, 1830, in Rio de Janeiro; 4. *Samuel Endicott*,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 14, 1833; died Feb. —, 1833; 5. *George Endicott*,<sup>8</sup> born May 4, 1835, in Rio de Janeiro; 6. *William*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 9, 1836. CAPT. THOMAS WEST GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> master mariner; removed to Rio de Janeiro about 1836; married Mary W. Peirce; died in Rio de Janeiro about 1845; children: 1. *Thomas F.*,<sup>8</sup> born about 1833; lived in Rio de Janeiro; 2. *Henry*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 1, 1834, in Pottsville, Pa.; 3. *Mary*,<sup>8</sup> born about 1838, in Rio de Janeiro; 4. *Charles W.*,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 4, 1840, in Rio de Janeiro. HENRY GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> merchant; lived in Rio de Janeiro from 1833 to 1845, then in Peabody summers, and in Salem winters; married Elizabeth R. Gillis Feb. 20, 1866; died Jan. 20, 1890; she died March 15, 1906; children: 1. *Elizabeth West*,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 2, 1867; married Benjamin P. Ellis of Dover, Mass.; 2. *Elinor Putnam*,<sup>8</sup> born March 28, 1870; married Harry Sutton; 3. *Henry*,<sup>8</sup> born June 8, 1872; mechanical engineer; lives in Salem. RICHARD GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> H. C., 1816; school teacher; lived in Salem and Gloucester; married Abigail Phippen West Nov. 25, 1835; died April 22, 1875; children: 1. *Henry Richard*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 18, 1836; lived in Cambridge; married Ellen K. Hodges; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>8</sup> died young; 3. *Francis*,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 27, 1840, in Gloucester; died, unmarried, in Salem Nov. 6, 1860. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> barber; removed to Portland, Me., in 1814, and returned to Salem about 1868; married Nancy Thayer April 24, 1808; died June 27, 1870; children: 1. *Sarah Neal*,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 23, 1809; never married; removed to Louisville, Ky., in 1903. 2. *Abel Henry*,<sup>8</sup> died in Portland Nov. 25, 1815; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>8</sup> born about February, 1812; died Nov. 25, 1815; 4. *Edward Augustus*,<sup>8</sup> born



Salem, where they have always been numerous and prominent.

April —, 1813; lived in Louisville, Ky.; married Laurina P. Holm; 5. Nancy,<sup>8</sup> born about 1813; died in Portland Aug. 9, 1820; 6. Joseph,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 21, 1815; watchmaker; lived in Boston; married Mary Conley; died March 28, 1883; 7. Abel Henry,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 17, 1826, in Portland; 8. William O.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1831, in Portland. DAVID GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> mason; married, first, Jane Johnson of Andover Dec. 15, 1816; she died April 5, 1826; married, second, Hannah (Brown), widow of Burpee Ames Sept. 10, 1835; died Nov. 6, 1864; children: 1. —,<sup>8</sup> died March —, 1818; 2. —,<sup>8</sup> born about July, 1820; died Sept. —, 1821; 3. Sarah Ellen,<sup>8</sup> born about 1823; died Sept. 23, 1862, unmarried; 4. David H.,<sup>8</sup> born about 1825; tailor; died May 1, 1850, unmarried. BENJAMIN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> barber; lived in Portsmouth, N. H., and returned to Salem about 1828; married Betsey Nichols Oct. 10, 1815; died Jan. 2, 1872; children: 1. Mary Ann;<sup>8</sup> died in infancy; 2. Eliza A.,<sup>8</sup> born April 21, 1817; married Joseph L. Glidden of Wolfboro, N. H.; 3. Samuel S.,<sup>8</sup> died in 1819; 4. Sarah,<sup>8</sup> born about 1819; married Isaac C. Brooks; 5. Benjamin,<sup>8</sup> born about 1821; lived at Millburn, Ill.; married Ellen Wilkinson of Rochester, N. H.; died about 1888; 6. Abel;<sup>8</sup> died young; 7. John Henry,<sup>8</sup> born about 1823; lived at Key West, Fla.; married Elizabeth Roberts April 22, 1850; died about 1887; 8. —,<sup>8</sup> (son), born about May, 1826; died Sept. —, 1827; 9. Charles,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 9, 1827, at Portsmouth; merchant tailor; lived in Gloucester; married, first, Eleanor B. Campbell June 11, 1849; second, Sarah M. Courtney; died in Gloucester June 17, 1905; 10. James William;<sup>8</sup> carpenter; never married; lived at Salem and Boxford, and removed to Millburn, Ill., about 1882; 11. Mary Abbey,<sup>8</sup> born about 1834; married Charles H. Lewis; 12. Abel,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 16, 1837. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> baker; married Eunice Tucker July 18, 1813; died May 5, 1854; she died Jan. 2, 1882; children: 1. Sarah Tewksbury,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 8, 1813; married Rev. Lorenzo D. Bragg; 2. Eunice,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 10, 1815; married, first, Matthew Little; second, Dr. Perry; 3. Emeline Augusta,<sup>8</sup> born May 28, 1817; married, first, Dr. John J. Harvey of Lowell; second, William Sage; 4. Mary Ann,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 2, 1820; married Timothy Favor; 5. Joseph,<sup>8</sup> born May 25, 1822; 6. Abbie,<sup>8</sup> born April 7, 1824; married Edwin Stearns; 7. Mercy Wellman,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 16, 1826; married, first Horatio Hitchings; second, Edmund Nourse, both of Lynn; 8. Ruth,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 1, 1828; married Moses Moody Stearns; 9. Margaret M.,<sup>8</sup> born April 26, 1830; married George W. Quint of Lynn; 10. Timothy,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 18, 1833; died Sept. 26, 1833; 11. Timothy F.,<sup>8</sup> born July 11, 1834; died by accident April 28, 1849. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> baker; married, first, Abigail Richardson June 2, 1816; she died March —, 1821; married, second, Elizabeth Rowell May 26, 1822; died May 3, 1846; she died May 5, 1862, at Taunton; children: 1. John,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 20, 1816; tailor; lived in Marblehead; married Susan L. Goldthwait of Marblehead Dec. 16, 1858; died April 20, 1880; she subsequently lived in Salem, and died Aug. 8, 1894; 2. Joseph,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. —, 1819; 3. Margaret Ann,<sup>8</sup> born in 1820; died Aug. 24, 1821; 4. George A.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1824; died April —, 1826; 5. George A.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1826; 6. William,<sup>8</sup> born about 1829; died in San Francisco, Cal., unmarried, Dec. 1, 1849. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> stabler; married Sarah (Fabens), widow of Elisha Perkins Nov. 19, 1833; died June 22, 1859; she died Aug. 2, 1863; child: 1. Elizabeth Bell,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 3, 1837; married Capt. W. H. A. Putnam. DANIEL BELL GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> grocer and clothier; married Elizabeth B. Manning April 15, 1824; she died March 25, 1874; he died Dec. 28, 1875; children: 1. Henry Massey,<sup>8</sup> born about 1827; died Feb. 28, 1851, unmarried; 2. Thomas Needham,<sup>8</sup> born about 1831; 3. Daniel B.,<sup>8</sup> born March 11, 1832; 4. Alden B.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1835; died March 28, 1846; 5. Pierce L. Wiggin,<sup>8</sup> born about 1837; wholesale grocer; died, unmarried, Feb. 17, 1858; 6. Anna B.,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 27, 1838;

The ship-carpenter, who was sent to the colony, was honest and industrious and caused the men under him to follow their

married James B. Bott; 7. Louisa G.,<sup>8</sup> born about 1843; married John A. Kendall; 8. Mary Manning,<sup>8</sup> born in 1846; married Lewis W. Kelley. SIMON GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> baker; married Hannah Shale Swan March 15, 1832; she died April 14, 1878; he died Feb. 27, 1888; children: 1. Benjamin Franklin,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 20, 1836; surgeon in Civil War; subsequently lived at Raleigh, N. C., and Bloomsburg, Pa.; 2. Frances Ellen,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 31, 1837; died, unmarried, Feb. 7, 1916; 3. Hannah Wallis,<sup>8</sup> born March 20, 1839; married Charles E. Burns; 4. Simon Warren,<sup>8</sup> born in 1840; died June 4, 1840; 5. Harriet Newell,<sup>8</sup> born May 16, 1842; married Dr. Henry E. Pope; 6. Simon Wesley,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 6, 1844; dealer in druggist's supplies; lived in Texas; died at Chapel Hill, Texas, of yellow fever, in 1868; 7. *Horace Bell*,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 16, 1845; 8. *Howard Punchard*,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 8, 1847; 9. Willis,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 20, 1849; died April 22, 1863; 10. *Andrew Dowbridge*,<sup>8</sup> born May 2, 1851; 11. Miranda Swan,<sup>8</sup> born April 20, 1853; died March 9, 1855; 12. Joseph Henry,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 7, 1858; died Dec. 10, 1858. HENRY ALLEN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> hairdresser; lived in Charlestown and Chelsea, and returned to Salem in 1869; married Margaret Hall of New York March 4, 1840; died Jan. 27, 1886; she died Sept. 10, 1890; children: 1. Louisa Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> born June 12, 1842; died March 15, 1848; 2. Warren Henry,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 2, 1843; died in the War July 7, 1862; 3. George Thomas,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 24, 1846; died in the War at New Orleans, La.; 4. Adelaide Theresa,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 19, 1847; died June 30, 1859; 5. Emma Martha,<sup>8</sup> born June 2, 1850; married A. Rufus S. Tayte; 6. *Andrew Dowbridge*,<sup>8</sup> born March 1, 1851, in Charlestown; 7. Simon Winthrop,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 20, 1854, in Charlestown; barber; lived in Salem; married Emma S. Kilham; died Nov. 24, 1904; no children; 8. Frances Ellen,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 16, 1855; married George William Douglas (Strout). JONATHAN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> cooper and mariner; lived at Mt. Desert, Me., for several years, and returned to Salem about 1842; married, first, Eliza Hodgkinson; second, Eunice S. Hodgdon July 1, 1830; she died April 8, 1869; he died Nov. 22, 1874; children: 1. Henrietta,<sup>8</sup> born July 31, 1831; died Aug. 5, 1831, in Salem; 2. William Henry,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 13, 1832; died Aug. 4, 183-, in Salem; 3. Mary Frances,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 30, 1826; married John T. Huff; 4. Charles Henry,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 18, 1841; blacksmith; married, first, Eliza I. Jones July 15, 1867; she died in Somerville, Me., in 1869; married, second, Laura (Archer), widow of Albert W. Brown Oct. 20, 1879; died in Salem Nov. 11, 1908; no children; 5. Lucy F.,<sup>8</sup> born March 30, 1844; married John R. Beals. BENJAMIN BROWN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> cooper; married Lucy Foster Wilson Dec. 28, 1823; died July 16, 1845; she died Oct. 6, 1863; children: 1. Lucy Ann Wilson,<sup>8</sup> born March 20, 1824; married Samuel Brown; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 28, 1825; died young; 3. Francis Alonzo,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 8, 1829; machinist; lived in Waterbury and Danbury, Conn., Easthampton and Florence, Mass., and Brooklyn, N. Y.; married, first, Etta Hotchkiss about 1856; she died Feb. —, 1861; married, second, Charlotte Wylles Taft; she died March 27, 1900, in Easthampton; he died May 11, 1904, in Salem; 4. Walter Balfour,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 9, 1833; machinist; lived in Charlestown and Cambridge; married Mary Augusta Downs Feb. 25, 1860; died Nov. 3, 1899, in Cambridge; 5. *Stephen Wilson*,<sup>8</sup> born June 12, 1835; 6. *Joseph Dennett*,<sup>8</sup> born March 4, 1836; 7. Caroline Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> born April —, 1838; died June —, 1838. CHARLES GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> cabinet-maker; removed to Charleston, S. C., in 1853; married, first, Hannah Elwell Jan. 22, 1826; she died Jan. 11, 1849; married, second, Mahala — of Lowell; died in North Carolina in 1862 or 1863; children: 1. Charles J.,<sup>8</sup> born March 19, 1827; married Harriet Martin; died in Eureka, Cal., Sept. 7, 1893; 2. Mary Ann,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 22, 1832; married Joseph Stillman Bosworth;



work diligently. He quickly built two strong shallops, which were

3. Benjamin Brown,<sup>8</sup> born about 1838; lived in California and Union City, Ore., died in the Military Hospital, Rainsford Island, Boston Harbor, April 10, 1866. JOHN GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> carpenter; married Hannah H. Goodwin June 18, 1829; died May 14, 1870; she died in South Boston Dec. 26, 1886; children: 1. John H.,<sup>8</sup> born April 1, 1829; died April 3, 1829; 2. Jane G.,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 1, 1830; married Harvey Waite; 3. John Brown,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 15, 1831; married Eunice F. Wheeler in Boston; died March 22, 1895; she died April 28, 1903; 4. *George W.*,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 1, 1835; 5. Susan M.,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 25, 1836, in Lynn; married, first, Maj. Seth S. Buxton; second, Henry C. Dimond; 6. William Francis,<sup>8</sup> born May 3, 1840; butcher and car-inspector; lived in South Boston; married Eliza R. Evans of South Boston Jan. 24, 1865; 7. Charles H.,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. —, 1845; died Jan. 14, 1846; 8. Albert G.,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 30, 1846; stair builder; lived in Boston, New Bedford and South Dartmouth, and returned to Salem; married, first, Emma K. Congdon in South Boston; second, Abby Garrison (Head), widow of Daniel Spooner; died in the Soldiers' Home at Chelsea Jan. 27, 1906; 9. Adaline D.,<sup>8</sup> born June 27, 1845; married, first, Horace Whitcomb; second, Walter Fales; 10. Edward Warren,<sup>8</sup> born June 2, 1849; stair builder; lives in Boston; married Emma Estella Mitchell. WILLIAM FROST GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> carpenter; married Mary H. Ingalls May 27, 1841; she died Sept. 28, 1898; he died Dec. 3, 1902; children: 1. *William D.*,<sup>8</sup> born April 24, 1842; 2. Rebecca M.,<sup>8</sup> born June 3, 1845; died June 3, 1845; 3. Wilson I.,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 4, 1848; died Sept. 7, 1848; 4. Joseph M.,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 3, 1850; died Jan. 4, 1850; 5. Frederick Mack,<sup>8</sup> born March 24, 1858; Baptist clergyman; settled at Winthrop, Lawrence and Boston; married Annie L. Peckham. WILLIAM GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> married, first, Lydia N. Peele Oct. 10, 1827; second, Martha (Grush), widow of John Cassino Dec. 12, 1838; was robbed and murdered on the Isthmus of Panama in 1852, while returning from California; she died Jan. 29, 1888; children: 1. *William Henry*,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 1, 1841; 2. Charles Warren,<sup>8</sup> born June 18, 1843; barber and picture-frame maker; removed to Chelsea in 1875, and subsequently to Somerville; married Martha Washington Dam June 25, 1869. SAMUEL GARDNER;<sup>7</sup> married Sarah Edwards April 3, 1821; she died Feb. 15, 1880; children: 1. Eliza Ann;<sup>8</sup> married, first, Cyrus Bullock; second, Charles Durgin, both of Boston; third, John Kennedy; 2. Mary Jane;<sup>8</sup> married Luther C. Butman; 3. Caroline (or Matilda),<sup>8</sup> born in 1826; married George Stevens of Roxbury; 4. Sarah Helen,<sup>8</sup> born April —, 1829; married, first, Joseph B. Swaney; second, John F. Gibson; 5. Edward Edwards,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 4, 1831; gardener; died, unmarried, May 29, 1907; 6. William Henry,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. —, 1834; florist; died, unmarried, Oct. 25, 1883; 7. Benjamin Smithurst,<sup>8</sup> born in 1839; shoemaker; died, unmarried, Jan. 21, 1873; 8. Harriet L.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1843; died, unmarried, Sept. 20, 1908.

HENRY GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> married Sarah E. Jelly June 23, 1863; died July 19, 1888; she died March 11, 1890; children: 1. Thomas H.,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 2, 1867; died in California, unmarried, Feb. 17, 1891; 2. Fanny,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 6, 1875; died July 30, 1896, unmarried. CHARLES W. GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> letter carrier; married Melvina T. Hitchings Sept. 3, 1861; she died June 7, 1905; he died Oct. 30, 1913; children: 1. Mary E.,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 3, 1862; married Frank P. Tucker of Peabody; 2. Caroline F.,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 13, 1864; married Frank W. Stiles of Springvale, Me.; lives in Beverly; 3. *Charles F.*,<sup>9</sup> born Dec. 21, 1870. ABEL GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> lived in Salem and Boxford, and removed to Somerville in 1805; married Emily G. Russell Sept. 27, 1861; she died Jan. 10, 1887; he died in Somerville Aug. 23, 1898; child: 1. *Arthur W.*,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 20, 1867. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> married Eliza C. Gove (published June 25, 1850); died May 4, 1873; she lived in Arlington; children: 1. Franklin Augustus,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 11, 1856; physician in Washington, D. C.; married

afterwards of great service to the colonists, and a strong large

Annie Webb March 19, 1883; died at Washington Feb. 13, 1903; 2. Carrie S.;<sup>9</sup> married Edward A. Smith; 3. Charles H.;<sup>9</sup> died young; 4. Lillie J.;<sup>9</sup> died young; 5. Helen J.;<sup>9</sup> died young. JOSEPH GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> carpenter; married Caroline L. Hill Sept. 28, 1843; died Jan. 15, 1881; she died in Lynn June 28, 1896; children: 1. Adelaide,<sup>9</sup> born Dec. 26, 1850; married James H. Conner of Lynn; 2. Joseph H.;<sup>9</sup> died in infancy; 3. Lucy A.;<sup>9</sup> died young. GEORGE A. GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> carpenter and painter; married Hannah S. Hazelton; died May 28, 1865; she died in Norton Dec. 8, 1871; children: 1. Ann Rebecca,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 5, 1851; married, first, Levi H. Bracket; second, George E. Perkins at South Acton, Me.; 2. Clara Isabella,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 25, 1854; married Edward B. Goldsmith. THOMAS NEEDHAM GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> grocer; married, first, Mary E. Fabens May —, 1853; she died Aug. 10, 1857; married, second, Agnes Littlefield March 5, 1863; died Feb. 6, 1875; she married, second, Perez L. Winchester of Peabody March 20, 1890; children: 1. *Alden B.*,<sup>9</sup> born June 23, 1853; 2. *Edson Fabens*,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 21, 1868. DANIEL B. GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> grocer; married N. Augusta (Rogers), widow of Robert Putnam Barr Oct. 7, 1867; died Oct. 23, 1893; child: 1. Gertrude E.,<sup>9</sup> born June 29, 1869; married Dr. Harry R. Peach. HORACE BELL GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> baker and gardener; married Mary J. Lord May 2, 1867; she died April 10, 1869; child: 1. Hattie L.,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 1, 1867; died Feb. 3, 1871. HOWARD PUNCHARD GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> mariner and baker; removed to Marblehead in 1893; married Mary Elizabeth Warner Oct. 30, 1870; she died Sept. 23, 1892; children: 1. Henry Wallis,<sup>9</sup> born July 20, 1871; died July 17, 1872; 2. Mabel Pope,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 30, 1873; lives in Marblehead; 3. Horace Bell,<sup>9</sup> born June 19, 187-; lives in Marblehead; 4. ———<sup>9</sup> (daughter); 5. Lillian Warner,<sup>9</sup> born Dec. 19, 1879; died Jan. 12, 1883; 6. Howard,<sup>9</sup> born May 17, 1881; 7. Albert N.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 20, 1886; died Nov. 21, 1886. ANDREW DOWBRIDGE GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> barber and storekeeper; lived in Salem and Lynn, Mass., and Houston, Tex.; married Alma M. Dolliver April 25, 1876; children: 1. Andrew,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 27, 1876; 2. Willis C.,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 18, 1878; died, unmarried, Aug. 5, 1902; 3. Clarence A.<sup>9</sup> ANDREW DOWBRIDGE GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> barber; married Carrie S. Hanscom Dec. 29, 1879; child: 1. Albert B.,<sup>9</sup> born April 28, 1880; clerk; married Anne P. Alley of Lynn Sept. 12, 1906. STEPHEN WILSON GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> currier and watchman; married Marion Wallace Woods of Nashua, N. H., Oct. 4, 1860; children: 1. *Frank Augustine*,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 7, 1861; 2. William French,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 24, 1862; died April 7, 1866; 3. Lillian;<sup>9</sup> 4. Lucy Marion,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 9, 1875; unmarried. JOSEPH DENNETT GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> tanner and watchman; married Susan Charlotte Graves Oct. 22, 1857; died Feb. 1, 1913; children: 1. Elizabeth E.,<sup>9</sup> born July 28, 1858, in South Danvers; married Augustus F. Wallis of Beverly; 2. Etta Augusta,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 20, 1863, in Salem; unmarried; 3. William G.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 12, 1868; died June 12, 1871; 4. *Waldo Dennett*,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 1, 1874; Nellie Hull,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 25, 1876; died Feb. 6, 1878. CAPT. GEORGE W. GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> married Sarah E. Dix June 14, 1857; died March 18, 1865; she died Oct. 17, 1895; children: 1. Clara P.,<sup>9</sup> born July 23, 1859; died Feb. 26, 1867; 2. Susan B.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 16, 1863; married Benjamin F. French of Chelsea; 3. Georgia Willis,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 8, 1865; died Nov. 16, 1872. WILLIAM D. GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> carpenter; married Margaret E. Dix April 7, 1864; she died Oct. 16, 1896; he died July 22, 1919; children: 1. Mary Eliza,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 11, 1865; married Charles H. Very; 2. Florence Ingalls,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 26, 1869; married Walter H. Hill of Beverly. WILLIAM HENRY GARDNER;<sup>8</sup> picture dealer; married Annie M. Trask Jan. 21, 1867; children: 1. *William Henry*,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 10, 1868; 2. Clarence W.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 18, 1870; died Aug. 19, 1870; 3. Clarence W.,<sup>9</sup> born June 19, 1871; unmarried in 1898; 4. Inez P.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 2, 1878; lives in California, unmarried.



lighter; but after hewing timber for two catches, in hot weather, he became sick with a fever and died, to the great loss of the company and settlement.<sup>1</sup>

The man sent to make salt knew little about the business, and terminated the attempt at salt making by burning the salt-house and spoiling the pans.<sup>2</sup>

The colony had been extensively advertised and inordinately praised.<sup>3</sup> The landsmen generally were "ill-chosen and ill commanded," and "fell into many disorders," rendering the company little service.<sup>4</sup> An improvement was sought by the company. Roger Conant, a religious and prudent Puritan, who had come to Plymouth as early as the autumn of 1622, and not being in sympathy with the Pilgrim's religious position, had removed to Nantasket, where he was the principal man, was invited by the Dorchester Company to remove to Cape Ann and manage all its affairs there. This was brought about in 1625, through the recommendation of Rev. John White, who engaged Mr. Humphrey, the treasurer of the joint adventurers, to write to Mr. Conant, in their names, that "they had chosen him to be their governor in that place, and would committ unto him the charge of all their affairs, as well fishing as planting."

Roger Conant, son of Richard and Agnes (Clarke) Conant, was born at Budleigh, Devonshire, England, where he was

CHARLES F. GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> clerk; married Mary S. Leach Dec. 14, 1893; children: 1. Clinton West,<sup>10</sup> born July 13, 1895; 2. Helen A.,<sup>10</sup> born May 27, 1898. ARTHUR W. GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> lives in Somerville; bookkeeper; married Mary E. Saunders Aug. 19, 1890; child: 1. Chester Russell,<sup>10</sup> born Aug. 25, 1891. ALDEN B. GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> married, first, Louisa A. Shepard Sept. 18, 1876; she died Aug. 5, 1880; married, second, Sadie Cameron Oct. 26, 1881; she was divorced; married, third, Florence A. Cushing Jan. 19, 1897; she died in Middleton Oct. 18, 1899; children: 1. Mary Lizzie,<sup>10</sup> born May 31, 1878; 2. ———<sup>10</sup> (son), born Aug. 1, 1879; died Aug. 3, 1879; 3. Alden B.;<sup>10</sup> died March 11, 1898; 4. ———<sup>10</sup> (daughter), born about October, 1898. EDSON FABENS GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> clerk; lives in Peabody; married Mabel S. McClearn of Marblehead June 14, 1894; children: 1. Stuart Needham,<sup>10</sup> born Nov. 6, 1895; 2. Agnes L.,<sup>10</sup> born June 24, 1897; 3. ———<sup>10</sup> (daughter), born June 24, 1907. DR. FRANK AUGUSTINE GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> physician; married, first, Caroline L. Read June 15, 1887; she died April 23, 1902; married, second, Marion R. Fuller of Salem Oct. 31, 1906; children: 1. Pauline,<sup>10</sup> born Nov. 9, 1888; unmarried; 2. Dorothy,<sup>10</sup> born June 19, 1910. WALDO DENNETT GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> bank clerk; married Charlotte Johnson June 10, 1902; children: 1. Waldo Johnson,<sup>10</sup> born June 20, 1905; 2. Eleanor,<sup>10</sup> born July 10, 1907. WILLIAM HENRY GARDNER;<sup>9</sup> teacher of penmanship; lives in California; married Daisy M. Brown of Beverly; children: 1. Ethel Warren,<sup>10</sup> born May 27, 1888; 2. Willard H. W.,<sup>10</sup> born Nov. 22, 1901.

See Gardner Genealogy, by Dr. Frank Augustine Gardner, Salem, 1907.

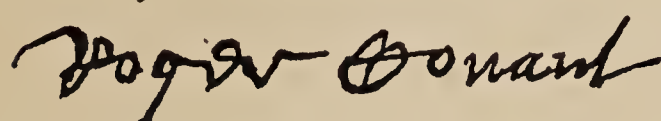
<sup>1</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 116.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 117.

<sup>3</sup>Planters Plea, chapter VIII.

<sup>4</sup>A Voyage to New England, by Christopher Levett, London, 1628.

christened April 9, 1592. In 1619 and 1620, he was living in the parish of St. Lawrence, Jewry, London, being a salter, probably of the company of salters of London. He came to New England as early as the autumn of 1622, and lived in Plymouth for about

 a year; and then removed to Nantasket, which was then the commercial centre of the Pilgrim territory. He had lived there more than a year, when he received the communication from Mr. Humphrey, offering him the position of governor of the settlement at Cape Ann.<sup>1</sup>

He immediately removed to Cape Ann, and entered upon the arduous duties of his new position. He found that insubordination existed among the men, and that its suppression was a difficult task.

No minister had been sent to Cape Ann, apparently, until Roger Conant took charge of the settlement. Then, Rev. John Lyford, who was living at Nantasket was engaged to go to Cape Ann in that capacity. He had been sent to the Plymouth plantation by the Episcopal faction of the adventurers in London, out of hostility to Mr. Robinson, who, with a portion of the Pilgrim church, was yet at Leyden. Mr. Lyford appeared extremely humble and reverent, shedding many tears and blessing God that

<sup>1</sup>ROGER CONANT<sup>1</sup> lived in what is now Beverly from and after about 1637; married Sarah Horton Nov. 11, 1618, in the parish of St. Annis, Blackfriars, London; she was living in 1666, but probably died soon after; he died Nov. 19, 1679; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 19, 1619, in the parish of St. Lawrence, London; buried there Oct. 30, 1620; 2. Caleb,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 27, 1622, in the parish of St. Lawrence; came to Massachusetts with his parents; returned to England, where he died in 1633; 3. Lot,<sup>2</sup> born in 1623; lived in Marblehead until Beverly became a town, and then removed thither; married Elizabeth Walton of Marblehead; died in Beverly about 1680; his widow Elizabeth married, secondly, Andrew Mansfield of Lynn; had children; 4. Roger,<sup>2</sup> born in 1626; first white child born in Salem; lived in Marblehead; married Elizabeth — from Cork, Ireland; 5. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> born about 1628; probably married John Leach of Bevevrly; 6. Joshua<sup>2</sup>; 7. Mary,<sup>2</sup> born about 1632; married, first, John Balch; second, William Dodge; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> living, unmarried, in 1679; 9. Exercise,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 24, 1637, in Salem; lived in Beverly and Boston, Mass., and Windham, Conn.; representative; married Sarah —; died April 28, 1722; had children.

JOSHUA CONANT<sup>2</sup>; sea captain; lived in Marblehead; married Seeth Gardner; died in England in 1659; she married, secondly, John Grafton; child: 1. Joshua,<sup>3</sup> born April 15, 1657.

JOSHUA CONANT<sup>3</sup>; master mariner; removed to Eastham (now Truro) about 1700; married, first, Christian More Aug. 31, 1676; she died May 30, 1680, aged twenty-eight; married, second, Sarah Newcomb Jan. 9, 1690-1; children: 1. Joshua,<sup>4</sup> born May 12, 1678; 2. Kezia,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 8, 1691; 3. Caleb,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 13, 1693; lived in Truro; married Hannah (Lombard?); had children; 4. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born April 12, 1695; 5. John,<sup>4</sup> born April 19, 1700; lived in Provincetown; married Kezia Lombard Oct. 18, 1725; had children.

See Genealogy of the Conant Family, by Frederick Odell Conant, Portland, Me., 1887.



He had brought him to see their faces. Although he affected admiration of the Pilgrim order in church and state, was received into their fellowship and consulted by the governor on important matters, he soon manifested, with John Oldham, his dual character, and endangered the interests of the colony by his sedition. He wrote many letters, full of false and slanderous accusations, to England. His endeavor was to reform the church and have the sacraments, and he finally set up a separate public meeting one Sunday. The governor convened a public meeting, and called him to account. As he had a large family, he was given liberty to remain six months. He confessed publicly before the church, with tears, stating that his pride, vain-glory and self-love caused him to do the evil. So they permitted him to teach among them again. Within a month or two, he began to justify his former acts, and was again tried. For this, and certain other offences committed in Ireland, he was dismissed in August, 1624. He removed to Nantasket with some of his friends.<sup>1</sup> He was engaged to go to Cape Ann, probably because the Dorchester Company thought he would be satisfactory to the colony there, and be free from the suspicion of the Pilgrims.

Under the government of Mr. Conant, the affairs improved but little, if any, and finally, in 1626, the design was abandoned by the merchants. This was largely due to the losses in fishing and the great depreciation in the value of their vessels. In this two and a half years, one thousand pounds had been spent and not one hundred pounds received in profits. "Ill-carriage of our men at land" was given as the cause of failure. Great credit is due to the ability, administrative talent and public spirit of Conant; but the conditions were probably such that success was impossible. The company was dissolved and the shipping and provision sold.

The company paid the men their wages, and offered them a passage home. This offer was accepted by the ill-behaved, thriftless and weak-minded portion of the colonists, which were a majority of the men. Thus happily freed from the drones and scum of their society, though greatly lessened in numbers, the colony gained in strength, and now consisted only of the honest and industrious, who were resolved to remain faithful to the great object of colonization. From that time they were free of any obligation or control of the company and were entitled to no aid from it.

The scanty means of obtaining a living from the soil had been a serious drawback, and as soon as the colonists were free, they sought a more fertile and sheltered location within the bay. With

<sup>1</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, pages 205, 233-237.



DANVERS RIVER.

his faithful companions, Roger Conant, "as one inspired by some superior instinct," frustrated the "order for the dissolving of the company on land" and made investigation of the shores.<sup>1</sup> About sixteen miles to the southwest was found a secluded place on a peninsula by a wide river with good harbors, in the territory called by the Indians Naumkeag. As they passed through what is now the harbor of Beverly, a view of Danvers River opened before them; and to the left North River broadened out. The illustration of the latter stream is limited to North Street, but in



NORTH RIVER.



the first settlement it extended to Goodhue Street, twice as far as now. In the picture the first point of land extending into the river on the left forms the northern side of a cove, which has a southwestern exposure and is protected from the northerly and easterly winds by a wooded ridge, along which March Street now runs. Here was a good beach, and nearby a marsh, where thatch grew abundantly, and soil fit for the raising of fruits and vegetables. The view of the opposite shore, with its grassy sward extending to the water's edge, was delightful.

To this place Mr. Conant and his companions removed in the autumn of 1626. Rev. Mr. Lyford refused, however, to remain with them, and decided to go to Virginia. He earnestly en-



NORTHFIELDS.

deavored to persuade them to go with him; but Mr. Conant positively declared that he intended to stay where he was, though all the rest should forsake him, believing that soon others would come and settle there.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Conant's companions refused to leave him. Mr. Lyford and his wife went to Virginia where he died shortly afterward.<sup>2</sup>

The motive that caused the decision of Mr. Conant was his prophetic conception that a plantation here would be a place where those seeking religious freedom could find it. He intimated his thoughts to his friends in England. Rev. John White was grieved that the beginning they had made should be allowed

<sup>1</sup>History of New England, by Rev. William Hubbard, page 108.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 237.

to fail, and wrote to Mr. Conant not to desert his purpose, faithfully promising that, if he, with John Woodbury, John Balch and Peter Palfrey, three of the others with him, whom he knew to be honest and prudent men, would remain at Naumkeag, and give timely notice of their intention, he would provide a patent for them, and also send them whatever they should wish for, both men and provisions, as well as goods with which to trade with the Indians. Answer was returned that all of them would stay.

The home of John Woodbury<sup>1</sup> was in Somersetshire, England. He went to Cape Ann in 1624, and was prominent there as well as at Naumkeag. John Balch<sup>2</sup> was born in 1579, in Bridgewater, Somersetshire, England, and came to America with Captain Gorges in September, 1623, settling with the Dorchester Com-

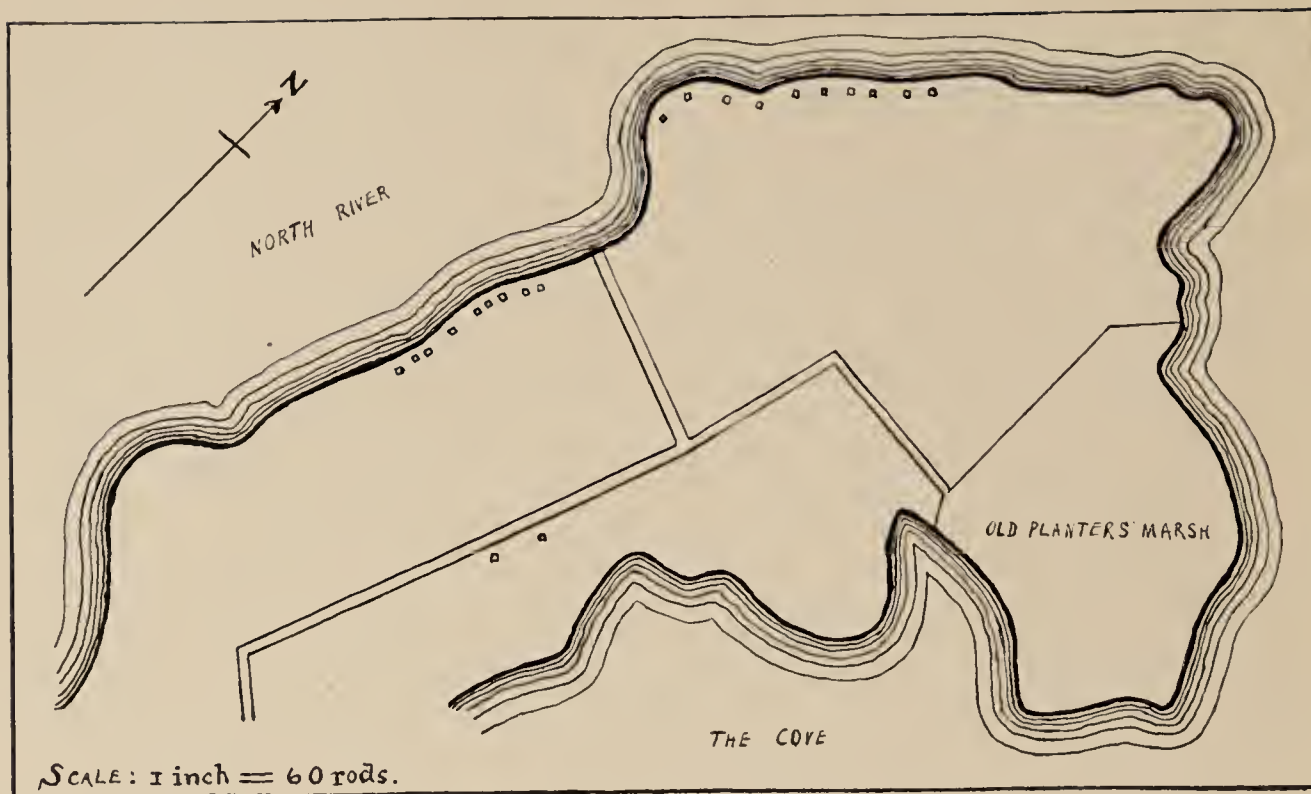
*To: Balch*

<sup>1</sup>JOHN WOODBURY<sup>1</sup> lived, after the town was laid out, at what is now 226 Essex street; died in 1641; wife Ann was living in 1662; children: 1. *Humphrey*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1608; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> 3. *Hannah*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 23, 1636; married Cornelius Baker; 4. *Abigail*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 12, 1637; married John Hill of Beverly; 5. *Peter*,<sup>2</sup> born June 19, 1640; yeoman; deacon; lived in Beverly; married, first, *Abigail Batchelder*; second, *Sarah Dodge*; died July 5, 1704; had children.

HUMPHREY WOODBURY<sup>2</sup>; yeoman and fisherman; lived in that part of the town which became Beverly; married *Elizabeth* —; died in 1686; she died in 1689; children: 1. *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1639; lived in Beverly; married, first, *Hannah (Dodge)*, widow of *Samuel Porter*; and, second, *Elizabeth*, widow of *Samuel Curtis*; died in 1719; had children; 2. *John*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 24, 1641; lived in Beverly; married, first, *Elizabeth* —; second, *Alice*, widow of *John Derby*; had children; 3. *Isaac*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 4, 1643-4; lived in Beverly; married *Mary Wilkes* Oct. 9, 1671; had children; 4. *Humphrey*,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 8, 1646-7; mariner; lived in Beverly and Gloucester; married *Ann Winder* of Gloucester; died in Gloucester April 9, 1727; had children; 5. *Susanna*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 4, 1648-9; married *John Tenney* of Rowley; 6. *William*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 4, 1651; lived in Beverly; married *Hannah Hascoll* Nov. 20, 1676; died in 1710; had children; 7. *Peter*,<sup>3</sup> born March 28, 1653; killed in the Indian War in 1675, while serving in Capt. *Thomas Lathrop's* company; 8. *Richard*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. —, 1654-5; lived in Beverly; married *Sarah Haskell*; served in the Canada Expedition; and died in Boston, on his return, in 1690; had children; 9. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born April 28, 1657; married — *Walker* of Boston; 10. *Christian*, born April 20, 1661; married *John Trask*. JOHN WOODBURY<sup>2</sup> mariner; married *Elizabeth* —; died before 1682; she married, secondly, Capt. *John Dodge*; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 15, 1654; 2. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born March 15, 1657; probably died before 1663; 3. *Abigail*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 6, 1660; 4. *Ebenezer*,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 3, 1667; miller, having a grist-mill; lived on Royal Side, in Beverly; married *Hannah Dodge*; died in 1714; had children; 5. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 22, 1670.

<sup>2</sup>JOHN BALCH,<sup>1</sup> after 1637, lived in what is now Beverly; married, first; *Margaret* —, who died in 163-; married, second, *Agnes (Annis)* —; died in 1648; she died in 1657; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1629; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> 3. *Freeborn*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1633; died about 1659, unmarried.





MAP OF OLD PLANTERS SETTLEMENT.

pany at Cape Ann. Peter Palfrey<sup>1</sup> was a man in whom Conant and others reposed confidence.

He lived where the Essex House now stands on Essex street until 1651, when he removed to Reading.

*Answer H. Balch*

BENJAMIN BALCH<sup>2</sup>; lived on his father's homestead; married, first, Sarah Gardner about 1650; she died April 5, 1686; married, second, Abigail, widow of Matthew Clarke of Marblehead Feb. 5, 1689; she died Jan. 1, 1690; married, third, Grace Mallet March 15, 1691-2; living in 1706; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born May —, 1651; deacon; yeoman; lived in Beverly; town clerk and representative; 2. Benjamin<sup>3</sup>; mariner; lived in Beverly; 3. John,<sup>3</sup> born about 1654; housewright; lived in Beverly; representative; 4. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> killed by the Indians at Bloody Brook Sept. 18, 1675; 5. Free-born,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 9, 1660; yeoman; lived in Beverly; 6. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> married James Patch; 7. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> married Cornelius Larcom; 8. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> unmarried in 1687; 9. Mary,<sup>3</sup> married Nathaniel Stone; 10. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 10, 1670; 11. David,<sup>3</sup> born July 9, 1671; 12. Deborah,<sup>3</sup> born June 6, 1693; 13. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 28, 1695. JOHN BALCH;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Mary Conant; divorced June 16, 1662; she married, secondly, William Dodge; child: 1. Mary;<sup>3</sup> died in 1662 or 1663.

See Genealogy of the Balch Family, by Galusha B. Balch, 1897; and The Essex Antiquarian, volume VI, pages 1-14.

<sup>1</sup>Peter Palfrey married, first, Edith —; second, Elizabeth, widow of John Fairfield of Wenham; third, Alice —; removed to Reading in 1651; died there in 1663, "well stricken in years"; his wife Alice survived him; children: 1. Jonathan, baptized Dec. 25, 1636; 2. Jehoidan, baptized Dec. 25, 1636; married Benjamin Smith of Reading; 3. Remember, baptized Sept. 16, 1638; married Peter Aspinwall of Muddy River; 4. Mary, baptized Dec. 15, 1639.



SITE OF OLD PLANTERS SETTLEMENT.

On the strength of the promise of Rev. Mr. White, Conant and his associates cleared the forest and upon foundations of clay and stones built their cottages.<sup>1</sup> The houses had no cellars under them; and were probably constructed of logs with thatched roofs. Other cottages were built at this place after the coming of Endecott. There were nineteen of them, but they were all gone before 1661.<sup>2</sup> This indicates how unsubstantial they were.

In one of these thatch-roofed cottages, in the family of Roger Conant, occurred the first birth of a white child in this region.<sup>3</sup>

In the rear of the settlement was a large marsh, which, although it has been raised somewhat by the deposit of large quantities of loam and sand, is known to this day as "the planter's

<sup>1</sup>March 17, 1801, Dr. William Bentley of Salem wrote in his diary as follows: "Capt. J. Osgood having purchased part of Woodbridge's estate in Ferry Lane, formerly so called, the lots lying near Horton's point, so called, on the point below Skerry's, fell to his share. Westward of the point the ground rose higher than upon any land below Windmill point, & having been covered with Locusts, it had acquired a soil which gave it the appearance of a mole rising from the natural soil. Capt. Osgood made the purchase among other purposes to remove this ground from North River side to Planter's marsh side & in digging he found the natural soil six feet below & that this was only accumulated land, blown from Horton's point. On the ground he found several Loads of Rocks bedded in Clay as was usual in the Cottages made by the first settlers. Upon this hearth he found coals from oak wood, & cinders from fossil coals, specimens of which I took away & preserved. Around these ruins the sands probably accumulated, as the Clay & rocks were bedded in the natural soil. The rocks must have been brought from Lobster point  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile or from Beverly side. They were rude & of irregular shapes."

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 107; book 11, leaf 251; book 13, leaf 222; and Salem Commoners Records, page 10.

<sup>3</sup>Salem Town records for Jan. 21, 1639-40.



marsh.”<sup>1</sup> From this marsh, thatch for the roofing of the cottages was probably obtained, as well as the clay for their foundations and chimneys and walls.

The soil was prepared for the planting of maize<sup>2</sup> and probably several other products congenial to it. The spring of 1627 found the colonists busily engaged in planting. Besides the crops necessary for their sustenance, they produced tobacco.<sup>3</sup> The Pilgrims had discountenanced the raising of tobacco, because, as Edward Winslow wrote, fishing was more profitable, as fish was “a better and richer commodity” and to be had in “great abundance.”<sup>4</sup>

No reports coming from England and more than a year having elapsed since the promise of Mr. White, John Woodbury was selected as an agent to go to England and procure necessities for a plantation. At this period, said Dr. Cotton Mather, “the design for awhile almost fell into the ground.” In a petition to the general court, dated May 28, 1671, Mr. Conant wrote as “one of the first if not the very first, that resolved and made good my settlement vnder god, in matter of plantation w<sup>th</sup> my family in this collony of the massachusetts bay, and haue bin instrumentall, both for the founding and carring on of the same, and when in the infancy thereof, it was in great haffard of being deferted, I was a means, through grace affistting me, to ftop the flight of those few that then were heere w<sup>th</sup> me, and that by my vtter deniall, to goe away w<sup>th</sup> them, who would haue gon either for England or moftly for Virginia, but thereupon ftayed to the haffard of our liues. . . . I being the first that had house in Salem.”<sup>5</sup> Mr. Woodbury sailed in the autumn of 1627, and spent the winter in England.

In the letter of Mr. Conant, quoted above, he stated that all of his associates were from the western part of England. The map of New England made by Capt. John Smith is supposed to have been made about 1617, but it must have been produced after 1620 as Plymouth is marked on it. Probably it was drawn in 1627 as the settlement of the old planters at Naumkeag is marked Bristow (Bristol)—a name given to the colony by Captain Smith because they were from the west of England.

It is not known how many persons constituted the colony, either at Cape Ann or Naumkeag. Walter Knight,<sup>6</sup> born about

<sup>1</sup>Planters Street, leading from Bridge Street to this marsh, has been a public way since the earliest settlement.

<sup>2</sup>New Englands Prospect, by William Wood, chapter 10.

<sup>3</sup>First General Letter of the Company to John Endecott.

<sup>4</sup>Good Newes from New England, by Edward Winslow, London, 1624.

<sup>5</sup>Massachusetts Archives, Towns, volume 112, leaf 217.

<sup>6</sup>Walter Knight removed to Boston about 1643, and was living there as late as 1653. He was litigious, often appearing in court as a party or witness, and in 1642 was complained of for being a frequent liar and for





MAP OF JOHN SMITH.

1587, a carpenter, was one of the Episcopalians at Nantasket in 1622, and removed to Cape Ann with Conant in 1625. Another was William Allen,<sup>1</sup> born in Manchester, England, about 1602. He was a carpenter, young, influential and enterprising. He lived on the western

glorying in his and his wife's illicit relations before their marriage. In 1642 and 1643 he was complained of for not living with his wife. In each of these criminal prosecutions he was discharged. In 1644, he was called "old Knight."

<sup>1</sup>William Allen removed to Jeffries Creek, now Manchester, about 1640; married, first, Alice —, who died March 8, 1631-2; and, second, Elizabeth Bradley, who probably survived him; he died in the winter of 1678-9; children: 1. Persis, born Feb. —, 1630; died within a week; 2. Samuel, born Jan. 8, 1631-2; housewright; lived in Manchester; married Sarah —; probably died in 1709; had children; 3. Elizabeth, born Sept. —, 1634; married, first, James Kettle; second, William Raymond of Beverly; third, — Corning; 4. Deborah, born April —, 1637; 5. Bethiah, born Feb. —, 1639; died Feb. —, 1640; 6. Onesiphorus, born June 30, 1642; house carpenter; lived in Manchester; married Martha —; died in 1718; had children; 7. William, baptized May 31, 1646; lived in Manchester; married Hannah



corner of Essex and Elm streets. Richard Norman,<sup>1</sup> a carpenter, and his eldest son, John Norman, were also among the colonists before Endecott came.

*John Norman* The father was probably one of the elder of the old planters, as he was called "Old Goodman Norman" in 1649. His son John was about fifteen years of age in 1628.

The crops of 1627 were harvested, and the autumn had come when John Woodbury sailed away on his mission to the homeland. Alone in the almost unknown wilderness, the dwelling-place of Indians and wild beasts, those who remained looked forward to another winter of deep snow and frigid temperature. Not a civilized man could be found within fifty miles. The men could placidly turn their faces toward the grim approaching season, but the women and children were there, inured to some extent to the hardships of their condition, it is true, but always feeling more than the men the exposure, privation and coarseness. The decision to remain there, that they might keep alive the germ of a larger colony, was worthy of the highest commendation. Great credit should be given to them as the cause of the larger settlement, the state, the nation.

—; died Dec. 29, 1696; she married, secondly, Samuel Fiske of Wenham; had children; 8. Jonathan, baptized July 29, 1649.

See Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, volume 24, page 223; and The Essex Antiquarian, volume II, page 135.


<sup>1</sup>RICHARD NORMAN<sup>1</sup> removed to Marblehead before 1645; his wife was living in 1645; he died in 1682; children: 1. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1613; 2. Jonathan;<sup>2</sup> cooper; lived in Marblehead; died in 1713; 3. William;<sup>3</sup> lived in Marblehead; married Rebecca —; died in or before 1713; 4. Richard,<sup>4</sup> born about 1624; lived in Marblehead.

JOHN NORMAN.<sup>2</sup> When he became of age, apparently a lot of land was granted to him westerly of Liberty Hill Avenue, in North Salem, and he erected a house near the northerly end of Fairmount Street. He sold the house and land to Rev. Hugh Peter in 1640, but continued to live there until 1647, when he removed to Manchester, where he afterwards lived. He married Arabella —; died in 1672; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. —, 1637; 2. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born middle of January, 1639; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 4, 1641; married Samuel Leach; 4. Arabella,<sup>3</sup> born middle of February, 1643; 5. Joseph;<sup>3</sup> married Mary —; died in 1691.

JOHN NORMAN;<sup>3</sup> shipwright; married Mary Ropes Nov. 17, 1663; died May 6, 1713; she died Oct. 24, 1713; children: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 19, 1664; died Sept. 22, 1664; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 12, 1666; 3. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 14, 1668; 4. Richard,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 20, 1675; 5. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born July 10, 1677; 6. Annie;<sup>4</sup> married John Green.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE COMING OF ENDECOTT.

OME of the members of the Dorchester Company, regardless of the failure of the Cape Ann settlement, were desirous of establishing another colony in the vicinity. They thought that the sending of more cattle to Roger Conant and his companions at Naumkeag might be the means not only of their comfortable support, but of encouraging others to join the plantation.<sup>1</sup> When John Woodbury arrived in England, he found that the promise made to the old planters had not been forgotten.

Through the influence and exertions of Rev. John White plans greater than Conant had contemplated were being developed; and March 19, 1627-8, the council established at Plymouth "for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New England" sold to Sir Henry Rosewell and Sir John Young, knights, and Thomas Southcoat, John Humphrey, John Endecott and Simon Whetcomb, gentlemen, residing in or about Dorchester, all the territory in New England, extending from three miles north of Merrimack River to three miles south of Charles River. Not long after, these grantees, through Mr. White, became acquainted with other religious persons of like quality in and about London,—Isaac Johnson, Matthew Cradock, Thomas Goffe and Sir Richard Saltonstall,—who became associated with them, for the purpose of founding a plantation where nonconformists in religion might be received. The new company was called at first The New England Company and finally The Company of the Massachusetts Bay. This company bought all the interest of the Dorchester Company in the property at Cape Ann and Naumkeag and in the territory of the Sheffield patent.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>The Planters Plea, chapter IX.

<sup>2</sup>Depositions of Richard Brackenbury and Humphrey Woodbury in Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaves 107 and 108.



About the time of Conant's removal to Naumkeag, Thomas Dudley, Esq., and some of his friends, who were together in Lincolnshire, discussed New England affairs and the extension of the gospel thither. Some of the old Dorchester Company offered to send over twelve kine and bulls, and conferred casually with some gentlemen of London who added as many cattle and proposed to invest money in the plantation if fit men might be procured to go over and superintend it. John Endecott was selected finally, being "a man well known to divers persons of good note, who manifested much willingness to accept of the offer as soon as it was tendered, which gave great encouragement to such as were undecided."<sup>1</sup>

The Endecotts of England are found only in and around Chagford, in Devonshire, and were large owners of the tin mines in that region. John Endecott was undoubtedly born at Chagford in 1589. Investigations<sup>2</sup> show that he was son of Thomas and Alice Endecott of Chagford. Thomas Endecott was buried there Dec. 20, 1621. He had children, John and Margaret. His wife Alice survived him. Nothing is known of John's early life, except that, in one instance, he styled himself "chirurgion."<sup>3</sup> His first wife, whom he married while living in London, was Anna Gower, a cousin of the governor of the Company, Matthew Cradock, and a lady of an influential family. She was probably, also, from Chagford or its vicinity, as Gower is a common family name there. Mr. Endecott became interested in Puritan colonization in America, and was so intimate with Rev. John White of Dorchester that he was recognized as a Dorsetshire man. The portrait of Mr. Endecott was painted a few months before his decease; and the original painting is now in the possession of his descendant, William C. Endicott of Boston.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Planters Plea, chapter IX.

<sup>2</sup>These were made by Sir Roper Lethbridge, and published, in 1912, in a pamphlet, entitled "The Devonshire Ancestry and Early Homes of the Family of John Endecott, Governor of Massachusetts Bay, 1629."

<sup>3</sup>A bill, written by Mr. Endecott, for curing a man, found by Rev. Joseph B. Felt at the State House about 1840, so describes him.

<sup>4</sup>See article on the portraits of Governor Endecott, by Robert S. Rantoul, in Essex Institute Historical Collections, volume XX, page 1.

<sup>5</sup>Gov. JOHN ENDECOTT<sup>1</sup> in 1655 removed to Boston, where he afterwards lived; married, first, Anna Gower, who died in 1629; secondly, Elizabeth Gibson of Cambridge, England, Aug. 17, 1630; he died March 15, 1665; his wife Elizabeth survived him; children: 1. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 1632; lived in Boston; married Elizabeth Houchins Nov. 9, 1653, in Boston; died in February, 1667; no children; she married, second, Rev. James Allen of Boston; 2. Zerubbabel,<sup>2</sup> born in 1635.

ZERUBBABEL ENDECOTT;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married, first, Mary —; she died in 1677; married, second, Elizabeth, daughter of John Winthrop and widow of Rev. Antipas Newman of Wenham; he died in January, 1683-4; she survived him and was living in Boston in 1694; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born in

The Company undoubtedly knew that Roger Conant was the acknowledged head of the little colony at Naumkeag, though the

1657; 2. Elizabeth;<sup>3</sup> died Sept. 8, 1658; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1659; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born April 12, 1661; died May 1, 1661; 5. Zerubbabel,<sup>3</sup> born April 11, 1662; died young; 6. Zerubbabel,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 14, 1664-5; husbandman; lived in Boxford; married Grace Symonds of Boxford July —, 1689 (?); died in 1706; she was his widow, of Boxford, in 1737; had children; 7. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1667; husbandman; lived in Boxford; married, first, Abigail —; second, Hannah —; died in 1735; no children; 8. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born in 1667; married Isaac Williams; 9. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born in 1672; mariner; lived in North Hampton, N. J.; married Hannah —; died May —, 1747; had children; 10. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born in 1673; married Samuel Hart of Lynn; 11. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born in 1675; married Nathaniel Gilbert of Boston; 12. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born in 1676; married Edward Gaskell; 13. Mehitable,<sup>3</sup> born in 1677; died, when temporarily in Boston, unmarried, in 1698.

DR. JOHN ENDECOTT;<sup>3</sup> physician; lived in London, England; married Anna — in London; died about 1694; his widow and children came to America in or before 1695; she died Dec. —, 1720; children: 1. Robert Edwards;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem; married Elizabeth Phillips Nov. 24, 1720; died in 1721, childless: she married, second, Zerubbabel Endecott of Boxford May 1, 1723; 2. Anne,<sup>4</sup> born in 1693; married Samuel Endecott. SAMUEL ENDECOTT;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Hannah Felton about 1684; went away in August, 1692, and never returned; she married, second, Thorndike Procter; children: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 18, 1685; died young; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 30, 1687; 3. Ruth;<sup>4</sup> married Martin Herrick; 4. Hannah;<sup>4</sup> married Benjamin Porter.

CAPT. SAMUEL ENDECOTT;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married, first, Anne Endecott Dec. 20, 1711; she died May —, 1723; married, second, widow Margaret (Pratt) Foster Feb. 11, 1724-5; he died May —, 1766; children: 1. *John*,<sup>5</sup> born April 29, 1713; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 19, 1715; lived in Danvers, unmarried, in 1756; 3. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born March 13, 1716-7; yeoman and innholder; lived in Danvers and Beverly; married Mary Putnam of Danvers Feb. 27, 1751-2; died Dec. 10, 1773; had children; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born in 1719; married Dr. Benjamin Jones of Beverly; 5. Robert,<sup>5</sup> born in 1721; drowned when a boy; 6. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. —, 1725; married Hobart Clark; 7. Hannah<sup>6</sup> (twin), born Nov. —, 1727; married Francis Nurse; 8. Ann<sup>5</sup> (twin), born Nov. —, 1727; married Thomas Andrews of Danvers; 9. Elias, born Dec. —, 1729; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Eunice Andrews Nov. 26, 1754; died Oct. —, 1777; she was his widow in 1781; had children; 10. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. —, 1730-1; 11. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born in 1734; married Peter Putnam of Danvers; 12. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born in 1739; married Joseph Dole of Danvers Dec. 19, 1765.

JOHN ENDECOTT;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived on the Orchard farm; married Elizabeth Jacobs May 18, 1738; died in Danvers May 11, 1783; she died there, his widow, Aug. 9, 1809; children: 1. *John*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1739; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born in 1741; died young; 3. William,<sup>6</sup> born in 1742; married Damaris Osborn Nov. 5, 1768; died in the West Indies; she married, second, Dr. Samuel Endecott Nov. 26, 1782; had a child; 4. Robert,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 29, 1756. JOSEPH ENDECOTT;<sup>5</sup> husbandman; lived in Danvers; married, first, Mary Putnam Dec. 13, 1757; she died; married, second, Sarah Hathorne Oct. 6, 1768; he died Dec. 19, 1806; she died, his widow, Dec. 1, 1809; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 9, 1769; died in Danvers June 12, 1811; 2. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 2, 1771; died in Havanna, unmarried, in 1796; 3. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 2, 1775; died, unmarried, June 12, 1811; 4. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born June 21, 1777; lost at sea, unmarried, in 1796; 5. *Aaron*,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 12, 1779.



authority he had received from the Dorchester Company expired with the company, and he had succeeded little better than Tylly

JOHN ENDICOTT;<sup>6</sup> yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Martha Putnam of Lunenburg; died March 11, 1816; she died, his widow, Sept. 3, 1821; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>7</sup> born June 20, 1763; 2. *John*,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 13, 1765; 3. *Moses*,<sup>7</sup> born March 19, 1767; 4. Ann (Nancy),<sup>7</sup> born July 4, 1769; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 25, 1771; married James Gray; 6. Jacob,<sup>7</sup> born July 9, 1773; 7. Martha (twin),<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 25, 1775; 8. Nathan (twin),<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 25, 1775; 9. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born March 8, 1778; 10. Rebecca,<sup>7</sup> born May 22, 1780; 11. William,<sup>7</sup> born April 23, 1782; 12. Timothy,<sup>7</sup> born July 27, 1785. CAPT. AARON ENDICOTT;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Hannah Osgood July 6 (11?), 1813; died Aug. 6, 1853; she died, his widow, March 16, 1869; children: 1. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 19, 1814; married George West; 2. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 25, 1817; died, unmarried, April 9, 1840; 3. Elizabeth Osgood,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 24, 1818; died, unmarried, Aug. 10, 1844; 4. Horatio,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 4, 1821; died Dec. 21, 1828; 5. Charles,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 7, 1823; 6. Aaron,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 14, 1826; died in Somerville, unmarried, Aug. 15, 1855.

SAMUEL ENDICOTT;<sup>7</sup> mariner and merchant; married Elizabeth Putnam of Sterling May 18, 1794; died May 1, 1828; she died, his widow, Nov. 9, 1841; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>8</sup> born March 13, 1795; died, unmarried, May 15, 1828; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> born April 28, 1797; married Augustus Perry; 3. Martha,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 27, 1799; married Francis Peabody; 4. *William Putnam*,<sup>8</sup> born March 5, 1803; 5. Clarissa,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 16, 1807; married George Peabody. JOHN ENDICOTT;<sup>7</sup> engaged in the East India trade; lived in Danvers; representative; married, first, Mary Putnam June 16, 1791; she died Feb. 26, 1811; married, second, Mrs. Fidelia (Bridges), widow of Elias Warner Ketelle Dec. 10, 1813; died Nov. 29, 1834; his wife Fidelia died, his widow, Sept. 11, 1854; children: 1. John,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 5, 1791; died April 1, 1803; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 26, 1793; 3. Maria Cecelia,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 20, 1797; married Capt. John Gardner of Rio Janeiro; 4. George Washington,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 15, 1800; merchant; removed to New York in 1839; married Sarah Susanna Lawrence May 5, 1834; she died July 2, 1835; he died Jan. 31, 1870; 5. Martha,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 17, 1803; 6. John,<sup>8</sup> born May 19, 1805; merchant; lived in New York City; married, first, Martha Tucker Mansfield March 18, 1832; she died May 20, 1845; married, second, Sarah Webb Mansfield Nov. 8, 1847; she died July 3, 1876; he died May 8, 1878; had children; 7. Sarah Emily,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 8, 1814; died Sept. 8, 1814; 8. James Bridges,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 6, 1815; lived in Macao and Victoria, on the Island of Hongkong, China; married Sarah Ann Russell Oct. 19, 1852; died Nov. 5, 1870; she died Jan. 28, 1919; had children; 9. Henry Bridges,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 6, 1817; died Jan. 2, 1837; 10. William,<sup>8</sup> born March 18, 1823; died July 3, 1892. CAPT. MOSES ENDICOTT;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; lived in Danvers; married Nancy Towne; died at Havanna March 5, 1807; she died April 20, 1843; children: 1. Nancy,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 31, 1788; married Dr. George Osgood; 2. *Nathan*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 19, 1790; 3. *Moses*,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 6, 1793 (name changed to Charles Moses Endicott); 4. Lewis Repillet,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 24, 1796; 5. Sarah,<sup>8</sup> born April 4, 1798; 6. Augusta,<sup>8</sup> born July 25, 1803; married Rev. Robert B. Drane, D. D., of Washington, D. C.; 7. *Lewis*,<sup>8</sup> born July 27, 1805. CAPT. JACOB ENDICOTT;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; removed to Sturbridge about 1812; married Ruth Hawkes of Boston; died in Charlestown June —, 1816; she survived him; children: 1. Julia,<sup>8</sup> born in 1805; died young; 2. Jacob,<sup>8</sup> born in 1808; died, unmarried, in Calcutta in 1833; 3. Isaac Hull,<sup>8</sup> baptized Nov. 22, 1812; died young; 4. Julia Ann,<sup>8</sup> died young; 5. Jane,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. —, 1815. CAPT. CHARLES ENDICOTT;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; married, first, Sarah B. Safford Sept. 3, 1850; second, Mrs. Susanna Bartlett (Ashwood) Ryder Oct. 31, 1878; died Dec.

and Gardner in making the Cape Ann plantation a success. Although he had been promised supplies and a new patent, it was not agreed that he should be the head of the new colony, as he may have assumed. The new company was composed of business men, of which Conant was ignorant, and naturally one of their own number was placed in charge of its affairs in New England; and John Endecott was appointed.

The good report of the conditions at Naumkeag, brought by John Woodbury, hastened the preparations for the departure of the colony in the spring. The illimitable forests that had never resounded with the sound of a steel axe, large pastures and soil fruitful from the accumulation of vegetable mold for centuries, to be had for the possession, were most attractive to those who knew the limitations of the territory of England.

3, 1906; his wife Susanna survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth Osgood,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 8, 1855; married G. A. Dennett of Sharon; 2. Alice Thorndike,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 22, 1880.

WILLIAM PUTNAM ENDICOTT;<sup>8</sup> H. C., 1822; merchant; married, first, Mary Crowninshield Jan. 31, 1826; she died March 12, 1838; married, second, Mrs. Harriet (French) Peabody Dec. 4, 1844; she died March 18, 1886; he died March 11, 1888; children: 1. *William Gardner*,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 19, 1826 (name changed to William Crowninshield Endicott); 2. Mary Crowninshield,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 4, 1830; died Feb. 26, 1833; 3. George Frederic,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 11, 1832; died Jan. 11, 1833; 4. Sarah Rogers,<sup>9</sup> born March 3, 1838; married George Dexter. CAPT. SAMUEL ENDICOTT;<sup>8</sup> master-mariner; engaged in the East India trade; married Caroline Collins May 1, 1820; died at sea June 6, 1828; she died Sept. 26, 1859; children: 1. Henry Collins,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 16, 1821; 2. Rebecca Hovey,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 6, 1822; married James Barr Curwen; 3. George,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 8, 1825; died Oct. 29, 1851; 4. Charles Upham,<sup>9</sup> born March 31, 1826; died at sea. CAPT. NATHAN ENDICOTT;<sup>8</sup> master-mariner and merchant; married Margaret Oliver Hicks of Boston Nov. —, 1816; died Aug. 30, 1857; she survived him; children: 1. Helen Maria,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 25, 1818; married Henry French; 2. Frederic Gustavus,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 1, 1823; died April —, 1840; 3. Margaret Josephine,<sup>9</sup> born July 20, 1825; married her sister's husband Samuel B. Howe of Mobile, Ala.; 4. Mary Coolidge,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 21, 1830; married Samuel B. Howe. CHARLES MOSES ENDICOTT;<sup>8</sup> merchant in East India trade and bank cashier; married Sarah Rolland Blythe of Windsor, Vt., June 8, 1818; she died Aug. 30, 1859; children: 1. Charles Edward,<sup>9</sup> born July 7, 1832; 2. Ingersoll Bowditch,<sup>9</sup> born May 17, 1835. LEWIS ENDICOTT;<sup>8</sup> married Mary Fitch Lynde Oliver Fettyplace Dec. —, 1828; children: 1. Lewis,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 23, 1829; 2. Harriet Story,<sup>9</sup> born May 6, 1831; 3. William Fettyplace,<sup>9</sup> born June 29, 1835; 4. Edward,<sup>9</sup> born July 18, 1840.

HON. WILLIAM CROWNINSHIELD ENDICOTT;<sup>9</sup> H. C., 1847; lawyer; justice of the supreme judicial court and secretary of war; married Ellen Peabody Dec. 13, 1859; died May 6, 1900; she survives him; children: 1. William Crowninshield,<sup>10</sup> born Sept. 28, 1860; lawyer; lives in Danvers; married Marie Louise Thoron of Washington, D. C., Oct. 3, 1889; 2. Mary Crowninshield,<sup>10</sup> born March 15, 1864; married, first, Rt. Hon. Joseph Chamberlain of Birmingham, England, Nov. 15, 1888; he died July 2, 1914; married, second, The Rev. William Hartley Carnegie of London, England, Aug. 2, 1916.



Endecott was empowered to carry on the plantation of the Company at Naumkeag, and order all affairs in the name of the patentees, as their agent, until they should come over, which at that time they intended to do.

He sailed from Weymouth, England, June 20, 1628, in the ship *Abigail*, Henry Gauden, master, which the company hired for the occasion, and after a prosperous voyage arrived at Naumkeag Sept. 6, 1628. With him came, among other colonists, his wife, Mr. Charles Gott,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Richard Brackenbury, Mr. Richard Davenport, Capt. William Trask, John Woodbury and his son Humphrey Woodbury, who was then about

*Charles Gott*

*Richard Davenport*

twenty years of age. Mr. Brackenbury<sup>2</sup> was about twenty-eight years old, and Mr. Davenport<sup>3</sup> about twenty-two. Capt. William Trask<sup>4</sup> was born about 1587, perhaps in Somersetshire, England, and had been probably a military officer. There were also servants, who were sent at the expense of the joint stock of the Company.

*William Trask*

<sup>1</sup>Charles Gott was a deacon of the church; removed to Wenham in the winter of 1653-4; died in Wenham Jan. 15, 1667-8; his wife was living in 1667; children: 1. Deborah, baptized Feb. 12, 1636-7; 2. Charles, baptized June 2, 1639; yeoman; lived in Wenham; married, first, Sarah Dennis Nov. 12, 1659; she died Aug. 8, 1665; married, second, Lydia Clark Dec. 25, 1665; died April 23, 1708; she died, his widow, Feb. 20, 1717-8; had children; 3. Daniel, baptized June 28, 1646; lived in Wenham; married Mary Morice Jan. 2, 1665; had children.

<sup>2</sup>Richard Brackenbury was a yeoman; removed from Massey's Cove to Cape Ann Side (afterwards Beverly); married Ellen —; died in 1684; children: 1. — (son); married and had children; 2. Elizabeth; married John Patch; 3. Miles; living in 1685; 4. Hannah, baptized June 1, 1651.

<sup>3</sup>Capt. Richard Davenport, born about 1606; lived in Salem; had charge of the arms and ammunition at the fort on Castle Island, Boston Harbor, from 1637, and removed to Boston in 1644; was appointed commander of the fort March 2, 1644-5; married Elizabeth —; killed by lightning at the fort June 15, 1655; she died, his widow, before 1680; children: 1. Nathaniel; merchant; lived in Boston; married Elizabeth —; died in January, 1675-6; 2. Samuel, born June 24, 1652; 3. Sarah, baptized Oct. 7, 1649; 4. Elizabeth, born Sept. 13, 1752; 5. William, born May 11, 1656.

<sup>4</sup>CAPT. WILLIAM TRASK;<sup>1</sup> lived easterly of Trask burying ground; representative; married Sarah —; died May 15, 1666; she survived him;

The passengers on the *Abigail*, after more than ten weeks upon their voyage, saw with delight for the first time the attrac-

children: 1. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> born Jan. 1, 1634-5; married Elias Parkman; 2. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 1, 1636-7; married John Loomis; 3. Susanna,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 10, 1638; married Samuel Aborn; 4. *William*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 19, 1640; 5. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 18, 1642; 6. Eliza,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 21, 1645.

WILLIAM TRASK;<sup>2</sup> miller; married, first, Ann Putnam Jan. 18, 1666; she died Nov. 14, 1676; married, second, Anna —; died in the winter of 1690-1; his wife Anna survived him; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born June 7, 1668; married Isaac Brooks; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born March —, 1669-70; died young; 3. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born June 14, 1672; married John Williams; 4. William,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 7, 1674; shipwright, blacksmith and husbandman; lived in Weymouth and Braintree; married, first, Ann White of Weymouth; second, Sarah Hayden of Braintree; died Nov. 20, 1745; his wife Sarah survived him; had children; 5. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 3, 1676; married Jonathan Fuller; 6. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1678; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born in 1685; married Benjamin Hanson; 8. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born March —, 1682-3; married John Southwick; 9. *George*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. —, 1690-1. JOHN TRASK;<sup>2</sup> miller; married, first, Abigail Parkman Feb. 19, 1662; second, Mary Clarke Feb. 13, 1717-8; died Nov. —, 1729; his wife Mary survived him; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 19, 1664; married, first, John Rowland; second, Capt. Thomas Larrimore; third, William Jacobs; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 7, 1666; 3. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born July 14, 1669; married John Shillaber; 4. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 14, 1671; 5. Rebecca,<sup>3</sup> born April 23, 1674; married, first, Joseph Boyce; second, Benjamin Very; 6. *Nicholas*,<sup>3</sup> born March 26, 1677; 7. *Elias*,<sup>3</sup> born July 13, 1679; 8. *Jonathan*.<sup>3</sup>

JOHN TRASK;<sup>3</sup> miller, yeoman and innholder; married, first, Hannah Osborn Nov. 26, 1701; second, Mrs. Mary (Ward) Collins Sept. 3, 1722; died in 1737; his wife Hannah survived him; children: 1. *William*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 10, 1702; 2. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 10, 1704; 3. *George*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 2, 1706; probably died young; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born May 31, 1708; married, first, John Twiss; second, — Dwight; 5. *Edward*,<sup>4</sup> born April 8, 1710; 6. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 14, 1712; probably died young; 7. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born March 18, 1714; married, first, Joseph Stacy; second, Daniel Gould of Marblehead; 8. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born May 26, 1716; married Joseph Felton; 9. James,<sup>4</sup> born May 16, 1718; mariner; died before May 20, 1748; 10. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 17, 1721; farmer; lived in Sutton; married, first, Bethiah Sibley Nov. 3, 1743; she died July 1, 1756; married, second, Anna Bond Jan. 6, 1757; third, Hannah Park March 7, 1775; died March 7, 1790; his wife Hannah survived him; had eighteen children. GEORGE TRASK;<sup>3</sup> blacksmith; married Elizabeth Felt Aug. 1, 1715; died before May 3, 1728; she survived him; children: 1. Anna,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 22, 1720; 2. *George*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 23, 1722; shipwright; published to Mary Brewer July 15, 1748; 3. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 27, 1724; married Robert Leach. NICHOLAS TRASK;<sup>3</sup> miller, clothier, fuller and wheelwright; removed to Mendon in 1742; living in 1754; married Anna Wilson; children: 1. Nicholas;<sup>4</sup> miller and husbandman; lived in Salem and Mendon; married Mary Martin of Marblehead in 1728; 2. Anna;<sup>4</sup> married, first, Joseph King; second, Ebenezer Cook of Mendon; 3. Robert;<sup>4</sup> blacksmith; lived in Mendon; married Abigail Carrill of Salem Jan. 26, 1731-2; died in 1761; she survived him; had children; 4. Mary;<sup>4</sup> married Richard Sargent; 5. Henry;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem and Mendon; married Keziah Very Oct. 17, 1738; living in 1764; had children; 6. Abigail;<sup>4</sup> published to Benjamin Cook; 7. Dinah;<sup>4</sup> married, first, Samuel Slue; second, John Wilson. ELIAS TRASK;<sup>3</sup> blacksmith; married, first, Hannah Marston Oct. 23, 1701; second, Abigail Swinerton in 1712; third, Mrs. Esther (Goodale) Page June 28, 1734; died early in the summer of 1741; his wife Esther was his widow in 1769; children: 1. *Elias*;<sup>4</sup> 2. *Abi-*



tiveness of the shores of their future home in the strange land. The luxuriant forest and greensward of the mainland, wide rivers and well-wooded islands, with patches of red vines trailing over the gray rocks, were beautiful to the view of the weary voyagers. What rest they expected to find in this harvest season amongst such surroundings!

The sight of the Abigail as she sailed up the harbor gladdened the hearts of Conant and his companions. Here, indeed, was all he could wish and expect in the way of assistance and the promised colony. The new comers, with John Woodbury as their guide, came into the inner harbor, where they were welcomed by all in the little village. How Conant learned that he was no longer at the head of the plantation is unknown. Woodbury doubtless

gail;<sup>4</sup> married Jonathan Twist; 3. Samuel;<sup>4</sup> sailor; lived in Salem in 1760; married Hannah Steward Dec. 28, 1730; 4. *Joshua*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1705; 5. Hannah;<sup>4</sup> married Benjamin Clark; 6. Esther;<sup>4</sup> 7. Eunice.<sup>4</sup> DR. JONATHAN TRASK;<sup>3</sup> surgeon; married Margaret Boyce Feb. 23, 1709-10; died before Feb. 16, 1754; child: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 26, 1710-1; died young.

WILLIAM TRASK;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer; married Abigail Foster in 1733; while "driving a cart of stones," he "fell under the off wheel, and was crushed to death" Oct. 11, 1748; children: 1. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 9, 1734-5; died young; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 12, 1736; died young; 3. Amos,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1739; housewright and chocolate maker; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Goldthwaite Oct. 16, 1762; died in 1778; she survived him; had children; 4. Mehitabel,<sup>5</sup> born in 1741; lived in Danvers; died, unmarried, Oct. 24, 1812; 5. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 22, 1744; cabinet-maker and housewright; lived in Danvers; married Martha Larrabee of Danvers in 1767; she died Jan. 4, 1791; he died Nov. 22, 1806; had children. JOHN TRASK;<sup>4</sup> blacksmith and husbandman; removed to New Salem about 1744; married Elizabeth Reed Dec. 19, 1727; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 27, 1737; 2. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 27, 1737; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 27, 1737; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1738. EDWARD TRASK;<sup>4</sup> married Lydia Small Oct. 22, 1734; died before Feb. 15, 1736-7; she died, his widow, in 1795; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> married Daniel Foster of New Salem; 2. Lydia;<sup>5</sup> married Abel Waters of Danvers. ELIAS TRASK;<sup>4</sup> cooper; married Hannah Beadle Dec. 12, 1760; children: 1. —,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1772; 2. —,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1772; 3. Samuel Beadle,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 31, 1773. JOSHUA TRASK;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Dolbier in 1736; was dead in 1762, when she was his widow; children: 1. —,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 13, 1743; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 17, 1745; 3. *Joshua*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 17, 1745; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 20, 1746; probably died before 1769.

JOSEPH TRASK;<sup>5</sup> mariner and wheelwright; married widow Bethiah Wharf Nov. 26, 1758; died before 1783; she died, his widow, in Salem June 30, 1826; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 19, 1759; 2. Rebecca Peirson,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 25, 1770. JOSHUA TRASK;<sup>5</sup> fisherman; married Mary Green of Danvers April 26, 1768; children: 1. Joshua,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 8, 1775; mariner; married Hepzibah Towne Jan. 11, 1824; died in 1826; she survived him; no children; 2. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 8, 1775; mariner; married Lucy Wiggin Nov. 12, 1805; died Jan. 18, 1820; she survived him; had children.

JOSEPH TRASK;<sup>6</sup> married Mary Masury June 13, 1780; died Aug. —, 1806; she died, his widow, April 30, 1846; child: 1. William,<sup>7</sup> born in 1798 or 1799; laborer; married Betsey Worling Sept. 23, 1822; died of consumption Aug. 28, 1861.

related to him the narrative of events since he had sailed to England a year before. How much Conant felt his reduction was a matter within his own breast; the conflict was brief, doubtless, and he continued to do his part in the making of a colony where the persecuted or conscience-troubled could find an asylum, forbearing to claim position or prominence, solicitous only for the welfare of the people. The personality of Endecott was so strikingly different from that of Conant that the old planters, even John Woodbury, must have deplored the change.

Whatever the intention of Rev. John White and the assumption of Roger Conant as to the subsequent relationship of Conant to the colony, it is clear that the rapid development of the scheme for a religious colony here and the sudden accession of influence and wealth, created new interests and elements beyond the control of Mr. White. All this Conant learned afterward, but he could never forget his disappointment and chagrin, particularly in later years, when he wrote of "those in this soe famous a colony."<sup>1</sup>

The policy of the new company was to colonize here upon a business basis. They appointed only strong men to office, and urged the colonists to do the same,<sup>2</sup> and to choose "such as are sound both in profession and confession, men fearing God and hating bribes."<sup>3</sup> John Endecott was believed to be a "fit instrument to begin this wilderness-work, of courage bold undaunted, yet sociable, and of a chearfull spirit, loving and austere, applying himselfe to either as occasion served."<sup>4</sup>

In his own time and under the different circumstances, each man was certainly best adapted to the work. The integrity and will power of the two men were equal, but in most other respects they were very unlike. Conant was the faithful leader in a forlorn hope; but Endecott was the acknowledged efficient manager of a company of aggressive business men with means and ability and determination to succeed along certain lines. He was recognized as the right man for the purpose and was elected chief magistrate of the Massachusetts Colony for more years than any of his successors.

Endecott certainly ruled with a determined hand, sometimes with violence, carrying the sword of authority unsheathed. He was quick to assert and ready to maintain his rights. Firm and unyielding, he confronted all obstacles with vigorous resistance,

<sup>1</sup>Petition of Roger Conant to the general court, in Massachusetts archives, volume 112, leaf 217.

<sup>2</sup>A History of New England; Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour, by Edward Johnson, London, 1654, chapter IV.

<sup>3</sup>A History of New England, Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour, chapter V.

<sup>4</sup>A History of New England; Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour, chapter IX.



and guarded against every insidious foe, crushing insubordination and excluding every hostile element.

Union of Mr. Endecott's company with the planters already at Naumkeag increased the colony to fifty or sixty persons.<sup>1</sup>

At first, there was no system in the settlement of the colony. Captain Endecott went farther up the river than the old planters, and chose a site for his house at what is now the southeast corner of the junction of Washington and Federal streets. He then sent Richard Brackenbury and others to the old fishing stage of the Dorchester Company at Cape Ann to take down the house that the Company had built there. This was done,<sup>2</sup> and the lumber brought to Naumkeag, and rebuilt on the spot he had selected. In this house, Mr. Endecott lived until he removed to Boston, in 1655; and soon after the house disappeared from this site.<sup>3</sup> Richard Brackenbury built his house in the very midst of the old planters, and probably others of the new settlers lived there.

Edward Johnson, in his *History of New England; or Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour*,<sup>4</sup> wrote, in 1654, that the colonists "began to build a Town, which is called Salem, after some little space of time having made a tryall of the Sordid spirits of the Neighbouring Indians, the most bold among them began to gather to divers places, which they began to take up for their owne, those that were sent over servants, having itching desires after novelties found a reddier way to make an end of their Masters provision, then they could finde meanes to get more; They that came over their own men had but little left to feed on, and most began to repent when their strong Beere and full cups ran as small as water in a large Land, but little Corne, and the poore Indians so far from relieving them, that they were forced to lengthen out their owne food with Acorns, and that which added to their present distracted thoughts, the Ditch betweene England and their now place of abode was so wide, that they could not leap over with a lope-staffe, yet some delighting their Eye with the rarity of things present, and feeding their fancies with new discoveries at the Springs approach, they made shift to rub out the Winters cold by the Fire-side, having fuell enough growing at

<sup>1</sup>Planters Plea, chapter IX.

<sup>2</sup>Deposition of Richard Brackenbury, in Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 107.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas Maule, at page 219 of his book, entitled "Truth Held Forth and Maintained," and published in New York in 1695, wrote: "And as the Word of the Lord was by the Mouth of his Servants to *John Indicot* Governour, even so is it, for his fair Dwellings in *Bofton* are become a Barn, and Stable for Cows and Horfes; and one can hardly find where his fair Dwelling in *Salem* stood."

<sup>4</sup>A History of New England; Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour, by Edward Johnson, 1654, chapter IX, page 20.

their very doores, turning down many a drop of the Botell, and burning Tobacco with all the ease they could, discoursing betweene one while and another, of the great progresse they would make after the Summers-Sun had changed the Earthe white furr'd Gowne into a greene Mantell."

Sickness early manifested itself among the new comers. The servants of the Company, for want of wholesome food and suitable lodgings, were seized with scurvy and other distempers, which shortened their lives, and prevented much labor.<sup>1</sup> The winter that followed was fatal to some of the new colonists, including Mrs. Endecott. Apparently she had been sick on the voyage, and never regained her health. At the request of Mr. Endecott, the Pilgrims at Plymouth kindly sent to Naumkeag their physician, Dr. Samuel Fuller, to do what he could to allay the prevailing sickness. Governor Bradford sent a letter to Captain Endecott, with whom he was personally unacquainted. Through this kind act of Governor Bradford friendship between the Puritans and Pilgrims was established. Captain Endecott wrote to Governor Bradford a most friendly letter, teeming with sincere Christian spirit, in which he acknowledged the favor done the Puritans by the presence of Doctor Fuller and expressing his desire for intimate acquaintance. The letter is as follows:—<sup>2</sup>

To the worshipful and my right worthy friend William Bradford, Esq.  
Governour of New Plymouth, these,  
Right Worthy Sir,

It is a thing not usual, that servants to one master and of the same household should be strangers; I assure you I desire it not, nay to speak more plainly, I cannot be so to you: God's people are all marked with one and the same mark, and sealed with one and the same seal, and have, for the main, one and the same heart, guided by one and the same spirit of truth; and where this is there can be no discord, nay, here must needs be sweet harmony; and the same request (with you) I make unto the Lord, that we may, as christian brethren, be united by an heavenly and unfeigned love, bending all our hearts and forces in furthering a work beyond our strength with reverence and fear, fastening our eyes always on him that only is able to direct and prosper all our ways. I acknowledge myself much bound to you, for your kind love and care, in sending Mr. Fuller amongst us, and rejoice much that I am by him satisfied, touching your judgments, of the outward form of God's worship; it is (as far as I can yet gather) no other than is warranted by the evidence of truth, and the same which I have professed and maintained, ever since the Lord in mercy revealed himself unto me, being far differing from the common report that hath been spread of you touching that particular; but God's children must not

<sup>1</sup>History of New England, by Rev. William Hubbard, page 110.

<sup>2</sup>Gov. William Bradford's Letter Book.



look for less here below, and it is the great mercy of God that he strengthens them, to go through with it. I shall not need at this time to be tedious unto you, for, God willing, I purpose to see your face shortly; In the mean time I humbly take my leave of you, committing you to the Lord's blessed protection, and rest,

Your assured loving friend and servant,

JOHN ENDECOTT.

Naumkeak, May 11, Anno 1629.

#### THE MAY-POLE INCIDENT

In ancient times, in England, people of all ranks went maying on the morning of the first of May. This was followed by bringing out of the forest a tall pole, called a May pole, which was drawn by many oxen, nosegays being tied on the tips of their horns, and the pole either painted with bright colors, or covered with flowers bound about it with strings. The procession included substantially all the people of the village, and moved along at the sound of music. The pole was erected in some public place, and from its top a handkerchief and flags streamed. Green boughs were then strewn upon the ground around it, and bound about it. The pole then became the centre of banquets and feasts, and the afternoon was usually spent in dancing around it after the manner of the heathen at the dedication of an idol.

This practice was early opposed in England, and was prohibited by a law passed in the time of the Commonwealth, the Puritans strongly objecting to it on the ground that it had a pagan and popish origin, and because of the immoralities committed at such times.<sup>1</sup>

In 1628, Captain Wollaston made a little settlement at what has been known ever since that time as Mount Wollaston, in the present city of Quincy, within the limits of the Massachusetts patent. The next spring, some of the company went to Virginia, and Thomas Morton, who had been a pettifogger at Furnival's Inn, persuaded the men who remained to thrust out the agent left in charge of the colony, and made himself "a lord of misrule." It was said that he was not only licentious and profane, but avowed atheism. When the first of May came, he set up a May-pole, drank and danced about it, "as if celebrating the feast of the Roman goddess Flora, or the beastly practices of the mad Bacchanalians," says Nathaniel Morton.<sup>1</sup> To the May-pole he affixed rhymes, which he had composed, some tending to lasciviousness, and others to the detraction and scandal of the names of several persons. He changed the name of the hill from Mount Wollaston to Merry Mount, as if the jollity would always be continued.

<sup>1</sup>See May-day customs and May-poles in *Observations on Popular Antiquities*, by John Brand, London, 1877, pages 117-137.

News of what was occurring there was brought to John Endecott at Naumkeag who alone had authority in that territory. With his customary decision and aggressiveness he went thither, probably along shore in his boat, a trip of some thirty miles each way. He caused the May-pole to be cut down, rebuked the people for their profaneness and admonished them to conduct themselves better in the future. Morton was compelled to leave the settlement. He then went among the Indians, teaching them the use of guns, pistols and swords, and supplying them with powder and shot. His trade soon ceased, however, for he was seized by Capt. Miles Standish, and sent by the Pilgrims to the Council of New England, in England, and his house demolished. He was discharged, and subsequently returned to New England, where he lived for awhile in Boston. He continued to injure the country all he could by writing scurrilous pamphlets and by other practices. He ended his life at Piscataqua.<sup>1</sup>

Contentions of various kinds soon arose between the old planters and the new comers. The old planters had subdued the soil, suffered privation and hazard of life, and others had now come to reap what they had sown and brought to fruition. The prudence, moderation and conciliatory spirit of Roger Conant, who was willing to yield his own interests that the work might go on in a Christian manner, quietly subdued his own feelings and the resentment of his associates and secured harmony. Repeatedly, he showed his great faith in the success of endeavors to establish a new government where the freedom of a religious life and practice would be secured, but the vast results were far greater and more important than he could have apprehended. He lived to see the hamlet expand into the most important colony on the American coast.

<sup>1</sup>New England's Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, 1669, pages 86 and 88; History of New England, by Rev. William Hubbard, pages 103 and 104.



## CHAPTER VI.

### IMMIGRATION OF 1629.



CAPT. JOHN ENDECOTT had been at Naumkeag one week when, Sept. 13, 1628, he wrote a letter to the Company in England, informing them of the safe arrival of the colonists, the state of the country, the condition of the old planters, the prospect in store for further immigration and full particulars for making the same. The letter failed to reach Mr. Cradock, the governor, until February 13th following.

In the meantime, in November, 1628, Mr. Cradock sent a letter to Captain Endecott, by Mr. Allerton of New Plymouth who was about to return to America after one of his voyages to the homeland, urging Endecott to prepare as many convenient houses as possible for new colonists, and obtain beaver, fish, timber and other commodities for a return cargo for the ships which were to be sent the next summer.

No news had been received in England of the sickness in the colony which must have weakened and somewhat disheartened the little company in their rough, severe and strange home, and which, if it had been known in England, might have deterred some of the intended emigrants from embarking to a climate that seemed to be unhealthy.

Three days after the receipt of the letter of Captain Endecott, Mr. Cradock wrote, in response thereto, the following communication in which business and pleasure were combined:—

Worthy S<sup>r</sup>, & my louinge Freynd: All dew comendacons premised to yo<sup>r</sup> self & second self, with harty well wishes from my self & many others, well willers & adventurers in this ou plantacon, to yo<sup>r</sup> self & the rest of yo<sup>r</sup> good company, of whose safe arryvall beinge now throughlie informed by yo<sup>r</sup> lres bearinge date the 13 Septemb<sup>r</sup> last, w<sup>ch</sup> came to my hands the 13 this instant February, we doe not a little reioyce; & to heare that my good cozen, yo<sup>r</sup> wyfe, were pfectly recovered of her healthe would be acceptable newes to vs all; w<sup>ch</sup> God

graunt in his good tyme that wee may. Meanwhile, I am, in the behalfe of ou whole company, (w<sup>ch</sup> are much enlarged sence yo<sup>r</sup> deptime out of England,) to give yo<sup>u</sup> hartly thankes ffor yo<sup>r</sup> lardge advize contained in this yo<sup>r</sup> letter, w<sup>ch</sup> I haue fully imparted vnto them, and, farther, to giue proof that thei intende not to bee wantinge by all good meanes to further the plantacon; to w<sup>ch</sup> purpose (God willinge) yo<sup>u</sup> shall heare more at another time, & that speedily; there beeing one shipp bought for the company of xxo tunnes, & 2 others hyred of about 200 tunns each of them, 1 of 19 and 1 of 10 peeces of ordnance, besides not vnlike but one other vessell shall come in companie w<sup>th</sup> theise; in all w<sup>ch</sup> shippes, for the genall stocke and propty of the adventures, there is liklye to be sent thether twixt 2 & 300 psons, wee hope to reside there, and about 100 head of cattell; wherefore, as I wrote y<sup>u</sup> in full, and sent by M<sup>r</sup> Allerton of New Plimoth in November last, soe y<sup>e</sup> desire of them is, that yo<sup>u</sup> would endeuour to gett convenient howsing, fitt to lodge as manye as yo<sup>u</sup> can, against they doe come; and w<sup>th</sup>all w<sup>t</sup> bever, or other comodities, or ffishe, if the meanes to pserve it, can be gotten readie, to returne in the foresaid shippes; and likewise wood, if noe better ladinge be to be had; that yo<sup>w</sup> would endeavour to get in readines w<sup>t</sup>yo<sup>w</sup> can, whereby our shippes, wherof twoe are to returne backe directlye heather, maye not come wholye emptye. There hath not bine a better tyme for sale of tymber theise twoe seaven yeres then at present; & therefore pittye these shippes should come backe emptye, if it might be made readie y<sup>t</sup> they neede not stope 1 daye for it; otherwise mens wages & victualls, together w<sup>th</sup> the shippes, will quicklie rise too high, if to be reladen w<sup>th</sup> wood, & y<sup>t</sup> the same be not readie to put aboard as soone as the shippes are discharged of their outward loadings. I wishe alsoe y<sup>t</sup> there be some sassaffras and sarsaparilla sent vs, as alsoe good store of shoemacke, if there to be had, as wee are informed there is. The like doe I wishe for a tun waight at least of silke grasse, & of ought elce y<sup>t</sup> maye be vsefull for dyinge or in phisicke; to have some of ech sent, & advise given w<sup>th</sup>all w<sup>t</sup> store of each to be had there, if vent maye be found here for it. Alsoe, I hope yo<sup>u</sup> will have some good sturgion in a readines to send vs; & if it be well cured, 2 or 300 ffirkins thereof would helpe well towards our charge. Wee are very confident of yo<sup>r</sup> best endeavors for the genall good; & wee doubt not but God will in mcye give a blessinge vpo our laboures; & wee trust yo<sup>u</sup> will not be vnmindfull of the mayne end of our plantacon, by indeuoringe to bringe y<sup>e</sup> Indians to the knowledge of the gospell; w<sup>ch</sup>, y<sup>t</sup> it maye be speedier & better effected, y<sup>e</sup> earnest desire of our whole comp<sup>a</sup> is, y<sup>t</sup> yo<sup>u</sup> have dilligent & watchfull eye ou our owne people, that they live vnblameable & w<sup>th</sup>out reproofe, & demeane themselves iustlye & curteous towards ye Indians, thereby to drawe them to affect our psons, & consequentlye our religion; as alsoe to endeavour to gett some of their children to trayne up to readinge, & consequentlye to religion, whilst they are yonge; herein to yonge or olde to omitt noe good opportunitie y<sup>t</sup> maye tend to bring them out of y<sup>t</sup> woefull state and condicon they now are in; in w<sup>ch</sup> care o<sup>r</sup> predecessors in this our land sometymes were, and but for y<sup>e</sup> mcye and goodnes of our good God might have continued to this daye; but God, whoe out of the boundles ocean of his mcye hath shewed pittie and compassion to our



land, he is alsuffitient, & can bringe this to passe w<sup>ch</sup> wee now desire in y<sup>t</sup> cuntrye likewise. Onlie let vs not be wantinge on o<sup>r</sup> ptes, nowe wee are called to this worke of the Lords; neither, having put our handes to the plowe, let us look back, but goe on cheerfullye, and depend upon God for a blessing upon our labours; whoe by weake instruments is able (if he see it good) to bringe glorious thinges to passe.

Be of good courage, goe on, and doe woorthilye, & the Lord psp yo<sup>r</sup> endeavor.

It is fullie resolved, by Gods assistance, to send over twoe ministers, at the least, with the shippes now intended to be sent thether; but for M<sup>r</sup> Peters, he is now in Holland, from whence his retorne hether I hold to be vncertaine. Those wee send shall be by the approbacon of M<sup>r</sup> White, of Dorchester, and M<sup>r</sup> Davenport. For w<sup>soeuer</sup> else you have given advise, care shall be taken, God willinge, to pforme the needefull, as neere as wee can, and the tymes will pmitt; whereof alsoe yo<sup>u</sup> maye expect more ample advertisement, in their genall letter, when God shall send our shipps thether. The course you have taken, in givinge our countrymen their content in the point of plantinge tobacco there for the present, (their necessitie considered,) is not disallowed; but, wee trust in God, other meanes will be found to imploye their tyme more comfortable, and profitable alsoe in the end; and we cannot but genallie approve and comend their good resolution to desist fro the plantinge thereof, when as they shall discern howe to imploye their laboures otherwise, w<sup>ch</sup> wee hope they will be speedilye induced vnto by such precepts & examples as wee shall give them. And now, mindinge to conclude this, I maye not omitt to put yo<sup>u</sup> in mynde, how eu yo<sup>u</sup> seeme to feare noe enimies there, yet that you have a watchfull eye for yo<sup>r</sup> owne safty, and the safty of all those of our nation with you, and not to bee too confident of the ffdellitie of the salvages. It is an old proverb, yet as true, The burnt childe dreads the fyre. Our countrymen have suffered by their too much confidence in Virginea. Let vs by their harmes learne to beware; and as wee are comanded to be innocent as doves, soe w<sup>th</sup> all we are enjoined to be wise as serpents. The God of heaven & earth pserve & keepe you from all forayne and inland enimies, & blesse & psp this plantacon, to the enlargement of the kingdom of Jesus Christ, to whose mcifull ptecccon I recomend yo<sup>u</sup> and all your assotiates there, knowne or vnknowne. And soe, tyll my next, w<sup>ch</sup> shall be, God willinge, by our shipps, whoe I make account will be readie to set sayle from hence about the 20<sup>th</sup> of this next moneth of Marche, I end, and rest

Yo<sup>r</sup> assured loving friende and cussen,

MATHEWE CRADOCK.

From my howse in Swithens Lane, neere London Stone, this 16<sup>th</sup> Februarye, 1628,  
stilo Angliæ.

One ship, the Lion's Whelp, had been purchased, and two others, the George Bonaventure and the Talbot, hired to transport the two or three hundred colonists and about a hundred head of cattle, which were to be sent to Naumkeag the next summer.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume 1, pages 383-385.

The letter from Mr. Endecott greatly influenced people to interest themselves anew in the undertaking. Preparations were actively made for the cargoes, supplies, etc. Among other things, to serve as ballast for the ships, were two loads of chalk, ten thousand bricks and five caldron of sea coal. There were also provided nails, red lead, iron, steel, lead, salt, sail cloth, leather, plaster of paris, material for millstones; cannon, muskets, flasks, ensigns, partizans, halberds, pikes, swords, belts, shot and powder for military use and armor for twenty soldiers; for planting were secured seeds of various grains, beans and peas, stones and seeds of fruit shrubs and trees; seeds and roots of plants for coloring, hemp and flax seed, potatoes, hop roots; various utensils and implements; clothing of all sorts; and cows, horses, conies and turkeys.<sup>1</sup>

For accommodation on the voyage were procured fifty bed-ticks and bolsters, with wool, of Scotch ticking, fifty mats to lie under fifty beds, fifty rugs, fifty pair of Welch cotton blankets, one hundred pair of sheets, linen for towels, table-cloths and napkins, and sea-chests. For consumption during the voyage and as supplies for the colonists at Naumkeag were secured twelve thousand pounds of bread, twenty-two hogsheads of beef, one hundred and sixty-two flitches of bacon, fourteen hundred pounds of haberdine cod, three thousand pounds of cheese, forty bushels of peas, twenty bushels of oat meal, groats and malt, twenty firkins of butter, two tierces of beer vinegar, forty-five hogsheads of beer, Malaga and Canary wines, two runlets<sup>2</sup> of Spanish wine, twenty gallons of aqua vitæ<sup>3</sup> and six hogsheads of water. There were, also, twenty gallons of Gallipoly or Mayorke oil and one hundred and twenty gallons of sweet oil, eight dozens of candles, one and a half bushels of mustard seed, two firkins of soap and four thousand billets.<sup>4</sup>

Able men, skilful in making pitch and salt, carpenters and wheelwrights and vine planters, were hired and sent to Naumkeag upon these vessels. There was, also, Mr. Samuel Sharpe who was to have the oversight of the ordnance and fort and of the artillery in general.<sup>5</sup> Thomas Graves<sup>6</sup> of Gravesend, Kentshire, gentleman,

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records for 1628.

<sup>2</sup>Small barrels.

<sup>3</sup>Brandy.

<sup>4</sup>These sticks of wood were probably for firewood on board the vessels.

<sup>5</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, March 5, 1628-9.

<sup>6</sup>The agreement which Thomas Graves made with the Company was dated March 10, 1628-9, and is printed in full in the Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony of that date. The following is an abbreviated copy.

"I . . . haue . . . agreed to serue the Newe England Comp, and in there ymplyment to take my passage for Newe England in such shippe as thei shall appoynt mee; and during my stay there . . . to doe my true and vttermost indeuour. . . the said Company are to beare all my



a man skilled and experienced in iron works and salt works, in

*Tho: Graves*

prospecting for iron, lead, copper, mineral salt and alum mines, limestone and other materials for building, in manufacturing, in

measuring and surveying of land and buildings, making maps, aqueducts and fortifications, was also among the colonists in the employ of the Company. He had a wife and five children and a boy and maid servant, who did not sail with him.

Soon after his arrival in New England, Mr. Graves wrote the following letter to England:—

Thus much I can affirme in generall, that I neuer came in a more goodly Country in all my life, all things considered: if it hath not at any time beene manured and husbanded, yet it is very beautifull in open Lands, mixed with goodly woods, and againe open plaines, in some places five hundred Acres, some places more, some lesse, not much troublesome for to cleere for the Plough to got in, no place barren, but on the tops of the Hills; the grasse & weedes grow vp to a man's face, in the Lowlands & by fresh Riuers abundance of grasse and large Meddowes without any Tree or shrubbe to hinder the Sith. I neuer say except in Hungaria, vnto which I alwayes paralell this countrie, in all our most respects, for euery thing that is heere eyther sowne or planted prospereth far better then in old England: the increase of Corne

chardgs by sea into Newe England, together w<sup>th</sup> my charges duringe my staie in there implyments in Newe England, & my charges at sea in my returne home, apparrell only excepted, w<sup>ch</sup> is to bee allwaies at my owne chargs; and it is agreed moreouer, that from the tyme of my ffirst landing in Newe England, to the tyme of the returne from thence for London of such shippe as shalbee sent from London next after Michelmas next, and in which I shall take my passage for London, that there shalbee allowed unto me ffyve pounds for ech month that I shall contyneue in Newe England as afore said, for my sallery or wages, but nothinge to bee allowed for my charges during the tyme of my beeing at sea, . . . in case the said Comp, after I shall haue contynued 6 or 8 months in the countrey, shall desyre . . . to retayne me in there seruice to the end of three yeeres, do heereby pmise to bee at the chardge of the transportacon into Newe England of my wiffe, ffyve children, a boy, & a mayd seruant, & w<sup>th</sup> all to build mee a conuenient house for my selffe and my sayd ffameley, at there chargs, and thereto to assyne me one hundred acres of land, and to haue pte thereof planted at the Companies chardge against the coming of my ffameley, whereby they may subsiste till I shall be possessed of my ffameley to performe the same, or otherwise to alloue me some competency of necessary victualls for the subsistance of me and my ffameley till the next season of plantinge & reapinge after there arryuall: and . . . I contyneue in the Companies implyments ffor three yeeres, the payment of ffyve pounds p month ffor my sallery is to bee vtterly voyde, and my yeereley allowance in money, ffrom the tyme of my ffirst arriual in Newe England to the end of three yeeres, to bee after the rate of ffyfey pounds by the yeere, prouided alwayes that my sayd ffameley, going ouer as aforesaid, there shalbee such a proporcon of land allowed me for them heereafter as if they had nowe taken there passage w<sup>th</sup> me in the shippes nowe bound for Newe England.”

is here farre beyond expectation, as I haue seene here by experience in Barly, the which because it is so much aboue your conception I will not mention. And Cattle doe prosper very well, and those that are bredd here farr greater then those with you in England. Vines doe grow here plentifully laden with th biggest Grapes that euer I saw, some I haue seene foure inches about, so that I am bold to say of this countrie, as it is commonly in *Germany* or *Hungaria*, that for Cattel, Corne, and Wine it excelleth. We haue many more hopefull commodities here in this countrie, the which time will teach to make good vse of: In the meane time wee abound with such things which next vnder God doe make vs subsist, as Fish, Foule, Deere, and sundrie sorts of fruits, as musk-millions, water-millions, Indián-Pompions, Indian-Pease, Beanes, & many other odde fruits that I cannot name; all which are made good and pleasant through this maine blessing of God, the healthfulnesse of the countrie which far exceedeth all parts that euer I haue beene in: It is obserued that few or none doe here fal sicke, vnless of the Scuruy that they bring from aboard the Ship with them, whereof I haue cured some of my companie onely by labour.

March 12, 1628-9, John Browne, gentleman, and Mr. Samuel

*John Brown*

Browne, of Roxwell, in Essexshire, agreed to take passage in the ships of the Company for New England, intending to become planters there. William

*Samuell Brown*

Dixie,<sup>1</sup> a young man of twenty-

two, also went to Naumkeag on one of these three vessels.

*Willm Dixie*

As the propagation of the gospel was the principal purpose for settling this plantation, the Company were "carefull to make plentyfull pvision of godly ministers" of "faithfull preachinge, godly conversacon, and exemplary lyfe." Rev. Hugh Peter was one of the ministers considered for this purpose, but when the spring of 1629 came he was preaching in Holland, and was not available. Rev. Francis Bright of Roiley,<sup>2</sup> in Essexshire, a non-conformist minister, arranged to leave England for America with this colony, in his clerical capacity. It is said that he had been

<sup>1</sup>Capt. William Dixie, born about 1607, arrived at Naumkeag in June, 1629; planter; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668; married Anna or Hannah —; she died between 1681 and 1684; he died in the spring of 1690; children: 1. Mary; married Hugh Woodberry; and removed to Bristol; 2. Anna; married, first, Nicholas Hayward; second, — Judkins; 3. Abigail; married John Stone; 4. Elizabeth; married Samuel Morgan of Marblehead; 5. Sarah; married Edmund Gale of Beverly; 6. John; died before Sept. 24, 1676, when his two children were baptized in Beverly.

<sup>2</sup>Rayleigh?



trained under Rev. John Davenport, who held the living of St. Stephen's, Coleman Street, in London.

Feb. 2, 1628-9, he agreed to be ready with his wife, two children and a maid servant by the beginning of March to take passage to the plantation, where he agreed to serve in the work of the ministry for three years for their support and twenty pounds yearly, the expense of their transportation, etc. It is not known under what circumstances Mr. Bright left England.

Two other ministers were engaged to go to America with the colony. One of them was Rev. Samuel Skelton, a non-conformist clergyman, who was in middle life. The desire of Mr. Skelton to go to New England was a matter of course as he was associated in his religious work with the family and people of the late Earl of Lincoln, who were in full sympathy with the colonial movement. It is probable that the religious authorities had not prosecuted him, and indeed it is supposed that his position at Tattershall was such that he was answerable for his conduct to the crown only. Isaac Johnson learned that Rev. Francis Higginson of Leicester, who was widely known as an able and conscientious non-conformist minister, of grave demeanor and fit for this service, desired to go to America. Mr. Johnson wrote letters to the Company, informing them of what he had learned; and at a meeting of the company March 23, 1628-9, Mr. John Humphrey was requested to ride to Leicester presently and learn if Mr. Higginson could conveniently go on one of the ships which were nearly ready to sail. If Mr. Higginson could leave at once without reflection on his people whom he had served, and his removal be approved of and consented to by some of the best among them, and especially by Mr. Arthur Hildersham of Ashby-de-la-Zouch, in Leicestershire, he was to make an agreement with him. Mr. Higginson was to be allowed to take his family with him, unless for their better accommodation they preferred to remain in England till toward Bartholomew.<sup>1</sup>

An agreement made with the Company April 8, 1629, by Messrs. Skelton and Higginson follows:—

The 8<sup>th</sup> of Aprill 1629.

M<sup>r</sup> Francis Higgeson and M<sup>r</sup> Samuel Skelton intended ministers for this plantacon, and it being thought meete to consider of their intertaynement, who expressing their willingnesse, together, also with M<sup>r</sup> Francis Bright, being now present to doe their endeavour in their places of the ministry as well in preaching, catechizing as also in teaching, or causing to bee taught, the Companyes servants & their children, as also the salvages and their children, whereby to their uttermost to further the maine end of this plantation, being, by the assistance of Almighty God, the conversion of the salvages, the proposicons con-

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records for March 22, 1628-9.

cluded on with M<sup>r</sup> Francis Bright, the 2 of February last, were reciprocally accepted of by M<sup>r</sup> Francis Higgison and M<sup>r</sup> Samuel Skelton, who are in every respect to have the like condicons as M<sup>r</sup> Bright hath, only whereas M<sup>r</sup> Higgison hath 8 children it is intended that 10<sup>11</sup> more yearely shall be allowed him towards their chardge. And it is agreed that the increase to be improvement of all their grounds during the first 3 yeares shall be at the Companies disposing, who are to fynde them dyett during that tyme; and tenne pounds more to M<sup>r</sup> Higgison towards his present fitting him and his for the voyage.

FRANCIS HIGGISON,  
SAMUEL SKELTON.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Higginson made an agreement with the Company, similar to that of Mr. Bright. The following is a copy of this one:—

#### THE AGREE<sup>mt</sup> W<sup>th</sup> M<sup>r</sup> HIGGINSON<sup>2</sup>

A true note of y<sup>e</sup> allowance y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> new England Copany haue by como consent & order of their Court & Counsell graunted vnto M<sup>r</sup> Francis Higginson minister, for his maintenaunce in new England April 8, 1629.

Imprimis y<sup>t</sup> 30<sup>11</sup> in money shall be forthw<sup>th</sup> paid him by y<sup>e</sup> Copanyes treasurer towards y<sup>e</sup> chardges of fitting himsele w<sup>th</sup> Apparell & other necessaryes for his voyage.

2 Item y<sup>t</sup> 10<sup>11</sup> more shall be payed ouer by y<sup>e</sup> said treasurer towards y<sup>e</sup> provyding of bookes for present vse.

3 Iten y<sup>t</sup> hee shall haue 30<sup>11</sup> yearly paid him for 3 yeares to beginne fro y<sup>e</sup> tyme of his first arrivall in new England & so to be accounted & paid him at y<sup>e</sup> End of eu<sup>r</sup>y yeare.

4 Item y<sup>t</sup> during y<sup>e</sup> said tyme y<sup>e</sup> Company shall provide for him & his family necessaryes of diett housing & firewood; and shall be at chardges of transporting him into new England: and at y<sup>e</sup> end of y<sup>e</sup> said 3 yeares, if hee shall not like to continue there any longer, to be at y<sup>e</sup> chardge of transporting him backe for England.

5. Item y<sup>t</sup> in convenient tyme an house shall be built, & certayne lands allotted thereunto; w<sup>ch</sup> during his stay in y<sup>e</sup> countrey & continuance in y<sup>e</sup> ministrey shall bee for his vse; & after his death or remoovall y<sup>e</sup> same to be for Succeeding ministers.

6. Item at y<sup>e</sup> expiracon of y<sup>e</sup> said 3 yeares an 100 acres of land shall be assigned to him & his heires for euer.

7. Item y<sup>t</sup> in case hee shall depart this lyfe in y<sup>e</sup> countrey, y<sup>e</sup> said Company shall take care for his widdow during her widdowhood & aboade in y<sup>e</sup> country and plantacon: & y<sup>e</sup> like for his children whilst y<sup>e</sup> remayne vpon y<sup>e</sup> said plantacon.

8. Item y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> milke of 2 kyne shall bee appointed towards y<sup>e</sup> chardges of diett for him & his familye as aforesaid, & halfe y<sup>e</sup> increase of calves during y<sup>e</sup> said 3 yeares: but y<sup>e</sup> said 2 kyne, and y<sup>e</sup> other halfe of y<sup>e</sup> increase to returne to y<sup>e</sup> Company at y<sup>e</sup> end of y<sup>e</sup> said 3 yeares.

9. Item y<sup>t</sup> he shall haue liberty of carrying ouer bedding, linnen,

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation, Etc., Salem, 1908.

<sup>2</sup>Hutchinson's Historical Collections, page 24.



brasse, iron, pewter, of his owne for his necessary vse during y<sup>e</sup> said tyme.

10. Item y<sup>t</sup> if he continue 7 yeares upon y<sup>e</sup> said plantacon, y<sup>t</sup> then 100 acres of land more shall be allotted him for him and his for ever.<sup>1</sup>

To this agreement the clerk who made the record of it added that it was unintentionally omitted therefrom that "Mr Higgeson was pmised a man seruant to take care & look to his things & to catch him fish & fowle & pvide other things needfull and also 2 maid seruants to look to his family."

One of the ships, the George Bonaventure, was a strong vessel of about three hundred tons burden, with twenty pieces of ordnance and manned by about thirty mariners. It was commanded by Thomas Cox, and carried fifty-two planters and provisions and twelve mares, thirty kine and some goats. Among the passengers were Rev. Samuel Skelton and his family, consisting of his wife Susanna and three children, Samuel, aged six, Susanna, four, and Mary, nearly two. As it was specially desirable that the George should sail as early as possible, it set out upon its voyage about the middle of April and from the Isle of Wight May 4, and safely arrived at Naumkeag June 22, 1629.

The Talbot, Thomas Beecher, master, was also a strong ship of three hundred tons, with nineteen pieces of ordnance and manned by thirty mariners. It carried about one hundred planters, and as freight six goats, five great pieces of ordnance, with oatmeal, pease and all kinds of munitions and provisions sufficient for the plantation for a year. Several servants of the Pilgrims came in this vessel at this time and also Mr. Higginson and his family, consisting of his wife Ann and children, John, the eldest, aged twelve, Francis, Timothy, Theophilus, Samuel, Mary, Ann, Charles and Neophytus.

The Lion's Whelp, John Gibbs, master, was a ship of one hundred and twenty tons, well proportioned and fast, carrying eight pieces of ordnance, six fishermen and about forty planters, principally of Dorsetshire and Somersetshire, besides the mariners and provisions and four goats. Rev. Francis Bright and his family, consisting of his wife, two children and one maid servant, were among the passengers.

The Talbot and the Lion's Whelp sailed from Gravesend on Saturday, April 25, 1629, at seven o'clock in the morning, with a wind so light that a progress of only twelve miles was made that day. They remained where they were that night and the next day, keeping the Sabbath. On Monday, they sailed as far as Gorin Road, where they anchored for the night. On Tuesday, they proceeded a little further and anchored opposite Margaret Town, waiting for wind to carry them through The Downs. The next

day, they passed The Downs, and remained there that night. For the next three days the southwest wind caused the water to be so rough that a number of the passengers, among them Mrs. Higginson, were sea-sick. At this time, officers from the king's ship, named the Assurance, impressed two of the seamen. Sunday, May 3d, was a cold windy day, and the vessels were still at The Downs. The next day, the wind became fair from the north-northeast, and sails were spread. The vessels passed Dover, where they saw six or seven sail of Dunkirks coming toward them. For some reason, probably because of the presence of other vessels, the latter returned. That night the Isle of Wight was reached, and the vessels were anchored to wait for the light before attempting to go through the channel. On the next day, they entered the channel, passed Portsmouth, and anchored at night opposite Cow-Castle. Here, Rev. Mr. Higginson, his wife and daughter Mary and several others from both vessels went on shore to refresh themselves and wash their linen. They remained on shore all night. In the evening, however, sails were hoisted, and the vessels proceeded eight miles, anchoring opposite Yarmouth. The next morning, a shallop from the Talbot was sent to take in those who had gone on shore the night before. The water was so rough that the women, at their request, were put on shore when they had got within three miles of the vessels, and they walked to the town, where they lodged that night. At this place the vessels remained until Monday, May 11, and took on board some fresh provision. On Saturday, officers from the king's ship impressed two more men, but by entreaty one was returned. On Sunday, Mr. Higginson preached aboard the Talbot in the morning and in the afternoon at Yarmouth in response to an earnest invitation. On Monday afternoon, at three o'clock, sail was again set, and about an hour later the vessels passed the narrow Needles and entered the sea.

The next day they sailed as far as Lizard Head, and on the following day, Wednesday, May 13, to Land's End. There, most of the company saw their native England for the last time. Mr. Higginson called his children and other passengers to the stern of the ship to take their last look at the homeland. He said: "We will not say, as the separatists were wont to say at their leaving of England, 'Farewell, Babylon!' 'Farewell, Rome!' but we will say, 'Farewell, dear England! farewell, the church of God in England, and all the Christian friends there!' We do not go to New England as separatists from the church of England; though we cannot but separate from the corruptions in it; but we go to practise the positive part of church reformation, and propagate the gospel in America." He concluded with a fervent prayer for the king, and church and state, in England; and for the presence



and blessing of God with themselves in their present undertaking for New England.<sup>1</sup>

About ten leagues further on, they passed the Scilly Islands and turned the prows of their vessels directly toward the new world. Sea-sickness followed the first experience of the passengers with the rough Atlantic. The next Sunday, the religious services were disturbed by the approach of a man-of-war of the Biskaniers. Apparently concluding that an attack would be unsuccessful, the ship sailed away. On the same day two children of Mr. Higginson, Samuel and Mary, became sick of small pox, and subsequently many more were afflicted. The disease had been brought aboard the vessel by a Mr. Browne who was sick with it at Gravesend. Samuel Higginson recovered, but Mary lived only two days, and her body was, of course, committed to the sea. She was five years old, and for a year had been hunch-backed, weak and sickly, and had suffered much pain. Her death was regarded as a great relief from suffering.

The second day thereafter (Thursday, May 21) was kept as a day of humiliation, fasting and prayer to beseech God to cause sickness and death on board the ship to cease. There was another clergyman on the Talbot, Rev. Ralph Smith,<sup>2</sup> who although not in full sympathy with Mr. Higginson observed the service with many of the people on board. The sailors were much interested in the exercises, saying that they had never heard of a fast day service at sea.

During the entire passage the seamen were religious and kind. Each day was opened and closed with reading and expounding a chapter in the Bible and by singing and prayer. On Sundays Mr. Higginson preached twice and catechised on the Talbot, and probably similar services were held on each of the other vessels. The master of the Talbot and his crew set the eight and twelve o'clock watches each night with singing a psalm and prayer "that was not read out of a book."

<sup>1</sup>Magnalia Christi Americana. by Rev. Cotton Mather, page 360.

<sup>2</sup>Rev. Ralph Smith came voluntarily and on his own account, and the Company did not learn that he was not in accord with the ministers who came under contract until his provisions for the voyage were on shipboard. Governor Endecott was directed to allow him to remain within the limits of their grant only while he was conformable to the government.

Mr. Smith was baptized in the parish of Gainford, Durham, England, April 5, 1589, and was son of Rev. Ralph and Catheran (Mathewson) Smith; and graduated at Christ College, Cambridge, in 1614.

He remained in Salem a short time, and with his family removed to the struggling little colony of fishermen at Nantascot, now Hull. He found only insufficient shelter for his family, and a lack of associations and surroundings that were agreeable to a man of grave demeanor and education. He went to Plymouth a few weeks later, and preached there until 1636. He continued to live in Plymouth until 1642, when he went to the little settle-

On Wednesday, May 27th, there was a fearful gale, and rain fell in torrents. The darkness was intense; and the waves poured over the ships, filling the boats with water. As the end of the voyage approached some of the men became sick with the scurvy and others with small pox, but during the entire journey no one died but Mary Higginson until toward the end, when one of the men and a child of Goodman Black died, the latter of consumption, having been sick before they left England. On Tuesday, June 2d, another fast was held.

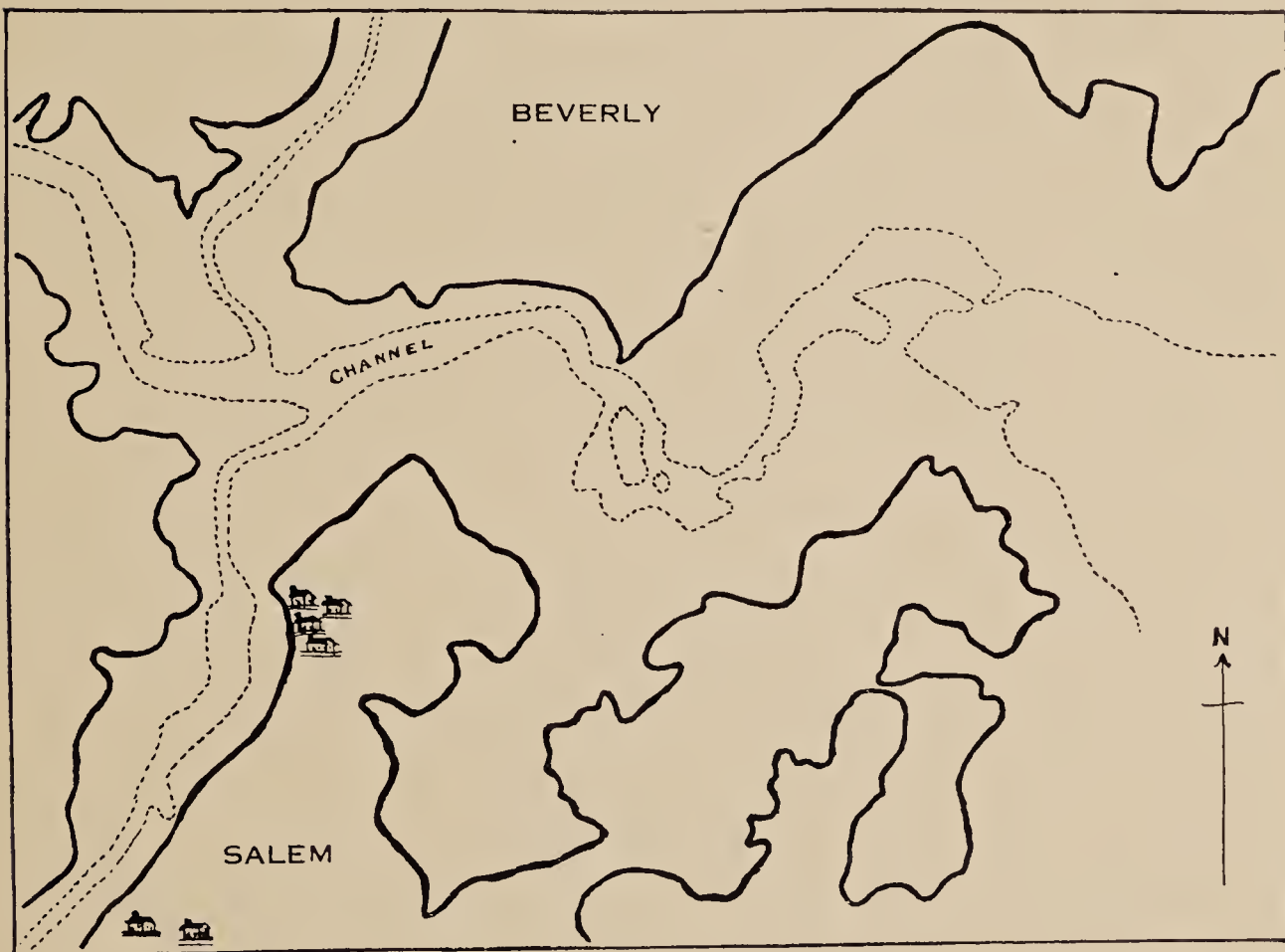


CHART OF BEVERLY HARBOR.

As the days passed and the American coast was approached, many and various kinds of fish and whales were seen, and great ice-bergs floated near them.

A great deal of the time during the voyage the Talbot and the Lion's Whelp were in sight of each other. June 15th and 16th, when fog shut off the view, a drum was beat on the Talbot to learn the position of the Lion's Whelp, and response was made by

ment at Jeffries Creek, now Manchester. He preached there until after 1647. Then he lived with his son-in-law in Ipswich until about 1659, and was at York, Me., in 1660. He died in Boston March 1, 1660-1.



firing a cannon. A week elapsed before the vessels were again within sight of each other.

On Wednesday, June 24, a clear sight of America was obtained, the ships being seven or eight leagues to the south of Cape Sable. There they saw on the water flowers resembling yellow gilliflowers; and in the afternoon of the next day they clearly saw many islands and hills by the sea-shore. By noon of Friday, they were within three leagues of Cape Ann; and as they sailed along the coast saw "every hill and dale and every island full of gay woods and high trees."<sup>1</sup> An increased longing for the new world came upon them as they saw the woods and flowers. Saturday night, June 27, they anchored at the old fishing station at Cape Ann. Some of the men went upon the little island in the harbor, and brought back ripe strawberries and gooseberries and sweet single roses. This was the first taste of the fruit of the new land.

Some of the planters had seen the colors on the vessel and so apprised Governor Endecott, who thereupon sent a shallop with two men to pilot the vessels into the harbor.

The next day was the seventh Sunday they had spent on the voyage, and the first in America. The two pilots spent the day with them. The next day, Monday, they sailed to Naumkeag. Mr. Higginson, in his journal, states that by God's blessing and the directions of the pilots they "passed the curious and difficult entrance into the large spacious harbour of Naimkecke." When they had come within the harbor they saw the ship George which had arrived the preceding week. With great thankfulness and gladness and satisfaction they had ended their tedious voyage of three thousand miles and six weeks and three days from Land's End and nine weeks and three days from Gravesend. The next morning, Tuesday, June 30, Governor Endecott went on board the Talbot, bade the passengers welcome, and invited Mr. and Mrs. Higginson on shore to take lodging in his house, which they did.

Rev. Mr. Higginson wrote, for the satisfaction of friends, upon their request, a journal during the voyage, the original manuscript of which is in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society. With this he wrote under date of July 24, 1629, and also sent before November following a description of the region about Naumkeag and of its conditions, entitling it "New-Englands Plantation." This was published in London in 1630, and two other editions followed immediately.

Mr. Higginson wrote of his book as follows: "A Trve Relacon of y<sup>e</sup> last voyage to new England, declaring all circumstances w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> maner of y<sup>e</sup> passage wee had by sea, and

<sup>1</sup>Journal of the Voyage, kept by Rev. Francis Higginson, London, 1630.

what maner of countrey & inhabitants we found when we came to land: & what is y<sup>e</sup> present state & condicon of y<sup>e</sup> English people y<sup>t</sup> are there already. Faithfully recorded according to y<sup>e</sup> very truth for y<sup>e</sup> satisfaction of very many of my loving friends, who haue earnestly requested to be truly certified in these thinges. Written from new England July 24, 1629."<sup>1</sup>

## NEVV-ENGLANDS PLANTATION.

OR,  
A SHORT AND TRVE  
DESCRIPTION OF THE  
COMMODITIES AND  
DISCOMMODITIES  
of that Countrey.

---

Written by a reuerend Diuine now  
there resident.

---




---

LONDON,  
Printed by T.C. and R.C. for Michael Sparke,  
dwelling at the Signe of the *Blew Bible* in  
*Greene Arbor* in the little *Old Bailey*.  
1630.

REDUCED TITLE PAGE.

He also wrote what he called "Generall Considerations for the plantation in New England, with an answer to several objections;" and added "a catalogue of such needful things as every planter doth or ought to provide to go to New England."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Higginson's *New Englands Plantation, etc.*, Salem, 1908, page 51.

<sup>2</sup>All of these writings of Mr. Higginson are reproduced in his *New Englands Plantation, etc.*, Salem, 1908.



The Company had purchased the Lion's Whelp, and hired the other two ships. The charge for the hire of these ships was so great that it was economical to speedily return them with some kind of a cargo,—of beaver, otter or other skins, fish, especially sturgeon, or staves or wood. Though beaver and fish were the more desirable, timber was selling in England better than it had for many years. Sassafras, sarsaparilla and sumach were also suggested as a cargo; also, a ton of silk grass and anything else that might be useful for dyeing or in the practice of medicine. Information as to the quantity of each of these articles that could be found in the region about Naumkeag was also requested. No delay was to be allowed; if articles were not ready for shipment, the vessels were to sail at once, though without a cargo. The George was to proceed to Newfoundland with dispatch, and the Talbot to return to England; but the Lion's Whelp was to be retained for some time if there were occasion therefor.

On the ship George came Mr. Samuel Sharpe,<sup>1</sup> who was to have charge of the fortifications. On the Lion's Whelp came William Dodge,<sup>2</sup> a "skillful husbandman" from Dorchester, about

*William Dodge*

twenty-five years of age. Others who came in these three vessels were Hugh Tillie, William Edes and Isaac Rick-

<sup>1</sup>ELDER SAMUEL SHARP<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; elder in the church; married Alice —; died about 1647; she died, his widow, Aug. —, 1667; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>2</sup> married Thomas Jeggles; 2. Elias,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 1, 1636-7; living in 1652, when he was servant to John Hardy, having four years more to serve; 3. Edward,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 14, 1639; 4. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 29, 1640; married John Norton; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized (as Experience) Sept. 19, 1641; married Christopher Phelps; 6. *Nathaniel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 10, 1644; 7. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 31, 1646-7; married Peter Odlin of Boston.

NATHANIEL SHARP;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Rebecca Marshall Dec. 30, 1668; they were living in 1684; children: 1. Rebecca,<sup>3</sup> born March 26, 1671; married John Merriam; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born June 3, 1673; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 4, 1676; 4. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 26, 1678-9; married Alexander Duglas, both of Lynn; 5. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 26, 1680-1.

<sup>2</sup>WILLIAM DODGE;<sup>1</sup> farmer; lived in Salem, and settled on Bass River Side, afterwards Beverly, about 1645; married Elizabeth —, who was his wife in 1668; died about 1690; children: 1. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1636; 2. *William*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 19, 1640; 3. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 24, 1642; married, first, Samuel Porter of Beverly; second, Thomas Woodberry; and, probably, 4. Josiah,<sup>2</sup> who was killed in the Narragansett war in 1675.

CAPT. JOHN DODGE;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem, which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668; married, first, Sarah Procter AApril 10, 1659; second, Elizabeth, widow of John Woodbury; soldier in the Narragansett war in 1675; owned a mill at Beverly; representative, 1693-1696 and 1702; died about 1715; his wife Elizabeth died, his widow, Jan. 6, 1725-6, aged ninety; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 2, 1661-2; farmer; lived in Wenham; married, first, Sarah —; second, Mary Bridges; died in Wenham about November, 1700; had children; 2. William,<sup>2</sup> born in 1665; yeoman; lived in Beverly; married Hannah Woodbury; had children; 3. Sarah,<sup>2</sup>

man, Thomas Beard,<sup>1</sup> a shoemaker, George Farr<sup>2</sup> and Robert Moulton,<sup>3</sup> shipwrights, Richard Howard, "a Bedfordshire man," Richard Ewstead, "a wheelwright, who was

*Robt Moulton*

baptized Feb. 16, 1667-8, in Beverly; married Moses Gage of Beverly; 4. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> born May 16, 1669, in Beverly; died young; 5. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> born July 2, 1671, in Beverly; married Ebenezer Woodberry of Salem; 6. Martha,<sup>2</sup> born Feb. 5, 1672-3, in Beverly; 7. Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> born in 167-, in Beverly. CAPT. WILLIAM DODGE; maltster and yeoman; lived in Beverly; soldier in the Narrangansett war in 1675; deputy and representative; married, first, Mary (Conant), widow of John Balch about 1663; second, widow Joanna (Hale) Larkin of Charlestown May 26, 1685; she died Aug. 18, 1693; married, third, Mary, widow of Capt. Andrew Cratney of Marblehead Oct. 27, 1698; she died about Feb. 1, 1701-2; he died March 24, 1719-20; children: 1. William,<sup>3</sup> born March 20, 1663-4, in Salem; deacon; lived in Beverly; married Mary Porter of Salem Village Dec. 9, 1710; died Jan. 7, 1747; had children; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born May 26, 1666, in Salem; married Joseph Herrick of Beverly; 3. Joshua,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 29, 1669; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born July 9, 1671; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 26, 1673; 6. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born March 3, 1667-8; 7. Robert<sup>3</sup> (twin), born Oct. 9, 1686; 8. Rebecca<sup>3</sup> (twin), born Oct. 9, 1686.

<sup>1</sup>Thomas Beard transported himself to America at his own expense. He removed from Salem to Strawberry-Bank, now Portsmouth, N. H., in 1644.

<sup>2</sup>George Farr became one of the earliest settlers of Lynn; and died in 1661.

<sup>3</sup>ROBERT MOULTON<sup>1</sup> removed from Salem to Charlestown in 1630, and returned to Salem in 1635; died in Salem in the spring of 1655; his wife probably died before him; children: 1. *Robert*;<sup>2</sup> 2. *Dorothy*;<sup>2</sup> married — Edwards.

ROBERT MOULTON;<sup>2</sup> married Abigail Goode; died in the autumn of 1665; she survived him; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 22, 1642; married Benjamin Bellflower; 2. *Robert*;<sup>3</sup> baptized June 23, 1644; 3. Hannah;<sup>3</sup> married Thomas Flint; 4. Samuel;<sup>3</sup> died in 1668; 5. *John*;<sup>3</sup> born April 25, 1654; 6. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 3, 1656; mariner; living in 1708; 7. Miriam,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. —, 1658-9; married Joseph Bachelor; 8. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born June 15, 1661; married William Lord.

ROBERT MOULTON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married Mary Cook July 17, 1672; died in 1730; she was his widow in 1732; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born June 2, 1673; married Thomas Mackintire; and removed to Oxford; 2. *Robert*;<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 3, 1675; 3. *Ebenezer*;<sup>4</sup> born April 28, 1678; 4. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 28, 1681-2; married Zachariah Marsh; 5. Samuel;<sup>4</sup> married Sarah Green Jan. 15, 1719-20; died in 1745; she was his widow in 1748; no children; 6. Martha;<sup>4</sup> married Thomas Green of Brimfield; 7. Hannah;<sup>4</sup> unmarried in 1745. JOHN MOULTON;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer and husbandman; married Elizabeth Corey Sept. 16, 1684; died in 1741; children: 1. *John*;<sup>4</sup> 2. *Miriam*;<sup>4</sup> died unmarried; 3. Margaret;<sup>4</sup> married Ebenezer Aborn; 4. Elizabeth;<sup>4</sup> unmarried in 1742; 5. Abigail;<sup>4</sup> married John Burton.

ROBERT MOULTON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; removed to Windham, Conn., in 1709, and about 1725 to Brimfield, Mass.; married Hannah Groves of Beverly April 12, 1698; died Aug. 25, 1756; she survived him; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 1, 169-; married Stephen Fuller of Windham; 2. Robert,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 18, 1700; weaver; lived in Brimfield; married Elizabeth Baker of Marlboro; died in 1741; had children; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 30, 1702; married Anthony Needham of Brimfield; 4. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born March 13, 1704; married Abel Bingham of Windham; 5. Lois,<sup>5</sup> born April 3, 1706; married — Durkee; 6. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 13, 1708; married, first, Thomas King; second, — Merrick; 7. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 25, 1700, in Windham;



commended to vs by Mr Davenport for a very able man, though not

*Lawrence Leach*

without his imperfections," Lawrence Leach,<sup>1</sup> "a careful &

8. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> born March 24, 1712, in Windham; 9. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born June 15, 1714, in Windham; 10. Susanna,<sup>5</sup> born June 15, 1714, in Windham; 11. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 24, 1716, in Windham; 12. Freeborn,<sup>4</sup> born April 3, 1717, in Windham; 13. John,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 1, 1720-1. EBENEZER MOULTON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; died between 1745 and 1752; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem and Brimfield; married, first, Rebecca Dagget June 7, 1737; second, Anna Flint Jan. 16, 1744-5; died Sept. 5, 1785; had children; 2. Benjamin;<sup>5</sup> 3. Anna;<sup>5</sup> unmarried in 1744. JOHN MOULTON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Judith Mackintire March 13, 1721-2; died before 1742; children: 1. John;<sup>5</sup> 2. Joshua;<sup>5</sup> lived in Danvers in 1783; 3. Miriam;<sup>3</sup> living in 1742.

BENJAMIN MOULTON;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married, first, Elizabeth Harwood Oct. 17, 1734; second, Sarah Smith of Salem Jan. 23, 1739-40; his wife Sarah died March 4, 1775; he died April —, 1776; children: 1. Elizabeth;<sup>6</sup> 2. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 29, 1740; lived in Danvers and South Brimfield; served in the Revolution; married Sarah Jacobs Dec. 8, 1768; had children; 3. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 22, 1742; 4. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born June 15, 1746; married Benjamin Jacobs; 5. Elijah,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 5, 1748; mariner; served on Story's Race Horse in the Revolution; married Elizabeth Russell of Danvers; 6. Ebenezer,<sup>6</sup> born May 18, 1751; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Curtis March 31, 1772; died Feb. 15, 1807; had children; 7. Bartholmew,<sup>6</sup> born June 9, 1756. JOHN MOULTON;<sup>5</sup> husbandman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Mehitable Mackintire June 6, 1749; children: 1. Bette,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 27, 1760; 2. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 27, 1760; lived in Danvers and New Salem; married Hannah Lindsey July 12, 1770; had children; 3. Mehitable,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 27, 1760; married Richard Crispin of Danvers; 4. Joshua,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 27, 1760; lived in Lynnfield and Lynn; married Mary Brage Dec. 20, 1774; 5. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 27, 1760; 6. Judah,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 27, 1760; 7. John;<sup>6</sup> 8. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 5, 1765; 9. Anna,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 5, 1765.

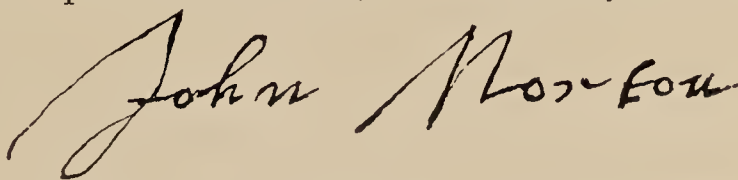
<sup>1</sup>LAWRENCE LEACH,<sup>2</sup> born about 1580; lived in Salem; married Elizabeth —; died in 1662; she was his widow in 1670; children: 1. Richard,<sup>2</sup> born about 1617; 2. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 16—.

CAPT. RICHARD LEACH;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Sarah —; died in 1687; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born about 1645; 2. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 19, 1648; probably married Joseph Herrick; 3. Rachel,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 6, 1651; probably died young; 4. Eliza,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 27, 1653; 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 3, 1654; probably married Thomas Field; 6. Richard,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 15, 1656; 7. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 2, 1662; 8. —,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 29, 1665; 9. Rachel,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 7, 1668; living in 1676. JOHN LEACH;<sup>2</sup> probably married Sarah Conant; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 6, 1652; 2. Remember,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 3, 1661; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 3, 1661.

SERG. JOHN LEACH;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Elizabeth Flint May 22, 1667; died March 5, 1717-8; she died, his widow, Feb. 8, 1719-20; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. —, 1668; married Joshua Rea; 2. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 31, 1673; married Samuel Herrick of Beverly; 3. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born April 28, 1677; 4. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 31, 1679; 5. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 19, 1682-3; married John Ganson; 6. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born March 3, 1684-5; married Samuel Putnam; 7. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 12, 1690; married Benjamin Houlton; 8. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> born March 31, 1692; married Ambrose Hutchinson.

SAMUEL LEACH;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married, first, Ginger Porter Sept. 25, 1699; second, Hephzibah Rea April —, 1710; she died April 29, 1716; married.

painfull man," about forty-nine years old. Richard Waterman, "whose cheife employm<sup>t</sup> wilbe to get yo<sup>w</sup> good venison," wrote the officials in England to Captain Endecott, William Ryall,<sup>1</sup> a cooper and cleaver of timber, and John Norton,<sup>2</sup> a carpenter, who became a contractor.



Captain Endecott was requested to send by the returning vessels a detailed list of all persons who came in the first three vessels intending to remain in the country and of the cattle and goods landed at Naumkeag from the vessels, with their marks and the names of their owners, that it might be compared with the

third, Abigail Baker of Beverly March 5, 1718-9; she died Aug. 19, 1720; married, fourth, Abigail Raymond of Beverly Sept. 7, 1727; he died in the winter of 1731-2; his wife Abigail survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 14, 1702; 2. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 8, 1702; 3. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 10, 1704; married Malachi Corning of Beverly; 4. Hepzibah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 16, 1711; married Jonathan Raymond of Beverly; 5. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 5, 1713; 6. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 1, 1714; married Josiah Batchelder; 7. Richard,<sup>5</sup> born about 1715 (baptized June 5, 1716).

MAJ. JOHN LEACH;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; married Rachel Putnam Jan. 15, 1723-4; died Sept. 14, 1774; she died Dec. 28, 1781; children: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 11, 1724; 2. Ginger,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 1, 1726-7; married Dr. Benjamin Jones of Beverly; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 15, 1728-9; 4. Asa,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 15, 1731; captain; lived in Beverly; postmaster; married Elizabeth Porter of Danvers March 4, 1756; died Sept. —, 1806; she died, his widow, Sept. —, 1819; had children; 5. Nathan,<sup>6</sup> born March 13, 1732-3; captain; lived in Beverly; married Anna Herrick Nov. 28, 1756; died Feb. —, 1813; she died, his widow, June 3, 1828, aged ninety-five; had children; 6. Jonathan,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 20, 1735; lived in Beverly; married Deborah Warren of Wenham in 1760; had children; 7. Timothy,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 6, 1737; 8. Huldah,<sup>6</sup> born July 29, 1740; 9. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 28, 1743; 10. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born June 16, 1752. SAMUEL LEACH;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers; married, first, Hannah Jeffords Nov. 20, 1735; second, Mary Porter of Charlestown in 1768; children: 1. George,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 9, 1749; cordwainer; lived in Beverly in 1768; 2. Hepzibah,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 9, 1749; 3. Isaac,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 17, 1749; 4. Ruth,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 26, 1755; 5. Ezra,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 28, 1757. RICHARD LEACH;<sup>5</sup> tailor and yeoman; lived at Rial Side, in Salem, which became a part of Beverly; married Martha Woodberry Dec. 4, 1738; she died Dec. 22, 1756; he died in 1801; children: 1. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 7, 1739; married Joseph Drinkwater of North Yarmouth, Me.; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 25, 1741; 3. William,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 10, 1744; living in 1801; 4. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1748; married Benjamin Mitchell of North Yarmouth; 5. Josiah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 3, 1752; died before 1801; had children; 6. Richard,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 19, 1755; 7. Henry.<sup>6</sup>

JOHN LEACH;<sup>6</sup> married Sarah Chipman March 15, 1743-4; probably died "at Camp near Lake George" in 1755; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> baptized Sept. 8, 1745; 2. Anne,<sup>7</sup> baptized — 15, 1746-7; 3. John,<sup>7</sup> baptized Feb. 19, 1748-9; 4. Henry Hale,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 23, 1751; 5. Biley,<sup>7</sup> baptized May 4, 1755.

<sup>1</sup>Rial Side, or Royal Side, in Beverly, undoubtedly received its name, in some way, from William Ryall.

<sup>2</sup>John Norton lived in Salem as late as 1662; married Mary Sharp; child: John, baptized Sept. 14, 1651.



invoices in England for the purpose of ascertaining the freight. By one of these vessels, letters were sent by Robert Moulton and William Ryall. These letters were read at a meeting of the company Sept. 29, 1629. The Lion's Whelp and the Talbot had arrived in England and were waiting to be unloaded Sept. 19, 1629.

In the winter of 1628-9, the Company had received from King Charles I. a patent, engrossed in duplicate, incorporating the members into a body politic with power of government within the territory in New England of which they possessed a grant from the council of Plymouth. The Company caused to be engraved in silver a seal to be used by the authorities in New England. The seal and one duplicate of the charter were brought to Naumkeag in the ship George, on this voyage, by Samuel Sharp. Also, at the same time, the company sent to Captain Endecott a general letter of information and instructions, namely, from "the Governor and Deputy of the New England Company for a Plantation in Massachusetts Bay, to the Governor and Council for London's Plantation in the Massachusetts Bay in New England." The Company had chosen Captain Endecott governor of the plantation and appointed a council, and therefore this letter was addressed to the "Governor and council." The following is a copy of this letter:—

#### LAUS DEO!

In Gravesend, the 17<sup>th</sup> of April, 1629.

LOVING FREINDS: Wee hartylie salute yo<sup>w</sup>. Wee haue receiued your lre of the 13<sup>th</sup> of Septemb, by w<sup>ch</sup> wee take notice of your safe arriveall, blessing God for it. Wee haue formerly requested M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, o<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup>, to wryte yo<sup>w</sup> of the receipt thereof, and to giue advice how wee purposed to pceed in seting forward o<sup>r</sup> plantacon, whose lres, if they bee come to yo<sup>r</sup> hande, (as wee hope they are,) will putt lyfe into yo<sup>r</sup> affaires, and encourage yo<sup>w</sup> to pvyde for the entertainm<sup>t</sup> of such as are now cominge.

Since yo<sup>r</sup> deptime, wee haue, for the further strengthening of o<sup>r</sup> graunt from the councell at Plymoth, obtayned a confirmacon of it from his ma<sup>ty</sup> by his lres pattents, vnd<sup>r</sup> the broad seale of England; by w<sup>ch</sup> said lres pattents wee are incorporated into a body pollitique w<sup>th</sup> ample power to goune & rule all his ma<sup>ty</sup>s subiects that reside w<sup>th</sup>in the limitts of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon, as by the duplicate thereof vnder the broad seale, w<sup>ch</sup> we haue deliued to M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe to bee deliued to yo<sup>w</sup>, doth fully appeare.

And for that the ppagating of the gosple is the thing wee doe pfect aboue all to bee o<sup>r</sup> ayme in setling this plantacon, wee haue bin carefull to make plentyfull pvision of godly ministers, by whose faithfull preachinge, godly conversacon, and exemplary lyfe, wee trust, not only those of o<sup>r</sup> owne nation wilbe built vp in the knowledge of God, but also the Indians may in Gods appointed tyme bee reduced to the obedience of the gosple of Christ. One of them is well knowne to yo<sup>r</sup> selfe, viz, M<sup>r</sup> Skelton, whom wee haue the rather desired to beare a pt in this worke, for that wee are informed yo<sup>r</sup> selfe haue formly received much

good by his ministry; hee cometh in the George Bonaventure. M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Cox. Another is M<sup>r</sup> Higgeson, a graue man, & of worthy comendacons; he cometh in the Talbott. The third is M<sup>r</sup> Bright, some-tymes trained vpp vnder M<sup>r</sup> Davenport, who cometh in the Lyons Whelp. Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup>, accomodate them all w<sup>th</sup> necessaryes as well as yo<sup>w</sup> may, and in convenient tyme lett there bee houses built them according to the agreem<sup>t</sup> wee haue made w<sup>th</sup> them, coppies whereof, as of all others wee haue entertained, shalbe sent yo<sup>w</sup> by the next shipp, tyme not pmitting it now. Wee doubt not but these gent, yo<sup>r</sup> ministers, will agree lovingly togeather; and for cherishinge of loue betwixt them, wee pray yo<sup>w</sup>, carry yo<sup>r</sup>selfe impartiallie to all. For the manno<sup>r</sup> of the exercising their ministrie, & teaching both o<sup>r</sup> owne people and the Indians, wee leave that to themselues, hooping they will make Gods word the rule of their accons and mutually agree in the discharge of their duties; and because their doctrine will hardly bee well esteemed whose psons are not revered, wee desire that, both by yo<sup>r</sup> owne example and by comanding all others to doe the like, o<sup>r</sup> ministers may receive due hono<sup>r</sup>.

Wee haue, in pseucon of that good opinion wee haue alway had of yo<sup>w</sup> confirmed yo<sup>w</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup> of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon, and ioyned in commission w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> the three ministers, namely, M<sup>r</sup> Francis Higgonson, M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Skelton, and M<sup>r</sup> Francis Bright, also M<sup>r</sup> John and M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Browne, M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Graues, and M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Sharpe; and for that wee haue ordered that the body of the gownm<sup>t</sup> there shall consist of 13 psons, wee are content the old planters that are now there w<sup>th</sup>in o<sup>r</sup> plantacon and lymitts therof shall chuse 2 of the discreetest and iuditiiall men from amongst themselues to bee of the gownm<sup>t</sup>, that they may see wee are not wanting to giue them fitting respect, in that we would haue their consent (if it may bee) in making wholsome constitucons for gownm<sup>t</sup>; alwayes pydyed, that none shalbe chosen, or meddle in their choice, but such as will liue amongst vs, and conforme themselues to o<sup>r</sup> gownm<sup>t</sup>. But if they shall refuse to pforme this o<sup>r</sup> direcon, then wee hereby authorise yo<sup>w</sup>, & those nominated to bee of the councell afore-said, to nominate & elect two such men as in yo<sup>r</sup> opinions yo<sup>w</sup> shall hold meete for that place & office; and for the other three w<sup>ch</sup> wilbe wanting to make vpp the full nomber of 13, (w<sup>ch</sup> wee haue styled the Councell of the Mattachusetts Bay,) wee hereby authorize you, w<sup>th</sup> the aforenamed seaven psons, to chuse and nominate them out of the whole body of the Companie, as well of those that are there as of those that are to come now, not doubting but, all partialitie sett apart, yo<sup>w</sup> will make choice of such men as may bee most vsefull & carefull to advance the genall good of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon.

And that it may appeare, as well to all the world as to the old planters themselues, that wee seeke not to make them slaues, (as it seemes by yo<sup>r</sup> letter some of them thinke themselues to bee become by meanes of o<sup>r</sup> pattent,) wee are content they shalbe ptakers of such p<sup>r</sup>uiledges as wee, from his ma<sup>ts</sup> espetiall grace, w<sup>th</sup> great cost, fauo<sup>r</sup> of psonages of note, & much labo<sup>r</sup>, haue obtained, and that they shalbe incorporated into this socyetie, and enioy, not only those lands w<sup>ch</sup> formly they haue manured, but such a further pporcon as, by th<sup>r</sup> advice and judgm<sup>t</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup>selfe and the rest of the councell, shalbe thought fitt



for them or any of them. And besides, it is still o<sup>r</sup> purpose that they should haue some benefitt by the comon stock, as was by yo<sup>r</sup> first commission directed and appointed, w<sup>th</sup> this addicon, that if it bee held too much to take 30 p cent and the freight of the goods for and in consideracon of o<sup>r</sup> adventure & disbursm<sup>t</sup> of o<sup>r</sup> monyes, to bee paid in bevo<sup>r</sup> at 6<sup>s</sup> p lb, that yo<sup>w</sup> moderate the said rate as yo<sup>w</sup>, w<sup>th</sup> the rest of the councell, shall thinks to bee agreeable to equitie & good conscience. And o<sup>r</sup> further orders is, that none bee ptakers of any the afores<sup>d</sup> p<sup>r</sup>uiledges and pfitts but such as bee peaceable men, and of honest lyfe and conversacon, & desirous to liue amongst vs, and conforme themselves to good order and governm<sup>t</sup>.

And as touching the old planters their earnest desire for the psent to continue the planting of tobacco, (a trade by the Companie genally disavowed & vtterly disclaymed by some of the greatest adventurers amongst vs, who absolutely declared themselves vnwilling to haue any hand in this plantacon if wee intend to cherish or pmiitt the planting therof, or any other kinde than for a mans private vse for meere necessitie,) wee are of opinion the old planters will haue small encouragm<sup>t</sup> to that employm<sup>t</sup>, for wee fynde heere, by late experience, that it doth hardly pduce the freight and custome; nether is there hope of amendm<sup>t</sup>, there being such great quantities made in other pts that ere long it is like to bee little worth. Nevertheless, if the old planters (for wee exclude all others) conceive that they cannot otherwise pvide for their livelyhood, wee leave it to the discretion of yo<sup>r</sup>selfe & the councell there to giue way for the psent to their planting of it in such mann, and w<sup>th</sup> such restriccons, as yo<sup>w</sup> and the said councell shall thinke fittinge, hauing an espetiall care, w<sup>th</sup> as much convenyence as may bee, vtterly to suppress the planting of it, except for meere necessitie; but, however, wee absolutely forbidd the sale of it, or the vse of it, by any of o<sup>r</sup> owne or pticuler mens servants, vnless vpon vrgent occasion for the benefitt of health, & taken privately.

M<sup>r</sup> John Oldham came from New England not long before yo<sup>r</sup> arrivall there, by whom wee haue had noe small disturbance in o<sup>r</sup> business, having bin cast behinde, at the least, two months tyme in o<sup>r</sup> voyage, through the varyetie of his vast conceipts of extraordinary gaine of 3 for one, ppounded to be made & raised in 3 yeares, if hee might haue the managinge of o<sup>r</sup> stock, pferring to bee contented for his owne employm<sup>t</sup> soe hee might haue the overplus of the gaines; w<sup>th</sup> whom after long tyme spent in sundry treaties, fynding him a man altogeather vnfitt for vs to deale w<sup>th</sup>, wee haue at last leīt him to his owne way; and, as wee are informed, hee, w<sup>th</sup> some others, are pyding a vessell, and is mynded, as soone as hee can despatch, to come for New England, ptending to settle himselfe in Mattachusetts Bay, clayming a tytle and right by a grant from S<sup>r</sup> Ferdinando Gorges son, w<sup>ch</sup> wee are well satisfyed by good councell is voyde in lawe. Hee will admitt of noe tearmes of agreem<sup>t</sup>, vnlesse wee leaue him at libtie to trade for beavo<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the Indians, w<sup>ch</sup> wee deny to the best of o<sup>r</sup> owne planters; nether is hee satisfyed to trade himselfe with his owne stock & meanes, w<sup>ch</sup> wee conceeve is so small that it would not much hinder vs. but hee doth interest other men, who, for ought wee knowe, are never likely to bee benefitiall to the planting of the country, their owne pticuler pfitts

(though to the overthrowe of the genall plantacon) being their chiefe ayne and intent. Now, as wee shall vnwillingly doe any act in debarringe such as were inhabitants before vs of that trade, as in conscience they ought to enioy, soe shall we as vnwillingly pmitt any to appropriate that to their owne private lucar w<sup>ch</sup> wee, in o<sup>r</sup> religious intencons, haue dedicated to the comon charge of building houses for Gods worshipp and fforts to defend such as shall come thither to inhabite. Wee feare that as hee hath bin obstinate & vyolent in his opinions heere, soe hee will psist and bee ready to drawe a partie to himselfe there, to the great hinderance of the comon quiett. Wee haue therfore thought fitt to giue yo<sup>w</sup> notice of his disposicon, to the end yo<sup>w</sup> may beware how yo<sup>w</sup> meddle w<sup>th</sup> him, as also that yo<sup>w</sup> may vse the best meanes yo<sup>w</sup> can to settle an agreem<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the old planters, soe as they may not harken to M<sup>r</sup> Oldhams dangerous though vaine ppositions. Wee fynde him a man soe affected to his owne opinion as not to bee removed from it, nether by reason nor any pswasion; and vnlesse hee may beare sway, and haue all things carryed to his good likeinge, wee haue little hope of quiett or comfortable subsistance where he shall make his abroad.

And therefore, if yo<sup>w</sup> shall see iust cause, wee hereby require yo<sup>w</sup> and the councell there to exercise that power wee haue, and o<sup>r</sup> preuiledges will beare vs out in it, to suppress a mischiefe before it take too great a head. Not that wee would wrong him or any man that will liue peaceably w<sup>th</sup>in the limitts of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon; but as the pservacon of o<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>uiledges will chiefly depend (vnder God) vpon the first foundacon of o<sup>r</sup> gounm<sup>t</sup>, soe if wee suffer soe great an affront as wee fynde is intended towards vs by the pceedings of M<sup>r</sup> Oldham and his adherents in o<sup>r</sup> first beginings, wee may bee sure they will take hart, and bee emboldned to doe vs a farr greater iniurie hereafter. And therefore wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> and the councell there to advise seriously togeather for the maintenance of o<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>uiledges & peaceable gounm<sup>t</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup>, if it may be done by a tempate course, wee much desire it, though w<sup>th</sup> some inconuenience, soe as o<sup>r</sup> gounm<sup>t</sup> & p<sup>r</sup>uiledges bee not brought in contempt, wishing rather there might bee such an vnion as might drawe the heathen by o<sup>r</sup> good example to the embracing of Christ and his gosple, then that offence should bee giuen to the heathen, and a scandall to o<sup>r</sup> religion, through o<sup>r</sup> disagreem<sup>t</sup> amongst o<sup>r</sup>selues. But if necessitie require a more severe course, when faire meanes will not pvaile, wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> to deale as in yo<sup>r</sup> discrecons yo<sup>w</sup> shall thinke fittest for the genall good and safety of the plantacon & pservacon of o<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>uiledges. And because wee would not omitt to doe any thinge w<sup>ch</sup> might strengthen o<sup>r</sup> right, wee would haue yo<sup>w</sup> (as soone as these shippes, or any of them, arrive with yo<sup>w</sup>, whereby yo<sup>w</sup> may have men to do it) send 40 or 50 persons to Mattachusetts Bay to inhabite there, which we pray yo<sup>w</sup> not to protract, but to doe it with all speede; and if any of o<sup>r</sup> Company in pticuler shall desire to settle themselues there, or to send servants thither, wee desire all accommodacon and encouragm<sup>t</sup> may be giuen them thervnto, wherby the better to strengthen o<sup>r</sup> possession there against all or any that shall intrude vpon vs, w<sup>ch</sup> wee would not haue yo<sup>w</sup> by any meanes giue way vnto, w<sup>th</sup> this caution, notw<sup>th</sup>standing, that for such of o<sup>r</sup> countrymen as yo<sup>w</sup> finde there planted, soe as they bee willing to liue vnder gounm<sup>t</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> endeavor to giue them all fitting and due accomo-



dacon as to any of o<sup>r</sup> selues; yea, if yo<sup>w</sup> see cause for it, thought it bee w<sup>th</sup> more then ordinarie p<sup>r</sup>uiledges in point of trade.

M<sup>r</sup> Raph Smith, a minister, hath desired passage in o<sup>r</sup> shippes, w<sup>ch</sup> was graunted him before wee vnderstood of his difference of judgm<sup>t</sup> in some things from o<sup>r</sup> ministers. But his pvisions for his voyage being shipt before notice was taken therof, through many occasions wherw<sup>th</sup> those intrusted w<sup>th</sup> this business have bin employed, and forasmuch as from hence it is feared there may growe some distraccon amongst yo<sup>w</sup> if there should bee any syding, though wee haue a very good opinion of his honesty, wee shall not, I hope, offend in charitie to feare the worst that may grow from their different judgm<sup>ts</sup>. Wee haue therfore thought fitt to giue yo<sup>w</sup> this order, that vnless hee wilbe conformable to o<sup>r</sup> gounm<sup>t</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> suffer him not to remaine w<sup>th</sup> in the limitts of o<sup>r</sup> graunt.

We take notice that yo<sup>w</sup> desire to haue Frenchmen sent yo<sup>w</sup> that might bee experienced in making of salt & plantinge of vynes. Wee haue enquired diligently for such, but cannot meete w<sup>th</sup> any of that nation. Nevertheless, God hath not left vs altogeather vnprovyded of a man able to vndertake that worke, for that wee haue entertained M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Groves, a man comended to vs as well for his honestie as skill in many things very vsefull. First, hee pfesseth great skill in the making of salt, both in ponds and pannes, as also to fynde out salt springs & mynes; secondly, hee is well seene in mynes & mineralls, espetially about iron ore & iron workes; thirdly, hee is able to make any sort of fortificacons; fourthly, hee is well able to surveigh and sett forth lands. Hee hath bin a travillor in divers forraigne pts to gaine his experience. Therefore wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> take his advice touching the pmises, and where yo<sup>w</sup> intend to sett downe into fortyfie & build a towne, that it may be qualified for good ayre & water, according to yo<sup>r</sup> first instruccons, and may haue as much naturall helpe as may bee, wherby it may w<sup>th</sup> the less labor and cost bee made fitt to resist an enemy. Soe soone as yo<sup>w</sup> haue made tryall of his sufficiencie, wryte vs yo<sup>r</sup> opinion how long yo<sup>w</sup> conceive it will be fitt for us to continue him in our service; for that he is tyed to serve us for one whole yeare absolutely, and two yeares more if wee should giue him order to stay soe long. Soe wee hope to receve yo<sup>r</sup> advice tyme enough to give him order to stay out full 3 yeares, or to come home at the end of one yeare. His salarie costs this Companie a great some of mony, besides w<sup>ch</sup> (if hee remain w<sup>th</sup> vs) the transporting of his wyfe, and building him a house, wilbe very chargable, w<sup>ch</sup> we pray yo<sup>w</sup> take into yo<sup>r</sup> consideracon, that soe wee may continue or surcease this charge as occasion shall require.

In o<sup>r</sup> next wee intend to send yo<sup>w</sup> a pticuler of such as are to haue land allotted & sett out vnto them, that soe yo<sup>w</sup> may appoint vnto each man an equall pporcon by lott, according to what is to bee allowed in the first devident, touching w<sup>ch</sup> wee shall then giue yo<sup>w</sup> more large instruccons. Meane while, for such as haue sent over servants and cattle in these shippes, and for such as haue more to come in two other shippes, w<sup>ch</sup> wee hope wilbe ready to sett saile w<sup>th</sup> in ten dayes, o<sup>r</sup> desire is, they should ether bee accomodated at Nahumkeke or in the Mattachusetts Bay, or in both places if they desire it, w<sup>th</sup> all the conveyence that may bee; and for such grounds as shalbe allotted vnto

them, that the same bee conveyed vnto them, if they desire it, at any tyme w<sup>th</sup>in one yeare after their entring vpon it, and to bee accompted as pt of their first devident. But if they shall dislike it at any tyme before a genall distribucon bee made by lott to all the adventurers, then they may have libtie to doe it, and take in lieu therof as by lott shall fall out amongst other private adventurers.

Wee recomend vnto yo<sup>w</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Richard Saltonstall and M<sup>r</sup> Isack Johnson, who send over servants and cattle in these shippes, desiring yo<sup>w</sup> will take care for their psent accomodacon as aforesaid; and as for them, soe wee may not omitt to pray yo<sup>w</sup> likewise to giue all good accomodacon to o<sup>r</sup> psent Governo<sup>r</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Mathew Cradock, who w<sup>th</sup> some pticuler brethren of o<sup>r</sup> Company, have deeply engaged themselues in their private adventures in these shippes & those to come; and as wee hold these men that thus deeply adventure in their private to bee (vnder God) spetiall instrum<sup>ts</sup> for the advancing & strengthning of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon, w<sup>ch</sup> is done by them w<sup>th</sup>out any charge to the Companyes genall stock, wherein, notw<sup>th</sup>standing, they are as deepe or deeper engaged then any other, soe being contented to bee debarred from all private trading in furs for 3 yeares, wee doe hold it very requisite in all other their desires to giue them all accomodacon & furtherance that reasonably may be ppounded by them or any for them; their good beginings in the infancie of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon worthylye deserving of vs all favor and furtherance.

Wee haue caused a comon seale to bee made, w<sup>ch</sup> wee send by M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe.

If yo<sup>w</sup> want any swyne, wee haue agreed w<sup>th</sup> those of New Plymouth that they deliue yo<sup>w</sup> six sowes w<sup>th</sup> pigg, for w<sup>ch</sup> they are to bee allowed 9<sup>l</sup> in accompt of what they owe vnto M<sup>r</sup> Goffe, Deputie; and for goats, wee haue bought 42 for the genall & pticuler mens accompts, w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe sent yo<sup>w</sup> by these and the next shippes, or at least wise soe many of them as they can conveyently carrie.

Wee haue followed yo<sup>r</sup> advice, and sent most of o<sup>r</sup> guns snaphance, bastard muskett bore; and wee haue also sent store of powder & shott, grayne for seede, both wheat, barley & rye, in the chaff, &c. As for fruit stones and kernells, the tyme of the yeare fitts not to send them now; soe wee purpose to do it p o<sup>r</sup> next. Tame turkeys shalbe now sent yo<sup>w</sup> (if may bee); if not, p other shippes. Wee are disappointed of the pvissions ordered to haue bin sent yo<sup>w</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup>selfe and M<sup>rs</sup> Endecote; but, God willing, they shall come by the next.

Wee haue made o<sup>r</sup> servants apparell of cloth & lether, w<sup>ch</sup> lether is not of oyle skins, for wee found them over deere; yett if this pve not pfittable, vpon yo<sup>r</sup> second advice wee will send yo<sup>w</sup> oyle skinns.

For such of o<sup>r</sup> nation as sell munition, gunns, or other furniture, to arme the Indians against vs, or teach them the vse of armes, wee would haue you to apphend them and send them prisons for England, where they will not escape severe punishm<sup>t</sup>, being expressly against the proclamacon.

Yo<sup>w</sup> haue had form caution giuen yo<sup>w</sup> to take heede of beeing too secure in trusting the Indians, w<sup>ch</sup> wee againe comend to yo<sup>r</sup> care; and that yo<sup>w</sup> may bee the better able to resist both forraigne enemies & the natives, if ether should assaile yo<sup>w</sup> wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> lett all such as liue



vnder o<sup>r</sup> gownment, both o<sup>r</sup> servants and other planters & their servants, bee exercised in the vse of armes, and certaine tymes appointed to muster them, in w<sup>ch</sup> business M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe and M<sup>r</sup> Graues wilbe assistant to yo<sup>w</sup>. M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe is by vs entertained to bee m<sup>r</sup> gunn of o<sup>r</sup> ordnance, in w<sup>ch</sup> service hee is to employ soe much of his tyme as the charge of that office doth require, and in the rest hee is to follow other employm<sup>ts</sup> of o<sup>r</sup> gouno<sup>rs</sup> & others, for whose employm<sup>t</sup> hee is pticularly sent over.

Inclosed yo<sup>w</sup> shall receive a factory of such pvision of victuall and other necessaryes as wee haue sent for the genall accompt to w<sup>ch</sup> wee referr yo<sup>w</sup>, nothing doubting but yo<sup>w</sup> wilbe a pvident steward to husband o<sup>r</sup> pvisions to the best advantage. Wee also send yo<sup>w</sup> the pticuler names of such as are entertained for the Companyes service, amongst w<sup>ch</sup> wee hope yo<sup>w</sup> will fynde many religious, discreete, & well ordered psons, w<sup>ch</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> must sett over the rest devyding them into famylies, placing some w<sup>th</sup> the ministers, and others vnder such as, beeing honest men, (and of their owne calling as neere as may bee,) may haue care to see them well educated in their genall callings as Christians, and pticuler according to their seual trades or fitness in disposicon to learne a trade. And wheras amonst such a nomber (notw<sup>th</sup>standing o<sup>r</sup> care to purge them) there may still remaine some libertines, wee desire yo<sup>w</sup> to bee carefull that such (if any bee) may bee forced, by inflicting such punishm<sup>t</sup> as their offences shall deserve, w<sup>ch</sup> is to bee (as neere as may bee) according to the lawes of this kingdome, to conforme themselves to good order; w<sup>th</sup> whom, after admonition giuen, if they amend not, wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> pceede w<sup>th</sup>out partiallitie to punish them as the nature of their fault shall deserve; and the like course yo<sup>w</sup> are to hold both w<sup>th</sup> planters & their servants, for all must liue vnder gownm<sup>t</sup> & a like lawe. And to the end yo<sup>w</sup> may not doe any thing contrarie to lawe nor the power graunted vs by his ma<sup>ty</sup>s lres patents, wee haue, as afore-said, sent yo<sup>w</sup> the duplicate of the lres patents, vnder the great seale of England, ordering and requiring yo<sup>w</sup> and the rest of the councell there not do doe any thinge, ether in inflicting punishm<sup>t</sup> on malefacto<sup>rs</sup> or otherwise, contrarie to or in derogacon of the said lres pattents; but if occasion require, wee authorise yo<sup>w</sup> and them to pceede according to the power yo<sup>w</sup> haue. Nevertheless, wee desire (if it may bee) that errors may bee reformed w<sup>th</sup> lenitie or mylde correcon; and if any pve incorrigable, & will not bee reclaimed by gentle correcon, ship such psons home by the Lyons Whelpe, rather then keep them there to infect or to bee an occasion of scandall vnto others; wee being fully pswaded that if one or two bee soe reshipped back, and certificate sent home of their misdemeano<sup>r</sup>, it wilbe a terror to the rest, and a meanes to reduce them to good conformitie. And, aboue all, we pray yo<sup>w</sup> bee carefull that there bee none in o<sup>r</sup> pcincts pmitted to doe any iniurie (in the least kinde) to the heathen people; and if any offend in that way, lett them receive due correcon. And wee hold it fitting yo<sup>w</sup> publish a proclamacon to that effect by leaving it fixed vnder the Companyes seale in some eminent place, for all to take notice, at such tyme as both the heathen themselves, as well as o<sup>r</sup> people, may take notice of it. And for the avoyding of the hurt that may follow through o<sup>r</sup> much familiaritie w<sup>th</sup> the Indians, wee conceive it fitt that they bee not pmitted to come to yo<sup>r</sup> plantacon but at certaine tymes and places to bee appointed them. If

any of the saluages ptend right of inheritance to all or any pt of the lands granted *graunted* in o<sup>r</sup> pattent, we pray yo<sup>w</sup> endeavo<sup>r</sup> to p<sup>r</sup>chase their tytle, that wee may avoyde the least scruple of intrusion.

Wee haue, in the form pt of o<sup>r</sup> lre, certyfyed yo<sup>w</sup> of the good hope wee haue of the loue and vnanimus agreem<sup>t</sup> of o<sup>r</sup> ministers, they having declared themselues to vs to bee of one judgment, & to bee fully agreed on the mann how to exercise their ministry, w<sup>ch</sup> wee hope wilbe by them accordingly pformed. Yett, because it is often found that some busie psons (led more by their will then any good warrant out of Gods word) take opportunitie of moving needless questions to stirr vp strife, and by that meanes to begett a question, and bring men to declare some different judgm<sup>t</sup>, (most comonly in things indifferent,) from w<sup>ch</sup> small beginings great mischeifs haue followed, wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> and the rest of the councell, that if any such disputes shall happen among yo<sup>w</sup> that yo<sup>w</sup> suppress them, and bee carefull to maintaine peace and vnitie.

Wee desire yo<sup>w</sup> to take notice of one Lawrence Leech, whom we haue found a carefull & painfull man, and wee doubt not but hee will continue his dilligence; lett him haue deserving respect. The like wee say of Richard Waterman, whose cheife employm<sup>t</sup> wilbe to get yo<sup>w</sup> good venison.

Wee haue sent six shipwrights, of whom Robert Molton is cheif. These mens entertainm<sup>t</sup> is very chargable to vs; and by agreem<sup>t</sup> it is to bee borne two thirds at the charge of the genall Companie, and the other third is to bee borne by M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, o<sup>r</sup> Gournor, and his assotiatts interested in a private stock. Wee hope yo<sup>w</sup> wilbe carefull to see them soe employed as may countervaile the charge, desiring yo<sup>w</sup> to agree w<sup>th</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe that their labo<sup>r</sup> may be employed  $\frac{2}{3}$  for the genall Companie and  $\frac{1}{3}$  for M<sup>r</sup> Cradock and his assotiatts; praying yo<sup>w</sup> to accomodate the s<sup>d</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Cradocks people in all fitting mann, as hee doth well deserve.

Such cattle, both horss, mares, cowes, bulls, and goates, as are shipped by M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, are to bee devyded in equall halfes twixt him & the Companie, w<sup>ch</sup> was omitted to bee done heere for avoyding partiallitie; so yo<sup>w</sup> must doe it equally there.

Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> to bee carefull to make vs what returnes yo<sup>w</sup> possibly may, the better to enable vs to send out a fresh supply. Wee hope yo<sup>w</sup> haue converted the comodities yo<sup>w</sup> carryed w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> for truck into beavo<sup>r</sup>, otter, or other ffurrs, w<sup>ch</sup> wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> send vs by y<sup>e</sup> Talbot, as also any other comodities yo<sup>w</sup> haue pydyed in readyness against the shippes coming thither; but pray doe not detaine her any longer tyme to cutt tymber or any other gross ladinge, for shee is at 150<sup>l</sup> a month charges w<sup>ch</sup> will soone eat out more then the goods shee should stay for is worth. Wherefore, pray make what experdicon yo<sup>w</sup> can to vnlade her goods, and to put such things aboard her as yo<sup>w</sup> haue ready, and send her hetherward againe as soone as yo<sup>w</sup> may.

Wee haue sent fve weigh of salt in the Whelpe, and ten weigh in the Talbott or Lyons Whelpe. Now, forasmuch as the Lyons Whelpe season of the yeare fitt, pray lett the ffishermen, (of w<sup>ch</sup> wee send 6 from Dortchester,) togeather w<sup>th</sup> some of the shippes company, endeavo<sup>r</sup> to take ffish, and lett it bee well saued with the said salt, and packed vpp in hogsheads or otherwise, as shalbe thought fitt, and send it home by



the Talbott or Lyons Whelpe. Now, forasmuch as the Lyons Whelpe belongeth to the Companie, yo<sup>w</sup> may (if there bee hope to doe good by it) keepe her there some tyme after the Talbott; but vnless it bee to very good purose, doe not detaine her, but lett her come home in companie of the Talbott. The Georg Bonaventure is to land her passingers & other things belonging to the genall Companie or to pticuler men, and soe sett sayle for New Found Land; and wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> lett it be yo<sup>r</sup> care to dispatch her as soone as may bee.

William Ryall and Thomas Brude, coops and cleavors of tymber, are entertained by vs in halfes w<sup>th</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, o<sup>r</sup> Go<sup>r</sup>, Pray ioyne others that can assist them vnto them, and lett them pvide vs some staves and other tymber of all sorts, to bee sent vs by the Talbott, Whelpe, or the other 2 shippes that come after. But wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> consider the charge of these shippes, & detaine them not for small matters. Rather vse all dilligence to send them away.

If, at the arivall of this shipp, M<sup>r</sup> Endecott should bee deputed this lyfe, (w<sup>ch</sup> God forbidd,) or should happen to dye before the other shippes arrive, wee authorise yo<sup>w</sup>, M<sup>r</sup> Skelton and M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Sharpe, to take care of o<sup>r</sup> affaires, and to goune the people according to order, vntil further order. And to the end the Saboth may bee celebrated in a religious mann, wee appoint, that all that inhabite the plantacon, both for the genall and pticuler imploym<sup>ts</sup>, may surcease their labo<sup>r</sup> every Satterday throughout the years at 3 of the clock in the afternoone, and that they spend the rest of that day in catichising and pparacon for the Saboth, as the ministers shall direct.

If it shall please God to take away by death any of the 13 that shalbe chosen and appointed for the councell, (of w<sup>ch</sup> yo<sup>r</sup>selfe or yo<sup>r</sup> successo<sup>r</sup> is to bee one) in such case the then being Gouno<sup>r</sup> & the survyving councell shall from tyme to tyme make choice of one or more to supply the place of such as shalbe wanting; and that there may noe difference arise about the appointing of one to bee minister w<sup>th</sup> those yo<sup>w</sup> send to inhabite at Mattachusetts Bay, wee will haue yo<sup>w</sup> (in case the ministers cannot agree amongst themselues who shall vndertake that place) to make choice of one of the three by lott; and on whom the lott shall fall hee to goe with his famylie to pforme that worke.

We haue advised yo<sup>w</sup> of the sending of Willm Ryall and Thomas Brude, cleavers of tymber; but, indeed, the said Thomas his name is Brand, & not Norton. But there is one Norton, a carpenter, whom wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> respect as hee shall deserve.

There is one Richard Ewstead, a wheelewright, who was comended to vs by M<sup>r</sup> Davenport for a very able man, though not w<sup>th</sup>out his impfecons. Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> take notice of him, and regard him as hee shall well deserve. The benefitt of his labo<sup>r</sup> is to bee  $\frac{2}{3}$  for the genall Companie, and  $\frac{1}{3}$  for M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, o<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup>, being his charges is to bee borne according to that pportion; and w<sup>th</sup>all wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> take care that their charges who are for partable employm<sup>t</sup>, whether in halfes or thirds, may bee equally defrayed by such as are to haue benefitt of their labo<sup>rs</sup>, according to each ptves pporcon. Their seuall agreem<sup>ts</sup>, or the coppies therof, shalbe (if God pmitt) sent yo<sup>w</sup> by the next shippes.

Wee haue entertained Lambert Wilson, chirurgion, to remain w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> in the service of the plantacon; w<sup>th</sup> whom wee are agreed, that hee

shall serve this Companie and the other planters that liue in the plantacon for 3 yeares, and in that time apply himselfe to cure not only of such as came from hence for the genall and pticuler accompts, but also for the Indians as from tyme to tyme hee shalbe directed by yo<sup>r</sup>selfe or yo<sup>r</sup> successo<sup>r</sup> & the rest of the councell. And, moreover, hee is to educate & instructt in his art one or more youths, such as yo<sup>w</sup> and the said councell shall appoint, that may bee helpfull to him, and, if occasion serve, succeed him in the plantacon; w<sup>ch</sup> youth or youths fitt to learne that pfession lett bee placed w<sup>th</sup> him; of w<sup>ch</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Hugessons sonne, if his father approue therof, may bee one, the rather because hee hath bin trayned vp in litterature; but if not hee, then such other as yo<sup>w</sup> shall iudg most fittest, &c.

The 21 of Apr, in Grauesend.

The aforewritten is, for the most pt, the coppie of o<sup>r</sup> genall lre sent you togeather w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> pattent, vnder the broad seale and the Companyes seale in siluer, by M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Sharpe, passinger in the George, who wee thinke is yett ryding in the Hope; but, by meanes of stormy weather, the Talbot & Lyons Whelpe are yett att Black Wall. By these shippes that are to follow wee intend, God willing, to supply both in o<sup>r</sup> advice and in o<sup>r</sup> pvisions what is wanting now. In the meane whyle wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> accommodate business w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> true endeavo<sup>rs</sup> for the genall good in the best and discreetest mann that yo<sup>w</sup> may. For the better accomodacon of businesses, wee haue devyded th servants belonging to the Company into seuall famylies, as wee desire and intend they should liue togeather; a copy whereof wee send yo<sup>w</sup> heere inclosed, that yo<sup>w</sup> may accordingly appoint each man his charge and dutie. Yett it is not o<sup>r</sup> intent to tye yo<sup>w</sup> soe strictly to this direcon but that in yo<sup>r</sup> discrecon, as yo<sup>w</sup> shall see cause from tyme to tyme, yo<sup>w</sup> may alter or displace any as yo<sup>w</sup> shall thinke fitt.

O<sup>r</sup> earnest desire is, that yo<sup>w</sup> take spetiall care, in setlinge these ffamilies, that the cheife in the familie (at least some of them) bee grounded in religion; wherby morning and evening famylie dutyes may bee duely pformed, and a watchfull eye held over all in each familie by one or more in each famylie to bee appointed thereto, that soe disorders may be pvented, and ill weeds nipt before they take too great a head. It wilbe a business worthy yo<sup>r</sup> best endeavo<sup>rs</sup> to looke vnto this in the begininge, and if neede bee, to make some exemplary to all the rest; otherwise yo<sup>r</sup> governm<sup>t</sup> wilbe esteemed as a scar crowe. O<sup>r</sup> desire is to vse lenitie all that may bee, but, in case of necessitie, not to neglect the other, knowing that correcon is ordained for the ffooles back; and as wee intend not to bee wanting on o<sup>r</sup> parts to pvyde all things neefull for the maintenance and sustenance of o<sup>r</sup> servants, soe may wee iustly, by the lawes of God & man, require obedyence and honest carriage from them, w<sup>th</sup> fitting labo<sup>r</sup> in their seuall employm<sup>ts</sup>; wherin if they shalbe wanting, and much more if refractory, care must be taken to punish the obstinate and disobedyent, being as necessary as food and raym<sup>t</sup>. And wee hartely pray yo<sup>w</sup>, that all be kept to labo<sup>r</sup>, as the only meanes to reduce them to civill, yea, a godly lyfe, and to keepe youth from falling into many enormities w<sup>ch</sup> by nature wee are all too much enclyned vnto. God, who alone is able and powerfull, enable yo<sup>w</sup> to this great worke, and graunt that o<sup>r</sup> cheifest ayme may bee his hono<sup>r</sup> and



glory. And thus, wishing yo<sup>w</sup> all happy and pspous success, wee end,  
& rest

Yo<sup>r</sup> assured lo: freinds,  
The Gouno<sup>r</sup> & Deputie of the New Engl: Company  
for a Plantacon in Mattachusetts Bay.

Through many businesses wee had almost forgotten to recomend vnto yo<sup>w</sup> 2 brethren of o<sup>r</sup> Comp:, M<sup>r</sup> John & M<sup>r</sup> Sam: Browne, who, though they bee noe adventurers in the genall stock, yett are they men wee doe much respect, being fully pswaded of their sincere affecons to the good of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon. The one, M<sup>r</sup> John Browne, is sworne an Assistant heere, & by vs chosen one of the councell there—a man experienced in the lawes of o<sup>r</sup> kingdome, & such an one as wee are pswaded will worthyly deserve yo<sup>r</sup> fauo<sup>r</sup> and furtherance, w<sup>th</sup> wee desire hee may haue, and that in the first devision of lands there may bee allotted to ether of them 200 acres.

I finde M<sup>r</sup> Oldhams graunt from M<sup>r</sup> Gorge is to him & John Dorrell for all the lands w<sup>th</sup>in Mattachusetts Bay betweene Charles River and Abousett River, cont in lengt, by a streight lyne, 5 myles vp the said Charles River, into the maine land north west from the border of the s<sup>d</sup> bay, including all creekes and points, by the way, and 3 myles in length from the mouth of the foresaid river of Abousett vp into the mainland, when a streight lyne S: W:, including all creeks and points, and all the land in bredth and length betweene the foresaid rivers, w<sup>th</sup> all progatives, ryall mynes excepted. The rent reserved is 12<sup>d</sup> on every 100 acres of land that shalbe vsed; W<sup>m</sup> Blaxton, cler, and W<sup>m</sup> Jeffryes, gent, authorised to putt John Oldham in possession. Having a sight of his graunt, this I found, though I hold it voyde in lawe, yett, his clayme being to this, yo<sup>w</sup> may in yo<sup>r</sup> discrecon pvent him by causing some to take possession of the cheife pt therof.<sup>1</sup>

Two vessels, the Four Sisters and the Mayflower, were left in England, not being ready for their departure. The Four Sisters was of London, Roger Harmon, master, of about three hundred tons burden, and “a fayre ship.” It carried many cattle, passengers and provisions, including fifteen weigh of salt. The Mayflower was of Yarmouth, William Peirce, master, and carried passengers and provisions, including eleven weigh of salt. As these vessels were “not thoroughly furnished,” they remained at Gravesend until June 3. Another vessel, the Pilgrim, of London, William Woolridge, master, carrying three weigh of salt and fishing tackle, etc., also accompanied them. In each of these three vessels were lines, hooks, knives, boots and barvels, necessary for fishing.

In all of these ships were sent provisions for building of vessels, as pitch, tar, resin, cordage and sail-cloth, and in the Four Sisters were sent nine firkins and five half-barrels of nails. These ships and men were to be employed in fishing within the harbor

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, pages 386-398.

or upon the bank, and if they were sent to the bank not expecting to return to Naumkeag, the bark, which had been built here, was to be sent to bring back to the plantation the fishermen and such provisions as they had for fishing, that is, salt, hooks, lines, knives, boots and barvels.

Among the passengers who came in the last three vessels were Henry Haughton and Richard Ingersoll,<sup>1</sup> the last being "a Bedfordshire man."

<sup>1</sup>RICHARD INGERSOLL<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; married Ann (or Agnes) Langley Oct. 20, 1616, in Sands, England; died late in 1644; she married, secondly, John Knight of Newbury; she died July 30, 1677; children: 1. *George*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1618; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>2</sup> married, first, William Haines; and, second, Joseph Houlton; 3. *Joanna*,<sup>2</sup> married Richard Pettingell; 4. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1623; 5. *Alice*,<sup>2</sup> married William Walcott; 6. *Bathsheba*,<sup>2</sup> married John Knight; 7. *Nathaniel*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1632 or 1633.

GEORGE INGERSOLL;<sup>2</sup> removed in 1646 to Gloucester, where he conducted an ordinary; removed to Casco Bay, about 1656, living at Back Cove; in the Indian war in 1675 a son was killed, his property destroyed and he spent the next winter in Salem; returned to Falmouth; was deputy to the assembly; again withdrew to Salem on account of the Indian depredations in 1689; married Elizabeth — about 1642; living in 1692; children: 1. *George*,<sup>3</sup> born May —, 1643, in Salem; shipwright; lived in Falmouth until driven away by the Indians in 1689; settled in Boston; married Catherine Nicholson of Scarboro about 1674; died in Boston Aug. 21, 1721; had children: 2. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1645, in Salem; house carpenter; lived in Falmouth and Kittery; married Deborah Gunnison of Kittery; died in 1716; had children; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 4, 1646, in Gloucester; house carpenter; lived in Falmouth, Charlestown and Gloucester; married Sarah Coe of Falmouth; died March 12, 1718; had children; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 1, 1648, in Gloucester; died March 9, 1649; 5. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born March 19, 1651, in Gloucester; 6. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> 7. —<sup>3</sup> (son); killed by the Indians at Falmouth Oct. —, 1675; 8. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 12, 1657, at Gloucester. JOHN INGERSOLL;<sup>2</sup> yeoman, mariner and shoreman; married Judith —; died Dec. —, 1683; she survived him; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 12, 1644; 2. *Nathaniel*,<sup>3</sup> born April 10, 1647; 3. *Ruth*,<sup>3</sup> born June 10, 1649; married Richard Rose; 4. *Richard*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 1, 1651; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 28, 1655; married William Ropes; 6. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 6, 1658; 7. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 9, 1661; died in 1661; 8. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born March 11, 1663; died in 1663; DEA. NATHANIEL INGERSOLL;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; served in Narragansett war; married Hannah Collins March 25, 16—; she was his wife in 1709; he died Jan. 27, 1718-9; child: 1. —<sup>3</sup> (daughter); died before her father, unmarried.

JOHN INGERSOLL;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Mary Coomes May 17, 1670; died in 1694; she died, his widow, June —, 1711; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 10, 1671; married George Cox; 2. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 2, 1673-4; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> 4. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1678; lived in Lynn; married Elizabeth (Symonds), widow of Nathaniel Newhall; had a child; 5. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 15, 1702; died before 1711; 6. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 15, 1702; died before 1711. NATHANIEL INGERSOLL;<sup>3</sup> married Mary Preston Oct. 8, 1670; was lost at sea April 1, 1683; she died, his widow, Sept. 28, 1684; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 11, 1672-3; married Lawrence Knights; 2. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 7, 1674; lived in Lynn in 1710; 3. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> mariner; died in 1704, unmarried. RICHARD INGERSOLL;<sup>3</sup> married Sarah —; died in 1684; she married, secondly, Joseph Proctor of Ipswich; child: 1. *Richard*.<sup>4</sup> CAPT. SAMUEL INGERSOLL;<sup>3</sup> shipmaster; married Sarah —; died Nov. 19, 1696; she married, secondly, Philip English; children: 1. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 12,



A second letter from the Company to Governor Endecott was begun at London May 28, 1629, and finished at Gravesend June 3, 1629. The following is a copy of it:—

LONDON, 28 May, 1629.

After o<sup>r</sup> harty comendacons: O<sup>r</sup> last vnto yo<sup>w</sup> was of the 17<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>th</sup> Aprill, sent by the last shipp, viz, the Geo: Bonaventure, Thomas Cox m<sup>r</sup>, who sett saile from th' Isle of Wight the 4<sup>th</sup> of this month, and seconded by the Talbott, Thomas Beecher mastter, & the Lyons

1686; married Josiah Orne; 2. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> born April 8, 1690; married Thomas Beadle; 3. Susanna;<sup>4</sup> apparently died young.

SAMUEL INGERSOLL;<sup>4</sup> cooper; removed to Marblehead about 1714 and returned to Salem about 1730; married, first, Elizabeth Wakefield of Boston Sept. 5, 1700; she died Jan. 22, 1702; married, second, Sarah Haskett July 29, 1702; they were living in 1748; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 15, 1702; 2. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 15, 1703; died young; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1704; died young; 4. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 14, 1706; 5. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 18, 1708; 6. Nathaniel;<sup>5</sup> 7. John.<sup>5</sup> RICHARD INGERSOLL;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Ruth Dodge of Beverly April 28, 1698; died in 1708; she was his widow in 1735; children: 1. Ruth;<sup>5</sup> died young; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 30, 1702; married Daniel Cressy of Boston Oct. 26, 1720; 3. Elizabeth<sup>5</sup> (?); married William Burrows; 4. John,<sup>5</sup> born before 1707; cordwainer; married Sarah (Raymond), widow of Henry Brown (published May 23, 1730); living in 1741; 5. Richard,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 5, 1712; cordwainer; died in 1735.

CAPT. NATHANIEL INGERSOLL;<sup>5</sup> mariner; married Bethiah Gardner Sept. 1, 1737; died in 1762; she died, his widow, July 30, 1773; children: 1. Sarah;<sup>6</sup> married Joseph Hood; 2. Nathaniel;<sup>6</sup> distiller; 3. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 29, 1744; married John Pickering; 4. Mary;<sup>6</sup> married Habakkuk Bowditch; 5. Elizabeth;<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1774; 6. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 5, 1747; living in 1774; 7. David,<sup>6</sup> baptized March 5, 1748-9; mariner; living in 1784; 8. Jonathan,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 11, 1751; 9. John,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 6, 1756; living in 1774. JOHN INGERSOLL;<sup>5</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Bray Nov. 27, 1740; died in or before 1757; she died, his widow, Aug. 5, 1768; children: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> born in 174-; 2. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born about 1744.

JONATHAN INGERSOLL;<sup>6</sup> mariner and merchant; removed to Windsor, Vt., about 1812; married, first, Mary Hodges; second, Mary Poole Feb. 12, 1793; third, Mary Blyth Feb. 15, 1808; fourth, Sally —; died before 1842; his widow, Sally, died in Salem March 17, 1842; children: 1. Nathaniel,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 21, 1778; lived in Brookline in 1813; married Eliza —; 2. George Hodges,<sup>7</sup> baptized Jan. 23, 1780; lived in Danvers; removed to Charlestown, N. H., in 1816; married Abigail —; had children; 3. Polly,<sup>7</sup> baptized in 1781; 4. Fanny,<sup>7</sup> baptized Dec. 29, 1783; 5. Harry,<sup>7</sup> baptized July 24, 1785. JOHN INGERSOLL;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married, first, Hannah Townsend May 23, 1779; married, second, Hannah Bowditch July 21, 1792; she died Dec. 14, 1826; married, third, Elizabeth Fabens; died Feb. 12, 1840; his wife Elizabeth died, his widow, Feb. 27, 1861, aged ninety-two; children: 1. Nancy,<sup>7</sup> baptized Oct. 17, 1784; 2. Judith,<sup>7</sup> baptized Nov. 17, 1793; 3. John,<sup>7</sup> baptized Jan. 24, 1796; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>7</sup> baptized Feb. 4, 1798; 5. Mary,<sup>7</sup> baptized Jan. 19, 1800; married — Hutchinson; 6. David,<sup>7</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1803. CAPT. SAMUEL INGERSOLL;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Susanna Hathorne Oct. 19, 1772; died, on his passage from Guadeloupe, July 15, 1804; she died, his widow, in the winter of 1811-2; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>7</sup> born about 1775; died July 21, 1797; 2. Ebenezer,<sup>7</sup> born about 1781; died on board the vessel his father died on, in quarantine, 1804; 3. Susanna,<sup>7</sup> born in 1785 or 1786; died, unmarried, July 13, 1858; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> baptized May 20, 1787.

Whelpe, John Gibbs m<sup>r</sup>, who sett saile also from th' Isle of Wight about the 11<sup>th</sup> of this month; w<sup>ch</sup> lre, being large and consisting of many pticulers, hath bin confirmed heere; and herew<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> shall receive a cobby therof, desiring yo<sup>w</sup> to take espetiall care of the pformance and putting in execucon of all things materiall therein menconed, and pticularly, amongst others, that point concerninge publicacon to bee made that noe wrong or iniurie bee offred by any of o<sup>r</sup> people to the natiues there. To w<sup>ch</sup> purpose wee desire yo<sup>w</sup>, the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, to aduise w<sup>th</sup> the councell in pening of an effectuall edict, vpon pœnalty to bee inflicted vpon such as shall transgress the same; w<sup>ch</sup> being done, o<sup>r</sup> desire is the same may bee published, to the end that all men take notice therof, as also that yo<sup>w</sup> send a cobby therof vnto vs by the next returne of the shipp.

Wee haue, sithence o<sup>r</sup> last, and according as wee then advised, at a full and ample Court assembled, ellected & established yo<sup>w</sup>, Captaine John Endicott, to the place of psent Gouno<sup>r</sup> in o<sup>r</sup> plantacon there, as also some others to bee of the councell w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup>, as more pticularly yo<sup>w</sup> will pceive by our act of Court herew<sup>th</sup> sent, confirmed by vs at a Genall Court, and sealed w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> comon seale; to w<sup>ch</sup> act wee referr yo<sup>w</sup>, desiring yo<sup>w</sup> all punctually to observe the same, and that the oathes wee herew<sup>th</sup> send yo<sup>w</sup>, (w<sup>ch</sup> haue bin heere penned by learned counsell,) to bee administred to each of yo<sup>w</sup> in yo<sup>r</sup> seuall places, may bee administred in such mann & forme as in & by o<sup>r</sup> said order is pticularly expressed, and that yo<sup>r</sup>selues do frame such other oathes as in yo<sup>r</sup> wisdomes yo<sup>w</sup> shall thinke fitt to bee administred to yo<sup>r</sup> Secretary or other officers, according to their seuall places respectively.

Wee haue further taken into o<sup>r</sup> consideracon the fitness and conuenyencie, or rather a necessitie, of making a devident of land, and allotting a pporcon to each adventurer, & otherwise, and to this purpose haue made and confirmed an act, and sealed the same w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> comon seale, to the pticulers wherof wee referr yo<sup>w</sup>, desiring yo<sup>w</sup> w<sup>th</sup> all conuenient expedicon to put the same in execucon; and for yo<sup>r</sup> better direcon in the allottment, wee haue herew<sup>th</sup> sent you (as by o<sup>r</sup> last wee pmised) a list of all the seuall adventurers, and of the some by each of them adventured, desiring that vpon the devydent each adventurer may haue his allotm<sup>t</sup> of land, as also such others as are noe adventurers, coming in pson at their owne charge, and the servants of aduenturers sent over to reside vpon the plantacon, may haue such a pporcon of land allotted vnto & for them as by o<sup>r</sup> said order is appointed.

JOHN INGERSOLL;<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Mary —; died Oct. 5, 1829; she survived him, and was living in 1846; child: 1. John;<sup>8</sup> living in 1832. CAPT. NATHANIEL INGERSOLL;<sup>7</sup> shipmaster; married Margaret Foote May 4, 1823; died Dec. 3, 1854; she died Feb. 19, 1878, his widow; child: 1. *Nathaniel*.<sup>8</sup> DAVID INGERSOLL;<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Hannah H. —; died Oct. —, 1837; she was living in 1857; children: 1. —<sup>8</sup> (son), born in 1827; died Jan. 25, 1828; 2. William S.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1829; died Aug. 29, 1829.

CAPT. NATHANIEL INGERSOLL;<sup>8</sup> mariner; removed to Portland, Ore., in 1878; married Deborah H. Carleton Oct. 30, 1851; children: 1. Nathaniel Bowditch,<sup>9</sup> born April 22, 1854; living in 1876; 2. Deborah,<sup>9</sup> born July 11, 1856; 3. Charles C.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 11, 1860; died Feb. 9, 1864; 4. Mary U.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 23, 1862.



And wheras divers of the Companie are desirous to haue the lands lye together, wee, holding it fitt herein to giue them all accomodacon, as tending to the furtherance of the plantacon, doe pray yo<sup>w</sup> to giue way thervnto for such as shall desire the same, whether it bee before a deident bee made according to o<sup>r</sup> direcon or at the tyme of the allotm<sup>t</sup> to observe the same course.

Yo<sup>w</sup> shall also receive herew<sup>th</sup> the coppys of all the seuall agreem<sup>ts</sup> made w<sup>th</sup> the servants and others sent over in the 3 last shippes for accompt of the Companie, togeather w<sup>th</sup> their seuall names, for yo<sup>r</sup> better direcon in employing them in their seuall places according to those agreem<sup>ts</sup>, as also the names of the servants of such pticuler members of the Company as went over in the said shippes; desiring yo<sup>w</sup> that a due register bee taken and kept from tyme to tyme of all the psons formly sent over, or that shall hereafter come to the plantacon, both of the names, & qualitie, and age, of each pticuler pson, & for or by whom they are sent over.

Wee send yo<sup>w</sup> also herew<sup>th</sup> a pticuler of all the goods and cattle sent in those forenamed shippes, as also of what goods, cattle, or other pvisions, wee now send vpon these 3 shippes, viz, the Mayflower, of Yarmouth, Willm Peirse m<sup>r</sup>, the Fower Sisters, of London, Roger Harman m<sup>r</sup>, the Pilgrim, of London, Willm Woolrige m<sup>r</sup>, amongst w<sup>ch</sup> wee haue remembred yo<sup>w</sup>, the Gouno<sup>r</sup> there, w<sup>th</sup> certaine necessaries pmised by o<sup>r</sup> last; and if in ought wee haue bin now wantinge, wee shall, vpon notice from yo<sup>w</sup>, see the same supplied by o<sup>r</sup> next.

Wheras in o<sup>r</sup> last wee advised yo<sup>w</sup> to make composicon w<sup>th</sup> such of the saluages as did ptend any tytle or lay clayme to any of the land w<sup>th</sup> in the teretoryes graunted to vs by his ma<sup>ts</sup> charter, wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> now bee carefull to discover & finde out all such ptendo<sup>r</sup>s, and by advice of the councell there to make such reasonable composicon w<sup>th</sup> them as may free vs and yo<sup>r</sup>selues from any scruple of intrusion, and to this purpose, if it might bee convenyently done, to compound & conclude w<sup>th</sup> them all, or as many as you can at one tyme, not doubting but, by yo<sup>r</sup> discreet ordering of this business, the natiues wilbe to treat & compound w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> vpon easie conditions.

Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup>, as soone as these shippes are discharged, to cause a pticuler to bee taken and sent vs at their returne for England, of the names of all such psons as come vpon them to remaine in the country, as also a note of the cattle and all mann of goods of what kinde soever landed out of them, w<sup>th</sup> the seuall marks and names of the owners therof; the like wherof wee desire to receive from yo<sup>w</sup> of the form 3 shippes, viz, the George, Talbott, & Lyons Whelpe, to the end wee may compare the same w<sup>th</sup> the invoyces heere, and receive freight, if any bee omitted.

The charge wee are at in sending over servants for the Company is very great, the recompense wherof (under God) depends vpon their labo<sup>r</sup> and endeavo<sup>r</sup>s; and therefore o<sup>r</sup> desire is, that you appoint a carefull and dilligent overseer to each familie, who is to see each pson employed in the business hee or they are appointed for. And to the end both yo<sup>r</sup>selues there and wee heere may from tyme to tyme haue notice how they employ their tyme, wee haue sent you diuers pap bookes, w<sup>ch</sup> wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> to distribute to the said overseers, who are to keepe a

perfect register of the dayly worke done by each pson in each familie, a copy wherof wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> send vnto vs once every halfe yeare, or as often as conveniently yo<sup>w</sup> may. But if yo<sup>w</sup> conceive that the said register may bee too much to wryte p<sup>t</sup>icularly every day, wee desire that a sumary may bee taken therof at the least evry weeke, registered in the booke kept for that familie, and at each weeks end the same to bee examined & subscribed by two, three, or fower such discreet psons as yo<sup>w</sup> shall thinke fitt to appoint for that purpose.

And for the better gouning and ordering of o<sup>r</sup> people, espeticallie such as shalbe negligent and remiss in pformance of their duties, or otherwise exorbitant, o<sup>r</sup> desire is, that a house of correccion bee erected and set vpp, both for the punishm<sup>t</sup> of such offendo<sup>r</sup>s, and to deterr others by their example from such irregular courses.

Richard Claydon, a wheelwright, recomended vnto vs by D<sup>r</sup> Wells to bee both a good and painfull workman, and of an orderly lyfe and conversacon, o<sup>r</sup> desire is, that vpon all occasions hee may haue yo<sup>r</sup> furtherance and good accomodacon, as yo<sup>w</sup> shall finde him by his endeavo<sup>r</sup>s to deserve; to whom, as tto all others of fitness & judgm<sup>t</sup> lett some of o<sup>r</sup> servants bee comitted, to bee instructed by him or them in their seuall arts, &c.

There is also one Richard Haward and Richard Inkersall, both Bedfordshire men, hyred for the Company, w<sup>th</sup> their famylies, who wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> may bee well accomodated, not doubting but they will well & orderly demeane themselues.

O<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup>, M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, hath entertained 2 gardno<sup>rs</sup>, one of w<sup>ch</sup> hee is content the Company shall haue vse of if neede bee; and wee desire that Barnabie Claydon, a wheelwright, may serve M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe for o<sup>r</sup> said Gouno<sup>r</sup> heere, or some other pson in lieu of him, that may giue him content.

Some things wee are desired by M<sup>r</sup> Whyte, the minister, to recomend vnto yo<sup>r</sup> care, viz: that yo<sup>w</sup> would shew all lawfull fauo<sup>r</sup> and respect vnto the planters that came over in the Lyons Whelpe out of the countyes of Dorset and Somsett; that yo<sup>w</sup> would appoint vnto William Dodg, a skilfull and painfull husbandman, the charge of a teame of horses; to appoint Hugh Tillie and William Eedes for servants to S<sup>r</sup> Richard Saltonstall; to giue approbacon and furtherance to Francis Webb in setting vpp his saw mill; and to take notice that all other psons sent over by M<sup>r</sup> Whyte are servants to the Company, whatsoever hee hath written to the contrary, this being now his owne desire.

The charge of these 3 shippes now sent, though every man that hath any private adventure in them is to pay for his p<sup>t</sup>icular, yett the hazard of pfitt and loss by the fraighting of them all, and mens wages and victuall, w<sup>th</sup> victuall for the passengers, is to bee borne  $\frac{1}{2}$  by the Companyes genall stock, &  $\frac{1}{2}$  by the Gouno<sup>r</sup> and his ptners their private stock; soe is also the ffishing to bee returned by them, as the salt sent in them is. Wherefore wee pray yo<sup>w</sup>, when yo<sup>r</sup> ships are discharged, if any surplus shalbe in victualls that they can spare, as also of other pvisions that was pvided for the passingers accomodacon, lett the same bee equally devyded,  $\frac{1}{2}$  to the Gouno<sup>r</sup> there for the Company, th' other halfe to M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Sharpe for the vse of M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, o<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup>, and his ptners. All pvisions for the fishing at sea is heere equallie borne in



halves; soe are all the pvissions for shipping of all the cattle in these 3 shipps; and accordingly wee desire the deales & cask may be devyded there.

The pvissions for building of shipps, as pitch, tarr, rozen, okum, old ropes for okum, cordage, & saylcloth, in all these shipps, w<sup>th</sup> 9 fferkins and 5 halfe barrells of nayles in the 4 Sisters, are  $\frac{2}{3}$  for the Company in genall, and  $\frac{1}{3}$  for the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, and his ptners, as is also the charge of one Georg Farr, now sent over to the six shipwrights formly sent. O<sup>r</sup> desire is, a storehouse may bee made apt for the pvissions of the shipwrights and their tooles, wherof Robert Moulton to haue the cheife charge, and an inventory to bee sent vs of all the tooles, the new by themselues and the old by themselues, that are sent over for the vse of the s<sup>d</sup> shipwrights, or any of them, in these and the form shipps, in like mann of all pvissions any way concerning shipping, to the end wee may heere examine & fynde that the Company may bee duly charged w<sup>th</sup> their  $\frac{2}{3}$  pts of the charge, & noe more, and the Gouno<sup>r</sup> likewise and his ptners w<sup>th</sup>  $\frac{1}{3}$  pt, and noe more; and o<sup>r</sup> desire is, that these men bee kept at worke togeather, adding to their helpe such of the Companyes servants as yo<sup>w</sup> shall fynde needfull, & pportionably  $\frac{1}{2}$ , as many of M<sup>r</sup> Cradocks, w<sup>ch</sup> course wee hold most equall, and that accordingly as many vessells bee built, first that both ptyes may be accomodated for the psent occasion, but soe soone as 3 shallops shalbe finished, two of them to bee sett out for the Companie by lott, or as yo<sup>w</sup> shall agree there to make an equal devision, and one for o<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup> & his ptners, w<sup>th</sup> whose agent, M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe, if yo<sup>w</sup> shall thinke fitt to agree vpon equall tearmes, ether in thirds or halves, to fish togeather when yo<sup>w</sup> shall haue vessells fitting, or for setting any other designe forward that may conduce to the good of all ptyes, the charge to bee borne indifferently by each partye pportionably, wee leave to yo<sup>r</sup> care and good discrecons, desiring and hartely praying that loue and vnitie may bee continued w<sup>th</sup>out any hartburninge. And as our Gouno<sup>r</sup> hath engaged himselfe beyond all expectacon in this business, not only in his pticuler, but by great somes disbursed for the genall, to supply the wants therof, soe o<sup>r</sup> desire is, that yo<sup>w</sup> endeavo<sup>r</sup> to giue all furtherance & freindly accomodacon to his agents & servants there, not doubting butt yo<sup>w</sup> shall fynde them likewise ready to accomodate the Company in what they may, the Comp: standing in neede of y<sup>r</sup> helpe.

The cattle now and formly sent haue bin all pydyed by the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, excepting 3 mares that came out of Lecestershire; but as well those as all the rest are agreed vpon to bee shipt, the one halfe at the charge and vpon the adventure of the genall Company, the other  $\frac{1}{2}$  for the Gouno<sup>r</sup> and his ptners. And because all occasions shalbe avoyded of iust excepcons in their devision, it is agreed, the devision shalbe made after the arrivall there, that soe whatsoever it shall please God to send thither in safety, a devision may bee then made therof by lott, or in such equall mann as yo<sup>w</sup> the Gouno<sup>r</sup> there, and M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe, shall hold to bee indifferent; and in case M<sup>r</sup> Samuell Sharpe should bee sick or absent, the Gouno<sup>r</sup>s desire is, that Henry Haughton supply his place herein & in other his occasions there.

And as in o<sup>r</sup> form, soe now againe wee espetially desire yo<sup>w</sup> to take care that noe tobacco bee planted by any of the new planters vnder yo<sup>r</sup>

gounm<sup>t</sup>, vnless it bee some small quantitie for meere necessitie, and for phisick, for pservacon of their healths, and that the same bee taken privately by auntient men and none oth<sup>r</sup>, and to make a genall restraint therof, as much as in yo<sup>w</sup> is, by pswading the old planters to employ themselues in other business, according to o<sup>r</sup> example, and not to pmitt that any tobacco bee laden there vpon our shipp<sup>s</sup>.<sup>1</sup>

Since th'aboue written, wee haue, vpon further consideracon, resolved, that the charge of the six fishermen sent over in the Lyons Whelpe, and 3 more now sent by o<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup>, should bee borne,  $\frac{2}{3}$  by the genall Company, and  $\frac{1}{3}$  by M<sup>r</sup> Cradock & ptners; the like for salt & other necessaryes for ffishing. In consideracon wherof, and for that they will haue a like interest in the shallops, o<sup>r</sup> desire is, that the benefitt of their labo<sup>r</sup>s, both in ffishinge & otherwise, (the trade of beavo<sup>r</sup> excepted, in w<sup>ch</sup> if yo<sup>w</sup> vse any of these fishermen as seamen, yo<sup>w</sup> must recompence their labo<sup>r</sup>s, by other men to supply their place,) bee equally devyded,  $\frac{2}{3}$  for th' use of the genall Company, and  $\frac{1}{3}$  for o<sup>r</sup> Gouno<sup>r</sup>, M<sup>r</sup> Cradock, & ptn<sup>r</sup>s, pportionably; and for such others as are to bee assisting to these men in the ffishing, yo<sup>w</sup> are to appoint  $\frac{2}{3}$  of them to bee of the genall Companyes servants, &  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the servants of M<sup>r</sup> Cradock and his ptners, accordingly.

The charge of the freight of the 3 shipp<sup>s</sup>, their men, victualls, &c, will stand vs in about 2400<sup>l</sup>, and their freight outward will nothing neere countervaile that charge. Wherefore wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> to ease it what yo<sup>w</sup> may by sending vs retunes in ffish or other lading; and wee desire you to giue them all expedicon, for otherwise their monthly pay, being about 400<sup>l</sup> p month for these 3 shipp<sup>s</sup>, will soone swallow vp the gaines wee shall make of any thinge they may bring home from thence.

We haue now sent by these 3 shipp<sup>s</sup> 29 waigh of salt, viz, 11 weigh in the Mayflower, 15 in the Fower Sisters, and 3 waigh in the Pilgrim, togeather w<sup>th</sup> lynes, hookes, knives, bootes, & barvells, necessary for ffishinge; desiring o<sup>r</sup> men may bee employed, ether in harbor or vpon the banke, to make vse therof for lading o<sup>r</sup> ships; wherein wee desire yo<sup>w</sup> to conferr and advise w<sup>th</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Peirce, who hath formly fished there. And if yo<sup>w</sup> send the shipp<sup>s</sup> to fish at the banck, & expect them not to retorne againe to the plantacon, that then yo<sup>w</sup> send o<sup>r</sup> barke, that is already built in the country, to bring back o<sup>r</sup> ffishermen and such pvisions as they had for fishing, viz, of salt, if any remainder bee, as also of hookes, lynes, knives, bootes, and barvells, w<sup>ch</sup> to them wilbe of noe vse, their fishing being ended, but may bee of vse to yo<sup>w</sup> vpon all occasions.

And as wee haue hereby desired that a storehouse bee built for the shipwrights & their pvisions, & an inventory kept therof, soe wee desire likewise that the same course bee observed for the ffishermen, and an inventory bee duly kept of all the pvisions & implem<sup>ts</sup> for fishinge, and a copy therof to bee sent vnto us, and that such a carefull person bee appointed to take care & charge therof, to pserve the same from loss & spoyle, as yo<sup>w</sup> in yo<sup>r</sup> discrecons shall think fitt, w<sup>ch</sup> we pray yo<sup>w</sup> take into yo<sup>r</sup> espetiall care and consideracon, and soe to order this & other business, by distributing the care thereof to seuell psons, that the burthen bee not too heavy to any pticuler, and soe the business itselfe

<sup>1</sup>The remainder of this letter was written at Gravesend June 3, 1629.



suffer. And this care wee desire may bee taken, for that wee know not how soone wee may resolute of some other deviation.

Thomas Beard, a shoemaker, and Isack Rickman, being both recommended to vs by M<sup>r</sup> Symon Whetcombe to receive their dyett & houseroome at the charge of the Companie, wee haue agreed they shalbe w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, or placed elsewhere, as yo<sup>w</sup> shall thinke good, and receive from yo<sup>w</sup>, or by yo<sup>r</sup> appointm<sup>t</sup>, their dyett & lodging, for w<sup>ch</sup> they are to pay, each of them, after the rate of 10<sup>l</sup> p ann. And wee desire to receive a certificate, vnder the hand of whomsoever they shalbe soe dyetted & lodged w<sup>th</sup>, how long tyme they haue remained w<sup>th</sup> them, in case they shall otherwise dispose of themselues before the yeare bee expired, or at least wise at the end of each yeare, to the end wee may heere receive paym<sup>t</sup> according to the s<sup>d</sup> agreem<sup>t</sup>. The said Tho: Beard hath in the shipp the May Flower divers hydes, both for soles and vpp leathers, w<sup>ch</sup> hee intends to make vpp in bootes and shoes there in the country. Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> let M<sup>r</sup> Peirce, the m<sup>r</sup> of the said shipp, viewe the said leather, & estimate what tonnage the same may import, that soe the said Beard may ether pay vnto yo<sup>w</sup> there after the rate of 4<sup>l</sup> p tonn for freight of the same, the like for his dyett if there bee occasion to vse any of his comodities, or otherwise, vpon yo<sup>r</sup> advice, wee may receive it of M<sup>r</sup> Whetcombe, who hath promised to see the same discharged. Wee desire also the said Tho: Beard may haue 50 acres of land allotted to him as one that transports himselfe at his owne charge. But as well for him as all others that shall haue land allotted to them in that kinde, and are noe adventurers in the comon stock, w<sup>ch</sup> is to support the charge of ffortyficacons, as also for the ministrie & divers other affaires, wee holde it fitt that these kinde of men, as also such as shall come to inheritt lands by their service, should, by way of acknowledgm<sup>t</sup> to such from whom they receive these lands, become lyable to the pformance of some service certaine dayes in the yeare, and by that service they and their posteritie after them to hold and inherite these lands, w<sup>ch</sup> wilbe a good meanes to enioy their lands from being held in capite, and to support the plantacon in genall and pticuler.

Wee may not omitt, out of o<sup>r</sup> zeale for the genall good, once more to putt yo<sup>w</sup> in mynde to bee very circumspect, in the infancie of the plantacon, to settle some good orders wherby all psons resident vpon o<sup>r</sup> plantacon may apply themselues to one calling or other, and noe idle drone bee permitted to liue amongst vs, w<sup>ch</sup>, if yo<sup>w</sup> take care now at the first to establish, wilbe an vndoubted meanes, through Gods assistance, to pvent a world of disorders and many greivous sinns & sinners.

The course we haue pscribed for keeping a dayly register in each familie of what is done by all and every pson in the famylie wilbe a great helpe & remembrance to yo<sup>w</sup>, and to future posteritie, for the vpholding and continuance of this good act, if once well begun and settled, w<sup>ch</sup> wee hartely wish & desire as aforesaid.

And as wee desire all should liue in some honest calling and pfeession, soe wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> to bee vnpartiall in the adminstracon of justice, and endeavo<sup>r</sup> that noe man whatsoever, freeman, or servant to any, may haue iust cause of complaint herein. And for that it cannot be avoyded but offences wilbe given, wee harelly pray you to admitt of all complaints that shalbe made to yo<sup>w</sup>, or any of yo<sup>w</sup> that are of the

councell, bee the comp<sup>lt</sup> never soe meane, and pass it not sleightly over, but seriously examine the truth of the business, and if yo<sup>w</sup> fynde there was iust cause for the complaint, endeavo<sup>r</sup> to right the oppressed in the best mann yo<sup>w</sup> can. But, howsoever, take some strict course to puent the like; and such as are by vs put in authoritie as subordinate gouno<sup>r</sup>s of ffamylies, if they shall abuse any vnder their gounm<sup>t</sup>, and after a gentle admonicon doe not reforme it, faile not speedylie to remove them, as men more fitt to bee gouned then to goune others, and place more fitt and sufficient men in their steed. But if yo<sup>w</sup> fynde any comp<sup>lt</sup> to bee made without iust cause giuen, lett not such a fault escape w<sup>th</sup>out severe punishm<sup>t</sup>, and that forthw<sup>th</sup>, and in publike, wherby to teryfie all others from daring to complaine against any that shalbe sett over them w<sup>th</sup>out a iust cause. Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> take this earnestly to hart, and neglect not the due execucon therof vpon plaintiff or defendant, according to the nature of the offence. It wilbe a meanes, through Gods mercy, of pventing many inconveyencies and disorders that otherwise will vndoubtedly befall yo<sup>w</sup> and the whole gounm<sup>t</sup> there.

And amongst other sinns, wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> make some good lawes for the punishing of swearers, whervnto it is to bee feared too many are adicted that are servants sent over formly and now. These and other abuses wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> who are in authoritie to endeavo<sup>r</sup> seriously to reforme, if ever you expect comfort or a blessing from God vpon o<sup>r</sup> plantacon.

We haue discharged divers servants heere that we had entertained, and bin at great charges w<sup>th</sup> some of them, yett, fearing their ill lyfe might bee piudiciall to the plantacon, wee rather thought fitt to dismiss them, and loose o<sup>r</sup> charges, then to burthen the plantacon w<sup>th</sup> them. Amongst others in like mann dismissed by the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, 2 of the 3 ffisher-men of his, formly menconed, are gone. Wee doubt not but God will in due tyme pyde us sufficiently w<sup>th</sup> honest and able servants; and wee hope these sent wilbe conformable to good gounm<sup>t</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> if they doe willingly and cheerefully wilbe the greater comfort to yo<sup>w</sup> and vs; if otherwise, we doubt not but yo<sup>w</sup>, in yo<sup>r</sup> good discrecons, will know how to pceede w<sup>th</sup> such. Wherin, and in all things els yo<sup>w</sup> goe about, wee beseech the Almighty soe to direct yo<sup>w</sup> as that God alone may haue the glory, and yo<sup>w</sup> and wee comfort heere tempally and hereafter ppetually.

Wee pray yo<sup>w</sup> to take notice that in these and the form shipp ther is shipped in cattle and other pvisions according to pticuler invoyces heere inclosed; but whether all things bee incerted in the same invoyces wee make doubt, and therefore pray yo<sup>w</sup> to bee carefull a due register bee kept of all putt ashore.

We pray yo<sup>w</sup> endeavo<sup>r</sup>, though there bee much strong waters sent for sale, yett soe to order it as that the saluages may not for o<sup>r</sup> lucre sake bee induced to the excessive vse, or rather abuse of it, and at any hand take care o<sup>r</sup> people giue not ill example; and if any shall excede in that inordinate kind of drinking as to become drunck, wee hope yo<sup>w</sup> will take care his punishm<sup>t</sup> bee made exemplary for all others. Lett the lawes bee first published to forbidd these disorders, and all others yo<sup>w</sup> feare may growe vp, wherby they may not ptend ignorance of the one nor p<sup>r</sup>uiledg to offend, and then feare not to putt good lawes, made vpon good ground and warrant, in due execucon. And soe, recomending



yo<sup>w</sup> and all yo<sup>r</sup> affaires to the ptecon of the Almighty, wee conclude,  
and rest

Yo<sup>r</sup>, &c.

Grauesend, 3 June, 1629.

To the Worp<sup>11</sup> o<sup>r</sup> very loving friends, Capt Jo:  
Endecott, Esq, Gouno<sup>r</sup>, Fr: Higgenson,  
Samuell Skelton, Fr: Bright, Jo: & Sam:  
Browne, Sam: Sharpe, Tho: Graues, & the  
rest of the Councill for Londons Plantacon  
in the Mattachusetts Bay in New England.<sup>1</sup>

Governor Endecott was advised repeatedly in the letter he received from the Company that the principal object of the settlement here was missionary work among the aborigines; and that he should endeavor to bring them to the knowledge of the gospel. It is interesting to note that the first suggestion in the way of the accomplishment of this design was that he should have diligent and watchful oversight of the English settlers, that they lived blameless, peaceful and harmonious lives and acted justly and courteously toward them, taking advantage of every opportunity which would tend to improve them, and especially not to do any injury to them, and thus attract the natives and create a desire to be like the English and then embrace the Christian religion; also, to get some of the Indian children to be trained to reading and in the principles of Christianity while they were young. The use of intoxicating liquors was ordered to be so temperate that no bad example would be set, and the Indians were not to abuse the use of it.

Governor Endecott was admonished not to be too confident of the fidelity of the savages, remembering the evil disappointments in Virginia from such trustfulness. Too much familiarity with them was not countenanced, and Governor Endecott was advised that they should be allowed to come to the plantation only at certain times and places which were to be appointed. Guns and ammunition were forbidden to be sold to them, and persons guilty of doing so were to be sent to England as criminals.

Indians claiming title to the territory or any part of it were to be scrupulously treated with and their claims settled, if possible.

The Company recognized the rights and feelings of the old planters, and not only had them largely represented in the local government, but confirmed to them the lands that they had occupied and improved and such other lands as the local government might grant to them. The old planters were also to have a share of the profit from the common stock of the Company, as if they

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, pages 398-407.

were adventurers after deducting reasonable freight and such per cent for the use of the money invested in the plantation by the adventurers as the local government might determine "to bee agreeable to equitie & good conscience." These privileges and profits were to be allowed, however, only to "such as bee peaceable men, and of honest lyfe and conversacon & desirous to liue amongst vs, and conforme themselues to good order and governm<sup>t</sup>."

This attitude of the Company toward the old planters was perhaps somewhat influenced by the suspicion that John Oldham might divert them from their allegiance to the Company. Oldham had detained the vessels in England that spring some two months in a vain endeavor to obtain the management of the stock of the Company. If he had accomplished his purpose, he would have had the profits above a certain amount, and the right to trade with the Indians. This was a benefit which the Company had reserved for itself, corporately. Finally, the Company concluded that he was "a man altogeather vnfitt" to deal with, and refused prepared a vessel to go to New England, and settle in Massachusetts Bay, claiming title to the soil by a grant from Sir Ferdinando Gorges' son. Their purpose was, of course, personal gain, and not the settlement of the country. The Massachusetts Bay Company, though unwilling to do anything to debar any person who was residing here before they came from that trade, stated, however, that they would not "pmitt any to appropriate to their owne private lucar w<sup>ch</sup> wee, in o<sup>r</sup> religious intercou<sup>rs</sup> haue dedicated to the comon charge of building houses for Gods worshipp and fforts to defend such as shall come thither to inhabite." Governor Endecott was enjoined by the Company to use the best means he could "to settle an agreem<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the old planters, soe as they may not harken to M<sup>r</sup> Oldhams dangerous though vaine ppositions."

To strengthen the possession of the Company in the territory of their grant, they directed Governor Endecott, with all expediency, as soon as the vessels with the colonists arrived, to cause some forty or fifty persons to settle in the Bay, reserving to all persons found residing there, however, the rights they already had, providing that they were willing to be subject to this government, and to bring them into such agreement, if possible, even by conferring upon them extraordinary privileges of trade. This settlement was duly made at what is now Charlestown, the plantation being named for the king.

The Company deemed it wise to lay the foundations of the government with strength and strictness and certainty, and requested Governor Endecott to thoroughly exercise its political powers, and "suppress a mischiefe before it had too great a head." "Not," they wrote, "that wee would wrong . . . any man that will live peaceably w<sup>th</sup>in the limitts of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon; but . . . the



pservacon of o<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>uiledges will cheifly depend (vnder God) vpon the first foundacon of o<sup>r</sup> gounm<sup>t</sup>."

Rev. Mr. Higginson had been at Naumkeag less than a month when, at his suggestion, the name of Salem, from the Hebrew place name meaning peace, was given to the plantation, in the place of "Marble-harbor,"<sup>1</sup> "in remembrance of a peace settled upon a conference at a generall meeting betweene them and their neighbours, after expectance of some dangerous jarre."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Plantation.

<sup>2</sup>The Planters Plea, by Rev. William White, London, 1630, chapter II.

## CHAPTER VII.

### INSTITUTION OF GOVERNMENT.



THE Massachusetts Bay Company was organized on a business basis. When the colony became established, and the people in their associate relations needed a form of local government, steps were taken by the Company to establish administrative authority by and among the people in the plantation.

The Company increased in numbers after Captain Endecott and his colony had sailed, and a charter was secured directly from the king, under the broad seal of England, confirming the grant they had received from the council at Plymouth. By this patent the Company was incorporated into a body politic, with ample authority for government within its territory.<sup>1</sup> This document was engrossed in duplicate, each on four sheets of sheep skin, measuring thirty by twenty-four inches. One of these duplicates was sent to Governor Endecott on the *George*, by Samuel Sharp, and was received by Endecott in June, 1629. It has been in the possession of the Salem Athenæum since 1827, and is now on deposit in the fireproof of the Essex Institute.

The following is an abbreviated copy of the charter:—

Charles, by the grace of God, Kinge of England, Scotland, Fraunce, and Ireland, Defendor of the Fayth, &c, To all to whome theis Presents shall come, Greeting. Whereas our most deare and royall father Kinge James, of blessed memory, by his Highness letters patents beareing date at Westminster the third day of November, in the eighteenth yeare of his raigne, hath given and graunted vnto the

<sup>1</sup>Subsequently the Plymouth colony asked for a corporate charter as extensive in authority to make and execute laws as "the Salem or Massachusetts plantation." The king graciously granted the request, referring it to the lord keeper to order the solicitor to draw it up. Many riddles had to be solved by "the golden key", however, before the rights were obtained. See letter from James Shirley in Governor Bradford's letter book.



Councell established at Plymouth in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of Newe England in America, and to their successors and assignes for ever: All that parte of America lyeing and being in bredth from forty degrees of northerly latitude from the equinoctiall lyne, to forty eight degrees of the saide northerly latitude inclusively, and in length of and within all the breadth afore-said throughout the maine landes from sea to sea, together, also, with all the firme landes, soyles, groundes, havens, portes, rivers, waters, fishing, mynes, and myneralls, aswell royall mynes of gould and silver, as other mynes and mynerals, precious stones, quarries, and all and singular other comodities, jurisdiccons, royalties, priviledges, franchises, and prehemynences, both within the said tract of lande vpon the mayne, and also within the islandes and seas adioining: . . . To be houlden of our saide most deare and royall father, his heires, and successors, as of his mannor of Eastgreenewich, in the County of Kent, in free and comon Soccage, and not in Capite nor by Knights Service. Yeildinge and paying therefore to the saide late Kinge, his heires, and successors the fifte parte of the oare of gould and silver . . . obteyned in . . . saide lands, . . . for or in respect of all . . . duties, demaunds, and services whatsoever to be don, made, or paide to our saide dear father, the late Kinge, his heires, and successors. . . . And whereas the saide Councell, . . . have, by their deede, . . . bearing date the nyneteenth day of March last past, . . . confirmed to Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, knightes, Thomas Southcott, John Humphrey, John Endecott, and Symon Whetcombe, their heires and associats for ever, All that parte of Newe England . . . which lyes and extendes betweene a greate river there comonlie called . . . Merriemack, and a certen other river there called Charles river, being in . . . Massachusettes . . . bay, and also all and singuler those landes and hereditaments whatsoever lyeing within the space of three English myles on the south parte of the saide Charles river . . . And also all those landes and hereditaments whatsoever which lye . . . three English myles to the northward of the saide river called . . . Merrymack . . . throughout the mayne landes there, from the Atlantick and westerne sea and ocean on the east parte, to the south sea on the west parte, . . . And also all islandes lyeing . . . in the saide seas, . . . on the westerne or easterne coasts: . . . And also all mynes and myneralls, . . . And all jurisdiccons, rights, royalties, liberties, freedoms, ymmunities, priviledges, franchises, prehemynences, and comodities whatsoever, which they, the saide Councell, established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of Newe England in America, then had or might vse, exercise, or inioy in and within the saide landes and premisses. . . . To have and to hould the saide . . . premises . . . vnto the saide Sir Henry Rosewell, . . . and their associattes, for evermore, . . . in free and comon Socage. . . . Nowe knowe yee, that wee, at the humble suite and peticon of the saide Sir Henry Rosewell, . . . and others whome they have associated vnto them, . . . confirme vnto the saide Sir Henry Rosewell . . . and to their associattes hereafter named, (videlic,) Sir Richard Saltonstall, knight, Isaack Johnson, Samuel Aldersey, John Ven, Mathew Cradock, George Harwood, In-







crease Nowell, Richard Perry, Richard Bellingham, Nathaniell Wright, Samuell Vassall, Theophilus Eaton, Thomas Goffe, Thomas Adams, John Browne, Samuell Browne, Thomas Hutchins, William Vassall, William Pinchion, and George Foxcroft, their heires and assignes, All the saide parte of Newe England . . . liberties, freedomes, immunities, priviledges, franchises. . . . To have and to houlde . . . to their . . . absolute vse and behoofe for evermore, . . . in free and comon Socage. . . . And forasmuch as the good and prosperous successe of the plantacon . . . cheifly depend, next vnder the blessing of Almighty God and the support of our royall authoritie, vpon the good government of the same, To the ende that the affaires and buyssinnes . . . concerning . . . the plantation . . . be the better mannaged . . . Wee . . . confirme vnto our saide trustie and welbeloved subiectes . . . and all such others as shall hereafter be admitted and made free of the Company . . . shall . . . be, . . . one body corporate and politique in fact and name, by the name of the Governor and Company of the Mattachusetts Bay in Newe England; . . . they shall have perpetuall succession: . . . to implead and to be impleaded, and to prosecute, demaund, and answere, and be aunsweared vnto, in all . . . accons, . . . and also to have, take, possesse, acquire, and purchase any landes, tenements, or hereditamentes, or any goodes or chattels, And the same to lease, graunt, demise, alien, bargain, sell, and dispose of as other our liege people of this our realme of England, or any other corporacon or body politique of the same maie lawfullie doe: And, further, that the said Governor and Companye and their successors maie have for ever one comon seale, to be vsed in all causes and occasions of the said Company, and the same seale maie alter, chaunge, breake, and newe make, . . . at their pleasures, . . . from henceforth for ever, there shalbe one Governor, one Deputy Governor, and eightene Assistants of the same Company, to be . . . chosen out of the freemen of the saide Company, . . . to take . . . ordering of the . . . plantacion thereof, and the government of the people there. And . . . wee . . . constitute . . . saide Mathewe Cradocke to be the first and present Governor . . . saide Thomas Goffe to be Deputy Governor . . . and the saide Sir Richard Saltonstall, Isaack Johnson, Samuell Aldersey, John Ven, John Humfrey, John Endecott, Simon Whetcombe, Increase Noell, Richard Pery, Nathaniell Wright, Samuell Vassall, Theophilus Eaton, Thomas Adams, Thomas Hutchins, John Browne, George Foxcroft, William Vassall, and William Pinchion to be the present Assistants of the saide Company, . . . to make lawes and ordinnces for the good and welfare of the saide Company and for the government and ordering of the saide landes and plantacon, and the people inhabiting and to inhabite the same, . . . not contrarie or repugnant to the lawes and statuts of this our realme of England. . . . That it shalbe lawfull and free for them, . . . out of any our realmes or dominions whatsoever, to take, leade, carry, and transport, for and into their voyages, and for and towardes the said plantacon in Newe England, all such and soe many of our loving subiects, or any other strangers that will become our loving subiects, and live vnder our allegiance, as shall willinglie accompany them in the same voyages and plantacon, and also shipping, armour,



weapons, ordinance, municon, powder, shott, corne, victualls, and all manner of clothing, implements, furniture, beastes, cattle, horses, mares, marchandizes, and all other thinges necessarie for the saide plantacon, and for their vse and defence, and for trade with the people there, and in passing and returning to and fro, any lawe or statute to the contrarie hereof in any wise notwithstanding, and without payeing or yeilding any custome or subserie . . . by the space of seaven yeares from the day of the date of theis presents. . . . That they and every of them shalbe free and quitt from all taxes, subsidies, and customes in Newe England for the like space of seaven yeares, and from all taxes and imposicons for the space of twenty and one yeares vpon all goodes and merchandises, . . . either vpon importacon thither, or exportacon from thence into our realme of England, or into any other our domynions, . . . except onlie the five poundes per centum due for custome vpon all such goodes and merchandises, as after the saide seaven yeares. . . . That all and everie the subiects of vs, . . . which shall goe to and inhabite within the saide landes . . . their children which shall happen to be borne there, or on the seas in goeing thither or retorning from thence, shall have and enioy all liberties and immunities . . . as yf they . . . were borne within the realme of England. And that . . . our said people, inhabitants there, maie be soe religiously, peaceable, and civilly governed, as their good life and orderlie conversacon maie wynn and incite the natives of country to the knowledg and obedience of the onlie true God and Savior of mankinde, and the Christian fayth, which, in our royal intencon and the adventurers free profession, is the principall ende of this plantacon. . . . In witnes whereof, wee have caused theis our letters to be made patents. Witnes ourself at Westminster, the fourth day of March, in the fourth yeare of our raigne.

Per Breve de Privato Sigillo.

WOLSELEY.<sup>1</sup>

The title of the corporate body was the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England. The king endowed it with many large and ample privileges and immunities, with power to make good and wholesome laws, orders and ordinances for the better maintenance and support of those privileges and for the better and more orderly and regular government to be observed in the prosecution and propagation of intended voyages and the plantation there, authorizing it to select and appoint fit persons amongst its members for the managing, ordering and governing of its affairs, both in England and in the places then granted to it. Noting all these favors of the king, the corporate body thus created, in prosecution of the power and authority conferred upon it, voted, April 30, 1629, to settle and establish an absolute government at its plantation in Naumkeag.

<sup>1</sup>The charter is printed in full in the beginning of the first volume of the Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and occupies seventeen large pages.

Thirteen, the record says, "of such as shalbe reputed the most wyse, honest, expert, & discreete psons resident vpon the said plantacon" were to be elected, and have the sole management and ordering of the government and the affairs of the Company in New England, and endeavor so to make the settlement "to the glory of God, the furtherance & advancem<sup>t</sup> of this hopeful plantacon, the comfort, encouragem<sup>t</sup>, & future benefitt of vs & others, the beginns & psecuto<sup>rs</sup> of this soe laudable a worke." These thirteen persons constituted the original corporate body in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. The Company chose the governor and seven of the council. Having "taken into due consideracon the meritt, worth, & good desert of Capt. John Endecott," the Company elected him "to the place of psent Gouno<sup>r</sup> in o<sup>r</sup> said plantation." Captain Endecott was, at that time, an assistant in the Company. The Company also chose Rev. Francis Higginson, Rev. Samuel Skelton, Rev. Francis Bright, Mr. John Browne, Mr. Samuel Browne, Mr. Thomas Graves and Mr. Samuel Sharp to be seven of the council. The governor and these seven councilors were authorized to choose three more, "such as they, or the greater nomb of them, in their discrecons, shall esteem & conceive most fitt therevnto, to bee also of the said councell." That the old planters might be duly represented in the council, the Company voted "that such of the said form planters as are willing to liue w<sup>th</sup>in the lymitts of o<sup>r</sup> plantacon shalbe enabled, & are hereby authorized, to make choice of 2 such as they shall thinke fitt." From these twelve members of the council, the governor and council chose one to be deputy-governor. The governor and council were authorized to choose "a Secretary, & such other subordinate officers, to attend them at their courts, meetings, or otherwise, &c, as in their discrecons shall seem meete & needfull."

That the governor, deputy, councilors and subordinate officers might be "the more carefull in pformance of the charge comitted vnto them" it was thought best to require a proper oath of office to be administered to them when they were elected or admitted into the several offices. The oaths were prepared by "learned counsel," in England, except those for the subordinate officers, which were left to the discretion of the local government. The oath of the governor and deputy-governor was as follows:—

Yo<sup>w</sup> shalbe faithful and lyall vnto o<sup>r</sup> Souaign Lord, the Kings Ma<sup>ty</sup>, & to his heirs & successo<sup>rs</sup>; yo<sup>w</sup> shall support and maintaine, to yo<sup>r</sup> power, the gounm<sup>t</sup> & Company of the Mattachusetts Bay in New England, in America, & the p<sup>r</sup>viledges of the same, haueing noe singular regard to yo<sup>r</sup>selfe in derogacon or hinderance of the comon wealth of this Company; and to every pson vnder yo<sup>r</sup> authoritie you shall administer indifferent & equall iustice. Statutes & ordinances shall yo<sup>w</sup> none make w<sup>th</sup>out th<sup>r</sup>advice & consent of the councell for the gounm<sup>t</sup>



of the Mattachusetts Bay in New England; yo<sup>w</sup> shall admitt none into the ffreedome of this Company but such as may clayme the same by certue of the p<sup>r</sup>uiledges therof; yo<sup>w</sup> shall not bynde yo<sup>r</sup>selfe to enter into any business or pcess for or in the name of this Companie w<sup>th</sup>out the consent & agreem<sup>t</sup> of the councell aforesaid, but shall endeavo<sup>r</sup> faithfully & carefully to carry y<sup>r</sup>selfe in this place and office of GOU<sup>R</sup>NO<sup>R</sup>, as long as yo<sup>w</sup> shall continue in it; and likewise yo<sup>w</sup> shall doe yo<sup>r</sup> best endeavo<sup>r</sup> to draw on the natiues of this country, called New England, to the knowledge of the true God, and to conserve the planters & others coming hether, in the same knowledge & feare of God; and yo<sup>w</sup> shall endeavo<sup>r</sup> by all good meanes to advance the good of the plantacons of this Companie; and yo<sup>w</sup> shall endeavo<sup>r</sup> the raising of such comodities for the benefitt and encouragm<sup>t</sup> of th<sup>'</sup>adventurers & planters, as, through Gods blessing on yo<sup>r</sup> endeavo<sup>r</sup>s, may bee pduced for the good & service of the kingdom of England, this Company, and their plantacons. All these pmises yo<sup>w</sup> shall hold & keepe, to the vttermost of yo<sup>r</sup> power & skill, soe long as yo<sup>w</sup> shall continue in the place of GOU<sup>R</sup>NO<sup>R</sup> of this fellowship. Soe help yo<sup>w</sup> God.

The Company appointed a certain person to administer the oath to the governor; and the governor, being duly sworn, administered the oath to the deputy-governor; and the governor or deputy-governor qualified the other members of the council and the subordinate officers by administration of their respective oaths in open court.

The persons then chosen to these various positions were to hold office for one year from the time they qualified by taking the official oath, or until such time as the Company thought fit to choose others to succeed them in their respective offices. If a vacancy should occur through death, or through removal for the commission of a misdemeanor or other unfitness for official duty, the governor, deputy-governor and councilors, then capable of acting, were authorized to choose fit persons to succeed officers so removed or deceased, for the unexpired term.

The governor was authorized to call courts and meetings of the governor and council in places and at times convenient, in his discretion, and, in the absence of the governor, the deputy-governor; and at such meetings duly held, the governor or his deputy being present, under the charter rights and powers, they were authorized "to make, ordaine, and establish all mann of wholsome & reasonable lawes, orders, ordinances & constitucons, (soe as the same bee noe way repugnant or contrary to the lawes of the realme of England) for the administring of justice vpon malefacto<sup>r</sup>s and inflicting condigne punishm<sup>t</sup> vpon all other offendo<sup>r</sup>s, and for the furtherance of ppagating of the said plantacon, and the more decent & orderly gounm<sup>t</sup> of the inhabitants resydent there." Copies of all such orders were to be sent to the Company in London; and all votes of the Company in London concerning the

government in New England were to be sent to Governor Endecott.

For the use of the government in New England, the Company had a silver seal made in April, 1629. This seal was used all through the colonial period by the government. The inscription, "SIGILLVM: GVB: ET: SOCIET: DE: MATTACHV-SETTS: BAY: IN: NOVA: ANGLIA," indicates that Endecott was the first governor who was intended to use and did actually use this seal. The words that the Indian is represented as saying, "COME OVER AND HELP VS," express the missionary purpose of the colonization. The seal was sent with the charter to Governor Endecott, by Samuel Sharp, in the ship *George*. The original seal is not known to be in existence. The engraving shows its exact size.



SEAL.

The rule over the people was to be kind though strict. The people were to be "well educated in their genall callings as Christians;" and, in cases of misdemeanor, lenity, admonition and gentle correction were first to be practised. If that should prove insufficient, then due punishment should follow, and in serious cases the wrongdoers were to be sent to England for punishment. The government was to be impartial, and the same rule applied to all,—to planters, servants and Indians alike.

Proclamation of laws and ordinances under the seal of the Company was to be posted in some proper public place for the information of both English and Indians.

No records of the sessions of this government at Salem are known to exist. They were probably carried to England to the Lords.<sup>1</sup> Many meetings must have been held, as there were important questions to be decided during the time that the government was located here, a period of more than a year.

<sup>1</sup>See letter of Edward Howes to John Winthrop, jr., dated at London, March 25, 1633, in Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, 3d series, volume 9, page 257.



Different from all others, this government was not established by, nor for the benefit of, any one man—leader or dictator, hero or chieftain. Not a single political European idea found acceptance in the new land. Democracy, made room for and cherished by the events which brought the government into existence, was its vital essence. Past distinctions were now swept away either by the new ideas or force of circumstances. As the convictions, aims and purposes of the promoters and planters were identical, they became united in social and political equality, and a nation peculiar in the history of the world naturally resulted.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### FOUNDING OF THE CHURCH.



WHEN the ministers, Messrs. Skelton, Higginson, Bright and Smith, left England for America in 1629, they were not separatists, only non-conformists. Reverends Skelton and Higginson, at least, were not desirous of forsaking the Episcopal service, to which they must have become strongly attached after so many years of its enjoyment. The merchants who constituted the Massachusetts Bay Company had great regard for the judgment of Arthur Hildersham of Ashby-de-la-Zouch in the settlement of the religious side of the life of the colony. He advised the planters to agree fully upon their form of church government before their removal to New England; but no agreement had been made beyond the tacit understanding that the reformation of the church be according to the plain teaching of the Bible.<sup>1</sup>

The language of Rev. Mr. Higginson, when taking his last look at the fatherland as the ship *Talbot* sailed away from Land's End, indicates but faintly an intention of forsaking the ritual of the Episcopal church; but his account of the voyage suggests the simplicity of the service on board the vessel.

The presence of Dr. Samuel Fuller, who had been sent to Naumkeag by Governor Bradford of the Plymouth colony at the time of the sickness among the colonists in the spring of 1629, gave Captain Endecott an opportunity to learn of the principles of faith and church government of the Pilgrims. Captain Endecott wrote, in a letter to Governor Bradford, May 11, 1629, in reference to conferences with Doctor Fuller, "that I am by him satisfied, touching your judgments, of the outward form of God's worship; it is (as far as I can yet gather) no other than is warranted by the evidence of truth, and the same which I have professed and maintained, ever since the Lord in mercy revealed himself unto me,

<sup>1</sup>*Magnalia Christi Americana*, by Rev. Cotton Mather, book I, chapter IV.



being far differing from the common report that hath been spread of you touching that particular."<sup>1</sup> Consultations were held with others from Plymouth, who "with great satisfaction" laid before the Naumkeag planters the warrant they had in the laws of Christ for each particular in their church order.<sup>2</sup>

This conclusion of Captain Endecott was apparently made known to the ministers and prominent men among the colonists at Naumkeag and readily found response in the minds of Skelton and Higginson, but rejection from Bright, and opposition "here and elsewhere," as Deacon Gott wrote to Governor Bradford.<sup>3</sup> Probably the circumstances under which the church was formed had no inconsiderable influence on the simplicity of the form of worship and the democracy of the government of the church.

Monday, July 20, was set apart by Governor Endecott "for a solemn day of humiliation" for the choice of a pastor and teacher. The forenoon was "spent in praise and teaching" and in the afternoon the election was held. The ministerial candidates were conferred with about their callings, and they acknowledged that these were two-fold, one being spiritual and the other formal. The first was a call from the Lord, to a desire for the work; and the other a call from the company of believers "joined together in covenant to walk together in all the ways of God." It was decided that Messrs. Skelton and Higginson were qualified as ministers. The election was by the male members by ballot, which named one candidate for pastor and one for teacher of the church. Mr. Skelton was elected pastor and Mr. Higginson, teacher. They accepted the election and their installation followed. Mr. Higginson and three or four "of the gravest members of the church" laid their hands on Mr. Skelton, and prayed. The same rite was then performed in installing Mr. Higginson. An informal election of elders and deacons followed. Charles Gott and John Horne<sup>4</sup> were chosen deacons, but their formal election and qualification by the laying on of hands was deferred, "to see if it

*John Horne*

<sup>1</sup>See page 99.

<sup>2</sup>Magnalia Christi Americana, by Rev. Cotton Mather, book I, chapter IV.

<sup>3</sup>Deacon Gott's letter to Governor Bradford, page 154.

<sup>4</sup>The Horne family spelled their name in this way, but after the first generation here dropped the initial H.

DEA. JOHN HORNE<sup>1</sup> lived where the city hall stands on Washington Street; house carpenter; married Frances [Ropes?]; she was living in 1659; he died in the winter of 1683-4; children: 1. Jehoadan;<sup>2</sup> married Richard Harvey; 2. Elizabeth;<sup>2</sup> married Thomas Gardner; 3. Benjamin,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1636; 4. John;<sup>2</sup> 5. Joseph;<sup>2</sup> 6. Simon,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 28, 1649; 7. Mary;<sup>2</sup> married John Smith of Charlestown; 8. Ann,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 22, 1657-8; married Nathaniel Felton; 9. Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> born July 28, 1658; died Sept. 11, 1658.

pleased God to send us more able men". An interesting report of

BENJAMIN ORNE;<sup>2</sup> tailor; married Sarah —; died Sept. 13, 1702; she was his widow in 1722; children: 1. Mercy,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 24, 1684-5; married Benjamin Eaton of Roxbury; 2. Margaret,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 22, 1687; married Daniel Lambert; 3. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> born March 14, 1693-4. JOHN ORNE;<sup>2</sup> cordwainer and shoemaker; married, first, Mary Clarke Oct. 30, 1667; she died June 19, 1690; married, second, Naomi — before 1709; he was living in 1707, and his wife Naomi in 1709; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 23, 1668; died Aug. 20, 1669; 2. Sara,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 26, 1669-70; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 27, 1671; 4. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 20, 1673; 5. John,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 6, 1675; cordwainer; lived in Boston; married Elizabeth Williams June 9, 1709; had children; 6. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 25, 1678; 7. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born May 19, 1682; 8. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 20, 1684; 9. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 22, 1693; died Oct. 6, 1701; 10. Recompence,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 20, 1696-7; 11. David,<sup>3</sup> born March 13, 1698. ENS. JOSEPH ORNE;<sup>2</sup> cordwainer and shoemaker; married Anna Tomson July 12, 1677; she was his wife in 1726; he was deceased in 1746; children: 1. Anna,<sup>3</sup> born April 14, 1678; married John Cabot; 2. *Timothy*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 22, 1683; 3. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 22, 1683; cordwainer and merchant; died, probably unmarried, in the spring of 1748; 5. *Josiah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1687; 5. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1691; 6. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. —, 1693; married Joseph Grafton. SIMON ORNE;<sup>2</sup> married widow Rebecca (Rea) Stevens Feb. 28, 1675-6; died in the autumn of 1687; she was his widow in 1689; children: 1. Joshua,<sup>3</sup> born "middle of September," 1677; cordwainer; lived in Marblehead; married Elizabeth —; she died in Marblehead Oct. 16, 1753; he died there July 14, 1758; had children; 2. Simon,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 11, 1679-80; lived in Newport, R. I., as late as 1711; 3. Bethiah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 8, 1689; 4. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 8, 1689.

BENJAMIN ORNE;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married Elizabeth King Nov. 5, 1724; she was living in 1745, and he in 1756; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 13, 1743; married John Prisey; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 13, 1743; married Edward Smith; 3. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 29, 1735; died Sept. 7, 1736; 4. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 13, 1743. CAPT. TIMOTHY ORNE;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer, mariner and merchant; married Lois Pickering April 7, 1709; he died in the winter of 1752-3; she was his widow in 1763; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 7, 1710; died March 7, 1710-1; 2. Lois,<sup>4</sup> born March 16, 1711-2; married Thomas Lee; 3. Esther,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 18, 1714-5; married Samuel Gardner; 4. *Timothy*,<sup>4</sup> born June 27, 1717; 5. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 8, 1719-20; merchant; lived in Salem; died Sept. —, 1774, probably unmarried; 6. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 28, 1721-2; married Rev. James Diman; 7. Eunice,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 9, 1724-5; died Feb. 8, 1725; 8. John,<sup>4</sup> born June 16, 1731; merchant and yeoman; settled in Lynnfield in 1763; married Bridget —; died Feb. 11, 1785; she died, his widow, Oct. 27, 1826; had children. JOSIAH ORNE;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married Sarah Ingersoll Feb. 1, 1710-1; died in 1751; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> died, unmarried, in the autumn of 1750; 2. *Josiah*,<sup>4</sup> 3. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> 4. Anne,<sup>4</sup> married Samuel Bacon.

TIMOTHY ORNE;<sup>4</sup> merchant; married Rebecca Taylor of Lynn June 20, 1747; died July 14, 1767; she died, his widow, in 1771; children: 1. Rebecca,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 31, 1748; married Capt. Joseph Cabot; 2. *Timothy*,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 6, 1750; 3. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 7, 1752; married Clark Gayton Pickman; 4. Lois,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 22, 1756; married William Paine of St. John, N. B.; 5. Esther,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 16, 1758; married Rev. John Clark of Boston; 6. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 6, 1760; died young; 7. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born about 1762; merchant; probably never married; died Feb. 20, 1785; 8. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 7, 1765. CAPT. JOSIAH ORNE;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Sarah Elvins July 18, 1744; died in 1761; she died, his widow, Sept. 2, 1799; children: 1. *Josiah*,<sup>5</sup> born in 1745; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> married Lewis Hunt; 3. Me-



these proceedings is contained in the following letter written by Charles Gott to Governor Bradford at the time:—

To the Worshipful, his worthy, and much respected friend, Mr. Bradford, Governour of Plymouth these,

Most worthy and much respected friend, Mr. Bradford; I with my wife, remember our service unto you and yours, thanking you most humbly for your great kindness, when we were at Plymouth with you:

hitable;<sup>5</sup> married Capt. Larkin Dodge; 4. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 2, 1755; married Ebenezer Hall; 5. Anna (Nancy),<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1758; married Samuel Gray. CAPT. JONATHAN ORNE;<sup>4</sup> mariner and merchant; married, first, Elizabeth Putnam June 28, 1748; she was his wife in 1752; married, second, Mary Bowditch Aug. 21, 1760; he died Jan. 1, 1774; she died in Salem, his widow, in the winter of 1812-3; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 18, 1749; 2. *William*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 26, 1751-2; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 29, 1754; married John Williams; 4. ———<sup>5</sup> (daughter), baptized April 20, 1759; 5. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 2, 1769; unmarried in 1793.

TIMOTHY ORNE;<sup>5</sup> removed to Danvers about 1779; married Elizabeth ———; died in Danvers between 1786 and 1790; she was of Salem, his widow, in 1814; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 24, 1778; 2. Margaret,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 24, 1778; perhaps married Joseph Perkins; 3. Catharine Sewall Pyncheon,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 16, 1793; married Thomas Cushing of Newton. CAPT. JOSIAH ORNE;<sup>5</sup> mariner and merchant; married, first, Alice ———; she died March 16, 1776; married, second, Nancy (Anna) White of Billerica Aug. 2, 1778; died June 21, 1789; his wife Anna survived him in 1791; children: 1. *Josiah*,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 3, 1768; 2. Alice,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 23, 1769; probably married Stephen Williams; 3. Susannah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 10, 1771; married Charles Harrison Fitch. DR. JOSEPH ORNE;<sup>5</sup> physician; married, first, Mary Leavitt in 1774; second, Teresa Emery Oct. 21, 1781; died Jan. 28, 1786; she was his widow and lived in Exeter, N. H., in 1793; children: 1. Maria,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 13, 1775; married Ichabod Tucker; 2. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 14, 1778; mariner; captain; died in 1806, probably unmarried; 3. Teresa,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 18, 1782; living in 1793. CAPT. WILLIAM ORNE;<sup>5</sup> mariner and merchant; esquire; married Abigail Ropes March 24, 1780; she was his wife in 1812; he died Oct. 14, 1815; children: 1. William,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 20, 1781; housewright; married Mary Hutchinson June 24, 1792; died in 1814; 2. George,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 7, 1782; probably died before 1815; 3. Eliza,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 23, 1784; married, first, William Wetmore; second, Hon. Daniel Appleton White; 4. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 5, 1786; esquire; removed to Springfield in 1818; his wife was Lucinda D. in 1819; 5. Charles Henry,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 12, 1789; merchant; married Lucy Blanchard of Wenham March 25, 1814; she died June 16, 1815; he died Dec. 25, 1816, probably without issue; 6. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 7, 1796.

JOSIAH ORNE;<sup>6</sup> merchant; married Alice Allen June 18, 1786; died Sept. 23, 1825; she survived him; children: 1. *Josiah*,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 13, 1786; 2. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 15, 1788; unmarried in 1827; 3. Susan,<sup>7</sup> unmarried in 1825; 4. George;<sup>7</sup> living in 1825; 5. Edward,<sup>7</sup> baptized April 24, 1791; living in 1825; 6. Richard Elvins,<sup>7</sup> baptized Oct. 4, 1795; mariner; living in 1837; married Ann T. Allen May 5, 1823; 7. Alice,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 11, 1797; probably married Daniel Low of New York. JOSEPH ORNE;<sup>6</sup> married Sally Fiske Ropes May 19, 1817; died Sept. 3, 1818; she died, his widow, March 28, 1876; child: 1. Elizabeth Ropes,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 27, 1818; died, unmarried, March 8, 1842.



Sir, I make bold to trouble you with a few lines, for to certify you, how it hath pleased God to deal with us, since you heard from us; how, notwithstanding all opposition, that hath been here and elsewhere, it hath pleased God to lay a foundation, the which I hope is agreeable to his word, in every thing: The 20th of July, it pleased God to move the heart of our Governour, to set it apart, for a solemn day of humiliation for the choice of a pastor and teacher; the former part of the day being



SEMPRINGHAM CHURCH.

spent in praise and teaching; the latter part was spent about the election, which was after this manner; the persons thought on (who had been ministers in England) were demanded concerning their callings; they acknowledged there was a two-fold calling, the one and inward calling, when the Lord moved the heart of a man to take that calling upon him, and fitted him with gifts for the same; the second (the outward calling) was from the people, when a company of believers are joined together in covenant, to walk together in all the ways of God, every member (being men) are to have a free voice in the choice of their officers, &c. Now we being persuaded that these two were so qualified, as the apostle speaks of to Timothy, where he saith a bishop must be blameless, sober, apt to teach, &c. I think I may say as the eunuch said unto Philip, what should let him from being baptised, seeing there was water, and he believed; so these two servants of God clearing all things by their answers (and being thus fitted) we saw no reason but that we might freely give our voices for their election after this trial: Their choice was after this manner, every fit member wrote, in a note, his name whom the Lord moved him to think was fit for a pastor, and so likewise, whom they would have for teacher; so that most voice was for Mr. Skelton to be pastor, and Mr. Higginson to be teacher; and they accepting the choice, Mr. Higginson, with three or four more of the gravest members



of the church, laid their hands on Mr. Skelton, using prayers therewith. This being done, then there was imposition of hands on Mr. Higginson: Then there was proceeding in election of elders and deacons, but they were only named, and laying on of hands deferred, to see if it pleased God to send us more able men over; but since Thursday, being (as I take it the 6th of August) is appointed for another solemn day of humiliation, for the full choice of elders and deacons and ordaining them; now, good Sir, I hope, that you and the rest of God's people (who are acquainted with the ways of God) with you, will say that here was a right foundation laid, and that these two blessed servants of the Lord



TATTERSHALL.

came in at the door, and not at the window: And thus I have made bold to trouble you with these few lines, desiring you to remember us to Mr. Brewster, Mr. Smith, Mr. Fuller, and the rest of the church; so I rest, at your service in what I may till death,

CHARLES GOTT.

Salem, July 30, Anno 1629.

Rev. Samuel Skelton was baptized in the parish of Coningsby, in Lincolnshire, Feb. 26, 1592-3; and was educated at Clare College, Cambridge, where he was matriculated, as a sizar, July 7, 1608. This indicates that he had slight means. He persevered, and received the degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1611 and of Master of Arts in 1615. He was the incumbent of the ancient Sempringham church, on the border of the fens, in Lincolnshire, until about 1621, when he became attached to Tattershall, a seat of the Earl of Lincoln, seventeen miles from Sempringham. What his position or service at Tattershall was is unknown. The earl had died in January, 1618-9. His family were Puritans, and by

removing thither Mr. Skelton came under strong Puritan influences. Edward Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence of Sion's Saviour in New-England," speaks of him as "a man of gracious speech, full of Faith and furnished by the Lord with gifts from above."<sup>1</sup> He married Susanna, daughter of William

*Samuel Skelton*

Travis of the village of Horbling, about two miles from Sempringham, April 27, 1619. She was baptized at Horbling Sept. 11, 1597.<sup>2</sup>

Rev. Mr. Higginson<sup>3</sup> was son of Rev. John Higginson, and was born in England in 1587. He was educated at Jesus and St.

<sup>1</sup>History of New England; Wonder-Working Providence of Sion's Saviour in New-England, by Edward Johnson, 1654, page 22.

<sup>2</sup>The children of Mr. and Mrs. Skelton were as follows: 1. Sarah, baptized at Sempringham Aug. 12, 1621; buried Aug. 27, 1621; 2. Samuel, baptized at Tattershall Jan. 8, 1622-3; he returned to England, and conducted an inn at Tattershall; married Margaret —; had children; and died in February, 1663-4; 3. Susannah, baptized at Tattershall April 3, 1625; married John Marsh; 4. Mary, baptized at Tattershall June 28, 1627; married Nathaniel Felton; 5. Elizabeth; married Robert Sanford of Boston.

See New England Historical and Genealogical Register, volume 52, page 347, and volume 53, page 64.

<sup>3</sup>REV. FRANCIS HIGGINSON,<sup>1</sup> born in 1587; minister at Claybrook, Leicester, until his removal to Salem in 1629; married Ann —; died Aug. 6, 1630; she survived him, removed to Charlestown about 1634, and died at New Haven in 1640; children, born in England: 1. John,<sup>2</sup> born at Claybrook Aug. 6, 1616; 2. Francis,<sup>2</sup> born in 1617; schoolmaster at Cambridge; went to Europe; lived in London; settled as a minister at Kerby Steven in Westmoreland, England; and died there about 1670, unmarried; 3. Timothy,<sup>2</sup> mariner; died, unmarried; 4. Theophilus,<sup>2</sup> lived in New Haven; died at the age of thirty-seven; had a son; 5. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> captain of a man-of-war in Cromwell's time, and afterwards of an East India-man; died at the age of forty-four; 6. Mary,<sup>2</sup> died May 19, 1629, aged four; 7. Ann,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 28, 1626, at St. Mary's, Leicester; married Thomas Chatfield, afterwards of Guilford, Conn.; 8. Charles,<sup>2</sup> captain of a ship in the Jamaica trade; died at the age of forty-nine; 9. Neophytus,<sup>2</sup> died at the age of about twenty.

REV. JOHN HIGGINSON<sup>2</sup> kept the grammar school at Hartford; afterwards chaplain of the fort at Saybrook; went to Guilford in 1641 and assisted Rev. Henry Whitfield in the ministry; pastor of the Salem church; married, first, Sarah, daughter of Rev. Henry Whitfield of Guilford; she died July 8, 1675; married, second, Mary (Blackman), widow of Joshua Atwater of New Haven and Boston; died in office Dec. 9, 1708, aged ninety-two; his wife Mary survived him, and died March 9, 1708-9; children: John,<sup>3</sup> born at Guilford in 1646; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born at Guilford Oct. 11, 1652; H. C., 1670; went to England; was a steward and tutor to the children of Lord Wharton about seven years; in 1681, was employed in the mint of the Tower; in 1683, went in the Company's service to Fort St. George in the East Indies; was secretary and member of the council, afterwards of



John's colleges, at Cambridge, graduating at St. John's in 1609; and was ordained deacon at Cawood Castle Sept. 25, 1614, by

the factory at the Fort; married Elizabeth Richards May —, 1692; in 1700, returned to England, becoming a merchant in London; lived in Charter house yard, London; died at Pancreas parish, Soper Lane, Oct. 31, 1708, of small pox; had children; 3. Sarah;<sup>3</sup> married Richard Wharton of Boston; 4. Anna;<sup>3</sup> married William Dolliver of Gloucester; 5. Thomas;<sup>3</sup> apprentice to a goldsmith in England; returned to New England; sailed for Arabia, and was lost after 1705; 6. Francis,<sup>3</sup> born in Salem June 9, 1660; lived with his uncle Francis at Kerby Steven; educated at the university; died at London in 1684; 7. Henry,<sup>3</sup> born in Salem Dec. 18, 1661; educated as a merchant; went as a factor to Barbadoes, where he died in 1685.

COL. JOHN HIGGINSON;<sup>3</sup> esquire and merchant; lt.-colonel of the regiment and member of the council; married Mary Savage of Boston Oct. 9, 1672; died March 23, 1719-20; she died, his widow, in 1722; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 27, 1673; married, first, Thomas Gardner; second, Dr. Edward Weld; third, Dea. James Lindall; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 20, 1675; 3. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 23, 1677; died Sept. 18, 1678. 4. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born April 1, 1680; 5. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born June 1, 1682; married Nathaniel Hathorne; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 13, 1684; married John Gerrish; 7. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 10, 1686; died Jan. 18, 1688.

JOHN HIGGINSON;<sup>4</sup> merchant; register of probate, 1698-1704; married, first, Hannah Gardner Sept. 11, 1695; she died June 20, 1713; married, second, Margaret Sewall Nov. 11, 1714; died April 26, 1718; she died, his widow, March —, 1736; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born June 28, 1696; married Rev. Benjamin Prescott; 2. John,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 10, 1697-8; 3. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 5, 1699-1700; died Sept. 23, 1702; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 13, 1702-3; married Dr. John Cabot; 5. Francis,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 29, 1705; died Nov. 29, 1705; 6. Henry,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 23, 1707; died Dec. 1, 1708; 7. Stephen,<sup>5</sup> born July 31, 1716; 8. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 1, 1718; died in 1719. NATHANIEL HIGGINSON;<sup>4</sup> merchant; married Hannah Gerrish April 23, 1702; died in 1721; she married, secondly, Edmund Batter; children: 1. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born March 30, 1704; died Oct. 6, 1706; 2. Francis,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 22, 1705; died Aug. 15, 1707; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 14, 1708; married Nathaniel Andrew; 4. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 8, 1712; married John Ward; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 30, 1714; married Obadiah Morse of Boston.

HON. JOHN HIGGINSON;<sup>5</sup> H. C., 1717; merchant; esquire; captain in the militia; chosen county register in 1725; married, first, Ruth Boardman of Cambridge Dec. 4, 1719; she died June 14, 1727; married, second, Esther Cabot April 28, 1732; died July 15, 1744; she was his wife in 1737; children: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 11, 1720; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born March 30, 1722; married Joseph Cabot; 3. Ruth,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 25, 1723; died July 9, 1727; 4. Andrew,<sup>6</sup> born June 5, 1727; H. C., 1745; went as a factor to the West Indies, and was lost on his homeward passage before 1758; 5. Francis,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 3, 1732-3; captain; married Esther Gardner July 15, 1758; died in 1760; she married, secondly, Capt. Daniel Mackay; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 13, 1734; died about 1757; 7. Susannah,<sup>6</sup> born May 8, 1737; unmarried, in 1767. HON. STEPHEN HIGGINSON;<sup>5</sup> merchant, esquire and judge; married Elizabeth Cabot April 22, 1743; died Oct. 12, 1761; she removed to Beverly about 1786, and died there April 23, 1797; children: 1. Stephen,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 28, 1743; 2. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 14, 1744-5; married Hon. John Lowell of Newburyport; 3. John,<sup>6</sup> born April 30, 1746; died Aug. —, 1750; 4. Henry,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 14, 1747; died, unmarried, before 1797; 5. Deborah,<sup>6</sup> born July 24, 1750; died Sept. —, 1753; 6. Deborah,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 6, 1754; married, first, Stephen Cabot; and, second, Joseph Lee, both of Beverly.

COL. JOHN HIGGINSON;<sup>6</sup> esquire; lt.-colonel of the First Essex Regiment of militia; register of deeds thirty years; married, first, Hannah Marsh of

Tobey Mathew, archbishop of York, his title being curate of Screddingham,<sup>1</sup> and priest at Bishopthorpe by the same archbishop Dec. 8, 1614. He was collated or instituted April 20, 1615, by the same archbishop to the rectory of Barton-in-fobis, in Nottinghamshire, which he resigned April 4, 1616, having never served under that appointment. From about 1617 to 1629, he was the minister in the churches connected with the parish of St. Nicholas, in Leicester, where he styled himself "lecturer" as well as "minister." He was a worthy man<sup>2</sup> and an attractive speaker, having a pleasing voice, and was greatly successful in his service.

He practised the full ritual of the Church of England for many years; but, having made the acquaintance of Mr. Arthur Hildersham and Mr. Thomas Hooker, he became interested in the controversy that had begun to agitate the church as to whether it was right to recognize certain ceremonies. He began to investigate the matter, and became convinced that many of the rites had neither the support of scriptural authority nor ancient practice. He therefore became a conscientious non-conformist; and consequently was deprived of his position in the church in which he had so long and favorably officiated. Nevertheless, his ministry was so desirable that his people procured for him the liberty of preaching a constant lecture<sup>3</sup> on one part of each Sunday; and

Braintree Sept. 19, 1743; she died Feb. 9, 1747; married, second, Elizabeth Wolcott Oct. 4, 1747; third, Mehitable Robie of Boston Dec. 29, 1755; died Sept. 23, 1774; his widow and daughter conducted a private school in Salem for many years; she died Jan. 20, 1818, aged ninety-four; children: 1. Mehitable,<sup>7</sup> born April 6, 1759; died Dec. 15, 1759; 2. John,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 1, 1760; died Dec. 22, 1762; 3. Andrew,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 5, 1762; died Sept. 9, 1763; 4. Mehitable,<sup>7</sup> born March 26, 1764; for many years conducted a noted private school, teaching about fifty years; died, unmarried, July 19, 1846. STEPHEN HIGGINSON;<sup>6</sup> removed to Boston about 1778; merchant; married, first, Susannah Cleveland; she died in 1788; married, second, — Perkins of Boston; third, Sarah Perkins of Boston; died Nov. 22, 1828; children: 1. John,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 15, 1765; lived in Paris, France; married in 1796; had children; 2. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born June 11, 1766; married Dudley Atkins Tyng of Newbury; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 12, 1768; lived in Philadelphia, Pa.; died in 1794, without issue; 4. Stephen,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 20, 1770; lived in Cambridge; for many years steward of Harvard College; married, first, Martha Salisbury Aug. —, 1794; she died Sept. 20, 1803; married, second, Louisa Storrow; he died at Cambridge Feb. 20, 1834; had fifteen children: 5. Barbara Cooper,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 15, 1774; married Samuel G. Perkins of Boston; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 5, 1776; married, first, Dudley Atkins Tyng, her brother-in-law, as his second wife; and, second, Rev. James Morss, D. D., of Newburyport; 7. George,<sup>7</sup> born July 19, 1779, in Boston; 8. Henry,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 5, 1781, in Boston; 9. Susan Cleveland,<sup>7</sup> born April 20, 1783, in Boston; 10. James Perkins,<sup>7</sup> born July —, 1791, in Boston.

<sup>1</sup>Now spelled Scrayingham.

<sup>2</sup>Magnalia Christi Americana, by Rev. Cotton Mather, volume I, book 3, part 2, chapter I.

<sup>3</sup>A set discourse, but less than a formal sermon. These were usually delivered at mid-week meetings, the entire service at such meetings being called lectures.



on the other part as an assistant to an aged person, who wished it. Having thus lost the official living, Mr. Higginson and his family were afterward maintained by voluntary contributions of the inhabitants. Although the other clergymen in Leicester continued to conform to the requirements of the rubric, they all freely invited him to use their pulpits as long as it did not bring trouble upon themselves. By this means he preached successively in three of the parish churches after he had become ineligible through non-conformity. He preached also at this time at Belgrave, a mile out of town. Much of this liberty was due to the goodness and candor of Doctor Williams, bishop of Lincoln, to whose diocese Leicester belonged. These conditions continued for some time.

There were a large number of Puritans in Leicester who attended the public services of the church punctiliously, but frequently had private meetings for prayer and conference, at which Mr. Higginson was often present. He was virtually their pastor. They had many enemies. Mr. Higginson enforced the rubric before the communion, by privately and publicly prohibiting those who were notoriously evil or who had malice and hatred to others from participating in the sacrament until they had declared their penitence.<sup>1</sup>

Later, at several times, he was offered some of the greatest and most profitable livings in the region where he lived, but his insistence upon non-conformity prohibited acceptance. He continued to preach in the parish churches, and, also, though known as a non-conformist, delivered various visitation, assize and funeral sermons.

He was also very serviceable in the education of scholars in entering and after leaving the university, and in promoting and forwarding contributions for the relief of Protestant exiles who came to England from Bohemia and the distressed Palatinate, and in other ways.

But at last, Archbishop Laud removed Doctor Williams from the bishopric of Lincoln, and then gave his attention to Leicester. An information was presented against Mr. Higginson, and thereafter he was in constant anticipation of being summoned to the High Commission Court, where a sentence of perpetual imprisonment was the least to be expected.

His thought then turned to America, where great opportunities seemed to beckon to him, especially the work of the gospel among the Indians. Under these conditions came the call from the Massachusetts Bay Company to join the colony at Naumkeag. Two messengers were sent to him with the invitation. They

<sup>1</sup>Cotton Mather, in his *Magnalia Christi Americana*, cites several instances of the influence of Mr. Higginson's preaching and practice.

learned that Mr. Higginson knew that officers were likely to come at any time to take him to London; and so they knocked loudly at the door like men of authority and gruffly demanded, "Where is Mr. Higginson? we must speak with Mr. Higginson!" Mrs. Higginson was alarmed, and told her husband that the officers had come. She besought him to go out of their way, but he said, "No, I will go down and speak with them; and the will of the Lord be done!" When the strangers came into the hall, they put their papers into his hands, saying with an assumed roughness of manner, "Sir, we come from London, and our business is to fetch you up to London, as you may see by these papers!" The other people present were now convinced that the strangers were officers of the law, and had come for the arrest of Mr. Higginson. Mrs. Higginson said, "I thought so!" and her tears fell. Mr. Higginson, however, proceeded to examine the papers, and found that they consisted of a letter from the governor and company inviting him to go to New England, and a copy of the charter and proposition for the management of their design of establishing and propagating reformed Christianity in the new plantation. He bade the men welcome; and the purpose of their coming was made known to the persons who were present. All were happy at this relief from their fears and the news, and conversation flowed pleasantly. After much prayer and thought and with the advice of several ministers, Mr. Higginson accepted this opportune invitation. His strong friend, Arthur Hildersham, said to him, "Were I a younger man and under your case and call, I would think I had a plain invitation of Heaven unto the voyage."

The parting with his Puritan friends was not easy, and many of them resolved to accompany or follow him to Naumkeag.

He had already prepared a farewell sermon, which he knew would be needed sooner or later, unless he was taken to London to court with insufficient notice. It was prepared for a parting by force, and at the mandate of Laud, and not one like this. His text was Luke xxi: 20, 21: "And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in Judea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto." The sermon was delivered to a great congregation. He mentioned the sins of England in general and of Leicester in particular; and said that he was persuaded that God would chastise England with a war, in the sufferings whereof Leicester would have more than its share. History shows how this prediction was verified in May, 1645, when Leicester was besieged and taken in assault by Charles I., and recaptured the next month. The town was strongly fortified and garrisoned and the wealth of all the country around had been



brought into it for safety. Eleven hundred people were slain in the streets, and the houses and public buildings plundered.

At the close of the delivery of the sermon he thanked the magistrates and Puritans of the place for the liberty, countenance and encouragement they had given to his ministry, and told them of his intended removal to New England, the principal end of the plantation there, he then declared, being the propagation of religion; and of the hope he had that New England might be designed by Heaven as a refuge and shelter for the non-conformists against the storms that were coming upon the nation, and a region where they might practise the church-reformation unto which they had been bearing witness. He concluded with a most affectionate prayer for the king, the church and state, and particularly for Leicester.

With his family, he then took his journey to London. As they left the town, the people generally came into the street and bade them farewell, with benedictions upon them and loud prayers for a safe voyage and prosperity.

At London he found that three ships were nearly ready to sail for New England, and that two other vessels were to follow about three weeks later. There were servants of the Company and passengers sufficient to fill the three ships and among them were the two clergymen already mentioned, Messrs. Bright and Skelton.

August 6th was appointed for another "Solemn day of humiliation,"<sup>1</sup> for the formal choice of elders<sup>2</sup> and deacons and their ordination, and for entrance into a solemn covenant with God and with one another. Mr. Higginson was requested to prepare a confession of faith and a covenant in scripture language. The covenant was as follows:—

6<sup>th</sup> of 6<sup>th</sup> Mo<sup>n</sup>th 1629.

This Covenant was  
publickly Signed  
and Declared

Gather my Saints together  
vnto me that haue made  
a Covenant with me by  
sacrifyce. Psal. 50: 5:

Wee whose names are here vnder written, members of the present Church of Christ in Salem, haueing found by sad experience how dangerous it is to fitt loose to the Covenant wee make with our God; and how apt wee are to wander into by pathes, even to the loofeing of our first aimes in entring

into Church fellowship: Doe therefore solemnly in the pref-

<sup>1</sup>See page 156.

<sup>2</sup>The ruling elders office is distinct from the office of pastor and teacher: The ruling elders are not so called to exclude the pastors and teachers from ruling, because ruling and governing is common to these with the other; whereas attending to teach and preach the word is peculiar unto the former. The ruling elders' work is to join with the pastor and teacher in those acts of spiritual rule which are distinct from the ministry of the word and sacraments committed to them, of which sort, these be as followeth: To open and shut the doors of God's house, by admission of members approved

ence of the Eternall God, both for our own comforts, and those which shall or maye be joyned vnto vs, renewe that Church Covenant we find this Church bound vnto at their first begining, viz<sup>t</sup>: That we Covenant with the Lord and one with an other; and doe bynd our selues in the prefence of God, to walke together in all his waies, according as he is pleased to reveale himself vnto vs in his Bleffed word of truth. And doe more explicitly in the name and feare of God, profess and protest to walke as followeth through the power and Grace of our Lord Jesus.

1. first wee avowe the Lord to be our God, and our selues his people in the truth and simplicitie of our spirits.

2. Wee giue our selves to the Lord Jesus Christ, and the word of his grace, fore the teaching, ruleing and sanctifyeing of vs in matters of worship, and Conversation resolveing to cleave to him alone for life and glorie; and oppose all contrarie wayes, cannons and constitutions of men in his worship.

3. Wee promise to walke with our brethren and sisters in this Congregation with all watchfullnes & tendernes, avoyding all jelousies, suspitions, backbyteings, censurings provoakings, secrete riseings of spirite against them; but in all offences to follow the rule of the Lord Jesus, and to beare and forbear, giue and forgiue as he hath taught vs.

4. In publick or in private, we will willingly doe nothing to the ofence of the Church but will be willing to take advise for our selues and ours as occasion shalbe presented.

5. Wee will not in the Congregation be forward eyther to shew oure owne gifts or parts in speaking or scrupuling or there discover the fayling of oure brethren or sisters butt atend an orderly cale there unto; knowing how much the Lord may be dishonoured, and his Gospell in the profession of it, fleighted, by our distempers, and weakneses in publyck.

6. Wee bynd our selues to studdy the advancement of the Gospell in alltruth and peace, both in regard of those that are within, or without, noe way fleighting our sister Churches, but vseing their Counsell as need shalbe; nor laying a stumbling block, before any, noe not the Indians, whose good we desire to promote, and soe to converse, as wee may avoyd the verrye appearance of evill.

7. Wee hearby promise to carrye our selues in all lawfull obedience, to those that are over vs, in Church or Common weale, knowing how well pleasing it wilbe to the Lord,

by the church; . . . to prepare matters in private, that in public they may be carried [to] an end, and with less trouble and more speedy dispatch; to be guides and leaders to the church in all matters whatsoever pertaining to church administrations and actions; to see that none in the church live inordinately out of rank and place, without a calling, or idly in their calling; to prevent and heal such offences in life or in doctrine as might corrupt the church; and, as they shall be sent for, to visit and to pray over their sick brethren.—*A Platform of Church Discipline, Gathered out of the Word of God*, Cambridge, 1649.



that they should haue encouragment in theire places, by our not greiveing theyre spirites through our Iregularities.

8 Wee refolue to approve our felues to the Lord in our perticuler calings, shunning ydlenes as the bane of any state, nor will wee deale hardly, or oppreffingly with Any, wherein we are the Lords stewards;

9. alsoe promyseing to our best abilitie to teach our children and fervants, the knowledg of God and his will, that they may ferue him also, and all this, not by any strength of our owne, but by the Lord Christ, whose bloud we desire may sprinkle this our Covenant made in his name.

Nathaniel Morton said that "they foresaw that this wilderness might be looked upon as a place of liberty, and therefore might in time be troubled with erroneous spirits, therefore they did put in one article into the confession of faith, on purpose, about the duty and power of the magistrate in matters of religion."<sup>1</sup> The covenant and confession of faith were acknowledged only as a direction, meaning that they were to be interpreted as to substance, end and scope by the scriptures, and not by the language. Thirty copies of the confession of faith and covenant were written for the use of the thirty persons who founded the church.

As to the manner of joining the church, it was ordered according to the wisdom and faithfulness of the elders together with the liberty and ability of the applicant. Some were admitted by expressing their consent to this written confession of faith and the covenant; others answered questions about the principles of religion publicly propounded to them; some presented their confession in writing, which was read aloud; and some, who were able and willing, made their confession in their own words and way. Reputation and the daily life of an applicant were considered before he was allowed admission. Letters passed between Rev. Mr. Higginson and Elder Brewster of the Pilgrims relative to church membership, etc.<sup>2</sup>

Thursday, the sixth of August, came, and it was duly observed as a day of fasting and prayer. A large part of the day was devoted to prayers and delivery of sermons by the two ministers; and the thirty members publicly, solemnly and severally consented to the covenant, which was read aloud to them. Henry Houghton was chosen a ruling elder, and John Horne and Charles Gott were confirmed as deacons. The church at Plymouth was invited to be present and participate in the exercises; and Governor Bradford and some others were delegated to represent it.

<sup>1</sup>New England Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, 1669 (Davis ed.), page 145.

<sup>2</sup>New England Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, page 95.

They set out from Plymouth by water, but were hindered by cross winds, and so did not arrive before the beginning of the services of the day. They came, however, in season to give the right hand of fellowship, and to wish "all prosperity and a blessed success unto such good beginnings."<sup>1</sup>

In some points of church discipline, the Puritans did not agree with their friends of Plymouth, but they did agree that the children of the faithful were church members with their parents, and that their baptism was a seal of their being so; only before their admission to fellowship in a particular church it was judged necessary, that they should be examined by the elders, and if approved by them should publicly and personally own the covenant. The fifteen-year-old son of Mr. Higginson, named Francis, "laudably" answered all these requirements, and was then received into the church.

The manner of church services and teaching the people was to be settled by the ministers, and the Company hoped that they would "make Gods word the rule of their accons, and mutually agree in the discharge of their duties." And because their doctrine "would hardly bee well esteemed whose psons are not revered," the Company wrote to Governor Endecott that they desired that, both by his "owne example and by comanding all others to doe the like o<sup>r</sup> ministers may receive due hono<sup>r</sup>."

At these exercises occurred an incident which was interesting and important. At this time, thirty miles to the south was Mount Wollaston, where Captain Endecott had quickly stopped the debasing practices of Thomas Morton and his English companions three months before. One of Morton's associates was a young man named Edward Gibbons. On the day that the church at Salem was established, young Gibbons happened to be present. He was so deeply impressed with the exercises that he stood, expressing with much affection his desire to be admitted into their number, which, when the officials demurred, he desired that they would at least permit him to make his profession before them. He was allowed to do so, and expressed himself so agreeably, and with so much "ingenuity" and simplicity that they were extremely pleased with it; and the ministers told him that they highly approved of his profession, but as he was a stranger to them they could not receive him into communion until they had known him longer. He became eminent as a Christian man, and worthy and useful. He duly joined the church which was subsequently established in Boston, and became the major-general of all the military forces in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and an important

<sup>1</sup>New England Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, 1669, page 145.



personage in the history of New England. His business was that of a merchant. He died in Boston Dec. 9, 1654.<sup>1</sup>

Rev. Francis Bright removed to Plymouth and subsequently to Charlestown; but not agreeing with other ministers about church reformation he returned to England after a year's stay in America.<sup>2</sup>

Thus came into existence among the people what Rev. Cotton Mather was pleased to call "a church state."

As already mentioned, the new form of church service and government was not satisfactory to several of the people here, and the most prominent of the objectors were the Browne brothers. They had no reason to think, before they had become so deeply interested in the Company and colony, that the services of the Church of England in a modified form would not be instituted. They were unwilling to forego the pleasure of and legal adherence to the established church, and desired the use of the Book of Common Prayer in the administration of the sacraments. They also held that the church had nothing to do with the discipline of the congregation as such. As the Brownes were men of education, wealth and influence, a number of people associated with them and held a service separate from the church which had just been formed, and as far as possible, under the circumstances, after the manner of the Episcopal church.

The Company had requested Governor Endecott to preserve the unity and simplicity of the church, and that if needless, vain and indifferent questions were raised by "busie psons (led more by their will then any good warrant out of Gods word)" to stir up strife, and cause the people to differ from which great mischief was likely to follow, such disputes must be suppressed and peace and unity maintained. Governor Endecott sent for the Brownes. They came and said that they desired to worship God according to the order of the Church of England, from which the ministers had departed, and charged the latter with being Separatists, and shortly to become Anabaptists. The ministers answered that they had only separated from the corruptions and disorders of the English church, as otherwise they would be guilty of a sinful violation of divine worship.

This contention was important because of the personality of the Brownes and of the effect it might have upon the royal and

<sup>1</sup>Mr. Gibbons is said to have heard of this meeting when twenty miles from Salem, and rode to see the novelty of the gathering of a church. Also, that he was not a debauchee, but of a jocund temperament.—"A Narrative of the Planting of the Massachusetts Colony," etc., by Joshua Scottow, Boston, 1694; Massachusetts Historical Society's Collection, fourth series, volume 4, pages 289 and 293.

<sup>2</sup>New England Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, 1669 (1826 ed.), page 92.

popular favor. John Browne, the lawyer, was an assistant in the Company, and both were of the council here, and influential in England. Nevertheless, with his usual decision, determination and integrity, Governor Endecott compelled them to return to England with furious threatenings against the church instituted at Salem.<sup>1</sup> They quickly spread in England a report of the kind of church and service the Company had established, and the Company became apprehensive of its injurious effects upon New England enterprises.

With the Brownes, Governor Endecott and others sent letters about the matter, containing the charges against them, to the Company in England. Preparations were made, Sept. 19, 1629, for a hearing on the charges, and the Brownes chose four of the Company on their behalf and the Company chose four to represent the side of the authorities at Salem, and to these eight, together with the governor, was committed the settlement of the contention. The four members chosen by the Brownes were Samuel Vassall, William Vassall, Symon Whetcombe and William Pinchion, and the others were John White, John Davenport, Isaac Johnson and John Winthrop.

The Brownes had written from Salem a number of letters to friends in England, and the matter of delivering these letters was also to be determined, it being charged that they were defamatory of New England. Finally, some of them were publicly opened and read. It was determined that none of Samuel Browne's letters should be delivered, but kept to be used as evidence against him as occasion offered. This was on September 29th.<sup>2</sup>

The Company prepared two letters to be sent to New England, one addressed to the ministers and the other to Governor Endecott. The letter sent to the ministers was as follows:—

Reverend Freinds: There are lately arrived heere (being sent from the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, M<sup>r</sup> Endecott, as men ffactionous and evil conditioned) John and Samuell Browne, being brethren, who, since their arriuell, haue raised rumo<sup>r</sup>s (as wee heare) of divers scandalous & intemperate speeches passed from one or both of you in yo<sup>r</sup> publique sermons or prayers in N: England, as also of some inovacons attempted by yo<sup>w</sup>. Wee haue reason to hope that their reports are but slanders, ply for that yo<sup>r</sup> godly and quiett conditions are well knowne to some of vs, and also for that these men, yo<sup>r</sup> accusers, seeme to bee imbittered against yo<sup>w</sup> & Capt Endecott for iniuries w<sup>ch</sup> they conceive they haue received from some of yo<sup>w</sup> there. Yett, for that wee all knowe that the best advysed may overshoothe themselues, wee haue thought good to informe

<sup>1</sup>Magnalia Christi Americana, by Rev. Cotton Mather, volume I, book I, chapter IV, page 8.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records.



yo<sup>w</sup> of what wee heare, that if yo<sup>w</sup> bee inocent yo<sup>w</sup> may cleare yo<sup>r</sup>selues. or, if otherwise, you may heereby bee entreated to looke back vpon yo<sup>r</sup> miscarriage w<sup>th</sup> repentance, or at least to take notice that wee vtterly disallowe any such passages, and must and will take order for the redress therof, as shall become vs. But hoping, as wee said, of yo<sup>r</sup> vnblameableness herein, wee desire only that this may testify to yo<sup>w</sup> & others that wee are tender of the least aspersion w<sup>ch</sup>, either directly or obliquely, may bee cast vpon the state heere, to whom wee owe soe much duty, and from whom wee haue received soe much favo<sup>r</sup> in this plantacon where yo<sup>w</sup> now reside. Soe, w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> loue and due respect to yo<sup>r</sup> callings, wee rest

Yo<sup>r</sup> loving freinds,

London, 16 Octo: 1629.

R: SALTONSTALL,

ISA: JOHNSON,

MATT: CRADOCK, Go<sup>r</sup>,

THO: GOFF, Dep<sup>t</sup>,

GEO: HARWOOD, Trer,

JOHN WINTHROP,

THO: ADAMS,

SYM: WHETCOMBE,

WILL<sup>m</sup> VASSALL,

W<sup>m</sup> PINCHON,

JOHN REVELL,

FRANCIS WEBB.<sup>1</sup>

M<sup>r</sup> Skelton & M<sup>r</sup> Higgison.

The letter sent to Governor Endecott was as follows:—

S<sup>r</sup>: As wee haue written at this tyme to M<sup>r</sup> Skelton & M<sup>r</sup> Higgison touching the rumo<sup>r</sup>s of Jo: and Sam: Browne, spread by them vpon their arrivall heere, concerning some vnadvysed and scandalous speeches vttered by them in their publique sermons or prayers, soe haue wee thought meete to advertise yo<sup>w</sup> of what they haue reported against yo<sup>w</sup> and them concerninge some rash ino<sup>v</sup>acons begun & practized in the civill and ecclesiasticall gownm<sup>t</sup>. Wee doe well consider that the Brownes are likely to make the worst of any thing they haue observed in N: England by reason of yo<sup>r</sup> sending them back againsst their wills for their offensive behavio<sup>r</sup>, expressed in a genall lre from the Company there. Yett, for that wee likewise doe consider that yo<sup>w</sup> are in a gownm<sup>t</sup> newly founded, & want that assistance w<sup>ch</sup> the waight of such a business doth require, wee may haue leave to think that it is possible some vndigested councells haue too sodainely bin put in execucon, w<sup>ch</sup> may haue ill contrucon w<sup>th</sup> the state heere, and make vs obnoxious to any adversary. Lett it, therefore, seeme good vnto yo<sup>w</sup> to bee very sparing in introduceing any lawes or comands w<sup>ch</sup> may render yo<sup>r</sup>selfe or vs distastefull to the state heere, to w<sup>ch</sup> (as wee ought) wee must and will haue an obsequious eye. And as wee make it o<sup>r</sup> mayn care to haue the plantacon soe ordered as may bee most for the hono<sup>r</sup> of God & of o<sup>r</sup> gracious souaigne, who hath bestowed many large p<sup>r</sup>uiledges and royall fauo<sup>r</sup>s vpon this Companie, soe wee desire that all such as shall, by word or deede, doe any thinge to detract from Gods glory or his ma<sup>ts</sup> hono<sup>r</sup>, may bee duly corrected, for their amendm<sup>t</sup> and the

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 407.

terror of others. And to that end, if yo<sup>w</sup> knowe any thinge w<sup>ch</sup> hath bin spoken or done, either by the ministers (whom the Brownes doe seeme tacetly to blame for some things vttered in their sermons or prayers) or any others, wee require yo<sup>w</sup>, if any such thinge bee, that yo<sup>w</sup> forme due pcess against the offendo<sup>r</sup>s, and send it to vs by the first, that wee may, as our duty bindes vs, vse meanes to haue them duly punished. Soe, not doubting but wee haue enough, wee shall repose o<sup>r</sup>selues vpon yo<sup>r</sup> wisdome, and doe rest

Yo<sup>r</sup> loving freinds,

London, 16 Octo: 1629.

R: SALTONSTALL,

ISA: JOHNSON,

MATT: CRADOCK, Go<sup>r</sup>,

THO: GOFF, Dep<sup>t</sup>,

GEO: HARWOOD, Trer,

JOHN WINTHROP,

THO: ADAMS,

SYM: WHETCOMBE,

WILLM VASSALL,

WM PINCHON,

JOHN REVELL,

FRANCIS WEBB.<sup>1</sup>

To the Gouno<sup>r</sup>, Capt Endecott,

Nothing more was heard of the matter, which seems to have been dropped by all parties.

The services of the church here were probably held for five years in the houses of the ministers and of Mr. Endecott.

In the agreement made by the Company with the ministers, they were to be provided with dwelling houses, and this agreement was performed by Governor Endecott. The house of Mr. Skelton stood just easterly of the market place on Front Street. The house of Mr. Higginson was built where the tunnel is on the south side of Town House Square.

Little more than a score of years afterward, Edward Johnson wrote in his "Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour in New-England" as follows:—

This Church of *Christ*, being thus begun, the Lord with the Water-pouts of his tender Mercy caufed to increafe and fructify. And now let every Eare listen, and every heart admire, and inlarge it felfe to the astonishment of the whole man at this wondrous worke of the great *Jehovah*; That in thrice seven yeares (after the beginning of this Worke) . . . this poore Church of *Christ* confisting at their beginning, but of seven perfons, increased to forty three Churches in joynt Communion one with the other, professing *One God, One Christ, and one Gospell*, and in those Churches about 7750. Soules in one profession of the Rules of *Christ*, and that which makes the worke more admirable in the Eyes of all beholders, mens habitations are cut out of the Woods and Bufhes, neither can this place be entered by our *Englilh*

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 408.



Nation, but by paffing through a dreadful and terrible Ocean of nine hundred Leagues in length.

Further know thefe are but the beginnings of Chriffs glorious Reformation, and Reftauration of his Churches to a more glorious fplendor than ever. Hee hath therefore caufed their dazeling brightneffe of his prefence to be contracted in the burning-Glaffe of thefe his peoples zeale, from whence it begins to be left upon many parts of the World with fuch hot reflection of that burning light, which hath fired many places already, the which fhall never be quenched till it hath burnt up *Babylon* Root and Branch, and now let the Reader looke one the 102. Pfalme, the Prophet *Isaia* 66. *Chapter*, take this fharp Sword of Chriffs Word, and all other Scriptures of like nature, and follow on yee valiant of the Lord; And behold the worthies of *Chrift*, as they are boldly leading forth his Troopes into thefe *Wefterne* Fields, marke them well Man by Man as they march, terrible as an Army with Banners, croud in all yee that to fee this glorious fight, fee ther's their glorious King *Chrift* one that white Horfe, whole hooves like flint caft not only fparkes, but flames of fire in his pathes.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>History of New England; Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour in New-England, by Edward Johnson, 1654, chapters X and XI, pages 22 and 23.

## CHAPTER IX.

### MILITARY DEFENCE.



HE military defence of Naumkeag consisted of armed men and a fort. Preparations for this defence began to be made in the winter of 1628-9, and the weapons and ammunition were brought over in the vessels which arrived the following June.

Agreement was made by the Company with Mr. Samuel Sharp to have oversight of the fort and ordnance, and to advise in all things that might concern the artillery.<sup>1</sup> Upon his arrival a place was selected for the building of the fort at what is now the western corner of the junction of Lynde and Sewall streets.<sup>2</sup> It was undoubtedly of the simplest construction, and built under the direction of Thomas Graves, the civil engineer. The location selected for the fort indicates that its purpose was the protection of the centre of the settlement rather than a means of keeping out undesirable parties who might try to enter the town by land at the only place, what was formerly Warren Street Court.

With Mr. Sharp came eight cannon for the fort. Two of these were demi-culverins, which weighed three thousand pounds each, three of them were sackers, weighing twenty-five hundred pounds each, one was a whole culverin, which was a long slender gun, carrying a ball weighing from two to fifteen pounds, and two were small iron drakes. The demi-culverins and sackers had been procured by John Humphrey, and Mr. Sharp had had carriages made for them. For this ordnance great shot and eight barrels of powder for great shot was provided.

The men in the settlement were organized and exercised as an orderly military company; and, March 22, 1630-1, the court of assistants ordered that every person, except magistrates and min-

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, March 3, 1628-9.

<sup>2</sup>Deed of Benjamin Lynde to James Barr, dated May 10, 1753, and recorded in Essex Registry of Deeds, book 98, leaf 88.



isters, should be furnished with arms that were, in the discretion of the captain or other officers, "good and sufficient." Those who were not possessed of necessary equipment and were able to buy it were to supply themselves, and those who were unable were to be provided for by their respective towns, and later, when able, were to repay the town therefor. On the twelfth of the next month, the court of assistants ordered that every one who furnished a musket should, before the eighteenth, and so always thereafter, keep himself supplied with one pound of powder, twenty bullets and two fathom of match, under a penalty of ten shillings for each default; and every captain was ordered to train his company each Saturday. Aug. 7, 1632, it was ordered that the captains be maintained by their several companies. March 4, 1634-5, the court ordered that the captains be paid from the colonial treasury. The former method was resumed, however, the next September.

Oct. 3, 1632, the captains were ordered to train their companies only once a month.<sup>1</sup> Subsequently, it was ordered that captains should not train their bands in July and August, but all unskilled men could be drilled as often as the captains pleased, not exceeding three days in a week. Nov. 20, 1637, the number of trainings a year was limited to eight, to be held at the discretion of the chief officers.

In 1629, there had been made ample provision for other equipment and supply of the soldiers here. There were three drums (each with an extra pair of heads); two ensigns; two partizans for the captain and lieutenant; and three halberds for the three sergeants. For the ordinary soldiers were sent sixty pikes and twenty half pikes; eighty bastard muskets, with snap-hances, which was a kind of flintlock, measuring four feet in barrel, and without rests; six long fowling pieces with musket bore, six and a half feet; four fowling-pieces with bastard musket bore, five and a half feet long; ten full muskets, with barrels four feet long and match-locks<sup>2</sup> and rests; and ninety bandeleers, for the muskets, each with a bullet bag. Forty of these bandeleers were made by John Gace of London, turner, of neat's leather, with broad girdles, the priming boxes of wood covered with black leather. Thirty of them were to be for bastard musket size, marked B, and ten for full musket size, marked M. There were also sent

<sup>1</sup>John Underhill and Daniel Patrick, captains for the general service of the country, were paid fifty pounds yearly for their service. This amount was levied upon the several plantations in the colony, and the share of Salem for 1630 was three pounds. No other demand was ever made upon Salem for their support and pay, although their services did not terminate until the close of the Pequot War, in 1637.

<sup>2</sup>This old gun was fired by a match.

ten horn flasks, for the long fowling pieces, with the capacity of one pound each; and one hundred swords and belts. Joseph Churchill agreed to furnish one hundred swords and Pelonia hilts, and twenty-five swords were bought of Felix Boreman, who then dwelt in Fleet's lane, London. There were also furnished sixty corselets,<sup>1</sup> and for ammunition shot and four barrels of powder for small shot.

It was agreed that twenty of the soldiers should have full suits of armor. This armor was made by Thomas Stevens, armorer, in Buttolph lane, London, and consisted of corselets,<sup>2</sup> culets,<sup>3</sup> tassets,<sup>4</sup> gorgets<sup>5</sup> and headpieces.<sup>6</sup> Four of the suits were to have close headpieces; and all of them were to be varnished black, with leather and buckles. The armor protected all parts of the head and body, but not the arms nor the legs at and below the knee.

This supply of arms and armor was supplemented by many new articles, brought into town June 27, 1636, and carried up to Governor Endecott's. They consisted of eighteen sets of armor, the front and back part of the corselets, eighteen pairs of tassets and headpieces of three sorts, but only seventeen gorgets. With this new armor came sixteen pikes and nineteen swords. This increased the armor so much that a company of thirty-eight men could be fitted out with full suits.

Of the seventy-five pikes, fifty-seven are preserved in the State armory at Salem. The poles are about twelve feet in length and the spearlike heads about thirteen inches. A drawing of one of these pikes is given here-with.

In the autumn of 1634, the work of fortifying the several plantations in the colony was begun and the general court ordered that laborers and artificers in other plantations be impressed to perform it. Wages were paid to such workmen. The places to be fortified were Salem, Charlestown, Boston and Dorchester. These preparations were made apparently against invasion by water. The people



PIKE.

<sup>1</sup>Light armor for the body.

<sup>2</sup>The light cuirass, consisting of the breastplate and backplate.

<sup>3</sup>That part of the armor which protected the body behind, from the waist down, consisting of sliding plates riveted to a lining or to straps underneath and corresponding to the cuirassant in front.

<sup>4</sup>Tassets were splints of steel of which several formed the skirt, depending from the cuirass in front of the thigh.

<sup>5</sup>That part of the armor which protected the throat, having a collar which supported the armor of the body.

<sup>6</sup>Helmets.



in Salem were not required to assist in the other settlements, provided they fortified themselves, to the satisfaction of the court, within a year from Sept. 3, 1634, the date of the vote.

The leading military men, among them Capt. William Trask of Salem, selected the sites of the fortifications, and had charge of the work in all of the towns, except Salem. No records exist to determine what Salem did in the way of fortifications, if anything more than had already been done in 1629.

The ordering and conduct of any war, if there should be one, was placed in the care and authority of Governor Winthrop, John Haynes, John Humphrey and Governor Endecott. John Holgrave<sup>1</sup> was chosen "overseer" of the powder, shot and other am-

*John: Holygrave.*

munition in Salem Sept. 3, 1634. The muskets, bandeleers and rests that had lately come over were ordered to be divided amongst the several plantations; "and the towns

to haue att all tymes soe many in a readynes as a towne stocke."<sup>2</sup>

The ship Neptune landed at Salem two old sacker cannon, and the general court, Sept. 25, 1634, gave the use of them to Salem, if the town would provide carriages for them. These were probably the two cannon which were in Town House Square for many years.

The general court appointed commissioners to superintend all military affairs: and, March 4, 1634-5, the court ordered that each and every town provide, before April 6, a safe and convenient place in which to keep such powder and ammunition as said commissioners should bring from Boston, and have a certain quantity in readiness for public service. Aug. 28, 1637, the town of Salem made a contract with Samuel Archer and William Allen to build "an ammunition house" by the last of October. Mr. Johnson then had charge of the powder.

Dec. 13, 1636, the militia of the colony was organized into three regiments, under the general command of the governor. One of the regiments consisted of the soldiers from Ipswich, Newbury, Salem and Saugus, and was commanded by John Endecott, colonel, and John Winthrop, jr., lieutenant-colonel. This was called the East regiment. Each regiment had a muster-master, and Capt. William Trask was the muster-master for this regiment. After this time, the regiment had the choice of colonel and

<sup>1</sup>JOHN HOLGRAVE<sup>1</sup> was a fisherman and lived in Salem as late as 1652. His wife was living in 1640. Child (John Holgrave was called father of Robert Gooch in 1637): 1. *Joshua*.<sup>2</sup>

JOSHUA HOLGRAVE;<sup>2</sup> children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 1, 1640; 2. Love,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 17, 1642.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 125.

lieutenant-colonel; and the captain and lieutenants were to be chosen by the council, from a list of principal men in each town selected by the townsmen. None but freemen could hold office in the militia.<sup>1</sup>

The sword of Colonel Endecott is in the possession of his descendant, William C. Endicott of Boston.

March 9, 1636-7, William Trask was chosen captain, Richard Davenport, lieutenant, and Thomas Reade, ensign, of the Salem company.<sup>1</sup>

May 14, 1634, the general court ordered "that there shalbe a watch of two a night kept in euy plantacon till the nexte Genall Court;" and, June 27, 1636, it was ordered by the quarterly court that the watchmen in Salem meet the constable at the meeting house half an hour after sunset and in the morning.

As the settlements grew in size and number, two conditions became apparent. The number of freemen at the general court was too great, and it was unsafe to leave the settlements unguarded while the court was in session so far away. This was especially true of the colonies which were being settled farther were authorized to retain at home from the court of general election in May, 1636, a sufficient number of freemen, in their discretion, for the safety of the town, the freemen having the right to vote by proxy. This arrangement was made by the court the next year also.<sup>1</sup>

To further safeguard the people, the general court ordered, Sept. 8, 1636, that no dwelling house should be built more than half a mile from the meeting house.

When the danger from the Narragansett Indians became imminent, the general court, March 9, 1636-7, ordered that the military officers in each town should provide that the watches be duly kept in places most fit for common safety and also a ward on the Lord's days to begin before the end of March and be continued until the end of September; and every person above the age of eighteen years (except magistrates and elders of the churches) was liable to service, either in person or by a substitute, such persons were obliged to attend the public assembly with their muskets or other pieces fit for service, furnished with match, powder and bullets. It was also provided that no person should



ENDECOTT'S SWORD.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 188.



travel without arms, more than one mile from his dwelling house, except in places where houses were near together ; and every town had to provide a sufficient watchhouse before the last of the next July. Also, all those who kept families at their farms, which were remote from the town, were not compelled to send the help from the farms to watch or ward in the town.

Nov. 20, 1637, the order for bringing arms to the meeting house was repealed, and, May 2, 1638, that matter was referred to each town.

Dec. 3, 1639, the general court fined the town of Salem for not keeping watch the preceding summer ; and again, for a similar neglect, June 2, 1640.

May 13, 1640, the general court provided that the ordinary watch and wards, in time of peace, should be set by the constables in each town ; but in case of sudden danger from the enemy, the military officers should have charge.

Dec. 1, 1640, the general court permitted the Salem meeting house to be the watchhouse. This practice was allowed for several years.

## CHAPTER X.

### SICKNESS AND DEATH.



CAPT. JOHN SMITH wrote that Governor Winthrop found that sixty of the colonists had died and the rest were sick, ill-cared for and complaining.<sup>1</sup> Both Charlestown and Salem suffered greatly by sickness. If the people in England had known how poorly the planters had passed the winter here, the ardor of the emigrants would have abated; however, they were ignorant of the conditions and sailed with great expectations.

Dr. Samuel Fuller, Edward Winslow and Isaac Allerton, all of Plymouth, spent Sunday, July 25, 1630, at Salem. After the evening service, Mr. Johnson stated that he had received a letter from Governor Winthrop relative to the sickness at Charlestown, that it was very great and a number of the people had died. It was desired that a day be set apart to beseech God to remove his wrath thus manifested. The Salem church declined to do so without the advice of the Pilgrims who were then present. After conference with them it was agreed that Friday, the thirtieth, be set apart for the people to humble themselves before God and seek Him in His ordinances, the service to end with godly persons publicly stating their desire to walk before the Lord in righteousness. It was agreed that the day be observed in the three plantations of Massachusetts Bay; and Doctor Fuller and Mr. Winslow wrote from Salem the next day, to Governor Bradford, Rev. Ralph Smith and William Brewster, requesting that the church at Plymouth set apart the same day for the same purpose. The following is a copy of the letter from Doctor Fuller and Mr. Winslow to Governor Bradford and others at Plymouth:—<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, London, 1631. See *Magnalia Christi Americana*, volume I, book 3, part 2, chapter 1.

<sup>2</sup>Gov. William Bradford's Letter Book, page 57.



To our loving brethren and christian friends Mr. William Bradford, Mr. Ralph Smith and Mr. William Brewster, these be.

Beloved, &c.

Being at Salem the 25th of July, being the Sabbath, after the evening exercise Mr. Johnson having received a letter from the Governor, Mr. Winthrop, manifesting the hand of God to be upon them, and against them at Charlestown, in visiting them with sickness and taking divers from amongst them, not sparing the righteous, but partaking with the wicked in those bodily judgments, it was therefore by his desire, taken into the godly consideration of the best here, what was to be done to pacify the Lord's wrath; and they would do nothing without our advice, I mean those members of our church, there known unto them, viz. Mr. Fuller Mr. Allerton and myself, requiring our voices, as their own, when it was concluded, that the Lord was to be sought in righteousness; and so to that end the sixth day (being Friday) of this present week is set apart, that they may humble themselves before God, and seek him in his ordinances; and that then also such godly persons that are amongst them and known each to other, publicly at the end of their exercise, make known their godly desire, and practice the same, viz, solemnly to enter into covenant with the Lord to walk in his ways; and since they are so disposed of in their outward estates, as to live in three distinct places, each having men of ability amongst them, there to observe the day, and become three distinct bodies; not then intending rashly to proceed to the choice of officers, or the admitting of any other into their society than a few, to wit, such as are well known unto them, promising after to receive in such, by confession, as shall appear to be fitly qualified for that estate; and, as they desired to advise with us, so do they earnestly entreat that the church at Plymouth would set apart the same day, for the same ends, beseeching God as to withdraw his hand of correction, so to establish and direct them in his ways; and though the time be very short, yet since the causes are so urgent, we pray you be provoked to this godly work, wherein God will be honoured, and they and we undoubtedly have sweet comfort in so doing: Be you all kindly saluted in the Lord, together with the rest of our brethren: The Lord be with you and his spirit direct you, in this and all other actions that concern his glory and the good of his:

Your brethren in the faith of Christ,

And fellowship of the gospel,  
Salem, July 26, Anno 1630.

SAMUEL FULLER,  
EDWARD WINSLOW.

Doctor Fuller went from Salem to Charlestown to assist in allaying the fever there, but he could do no good for lack of drugs, etc.

Among those who first died at Salem that spring was Mr. Houghton, an elder of the church. Samuel Sharp was chosen to succeed him in that office.

When Governor Winthrop came to Salem for the first time, in June, he found Rev. Mr. Higginson sick and weak with fever; but he rallied sufficiently to preach one sermon afterward. The







text was Matt. xi: 7: "What went ye out into the wilderness to see?" In this sermon he reminded the people that religion was the principal design of the plantation, and spoke of the wants and the various necessary trials in a wilderness and of the need for them to evidence the uprightness of their hearts in accomplishing the purpose of their coming hither. After this time, he was confined to his bed. The leading men in the colony visited him, and consoled him by expressing their regard for him and for his faithfulness to the Lord in his former services and losses, and reminded him of the honor he had in beginning church-reformation in America. He replied, "I have been but an unprofitable servant; and all my own doings I count but loss and dung; all my desire is to win Christ, and be found in Him, not having my own righteousness!" At several times, he declared, "That though the Lord called him away, he was persuaded God would raise up others to carry on the work that was begun, and that there would yet be many churches of the Lord Jesus Christ in this wilderness." In the midst of many prayers, his death occurred Aug. 6, 1630, at the age of forty-two. This date was the first anniversary of the founding of the church. His funeral was held with all possible solemnity.

Rev. Cotton Mather wrote that Mr. Higginson had "crossed the sea with a renowned colony, and that having seen an old world in Europe, where a flood of iniquity and calamity carried all before it, he also saw a new world in America; where he appears the first in a catalogue of heroes, and where he with his people were admitted into the covenant of God . . . may therefore be called the Noah or Janus of New England."<sup>1</sup>

Edward Johnson wrote that Mr. Higginson was "a man indued with grace apt to teach, and mighty in the Scriptures, Learned in the Tongues, able to convince gainsayers, aptly applying the word to his hearers."<sup>2</sup> Mr. Johnson also published the following lines:—<sup>2</sup>

What Golden gaine made Higginfon *remoue*,  
 From *fertill Soyle to Wilderneffe of Rocks*;  
 Twas Christs rich Pearle ftir'd up thee toile to love,  
 For him to feed in Wilderneffe his flocks.  
*First Teacher, he here Sheepe and Lambs together,*  
*First crownd shall be, hee in the Heavens of all,*  
*Christs Pastors here, but yet Christ folke had rather,*  
*Him here retaine, blest he whom Christ hath call'd.*

<sup>1</sup>Magnalia Christi Americana, volume I, book 3, part 2, chapter 1.

<sup>2</sup>History of New England; Wonder-working Providence of Sion's Saviour, in New-England, by Edward Johnson, London, 1654, chapter 10, page 21.



Mr. Mather prepared the following epitaph as applicable to Mr. Higginson:—<sup>1</sup>

*Jacet sub hoc Tumulo Mortuus,  
FRANCISCUS HIGGINSONUS:  
Jaceret et ipsa Virtus, si mori posset  
Abi Viator,  
Et sis hujus Ordinis Franciscanus.*

The house which had been built by the Company for Mr. Higginson's occupancy was, after his decease, given to his widow, who continued to live in it but a short time. She removed to Charlestown and later lived for some years at Quinnipiac (New Haven), where she died early in 1640. She sold the house and land to Rev. Roger Williams upon his settlement in Salem as teacher of the church. Mr. Williams lived in it until his banishment in the winter of 1635-6. He sold the estate, preparatory to his departure, to John Woolcott of Salem, and Mr. Woolcott conveyed it, with two bedsteads, table, forms, shelves, etc., to William Lord. The deed given by Mr. Woolcott to Mr. Lord bears two dates, but it was not delivered probably until after Mr. Williams' sudden departure. This is the oldest deed extant of property situated in the original territory of Salem, and is not recorded, the original instrument being on file in the office of the clerk of courts, in Salem.<sup>2</sup> It reads as follows:—

In Salem, the — of the 8<sup>th</sup> month caled Octob<sup>r</sup> 1635  
Memorandu that I John Woolcott of Salem have Bartered and  
Sould vnto William Lord

all and euey part of my house and mifteed in Salem (formerlie in the occupation of m<sup>r</sup> Roge<sup>r</sup> williams, & from him by order from m<sup>rs</sup> Higenfon sould vnto me, as by a quittance vnd<sup>r</sup> m<sup>r</sup> w<sup>ms</sup> hand doth appear; as also all the out houfing, w<sup>th</sup> 2 bedsteads Table formes & fhelues in the forefaid dwelling house, with all the ffences about it, or w<sup>t</sup> els thervnto belong vnto it. Also all the Intereft m<sup>rs</sup> Higenfon of Charles Towne, & fo my felfe, had or now haue in a Tenn Acre Lott of ground on the fouth fyde: ffor, & in Confideration of the some of ffifteene pounds Tenn fhillings to me in hand paid, (according to an order of Arbiterm<sup>t</sup> mad by m<sup>r</sup> Throckmorton, & John woodbury, in differently chofen by vs both for that purpose,) in full fatiffaction of the p<sup>r</sup>mises, w<sup>th</sup> faid some &c the faid John Woolcott doth acknowledg him felf fully contented and paid and therof acquitteth the f<sup>d</sup> w<sup>m</sup> Lord

<sup>1</sup>Dead under this Mound lies Francis Higginson, and Virtue herself, if she could die, would lie buried also. Depart, Traveler, And may you be a Franciscan of this order.

<sup>2</sup>Salem Quarterly Court files, volume XIV, leaf 15.







CHARTER STREET BURYING GROUND.



his heirse & affigns for euer In witnes wherof I haue hearvnto put my hand and feale this 23<sup>th</sup> of the 9<sup>th</sup> mo: caled Noveb<sup>r</sup> ann<sup>o</sup> 1635.

Sealed Signed and  
deliuered in p<sup>r</sup>fence

of  
Raph ffogg sr  
The mark  
of Elizabeth Turner

Jo<sup>N</sup>  
WOOLLCOTT [SEAL]

Hilliard Veren appears as its owner in the spring of 1659. He died Dec. 20, 1683, at the age of sixty-three; and the estate which was then valued, with the house and barn thereon, at one hundred pounds, descended to his two daughters, Mary, wife of Samuel Williams of Salem, and Abigail, wife of Benjamin Marston of Salem. They divided the house and lot, Mary taking the western, and Abigail, the easterly part. Mr. Williams died, and his widow, Mary Williams, with the consent of her son Samuel Williams, for forty-three pounds, conveyed her half of the house and lot to John Woodwell of Salem, glover, April 6, 1693.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Marston, for forty pounds, conveyed his wife's half of the lot and house, with the leanto, to Mr. Woodwell Nov. 14, 1693.<sup>2</sup> For forty-five pounds, sixteen shillings and eight pence, Mr. Woodwell conveyed the house, barn and land to Elizur Keysor of Salem, tanner, May 11, 1698.<sup>3</sup> Mr. Keysor conveyed the same estate to Florence Maccarty of Boston April 7, 1707.<sup>4</sup> Mr. Maccarty, for twenty-eight pounds, conveyed it to Peter Windet of Salem, currier, May 8, 1707.<sup>5</sup> Mr. Windet evidently removed the old house soon afterward.

Lady Arbella Johnson was sick on the voyage and failed to rally after landing at Salem. She was daughter of Churton, the third Earl of Lincoln and Lord High Admiral of England. Her husband, Isaac Johnson, had a large estate, was a man of influence and came of an old family living at Clipsham, in Rutland. His father held the living of North Suffenham in the same county. She is said to have been beautiful in person and character. Her family was very friendly to the Church of England, but Puritan in their attitude toward it. Her home was at the royal forest of Sherwood. Robin Hood and his merry foresters were sheltered by the same ancient oaks that she knew, which later stretched their gnarled limbs over the shorn lawns of the parks. This is a region of romance, within sight of the battle fields of the rival Roses, and ruins of castles and monasteries.

<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 12, leaf 143.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 12, leaf 144.

<sup>3</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 13, leaf 2.

<sup>4</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 27.

<sup>5</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 28.



Lady Arbella survived Mr. Higginson only a few days. Sir Henry Wotton wrote: "She left an earthly paradise, in the family of an earldom, to encounter the sorrows of a wilderness, for the entertainments of a pure worship in the house of God; and then immediately left that wilderness for the heavenly paradise, whereto the compassionate Jesus, of whom she was a follower, called her."

Mr. Johnson assisted in settling Boston. He survived his wife only about a month, dying September 30th, and was buried in the lot where his house was being built. Others were later buried near him, and this was the beginning of the ancient Kings' Chapel churchyard. Cotton Mather inverted the lines of Sir Henry Wotton, when he wrote of Mr. and Mrs. Johnson:—

She first deceased; he for a little tried  
To live without her, liked it not, and died.

Governor Winthrop wrote that Mr. Johnson was "a holy man and wise" and that he "died in sweet peace, leaving some part of his substance to the colony."<sup>1</sup>

Among the immigrants who came with the Winthrop fleet were also Rev. George Phillips and his wife. Mr. Phillips was a native of Raymond, in the county of Norfolk, and minister at Boxford, in Essex County, England. He was a non-conformist, and came to America with many of his neighbors. Soon after landing at Salem, his wife, who, though an only child, had cheerfully left her parents to enter into the privations of this new life, died and was "solemnly" buried near Lady Arbella. Mr. Phillips became the minister of the church at Watertown July 30, 1630, when the church was organized.<sup>2</sup>

On a bluff, projecting into the South River, back from the harbor front, a small space of land was devoted to the burial of the early dead in Salem. Here were undoubtedly laid the remains of Mrs. Endecott, Mr. Higginson, Mr. Houghton, Lady Arbella, Mrs. Phillips and the others who survived for only a little while the tempestuous voyage across the ocean. This was the beginning of what was at first called Burying point, and is now known as the Charter Street burying ground.

The original plot of land used for burial purposes is marked O on the following plan of the burial place. The way which led to it was the narrow path on its western side, as shown on the plan. After a few years the place began to be too small; and, March 9, 1668-9, the town voted "that the Selectmen shall and are Impowered to agree with M<sup>r</sup> Henry Bartholmew and Edward

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal.

<sup>2</sup>Magnalia Christi Americana, by Cotton Mather, volume I, page 376.



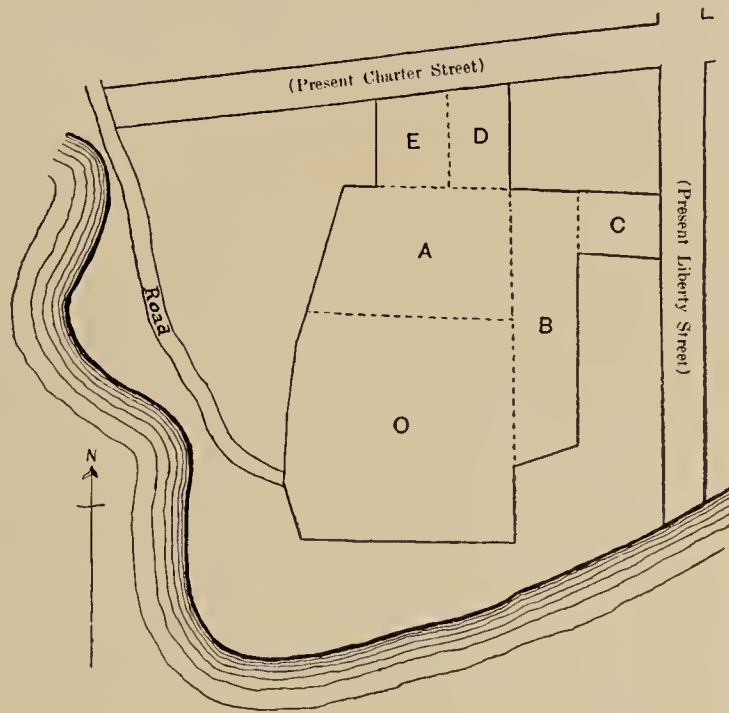




CROMWELL GRAVESTONE.



Groue to purchase land of them, neare the Buringe place for an Inlardgem<sup>t</sup> for to Bury the dead and to take care to agree & fettle highways to come to the place, and the towne to pay the Chardge."<sup>1</sup> The addition marked *A* was probably bought of Henry Bartholmew, and that marked *B* was purchased of Edward Grove, sailmaker, for twenty pounds, Nov. 26, 1669.<sup>2</sup> Liberty Street was laid out from Essex Street to the present Charter Street very early, and, May 7, 1661, it was extended to the river to provide a better way to the burial place.<sup>3</sup> In



BURIAL PLACE.

1669, when it was voted that the entrance to the burying ground should be improved, the town made this extension of Liberty Street a public way, and purchased of Samuel Pickman, Aug. 29, 1669,<sup>3</sup> the addition which is marked *C* for the new entrance. The cemetery was again enlarged immediately after the laying out of Charter Street, in 1767. The new street cut off the rear ends of the homesteads of William Lander, chairmaker, and Joseph Mottey, mariner; and, June 13, 1767, they conveyed to the town the said portions.<sup>4</sup> Mr. Lander's lot is marked "*D*" and Mr. Mottey's "*E*." The Liberty Street entrance was then closed, and that section used for interments. The present gateway, on Charter Street, was opened at the time of the purchase of that portion of the ground.

Gravestones were rare until near the close of the seventeenth century, and the oldest stone now standing in the yard is that of Dorothy, wife of Philip Cromwell, who died Sept. 27, 1673. The stone marking the grave of Mrs. Mary Cromwell, who died Nov. 14, 1683, is probably unexcelled by any tombstone erected in New England in the early days. It is of Welch soapstone, and was very likely formed, ornamented and inscribed in England.

<sup>1</sup>Town records.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 13.

<sup>3</sup>See deed of Samuel Pickman to John Pickman in Essex Registry of Deeds, book 8, leaf 2, and book 9, leaf 131.

<sup>4</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 121, leaves 183 and 184.



Aug. 14, 1637, John Horne was allowed to erect a windmill in the burial place; and it remained there until March 25, 1639, when the town "ordered y<sup>t</sup> John Horne shall desist from his inclosure in y<sup>e</sup> bury all place: and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> towne shall pay for a quarter of an acre when he hath bought y<sup>e</sup> same. except the Towne when they shall haue changed the buryall place shall allow him a portion of the same."

In the early times, cemeteries were allowed to be grazed by cattle. The selectmen let to Mr. John Cromwell, Feb. 24, 1680, "hearbidge of the towns land at the Burying poynt for Seauen yeares from the Date hearof; Improuing it for grasing to his Best Advantag Except Swine which wee allow not of. . . Always prouided that the towne hath the Same liberty for Buriall as before this Agreement."

June 29, 1646, the town "Ordered that there shall be no buriall w<sup>th</sup>in the towne but that there shall be word giuen to the keep of the meeting house to ring the bell whereby notice may be giuen to the towne thereof, a little before the buriall. And the said keep to haue three pence for his paynes." This practice was continued for many years.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Town records for Nov. 15, 1651.

## CHAPTER XI.

### SEAT OF GOVERNMENT REMOVED FROM SALEM.



THE influence of Rev. Francis Higginson, by his pen, upon the people of England in regard to American colonization has probably been only partially appreciated. He was widely known among intelligent people and was regarded with great respect and confidence, even by the surpliced class from whom he differed in the understanding and interpretation of the Scriptures. It will never be known how many of the colonists of 1630 and subsequent years were induced by him, directly or indirectly, to leave their fair land to engage in a long perilous voyage, separating from the scenes they had always known, with slight hope that they would ever see them again, for a life in the wilderness of which little was known beyond its dangers from animals and savages. At the end of his New-Englands Plantation, he wrote of Naumkeag, the following brief note:—

#### *Of the Present Condition of the Plantation, and What It Is.*

When we came first to *Nehumkek*, we found about halfe a score Houses, and a faire House newly built for the Gouvernor, we found also aboundance of Corne planted by them, very good and well liking. And we brought with vs about two hundred Passengers and Planters more, which by common consent of the old Planters were all combined together into one Body Politicke, vnder the same Gouvernor.

There are in all of vs both old and new Planters about three hundred, wherof two hundred of them are settled at *Nehumkek*, now called *Salem*: And the rest haue planted themselues at *Masathulets* Bay, beginning to build a Towne there which wee doe call *Cherton*, or Charles Towne.<sup>2</sup>

We that are settled at *Salem* make what haste we can to build Houses, so that within a short time we shall haue a faire Towne.

We have great Ordnance, wherewith wee doubt not, but wee shall fortifie our selues in a short time to keepe out a potent Aduersary. But that which is our greatest comfort, and meanes of defence aboue all



other, is, that we haue here the true Religion and holy Ordinances of Almighty God taught amongst vs: Thankes be to God, wee haue here plenty of Preaching, and diligent Catechizing, with strickt and carefull exercise, and good and commendable order to bring our People into a Christian conuersation with whom wee haue to doe withall. And thus wee doubt not but God will be with vs, and *if God be with us, who can be against us?*

The famous Capt. John Smith endeavored to persuade his countrymen to settle in New England, but, as he said, the merchants "very little liked" it, "because they would have the coaft free only for themselves, and the Gentlemen were doubtfull of thair true accounts".<sup>1</sup> Captain Smith published, in 1631, a book, entitled *Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c.*, and in it wrote of Salem as follows:—

In the year 1629, about March, fix good ships are gone with 350 men, women, and children, people professing themselves of good ranke, zeale, meanes and quality: also 150. head of cattell, as horse, mares, and neat beasts; 41. goats, some coves, with all provision household and apparell; fi peeces of great Ordnance for a Fort, with Muskets, Pikes, Corflets, Drums and Colours, with all provisions necessary for the good of man. They are feated about 42. degrees and 38. minutes, at a place called by the natives *Naemkecke*, by our Royall King *Charles*, *Baftable*; but now by the planters, *Salem*; where they arrived for most part exceeding well, their cattell and all things else prospering exceedingly, farre beyond their expectation. At this place they found some good provision and houses built by some few of *Dorchester*, with whom they are joyned in society with two hundred men, an hundred and fifty more they have sent to the *Massachusetts*, which they call *Charlton*, or *Charles Towne*.<sup>2</sup>

No one incident, probably, shows the quickness of decision and speedy compliance of Governor Endecott with the order of the Company to purge the colony from harmful influences than the sending back to England upon the ship *Talbot* the five boys who were discovered to follow practices, which were physically and morally injurious to themselves and others. In other instances, where similar issues were involved, he displayed the same interest and alertness in the performance of his duty. At a meeting of the Company held in England July 28, 1629, was read a letter from him, dated May 27th of that year. In it, among other things, he complained of the profane and dissolute lives of some of the English who were formerly traders to New England, and

<sup>1</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, London, 1631, page 16.

<sup>2</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, London, 1631, page 24.

of their irregular commerce with the Indians, contrary to the proclamation of the king, desiring that the Company would seriously consider the matter, and use some means for its speedy reformation. It was thought best to apply to the king or the lords for renewing the proclamation made in 1622, with the addition of such beneficial clauses as would be needful for the correction of "so great and unsufferable abuses," and a committee was appointed to inform the lord keeper and Secretary Coke of it and that afterward a petition to the council would be prepared. As soon as it was apparent that the colony would be successful, certain members of the Company advocated the transfer of all its interests to New England; and Governor Cradock proposed the full transfer and release of the government to the planters. Debate followed the suggestion, and finally it was agreed that each member of the council should write his reasons for or against such removal and present them at the next meeting, and in the meantime observe secrecy in the matter. Several persons were appointed on each side of the question to make the arguments.

This proposition was made for the benefit of the plantation and to induce and encourage gentlemen of wealth to remove to America. A number of men of culture and property desired to emigrate, but their decision depended upon that of the Company in the matter under consideration.

At the next meeting of the council, Aug. 28, 1629, the prepared arguments were made, and the following day it was voted to transfer the government.

A month later, Sept. 29, 1629, the Company appointed a committee to secure the advice of able counsel as to whether the transfer could be made legally, how and when it could and should be done and on whom to confer the government.

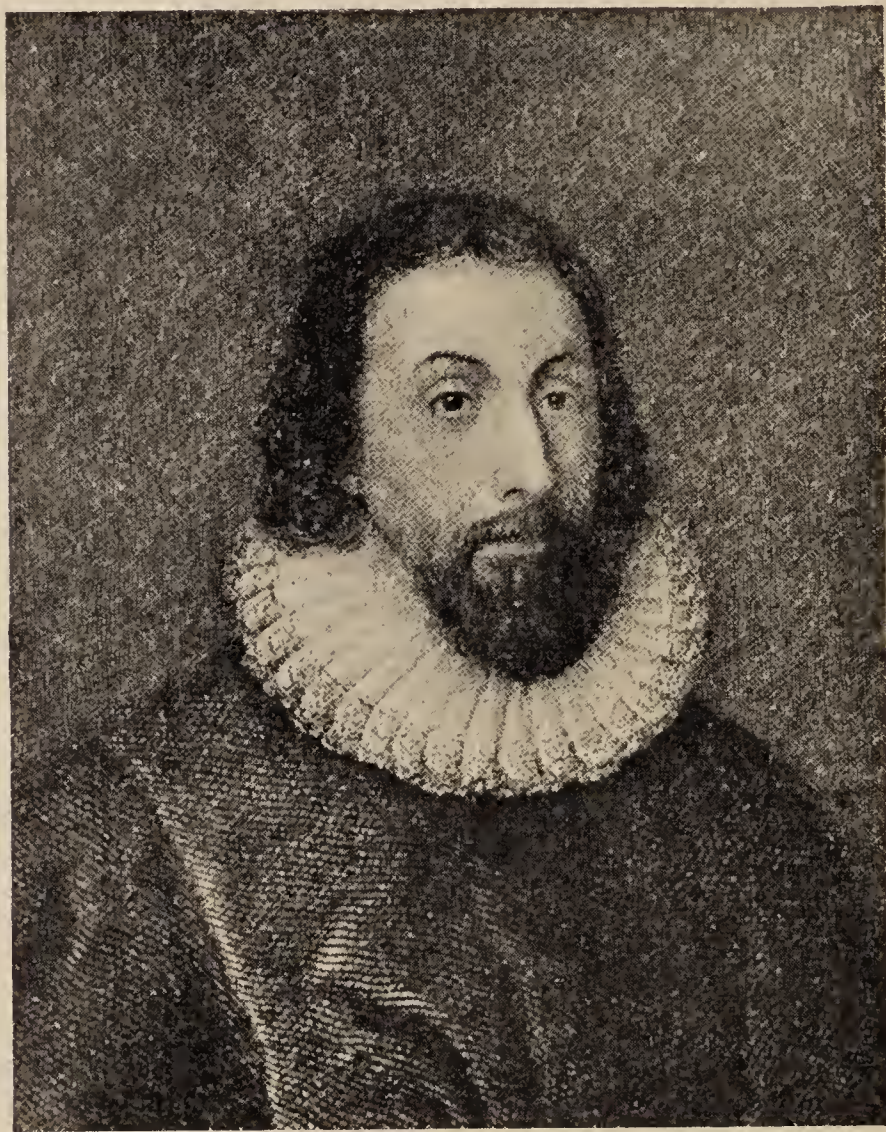
One of the prime reasons for the formation of the Company was probably the cause of the protracted discussion. Not only was it intended to establish a colony in New England and to Christianize the aborigines, but it was also a financial adventure. Thousands of pounds had been paid in by the members of the Company with the expectation that large returns would be received from the sale of fish, fur, timber, minerals, etc. Little satisfaction had been received from this source, and it was recognized that the transfer of the absolute and entire government to New England would probably terminate the interest of the adventurers who remained in England. Whether the Company as a whole wished to do this, and, if so, upon what terms it should be done, were questions repeatedly discussed in the meetings.

It was decided, at one stage of the discussion, that certain meetings of the government should be held in London, and that the English adventurers should have some connection with it;



that the government of the persons be held in New England, and of the trade and merchandise in England; and that if the entire government were removed to America, there should be fit persons appointed to manage the commercial part in each of the countries.

It was finally decided that the Company should have one-half of the trade in beaver and all other furs, the sole making of salt, sole transportation of passengers and goods, and that a committee



JOHN WINTHROP.

of two be appointed in each of the two countries to look after the enforcement of these matters. These privileges were to continue for seven years.<sup>1</sup>

The Company finally voted that the transfer should take place, and on the twentieth of the month chose John Winthrop governor, "both for his integritie & sufficienci, as being one every-

<sup>1</sup>For the full text of the record of these privileges, see Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony for Nov. 30 and Dec. 1, 1629.



well fitted & accomplished for the place of Gouno<sup>r</sup>." His term of office began immediately. John Humphrey was chosen deputy governor and two of the eighteen assistants were John Endecott and Samuel Sharp, who were already in New England, at Salem.

John Winthrop was well-known as a public man for a long time in the place of his residence, and was conformable to the practices of the church.<sup>1</sup> Capt. John Smith wrote that he was "a worthy gentleman both in estate and esteem."<sup>2</sup> Mr. Winthrop was son of Adam and Anne Winthrop, and was born Jan. 12, 1587-8 in Edwardston, a small village adjoining Groton, in Suffolkshire. He attended Trinity College. His diary prominently reveals the presence of opposing forces in his character, but he was gentle in his breeding and in his mature life, educated and refined. He and his wife and son John were frequent letter writers, and many of their epistles are extant and of great interest. He married, at the age of seventeen, Mary, daughter of John Forth of Great Stanbridge, Essexshire, and had six children. She died in 1615, and six months later he took a second wife, who died in December, 1616. He married, third, in 1618, Margaret, daughter of Sir John Tyndale.

This action on the part of the Company was influenced by persons of culture, position and wealth in England, whom the good report from the colony under Governor Endecott and its increase began to awaken to its importance and advantage. They had not become associated with the active work of the Company, but, being without engagements and believing that they might be serviceable in the prosecution of the enterprise at last resolved to be connected with the work. Seeing such men engaged therein, some of their acquaintances, from their affection for these new supporters or other reasons, became interested. A large number was readily secured to remove to New England.<sup>3</sup> To the continuation of the control of affairs by the Company in England, three thousand miles away, the new colonists demurred, and it was the expression of this objection that caused, to a considerable degree, the vote of the Company to transfer the entire government into the hands of the colonists.

Governor Endecott and others in Salem wrote letters to the Company Sept. 5, 1629, and these letters were received in due time and read at the meeting of the Company November 25th., following.

<sup>1</sup>Planters Plea, by Rev. William White, London, 1630, chapter VII.

<sup>2</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, &c., by Capt. John Smith, London, 1631, page 29.

<sup>3</sup>Planters Plea, by Rev. William White, London, 1630, chapter II.



Active preparations were now made for the transportation of large numbers of colonists. The staunch ship *Eagle*,<sup>1</sup> of three hundred and fifty tons burden, was purchased "for the safety & hono<sup>r</sup> & benefitt of the plantacon" by vote of the Company Sept. 29th. Two of its passengers were to be Isaac Johnson and his wife Lady Arbella, daughter of the late Earl of Lincoln, and probably much of the money spent in the purchase of this vessel came from them, and the name of the vessel was changed to Arbella.

The ships were ready to sail in February but remained until the next month to take a large number of cows and other cattle. There were on board great quantities of provisions and other supplies, and about three hundred passengers of various occupations and abilities were ready to embark. There were among them a number of cultured, titled and wealthy emigrants, with their wives and children. In the Arbella was Governor Winthrop and three of his sons, Henry, Stephen and Adam, his wife remaining in Groton. Some of the colonists were from the West of England, but most were from the vicinity of London.

The fleet consisted of twelve vessels, including the ship Arbella. As four of the vessels were ready to go, it was decided that they should not wait for the others, but sail at once. They passed down the harbor of Southampton, upon their long voyage, March 22d. These four vessels were the Arbella, Peter Milborne, master, carrying twenty-eight pieces of ordnance and manned by fifty-two seamen; the Talbot, Thomas Beecher, master; the Ambrose, John Lowe, master; and the Jewell, Nicholas Hurlston, master. The Ambrose and Jewell were the property of Governor Cradock; and the Talbot had brought Rev. Francis Higginson to Naumkeag the previous year. It was agreed by governors Cradock and Winthrop that the Arbella in which Governor Winthrop was a passenger, should be the admiral of the fleet, the Talbot, vice-admiral, the Ambrose, rear-admiral, and the Jewell, captain. The other eight vessels were the Charles, Francis, Hopewell, Mayflower, Success, Trial, Whale and William.

The four vessels which had sailed were detained at Cowes for a week by adverse winds, and while there Henry Winthrop went on shore with some other men. The Arbella sailed without him, and later he boarded the Talbot and arrived in her.

The emigrants soon became acquainted with the boisterous Atlantic, and the vessels were scattered by a furious storm, which continued ten days. The cattle were so tossed about and bruised that seventy of them died, and many of the passengers were sick. The entire voyage was wet, cold and stormy.

<sup>1</sup>The ship had, for its figure head, the effigy of an eagle, and this fact may have suggested the eagle as our national emblem in later times.

The Arbella was separated from all the other vessels of the fleet, and later the people on board saw four ships apparently in pursuit of them. They had heard, as they lay in the harbor, before their departure, that four Dunkirk men-of-war were lying in wait for the approach of these vessels. The women and children retired to the hold of the ship, but the men remained on deck, ready for the reception of the strange vessels. Fear was soon dispelled, however, as it was shortly learned that the approaching vessels contained friends of their countrymen.

After about forty days had elapsed since these emigrants left English shores, America was approached, and soundings began to be taken. June 6th, bottom was found at a depth of eighty fathoms. The next day, the depth of the water was found to be but thirty fathoms, and fine codfish and later mackerel were caught. On Tuesday, the eighth, appeared the highlands of Mount Desert, the first land seen,<sup>1</sup> and on the tenth the Three Turks' Heads, off Cape Ann, were visible. The ship came into the bay at four o'clock on Saturday morning, two days later.

Two cannon were fired, and the skiff of the Arbella was sent to the ship Lyon, which lay in the harbor. While the boat was gone, Isaac Allerton came down the harbor in a shallop, bound for Pemaquid. He went aboard the Arbella, and greeted Governor Winthrop. The ship was then "passed through the narrow strait between Baker's Isle and Little Isle and came to an anchor a little within the islands." Capt. William Pierce, master of the ship Lyon, which was in the harbor, went aboard the Arbella, and soon returned to take Governor Endecott to call upon Governor Winthrop. Many of the passengers went on the shore of the mainland and gathered strawberries. At about two o'clock in the afternoon, Governor Endecott, Rev. Samuel Skelton and Captain Levett went aboard the Arbella to greet Governor Winthrop and others.

When and how Governor Endecott learned that he was no longer the head of the government here is unknown, and the state of his feelings upon the change, probably, was always retained within his own breast. Manifestly, it had no crushing effect, as his disposition, shown in his subsequent life which is nearly all that is known of his spirit, was rigorous.

Governor Winthrop and the men on the vessel who were assistants, the captain and some other men and women accompanied their visitors to the little village, where they "supped," as Governor Winthrop wrote in his journal, on "good venison pasty and good beer." At night, some of the women remained on shore, but the others of the passengers on the Arbella returned to the ship. An Indian also came aboard and remained all night.

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal; Wonder-Working Providence, by Edward Johnson, book I, chapter 14, pages 29 and 30.



The next day, Sunday, Masconomo, the chief of the Agawam tribe of Indians, off whose territory the vessel was anchored, and one of his men, visited the ship and remained all day. At two o'clock in the afternoon, the ship Jewell came into the bay, as far as the tide and wind allowed. During its voyage, one of the seamen on the vessel had died and a child had been born.



SIR RICHARD SALTONSTALL.

The next forenoon, the Arbella was warped in, against the wind, through the narrow channel, into the inward harbor, as Governor Winthrop called it,<sup>1</sup> and which is now North River; and in the afternoon most of the passengers went on shore. The coming of Governor Winthrop was announced by Captain Milborne by a salute of "five pieces."

On Thursday of that week, Governor Winthrop went to Mystic River to select a site for a new town; and returned to Salem the following Saturday. He found that the ship Ambrose had arrived there, in his absence, two of Governor Cradock's servants, whom he had sent, having died on board. The Mayflower and Whale arrived in Charlestown harbor July first, and

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal. See chart of the channel on page 113.

the Talbot, at Salem, the next day. Fourteen of the passengers on the Talbot had died on the voyage. On the third, the Hope-well, William and Francis, and on the fifth the Trial arrived at Charlestown. On the latter date, the Charles came to anchor at Salem; and on the next day the Success arrived. The ship Lyon had sailed from Salem before this time, but returned on Wednesday, the seventh.

Among the passengers who came with Winthrop was Sir Richard Saltonstall, who was baptized at Halifax, England, April 4, 1586. He was one of the patentees of the colony, and lord of the manor of Ledsham. Sailing from Salem in 1631, he returned to England, where he died about 1658.

Because of the safe voyage of the fleet, a day of thanksgiving was observed in each of the plantations on Thursday, July 8th.

Governor Winthrop's son Henry arrived in the Talbot, and the next day after his arrival, he was drowned in the North River.<sup>1</sup> "Henry was twenty-two years of age, sprightly and hopeful," and left a widow in England. In the first letter Governor Winthrop sent to his wife after Henry's death, dated at Charlestown July 16th, he wrote: "We have met with many sad and discomfortable things, as thou shalt hear after; and the Lord's hand hath been heavy upon myself in some very near to me. My son Henry! my son Henry! ah, poor child! Yet it grieves me much more for my dear daughter. The Lord strengthen and comfort her heart, to bear this cross patiently. I know thou wilt not be wanting to her in this distress. Yet, for all these things, (I praise my God,) I am not discouraged; nor do I see cause to repent or despair of those good days here, which will make amends for all."<sup>1</sup>

Governor Winthrop remained in Salem but two or three weeks, and then went with most of the new immigrants to join the colony at Charlestown.

The charter of the Massachusetts Bay Company was in duplicate, one having been sent to Governor Endecott in 1629, and the other being brought by Governor Winthrop in 1630. The one brought by Governor Winthrop is in the state house at Boston.

The arrival of the new governor terminated the authority of Governor Endecott. He had been the political governor, acting under the authority of the Company in England. Governor Win-

<sup>1</sup>An ancient family record says of Henry's death that "the very next day on which he went on shore in New England, he and the principal officers of the ship, walking out to a place now called by the Salemites, Northfield, to view the Indian wigwams, they saw on the other side of the river a small canoe. He would have had one of the company swim over and fetch it, rather than walk several miles on foot, it being very hot weather; but none of the party could swim but himself; and so he plunged in, and as he was swimming over, was taken with the cramp, a few rods from the shore, and drowned."—*Life and Letters of John Winthrop*, volume II, page 35.



throp came in a broader capacity. The organized company no longer existed as such, but individual adventurers had a financial connection with the colony. The men who wished to enter into the scheme of colonization in Massachusetts Bay demanded the transfer of all the government to the place of the settlement before they would participate in it. The prospect was so good for the establishment of a successful colony, as the germ of something greater and better than they had dared anticipate, that they temporarily forgot that they were adventurers, and entered into the plan with a broad, deep and abiding unselfish interest. Although reservations relating to trade, reimbursements, etc., were made, the later transactions show that they were virtually unenforced, and the adventurers received no returns except grants of land that were occasionally made to some of them. Pure unselfish democracy continued to be the rule in the plantations of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

The first colonial court held in New England under Winthrop was that of the court of assistants, on board the ship *Arbella*, at Charlestown, Aug. 23, 1630. No assistant from Salem was present. It was ordered that the governor and deputy-governor should be ex-officio justices of the peace. Governor Endecott and three others were also appointed justices, "in all things to have like power that justices of peace hath in England for reformacon of abuses and punishing of offend<sup>rs</sup>, and that any justice of the peace may imprison an offend<sup>er</sup>, but not inflict any corporall punishm<sup>t</sup>, w<sup>th</sup>out the psence & consent of some one of the Assistants." It was also ordered that in all civil actions the first process or summons should be directed by the governor, deputy-governor or one of the assistants, who was a justice of the peace; the next process was to be a *capias*, in the discretion of the court. At a court of assistants held at Boston July 5, 1631, it was ordered that every assistant should have power to grant warrants, summons and attachments, as occasion should require.

At the meeting of the court of assistants, held at Charlestown Sept. 7, 1630, the times for holding the court were fixed, and also fines for members who did not appear at its sessions.

The first general court was held at Boston Oct. 19th, when "For the establishinge of the goum<sup>t</sup> It was ppounded if it were not the best course that the ffreemen should haue the power of chuseing Assistants where there are to be chosen, & the Assistants from amongst themselues to chuse a Goun<sup>r</sup> & Deputy Goun<sup>r</sup> whoe w<sup>th</sup> the Assistants should haue the power of makeing lawes & chuseing officers to execute the same. This was fully assented vnto by the genall vote of the people, & ereccon of hands." This

<sup>1</sup>Life and Letters of John Winthrop, volume II, page 36.

order was explained at a general court held at Boston, May 18, 1631, "with full consent of all the comons then psent, that once in euy yeare, att least, a Genall Court shalbe holden, att which Court it shalbe lawfull for the comons to ppounde any pson or psons whome they shall desire to be chosen Assistants, & if it be doubtfull whith<sup>r</sup> it be the great<sup>r</sup> pte of the comons or not, it shalbe putt to the poll. The like course to be holden when they, the said comons, shall see cause for any defect or misbehav<sup>r</sup> to remoue anyone or more of y<sup>e</sup> Assist<sup>ts</sup>; & to the end the body of the comons may be pserued of honest & good men, it was likewise ordered and agreed that for time to come noe man shalbe admitted to the freedome of this body polliticke, but such as are members of some of the churches within the lymitts of the same." This was changed at a general court held at Boston, May 9, 1632, when "It was genally agreed vpon by ereccon of hands, that the Goun<sup>r</sup>, Deputy Goun<sup>r</sup>, & Assistants should be chosen by the whole Court of Goun<sup>r</sup>, Deputy Goun<sup>r</sup>, Assistants, & freemen, and that the Goun<sup>r</sup> shall alwaies be chosen out of the Assistants."

The influence of the ministers upon politics is manifest when it is remembered that, at this time, no one could vote unless he was a freeman; that no one could be a freeman unless he was a member of the church; and that no one could be a member of the church except with the consent of the minister.<sup>1</sup>

In order that the solidarity of the people might be as perfect as possible, an order was made April 1, 1634, by the court that every person, of twenty or more years of age, who had been or thereafter would be, for six months, a householder or sojourner within the colony, and had not been disfranchised, in order to remain in the colony, should take before the governor, deputy-governor or two of the assistants, a prescribed oath to obey the laws and government. The form of the oath was as follows:—

I doe heare sweare, and call God to witnes, that, being nowe an inhabitant within the lymitts of this jurisdiccon of the Massachusetts, I doe acknowledge myselfe lawfully subject to the auctoritie and gouern<sup>t</sup> there established, and doe accordingly submitt my pson, family, and estate, to be pted, ordered, & gouerned by the lawes & constitucons thereof, and doe faithfully pmise to be from time to time obedient and conformeable therevnto, and to the auctoritie of the Goun<sup>r</sup>, & all other the magistrates there, and their success<sup>rs</sup>, and to all such lawes, orders, sentences, & decrees, as nowe are or hereafter shalbe lawfully made, decreed, & published by them or their success<sup>rs</sup>. And I will alwayes indeav<sup>r</sup> (as in duty I am bound) to advance the peace & wellfaire of this body pollitique, and I will (to my best power & meanes) seeke to devert & prevent whatsoeuer may tende to the ruine

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 101.



or damage thereof, or of y<sup>e</sup> Goun<sup>r</sup>, or Assistants, or any of them or their success<sup>rs</sup>, and will giue speedy notice to them, or some of them, of any sedicon, violence, treacherie, or oth<sup>r</sup> hurte or euill w<sup>ch</sup> I shall knowe, heare, or vehemently suspect to be plotted or intended against them or any of them, or againsts the said Comon-wealth or goun<sup>t</sup> established. Soe helpe mee God.

March 4, 1634-5, the minimum age at which residents should take the oath was reduced to sixteen years; and all of that age and over had to take the oath.

May 14th, several laws and orders were passed for the purpose of establishing the political life of the colony. The former oath of a freeman was abolished, and a new one adopted, as follows:—

I, A. B., being, by Gods providence, an inhabitant & freeman within the jurisdiccon of this comonweale, doe freely acknowledge my selfe to be subiect to the govern<sup>t</sup> thereof, & therefore doe heere sweare, by the greate & dreadfull name of the euerlyveing God, that I wilbe true & faithfull to the same, & will accordingly yeilde assistance & support therevnto, with my pson & estate, as in equity I am bound, & will also truely indeav<sup>r</sup> to mainetaine & preserue all the libertyes & previlidges thereof, submitting my selfe to the wholesome lawes & orders made & established by the same; and furth<sup>r</sup>, that I will not plott nor practise any evill against it, nor consent to any that shall soe doe, but will timely discover & reveale the same to lawfull aucthority nowe here established, for the speedy preventing thereof. Moreouer, I doe solemnly bynde myselfe, in the sight of God, that when I shalbe called to giue my voice touching any such matter of this state wherein ffreemen are to deale, I will giue my vote & suffrage, as I shall iudge in myne owne conscience may best conduce & tend to the publique weale of the body, without respect of psons, or fav<sup>r</sup> of any man. Soe helpe mee God, in the Lord Jesus Christ.

It was agreed that the general court alone had power to choose and admit freemen, make and establish laws, elect and remove governors, deputy-governors, assistants, treasurers, secretaries, captains, lieutenants, ensigns, etc., and determine their duties and powers, raise money and levy taxes.

John Humphrey<sup>1</sup> and John Endecott were among the assistants chosen at this time.

<sup>1</sup>Col. John Humphrey was one of the six gentlemen to whom this region was granted in 1628. He was chosen deputy-governor, in England, as the government was about to be transferred to America, but declined the office as he was not prepared to remove to New England. He came in July, 1634, and lived in Lynn until his return to England Oct. 26, 1641. He married Lady Susan, daughter of Thomas Clinton, Earl of Lincoln, and sister of Lady Arbella Johnson; children: 1. Ann, born in England; came to New England with her parents; married, first, William Palmes of Ardfinan,

The general court was ordered to be held quarterly. The freemen in each place chose two or three of their number, shortly before each session of the court, to confer together and prepare such public business as they thought fit to consider at the court; and such persons were made deputies to the court, with power to bind the freemen in their respective towns by their votes in making and establishing laws, granting of land and in all affairs of the commonwealth, except the election of magistrates and other officers, wherein every freeman was personally to act. Every such deputy or assistant, who was absent in time of public business, was liable to a fine.

Under date of 1630, the colonial records give a list of names of persons who had signified their desire to become freemen, and in this list occur the names of Samuel Sharp, Thomas Graves, Roger Conant, John Woodbury, Peter Palfrey, William Clerke, Roger Williams, Charles Gott, Henry Harwood, George Phillips, Samuel Skelton, Lawrence Leach, John Balch, William Trask, Henry Herrick, William James, William Allen and Samuel Archer. In a list entitled "The Names of Such as tooke the Oath of Freemen"<sup>1</sup> May 18, 1631, appear the names of George Phillips, Roger Conant, Thomas Graves, Charles Gott, Lawrence Leach, John Horne, John Woodbury, Francis Johnson, William Clarke, William Noddle, William Agar, Robert Moulton, Peter Palfrey, Roger Williams, John Balch, John Moore, Henry Herrick, Roger Mowry, William Allen, Samuel Skelton and Anthony Dixe; March 6, 1631-2, John Black; July 3, 1632, Elias Stileman, Samuel Sharp and John Moore; March 4, 1632-3, Henry Harwood, William Curtis and John White; Nov. 5, 1633, Francis Weston and John Holgrave; May 14, 1634, Thomas Goldthwaite, Thomas Hale, George Williams, Edward Gyles, William Dixy, George Norton, Thomas Eborne, Daniel Wray, Jacob Barney, Thomas Lowthrop, Jeffry Massy, Richard Brackenbury, Peter Wolfe, William Hathorne, Richard Raymond and Francis Dent; Sept. 3, 1634, John Sibley, Moses Maverick, Richard Davenport, Ralph Fogg and John Hardy; March 4, 1634-5, Richard Hutchinson; May 6, 1635, John Blackleach, John Legg and Robert Cotty; Sept.

Tipperary County, Ireland, gentleman; he died, and she married, second, Rev. John Myles of Swanzey, Mass.; and was the only surviving child of the family in 1681; 2. Dorcas, born in England about 1633; came to New England with her parents; aged nine in 1642; 3. Sarah, born in England about 1635; came to America with her parents; aged seven in 1642; 4. Theophilus, baptized in Salem Jan. 24, 1636-7; 5. Thomas, baptized in Salem Aug. 26, 1638; 6. Joseph, baptized in Salem April 5, 1640; 7. Lydia, baptized in Salem April 25, 1641. Savage says that there was probably a son named John. See about the abuse of his daughters Dorcas and Sarah in Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, volume II, page 12.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 366.



2, 1635, Richard Adams, Townsend Bishop, Philip Verrin and Thomas Scruggs; March 3, 1635-6, Edmond Batter and Hugh Peter; April 17, 1637, Thomas Browning, William Dodge and Nathaniel Porter; May 17, 1637, Thomas Olney, Thomas Gardner, Joseph Pope, William Bounde, Henry Bartholomew, Joseph Grafton, Francis Skerry and Edmond Marshall; Nov. 2, 1637, Mr. John Fiske; March —, 1637-8, Thomas Spooner, James Moulton, James Haynes, Henry Skerry, Joseph Bachiler, John Symonds, John Gedney and Thomas Flint; May 2, 1638, Ralph Tomkins; March 14, 1638-9, Edward Burcham; May 22, 1639, John Alderman, Benjamin Felton, Jarvas Garford, William Osborne and Hugh Laskin; and Sept. 6, 1639, Job Swinerton, William Lord and Lawrence Southwick.

The deputies<sup>1</sup> from Salem for the sessions of the general court were as follows: May 14, 1634, Robert Moulton, John Holgrave, Roger Conant and Francis Weston; March 4, 1634-5, John Holgrave, Charles Gott and Peter Palfrey; May 6, 1635, John Holgrave, John Woodbury, Robert Moulton and William Hathorne; Sept. 2, 1635, William Trask, John Woodbury and Jacob Barney; March 3, 1635-6, Townsend Bishop, William Trask and Thomas Scruggs; May 25, 1636, William Trask, Townsend Bishop and John Blackleach; Sept. 8, 1636, William Trask, Townsend Bishop and Thomas Scruggs; Dec. 7, 1636, William Trask and Thomas Scruggs; April 18, 1637, William Trask, Richard Davenport and Robert Moulton; May 17, 1637, William Trask, Richard Davenport and Edmond Batter; Sept. 26, 1637, William Hathorne and Thomas Gardner; Nov. 2, 1637, William Hathorne, Townsend Bishop and Edmond Batter; March 12, 1637-8, John Woodbury and Edmond Batter; May 2, 1638, William Hathorne and Edmond Batter; Sept. 6, 1638, William Hathorne, John Woodbury and Jacob Barney; March 13, 1638-9, William Hauthorne, John Woodbury and Jeffry Massey; May 22, 1639, William Trask and William Hauthorne; and Sept. 4, 1639, Emanuel Downing and William Hauthorne.

John Endecott was one of the standing council for life and one of the assistants. He usually attended the court of assistants and the sessions of the general court. John Winthrop was governor from 1630 to 1633 inclusive; Thomas Dudley in 1634; John Haynes in 1635; Henry Vane in 1636; and Mr. Winthrop again from 1637 to 1639 inclusive.

<sup>1</sup>This list has been compiled from the town and general court records.

## CHAPTER XII.

### LABOR, ETC.



AMONG the first questions that the new government here had to contend with was that relating to labor, not so much for the benefit of the laborer as of the public. Labor was a necessary factor in the building of houses and other structures in the new towns, and mechanics and other workmen were quick to take advantage of urgent needs. The only business done at the first meeting of the assistants on board the ship *Arbella*, in Charlestown Harbor, Aug. 23, 1630, was the determination of prices of labor. It was ordered that carpenters, joiners, bricklayers, sawyers and thatchers, employed about house construction, should be allowed two shillings a day for their services, and sawyers four shillings and sixpence per hundred for boards, at six-score to the hundred, if they had the timber felled and squared for them, and not more than five shillings and sixpence if they felled and squared it themselves. On the twenty-eighth of the following month, it was ordered that no master carpenter, joiner or bricklayer should take more than sixteen pence a day for his pay, if they had their meat and drink furnished to them. Laborers should not receive more than twelve pence a day for their work, and if their meat and drink were furnished to them, not more than sixpence. Oct. 19th it was ordered that sawyers should not take more than twelve pence a score for sawing oak boards, and ten pence a score for pine boards, if they had the trees felled and logs squared for them.

The restrictions were found to be prejudicial to both employer and employed, and on the twenty-second of the following March, it was ordered that the wages of carpenters, joiners and other artificers and workmen should be as the parties reasonably agree. This was tried through the summer of 1631, but as "great extorcon" was "vsed by dyvers psons of little conscience" and "great disorder . . . grewe herevpon, by vaine and idle wast of much precious tyme," it was ordered, September 27th, that sawyers



should not receive more than twelve pence a score for sawing boards if they had the trees felled and logs squared for them, and not over seven shillings per hundred if they felled the trees and squared the logs.

The scarcity of workmen and abundance of labor caused a demand for such wages as were excessive. Accordingly those who had commodities to sell advanced prices, sometimes double their cost in England, and this was generally complained of, and understood to be the result of the advance in wages. This situation remained for two years when, Oct. 1, 1633, it was ordered that master carpenters, sawyers, masons, clapboard rivers, bricklayers, tilers, joiners, wheelwrights, mowers, etc., should not receive more than two shillings a day without meals, and not more than fourteen pence a day if they receive their board. For a breach of this order, both employer and employed were liable to a fine. The wages of all unskilled workmen were fixed by the local constable and two other inhabitants of the town, whom he appointed for that purpose. The "best sorte" of such laborers were not allowed to receive above eighteen pence a day if they boarded themselves, and not more than eight pence a day when they received board. Master-tailors could not receive more than twelve pence a day, and inferior tailors not more than eight pence if their board were furnished to them. Prices of goods were also regulated, and it was provided that no commodity should be sold on the ships at an increase of more than its cost for ready money in England. The evils which were resulting were always viewed from the position of the employer, who found it difficult to realize that society owed anything to the laborer. It was argued that many of the laborers spent much time idly, because they could get enough money for their work in four days to support them a week, and that too much time was spent in the consumption of tobacco and strong waters.<sup>1</sup>

Sept. 3, 1635, these labor laws were repealed, and instead it was ordered that "ill disposed persons . . . who take liberty to oppresse & wronge their neighb<sup>rs</sup> by takeing excessive wages for worke . . . shalbe punished by ffine or imprisonm<sup>t</sup>." In the Salem court, Sept. 27, 1636, William Dixie was fined three shillings for taking three shillings per day for his labor; James Smith twenty shillings; and John Stone and John Sibley three shillings each for a similar offence.

Oct. 28, 1636, the general court ordered "that the freemen of ev<sup>ry</sup> towne shall, from time to time, as occation shall require, agree amongst themselves about the prices & rates of all workmen,

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, page 56.

laborers, & servants wages; & evry other pson, inhabiting in any towne, whether workeman, labo<sup>r</sup>er, or servant, shalbee bound to the same rates."

In the course of the next two years, the matter of wages was not improved, and at a general court, March 12, 1637-8, "Whereas there hath beene divers complaints made concerning oppsion in wages, in prizes of comodities, in excessive prizes for the worke of draughts & teames & the like to the great dishono<sup>r</sup> of God, the scandoll of the gosple & the greife of divers of Gods people," it was ordered that the matter be considered by Mr. Endecott, Mr. Winthrop, jr., Mr. Peters and others, who were to recommend to the next general court a remedy therefor. No report was made.

Governor Endecott, after the death of his wife in the spring of 1629, continued to mourn his loss until the arrival of the Winthrop fleet, when he first met or renewed his acquaintance with Mrs. Elizabeth Gibson of Cambridge, England. They were married Aug. 17th, the ceremony being performed by Governor Winthrop and Rev. John Wilson, who had been minister of Sudbury, in the mother country, and, having emigrated on the Arbella, become the minister of Boston.

Thomas Dexter, one of the first settlers of Lynn, who had obtained a release of the title to the peninsula of Nahant from the Indians, was frequently in trouble. He drank to excess, and was punished in the courts for assaults, insolent speeches and carriage toward others, even to Simon Bradstreet, then an assistant and afterwards governor. In March, 1632-3, he was heavily fined, set in the bilboes and disfranchised for speaking reproachful and seditious words against the government here. In the spring of 1631, Governor Endecott became so provoked at his insolence that he struck him. Dexter brought an action against him to recover damages for the assault. The case was tried before a jury in the court of assistants in Boston, and April 11th Governor Endecott started for Boston, by water, but was compelled by strong opposing winds to return. The next day, he wrote the following letter to Governor Winthrop:—<sup>1</sup>

Right Worshipful,

I did expect to have beene with you in perfon at the court, and to that end I put to sea yesterday, and was driven back againe, the wind being itiffe against us. And there being no canoe or boat at Saguft I must have beene contrained to goe to Miftick and thence about to Charlef town, which at this time I durft not be so bold, my bodie being at this present in an ill condition to wade or take cold, and therefore I defire you to pardon mee. Though otherwise I could have much de-

<sup>1</sup>Prince Society's Publications: Hutchinson's Papers, volume I, page 51 (55).



fired it by reason of many occasions and bufineffes. There are at Mr. Hewfon's plantations 5 or 6 kine verie ill and in great danger, I feer they will hardlie efcape it, whereof twoe are myne, and all I have, which are worfe than any of the reft. I left myne there this winter to doe Mr. Skelton a pleafure to keep his for him here at Salem, that he might have the benefit of their milk. And I underftand by Wincoll that they have been ill tended and he faith almoft ftarved. Befide they have fed on acornes and they cannot digeft them, for that they vomitt exceedingly and are fo bound in their bodies that he is faine to rake them and to ufe all his fkill to maintaine life in them. I have willed him to be there till he can bring them to fome ftrengh againe if it be poffible. And I have given him malt to make them mafhes of licoris and annis feeds, and long pepper, and fuch other things as I had to drench them. I could wifh when Manning hath recovered his ftrengh that you would free him; for he will never doe you or Mr. Hewfon fervice, for when he was well he was as negligent as the worft of them. Mr. Skelton, myfelfe and the reft of the congregation defire to be thankful to God and yourfelfe for your benevolence to Mr. Haughton's child. The Lord reftore it you. I prevailed with much adoe with Sir Richard for an old debt heere which he thought was desperate, to contribute it, which I hope I fhall make good for the child. I think Mr. Skelton hath written to you, whome he thinkes ftands moft in neede of contribution of fuch provifions as you will be pleafed to give amongst us of that which was fent over. The yeele potts you fent for are made which I had in my boatè, hoping to have brought them with mee. I caufed him to make but two for the prefent, if you like them and his prices (for he worketh for himfelfe) you fhall have as many as you defire. He felleth them for 4 fhillings a piece. Sir, I desired the rather to have beene at court becaufe I heare I am much complayned of by goodman Dexter, for ftriking him. I acknowledge I was too rafh in ftriking, underftanding fince that it is not lawful for a juftice to ftrike. But if you had feene the manner of his carriadge, with fuch daring of me with his armes on kembow &c. It would have provoked a very patient man. But I will write no more of it but leave it till we fpeak before you face to face. Only then farre further, that he hath given out if I had a purfe he would make me empty it, and if he cannot have juftice here he will doe wonders in England, and if he cannot prevale there, hee will trie it out with mee here at blowes. Sir, I defire that you will take all into confideration. If it were lawfull to trie it at blowes and hee a fitt man for mee to deale with, you fhould not heare mee complaine, but I hope the Lord hath brought mee off from that courfe. I thought good further to wryte what my judgment is for the difmiffing of the court till corne be fett. It will hinder us that are farre off exceedingly, and not further you there. Mens labour are precious here in corne fetting tyme, the plantations being yet fo weak. I will be with you, the Lord affifting mee, as foone as conveniently I can. In the meane while I committ you to his protection and fafeguard that never failes his children, and reft

Your unfeigned loving friend to command,

Salem, the 12th of April.

Jo: ENDECOTT.

1631.

The trial took place May 3d when the jury returned a verdict in favor of Dexter and assessed the damages at forty shillings.

It is interesting to notice how exigencies of circumstances cause the enactment of laws. Boats or canoes were so common among the dwellers in Salem and Charlestown that they were frequently taken to cross streams and left on the other side. At the first meeting of the assistants at Charlestown, Aug. 28, 1630, it was ordered that no person should use or take away any boat or canoe without leave of its owner, under penalty of a fine and imprisonment, at the discretion of the court.

Thomas Gray, a fisherman, probably the first inhabitant of Marblehead, was enjoined Sept. 28, 1630, by the court of assistants to appear before that body three weeks from that day to answer several complaints against him and to remove out of the patent before the end of the following March. Whether he appeared in the court at Boston on the day stated is unknown, but the court ordered that his "howse att Marble Harb<sup>r</sup> shalbe puld downe, & that noe Englishe man shall hereafter giue howseroome to him or intertaine him, vnder such penalty as the Court shall think meete to inflict." He continued to live in Marblehead, and in 1637 was possessed of considerable land there, having been granted thirty acres that year. The next year he was in court again, and "was censured to bee severely whiped, & the former execution of banishment to bee inflicted."<sup>1</sup> He continued to live in Marblehead, however, as late as 1654, at least. In 1639, he was censured, ordered to be severely whipped and fined five pounds "for being drunke, prophaning of the name of God, keeping a tipling house, & drawing his knife in the court."<sup>2</sup> He was generally in trouble. He was in court in Salem, March 31, 1640, when he was convicted of drunkenness; and in the court in Boston June 2 following, when he "was censured to bee severely whiped for his drunkennes & other misdemeano<sup>rs</sup> at Marbleheade, w<sup>ch</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Endecot tooke the care of by undertaking it." Gray petitioned the deputy-governor and magistrates to be forgiven and have his "fine" remitted, saying that he "was iustly fined & punished for a great offence in his passion committed by drawing his knife in the Court for w<sup>ch</sup> he hath bin very sorry & is much ashamed of it." This petition was drawn by Thomas Lechford, who practised law in Boston from 1638 to 1641; and Lechford notes that Gray afterwards behaved himself.<sup>3</sup> This was true only while Lechford

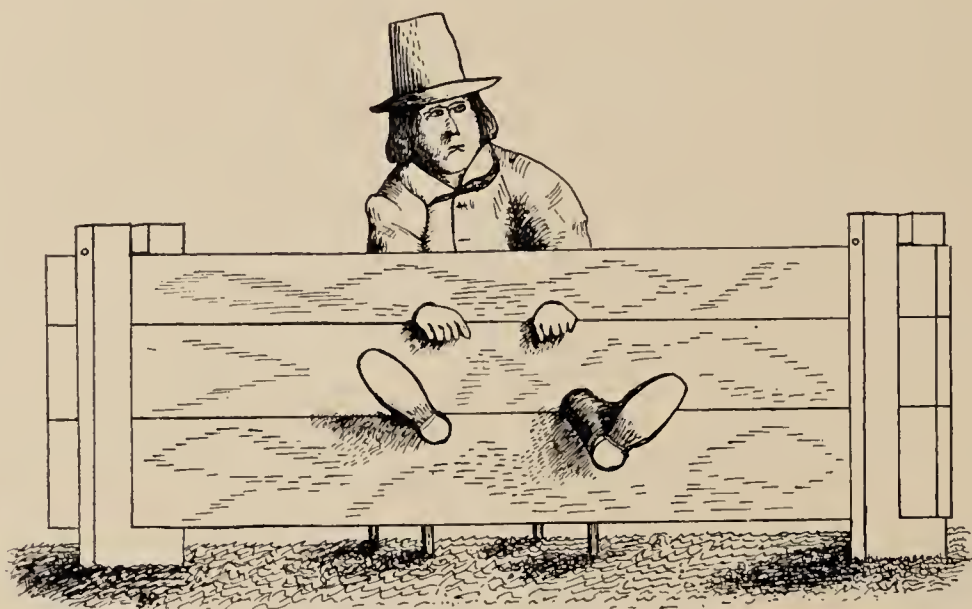
<sup>1</sup>In the court at Salem, March 27, 1638, he was sentenced to sit in the stocks two hours for misdemeanors.

<sup>2</sup>Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, volume I, page 270. On the same day (Sept. 3, 1639), in the same court, "Ralfe Warriner was fined 10<sup>s</sup> for being at excessive drinking at Thom: Grayes at Marble Heade"—*Records of Massachusetts Bay Colony, volume I, page 268.*

<sup>3</sup>Lechford's Note Book, page 148. See Plain Dealing.



remained in America. Feb. 1, 1641-2, he was again presented<sup>1</sup> in the court at Salem, but John Devereaux reported to the court that Gray was sick. In the same court Dec. 27th following, he was whipped for drunkenness; and the next year was sentenced to be whipped for being "overseen in drink." In 1647, he was evidently engaged in fishing. The following winter he had a fight with John Devereaux, but the court found that the latter was the person blamable.<sup>2</sup> In 1649, Gray was fined for being distempered with drink at Lynn.<sup>3</sup> In 1654, he was convicted of railing and drunkenness; and this time he found a friend in Edmond Batter of Salem, who became responsible for the payment of Gray's fine to save him from being whipped ten stripes.<sup>4</sup> For a quarter of a century he had made frequent appearances in the courts.



STOCKS.

At the court of assistants held at Charlestown Sept. 28, 1630, it was ordered "that John Goulworth shalbe whipped, and afterwards sett in the stocks, for ffellony comitted by him, whereof hee is convicted by his owne confession; also, that Henry Lyn shalbe whipped for the like offence, & John Boggust & John Pickryn to sitt in the stocks 4 howers togeath<sup>r</sup> att Salem, for being accessory therevnto." These parties were all of Salem, probably. John Boggust was living the next year, and John Pickering removed to Piscataqua River. John Goulworth did not re-appear, but Henry Lynn was in the court of assistants, at Boston, Sept. 6, 1631, when he was ordered to be whipped and banished from the plantation before the tenth of the next month "for writeing into

<sup>1</sup>Similar to indicted.

<sup>2</sup>Salem Quarterly Court records, June 11, 1649.

<sup>3</sup>Salem Quarterly Court records, Nov. 30, 1654.


<sup>4</sup>Essex County Quarterly Court Records and Files, volume 1, page 135.

England falsely & maliciously against the goum<sup>t</sup> & execucon of justice here."<sup>1</sup>

Stocks were, therefore, in existence at Salem at this early date.<sup>2</sup> They were located out of doors in or by the side of the central square or main thoroughfare, and near the most public building, as the meeting house and later the court house, where they would be most conspicuous. The last stocks to be used in Salem were probably located on the eastern side of the court house which stood in the middle of Washington Street, near Federal Street. The use of stocks here as a mode of punishment passed in or before the year 1805.

At a court of assistants, March 1, 1630-1, John Elford of Salem was alleged to be connected with the death of Thomas Puckett. With Roger Conant and John Woodbury, as sureties, Mr. Elford gave bond to appear at the court the succeeding November to answer for the death. Nothing more appears in the records about the matter, and probably this was the end of it. Mr. Elford lived in Salem as late as 1668, and was a man of property and standing.

The first case of whipping inflicted in Salem as a legal punishment is that of John Legg,<sup>3</sup> about twenty-one years of age, servant to John Humphrey, who, at the court of assistants, May 3, 1631, was ordered to be severely whipped on that day at Boston and afterward, as soon as conveniently may be, at Salem, for striking Richard Wright of Saugus, when the latter came to correct him for idleness in his master's work.



Commerce with the Indians was important and valuable. Its main object was to secure beaver pelts, as the demand for them was great. The profits derived from the sale of these and other furs was expressly reserved for seven years by the Massachusetts Bay Company at the time of the transfer of its government to New England. A certain price therefor was fixed, but apparently a direct or positive benefit to the Company was unrealized, and, Nov. 9, 1630, the court of assistants ordered that thereafter beaver should be sold freely and "euy man to make the best pffit & impruem<sup>t</sup>, of it that hee can."

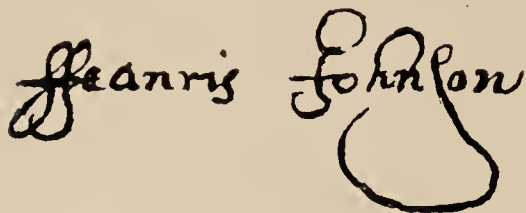
<sup>1</sup>A Henry Lynn was fined for absenting himself from training, at a court in Boston, Nov. 7, 1632.—*Massachusetts Bay Colony Records*.

<sup>2</sup>The town paid eleven shillings and sixpence for a pair of stocks Jan. 29, 1637-8.

<sup>3</sup>John Legg, born about 1609; lived in Marblehead; shoemaker and merchant; married Elizabeth —, who was born about 1608, and was his wife in 1672; he died in 1674; children: 1. Samuel; lived in Boston; captain, in 1690; 2. John, born about 1644; merchant; lived in Marblehead; colonel; died Oct. 8, 1717; had a family; 3. Daniel; died, unmarried, between 1672 and 1690.



When traffic in furs thus became free, a company was formed in Salem to engage in the trade at the eastward. The partners were Roger Conant, Peter Palfrey, Anthony Dike and Francis Johnson. They had a plantation and truck house on the eastern



coast. Mr. Johnson<sup>1</sup> was about twenty-two years old and the manager of the company and Mr. Dike<sup>2</sup> was master of the vessel, which was owned by the company and used in the prosecution of its affairs. Messrs. Conant and Palfrey, two of the old planters, were probably not actively engaged in the business.

Governor Endecott and several other men prepared certain stipulations to govern the general trade in beaver, and, in 1632, it was ordered that every planter here should pay to the court towards the defraying of public charges, twelve pence for every pound of beaver that he should trade with any Indian within the patent or beaver that he brought into the patent, having traded the same with any foreign Indian. It was also agreed that there should be a trucking house appointed in every plantation, whither the Indians might resort to trade, to avoid their coming to the houses.

Apparently, Francis Johnson was dissatisfied with this change in the law, and the next year after its passage sold his interest in the Salem company to Richard Foxwell of Blue Point,

<sup>1</sup>Francis Johnson, born about 1608; lived in Salem until 1648, when he bought a house and some land in Marblehead and removed thither; sold his homestead in Marblehead in 1666 and removed to Boston; married Hannah —; she was his wife in 1677; children, baptized in Salem: 1. Naomi, baptized April 1, 1638; 2. Ruth, baptized March 29, 1640; 3. Elizabeth, baptized April 24, 1642; 4. Francis, baptized June 16, 1644; 5. Samuel, baptized May 20, 1649; 6. Joane, baptized Oct. 5, 1651; 7. Sara, baptized Feb. 19, 1653.

<sup>2</sup>CAPT. ANTHONY DIKE<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem. He was once taken by the pirate Bull, but by some means escaped. In his Journal, Governor Winthrop records that Captain Dike, in a bark of thirty tons, was "cast away upon the head of Cape Cod. Three were starved to death with the cold; the other two got some fire and so lived there, by such food as they saved, seven weeks, till an Indian found them, &c." This was Dec. 15, 1638. In a severe snow storm with a northeast wind of great power, Captain Dike perished. His widow, Tabitha, married, secondly, Nathaniel Pickman in 1639. The children of Captain Dike were: 1. *Anthony*;<sup>2</sup> eldest son; 2. *Charity*;<sup>2</sup> married John Alford.

ANTHONY DIKE;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Margery —; died in 1679; she married, secondly, John Polin in 1680; children: 1. Anthony,<sup>3</sup> born March 24, 16—; tailor; in 1689 he removed to Ipswich, where he was living as late as 1702; married Sarah Davison of Ipswich; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 25, 1667; 3. Margery,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 16, 1669; 4. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born in 167—; 5. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born March 28, 1673; 6. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 22, 1679-80.

merchant. Mr. Johnson found a settlement with the company difficult, and the matter was in court for many years.<sup>1</sup>

At the general court held Sept. 8, 1636, the council or any two of them were given power to farm out the trade with the Indians in beaver and other furs to such persons as they considered meet, for the term of three years and for an annual rent to be paid to the treasurer, except that any person could barter furs with the

<sup>1</sup>A letter written by Mr. Johnson from Newtown May 6, 1635, is as follows:—

“Sirs:

“I doe advise att this passadge in that you shoulde writt me Concerninge 28½ li. of beauer paide Mr Shartt in full as alsoe a noate under his hande for the discharge of it butt he Cuming heather demands the some of me being disapoynted of the payment by you. now thes are to intreat you that if you haue nott made payment that you would do itt for I have Refterred nime to you in Regarde of your letter & have put it to your accompt thearfore I praye do nott delle soe ill with me as to disapoynt hime of his beaver thus intreatinge you not to faile me in the discharge of this I Rrest hee needs itt for Englande. if you haue not paide him 28½ li. to make itt so much

“yours to use

ffRANCES JOHNSON.

“Newtowne the  
6<sup>th</sup> maye 1635.”

—*Salem quarterly court files, volume III, leaf 82.*

Another letter written by Mr. Johnson, from Salem Feb. 12, 1635, is as follows:—

“Salem y<sup>e</sup> 12<sup>th</sup> of february 1635

“Sir:

“yo<sup>rs</sup> of the 5<sup>th</sup> of Decembr p m<sup>r</sup> Richard Tucker, as also beauer and otter the wch had taken wett so that I was forced to take some pains w<sup>th</sup> it, and coming to way it there wanted 3li. in the beauer and so the otter. so that I wonder at your ouersight in the waying or else in your stillyards, intearting you to take more care heareafter. I haue taken your bils of m<sup>r</sup> Allerton but not according to your writing, for unless I would pay him all he would not let me haue them being first in his hand so forced to doe that so that at present we had but 113li. of beauer so would intreat you to make supplie w<sup>th</sup> more so soone as you can for it would be very welcom unto us. for the other we ar not bid above 5s. p li. but yet keep it for a better market. In your letter you mention the payment of 28li. ½ of beauer to M<sup>r</sup> Shurt wch was more then his due by the price of 2 hogsheads of salt but I will speake to him about it wondring that you sent not a noat under his hand of the receipt of it, for m<sup>r</sup> Gardner will not accept of it untill a noat from him, so would intreat you to send it by the first, as also would intreat you to pay unto him for the same mans use the some of twenty pounds of beuer the w<sup>ch</sup> I haue promised shall be paid by you there, as also to cleer that bill of 70li. of beuer to m<sup>r</sup> Conit all wch I would intreat you not to faile I would have sent you an accompt of the whole but time will not pmit. concerning your being w<sup>th</sup> me I would be very willing to do you any good that lyes in my power. thus not else at p<sup>r</sup>sent I leave you and your affairs to god, I rest

“Your friend in what I may

“ffRANCIS JOHNSON.

“pray remember my loue  
“to y<sup>r</sup> wife.”

—*Ipswich quarterly court files, volume III, leaf 83.*



Indians for any other commodity that he might need. The next spring it was ordered that no person of the colony should trade out of the limits of the same with any Indian.

The membership of the Salem company was again changed by the death of Anthony Dike who was shipwrecked and frozen to death at Cape Cod in the terrible snow storm of Dec. 15, 1638. His widow, Tabitha, married, secondly, Nathaniel Pickman of Salem, house carpenter, in 1639; and he succeeded Captain Dike in the company. The business was continued but a few years longer, as there was at that time great disorder in the beaver trade here. At the general court, June 2, 1641, a commission, one member to be of Salem, was appointed to take sole charge of the matter of furs. The commission was to pay into the treasury one-twentieth part of all furs they traded, and had authority to make orders for its conduct.

The wild animals that were most troublesome and dangerous to the early settlers were wolves. As the number of domestic animals increased, the depredations of the wolves became correspondingly more frequent. In the autumn of 1630, they killed six calves in Salem; but the wolves were so wary that only one of their number was secured at the time. A bounty for the destruction of wolves was determined upon, and Nov. 9, 1630, the court of assistants ordered "that euy Englishe man that killeth a wolfe in any pte within the lymitts of this pattent shall haue allowed him 1<sup>d</sup> for euy beast & horse, & ob. for euy weaned swyne & goate in euy plantacon, to be leuied by the constables of the s<sup>a</sup> plantacons." This law was repealed a year later, as the wolves were so numerous that the payment of bounties became burdensome.

The general court, Sept. 4, 1632, ordered that Richard Waterman be paid by the colonial treasurer forty shillings for killing a wolf about two months previously in the Salem plantation.

Sept. 2, 1635, the general court passed a law giving a bounty from the colonial treasury of five shillings for each wolf and one shilling for every fox that was killed.

Governor Endecott evidently owned a dog to protect his animals from wolves, as John Sweet was fined and ordered to be imprisoned during the pleasure of the court, at the quarter court in Boston, June 6, 1637, for killing a wolf dog of "Colonel Endecott" in the latter's own yard. The fine of five pounds was subsequently remitted.

Nov. 20, 1637, the bounty was increased to ten shillings for wolves and two shillings for foxes; and March 13, 1638-9, it was wholly taken off. Great loss of domestic animals must have

followed this repeal, as Sept. 14, 1640, the town of Salem ordered that any man therein should have fifteen shillings for taking a wolf in the town and bringing it to the meeting house alive, and ten shillings for each wolf he killed. Oct. 4, 1640, it was "Ordered, that every man that kills a wolfe w<sup>th</sup> hounds shall have 40<sup>s</sup>, allowed him, & whosoever kills a wolfe w<sup>th</sup> trap, peece, or other engine, shall haue 10 allowed him, to be paid by the towne where the wolfe is killed, & if hee bee kiled out of any towne bounds it shalbee paid by the Treasurer." It was "further ordered, that such as shall keepe any hound, mastife, or gray hound, w<sup>ch</sup> shalbee ayding to the death of any such wolfe, shall not bee contributory to the recompence." This entire law was repealed June 2, 1641. Wolf-trap brook at Magnolia, in Manchester, is suggestive of the practice of trapping wolves. Pits or falls, as they were called, were also dug for this purpose. Records show one to have been in the lowland on Andover street, in Danvers, about halfway between Felton's corner and the railroad bridge.

Nov. 13, 1644, the general court ordered that a town should pay a bushel of Indian corn or three quarts of wine to an Indian for each wolf he killed within the town.

The destruction of cattle by wolves during that winter was very great, but the new law had such limited results that it was repealed. In its place it was provided that an Indian or Englishman should be paid from the colonial treasury ten shillings for killing a wolf within ten miles of any plantation in the colony.

In 1645, the town of Salem concluded to do something in the way of the destruction of wolves, and voted, Nov. 10th, that "halfe a dozen or 4 braches or hounds shall be brought out of England & the chardges born by the town." Oct. 18, 1648, it was also "ordered, that the select men of every towne shall & hereby have power giuen them to purchase or pcure of the townes stock so many hounds as they think meete, & to impose the keeping of them on such as they thinke fittest, that so all meanes may be impved for the destruction of wolves, and that no other dogs shall be kept in any towne but such as the select men shall see meete; no magistrate is to have any hound imposed upon him nor any dog taken from him, without his consent." At the same court, it was provided that every inhabitant of the colony, English or Indian, an Englishman should be paid thirty shillings, and an Indian twenty. In either case, ten shillings were to be paid from the colonial treasury, and the balance from the town where the wolf was killed. For proof, the head of the animal was delivered to the constable who buried the same.

Swine were provocative of more contentions and passage of laws than any other of the domestic animals in Salem in the early days. The first law was passed by the general court May 3, 1631,



by which all swine found in the corn of any person other than the owner of the animals were forfeited to the public and their value applied to the damages they had done, the owner of the animals paying the balance, if any. After March 1, 1632-3, the owner of swine which had damaged the corn of another person was required to pay the damages. July 2d following, it was ordered that any man might kill any swine that came into his corn, the owner of the animal to have its body, first paying for the damage.

Not only were swine injurious in cornfields, but also among flakes on which fish were drying at the stages they were equally harmful. In the spring of 1633, it was ordered that if any swine, in fishing time, should come within a fourth of a mile of the stage of Marble Harbor and other stages they should be forfeited to the owners of the stage.<sup>1</sup>

November 5th of that year, corn that was fit for human consumption was forbidden to be fed to swine; and it was also ordered that each plantation agree upon the number of swine any person might keep about the settlement, winter and summer.

All laws relating to swine were repealed May 14, 1634, and each town was to make its own rules about them, but owners of swine remained responsible for damages done by these animals in other towns.

There was need of a proper place to keep the swine which were found doing damage, and July 8, 1635, the general court ordered that each plantation should make a pound for the express purpose of securing swine found in any cornfield. This was the "pund" of the Anglo-Saxons, a public enclosure, some thirty or forty feet square, surrounded with a high fence or wall. Salem built its pound at once, on the southerly side of Town House Square. A pound keeper, as he was called, was chosen by each town to have charge of the pound and custody of the animals impounded, feeding and watering them. This was usually some man living in the vicinity. Subsequently, several varieties of domestic animals became subjects for the pound.

Reproaching or finding fault with any person for seizing or killing any swine according to law or resistance to the taking and the driving the animals to the pound or illegally taking them from the pound, "pund breche," as the Anglo-Saxons called it, was a criminal offence.<sup>2</sup> In those days, men spoke and acted freely and occasionally appeared in court to answer complaints of this kind.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 104. This was the stage in the South field probably.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 238.

<sup>3</sup>Mr. Thomas Scruggs was fined five shillings for a pound breach in 1636, and George Harris five shillings, in the Salem quarterly court, Sept. 24, 1639, for stopping the poundage of swine.

Notice of impounding was given to the owner of the animals, if he could be ascertained, otherwise it was announced at the next lecture. If the owner did not satisfy the damage and costs or the swine were not claimed within three days thereafter the owner of the corn had the animals appraised and sold, and from the proceeds retained double damages. This order extended to farms, but not to unfenced parcels of corn of an acre or less, planted remote from the town. The owner of the corn might kill the swine, if they could not be impounded, and of the net proceeds of the sale of the pork retain the amount of the damages and pay the balance, if any, to the owner of the animals. If the swine escaped from the pound, the owner became liable for damages.

Sept. 3, 1635, the general court ordered that the owner of the animals should pay twelve pence apiece, in addition to the damages and charges of keeping, for each swine taken without a keeper within a mile of any plantation or on farms improved by tillage, to the one who impounded them. Swine so taken were cried at the next two lectures, and if not claimed within three days thereafter, the impounder had them appraised and sold, and delivered the surplus of the proceeds of the sale into court.

Great damage by swine going at liberty was sustained every year; and it was ordered Oct. 26, 1636, that any swine found abroad out of the owner's inclosure or off his island, unless some person had them in restraint, by a line or otherwise should be accounted wild swine, and any man could take them, alive or dead. Each town was obliged to choose annually a discreet person, called the "hogreeve," who should seize all such swine, and account for all that were seized by others. All other laws relating to swine were repealed. Swine that were ringed had more liberty, as a ring in the snout of a hog prevented it from rooting, which was apparently one of the principal objections to a stray.

March 9, 1636-7, it was ordered that all swine be kept in yards or on islands, or committed to keepers, under penalty of ten shillings for each animal, and if they were taken in corn or in a meadow five shillings each should be forfeited to the impounder and double damages paid. If the swine could not be impounded, it was lawful to kill them.

After Nov. 20, 1637, each town made all orders for preventing harm done by swine in corn, meadow, pasture or garden, and had authority to impose reasonable penalties. The town paid the damages and recovered the amount from the owner. If swine in one town trespassed into another town, through lack of a ring or yoke, the town in which they belonged paid the fine. Pursuant to this authority, the town of Salem ordered, March 31, 1638, that all swine should go under keepers or be kept up; otherwise they could be impounded, but before they could be released, the owner



of the swine had to pay the damages and also two shillings and sixpence to the impounder.

Sept. 6, 1638, the general court ordered that any swine found within two miles of a meeting house (except on the premises of its owner), without a sufficient keeper, or found within another's cornfield, garden or pasture was forfeited.

Swineherds were appointed by the town to take swine to feeding grounds and care for them. The animals fed upon acorns, grubs, roots, etc.

In a new government there are many things that have to be provided for as exigencies arise. One of the early regulations in this colony was that governing weights and measures. At the general court held May 18, 1631, it was ordered that each plantation should provide common measures and weights, to be made according to some that the governor had sealed, and all measures and weights must conform to this standard. The kinds of measures thus standardized were not defined by law until 1635, when it was ordered that dry measures should consist of a bushel and peck; weights, one, two, four, seven and fourteen pounds, half a pound and quarter of a pound; and the measure of length to be a "meate" yard, all to be made according to the standard in Boston and sealed by the marshall there.

Rev. Hugh Peter obtained weights and a beam and scales for the town of Salem in 1637, and was paid six pounds therefor.

The following winter, the general court ordered that the marshall of Boston should notify the constables of the several towns in the colony to require the inhabitants to bring their measures and weights at a certain time and place, to have them sealed by the marshall from Boston, with the help of the constable, according to the standards the marshall had with him, and if any change was necessary, a cooper, whom the marshal was ordered to take with him, was to make measures even. When they were correct, the marshal placed his seal upon them. For his service he was allowed two pence for every measure and a penny for every weight or yard that was inaccurate, to be paid by the owner. If any weight or measure was so defective that it could not be corrected, the marshal broke or defaced it. It was also provided that if anyone sold goods by unsealed weights or measures, he should be punished at the discretion of the court.

In 1640, William Lord, the constable, was ordered to keep the weights and measures in Salem.<sup>1</sup> In 1646, the town ordered that the weights and measures be brought to the marshall for sealing. Inventories of estates of deceased persons of this early time, in Salem, show that a number of the families had wooden

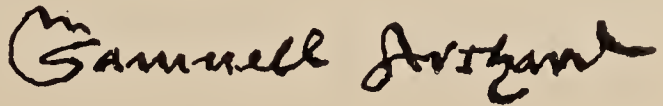
<sup>1</sup>Quarterly court records, July 1, 1640.

measures though scales and measures of length and liquid measures were scarce. The wooden measures thus early mentioned were pecks and some smaller sizes, but rarely other kinds.

In 1647, the general court ordered that the auditor-general provide, for dry measures, a bushel, half bushel, peck and half peck; for liquid measures, an ale quart, a wine pint and one-half pint; for measures of length an ell and a yard; and for weights a set made of brass, sixteen ounces to the pound, and with proper scales having steel beams. The constables were also ordered to procure, at their town's expense, for the standards in each town, similar weights and measures and have them tested by the country's standard and sealed by the auditor-general. One of the constables, chosen by the selectmen and constables, was the sealer in each town. He had to be sworn into his office at the county court. In April of each year he issued a warrant to the inhabitants to bring to him all such measures and weights that they used. He was paid one penny for each original sealing, and nothing for each repetition as long as they continued to be accurate. The sealer was required to deface all weights and measures that were defective and could not be made to conform to the standard.

Of the immigrants who came at this time (about 1630), Capt. John Smith wrote: "Those which are gone within this eightene moneths for Cape Anne, and the Bay of the Massachusetts; those which are their chiefe undertakers are Gentlemen of good estate, some of 500, some a thousand pound land a yeere, all which they say they will sell for the advancing this harmlesse and pious work; men of good credit and well-beloued in their Country, not such as flye for debt, or any scandal at home, and are good Catholike Protestants according to the reformed Church of England, if not, it is well they are gone: the rest of them men of good meanes, or Arts, Occupations, and Qualities, much more fit for such a bussinesse, and better furnished of all necessities if they arrive well, than was ever any Plantation went out of England."<sup>1</sup>

One of the immigrants to the colony who came at this time and settled in Salem was Samuel Archer.<sup>2</sup> He was the ancestor of a long and useful



<sup>1</sup>Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, etc., by Capt. John Smith, London, 1631, page 2.

<sup>2</sup>SAMUEL ARCHER<sup>1</sup> (Archard); carpenter; marshall from 1649 until his death, in 1667; married Susanna — (he was called father of Thomas Tuck in 1652); she survived him, and married, secondly, Richard Hutchinson; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> born in 1632; married Matthew Dove; 2. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born in 1634-5; 3. John,<sup>2</sup> born in 1638; 4. Bethiah,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 14, 1642; unmarried in 1673.

SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>2</sup> house carpenter; married Hannah Osgood of Andover May 21, 1660; she was living in 1706, and he in 1717; children:



line of descendants in Salem. Many of them were mechanics, and

1. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1668; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1670; 3. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 28, 1672; died young; 4. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1673; 5. *Stephen*,<sup>3</sup> baptized March —, 1677; 6. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized March —, 1677; married Nicholas Jeffries; 7. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 27, 1679; 8. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. —, 1682; 9. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 26, 1685. JOHN ARCHER;<sup>2</sup> cooper; married Bethiah Weeks in 166— (Matthew Woodwell called him "son" in 1669); she was living in 1684; he died in 1693; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 13, 1664; mariner; died, unmarried, Dec. —, 1700; 2. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> born March 12, 1665-6; 3. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 10, 1668; married Samuel Very; 4. Bethiah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 23, 1668; married Samuel Waters; 5. Thomas, baptized July 2, 1671; potter; died, unmarried, in or before 1703; 6. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. —, 1675; living in 1707; 7. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 22, 1679; died young; 8. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1682; married — Barker before 1707; 9. Sarah;<sup>3</sup> married — Verrin before 1707.

JONATHAN ARCHER;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer, mariner, yeoman, truckman or carman; married Abigail (Mancy), widow of Hilliard Williams Nov. 8, 1699; she died Oct. 8, 1738; he died July 16, 1746; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born May —, 1702; died young; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 22, 1703; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born July 10, 1705; died Aug. 4, 1705; 4. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 2, 1707; 5. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born April 17, 1710; 6. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 17, 1711; married, first, Capt. John Elkins; second, Capt. William Brown. STEPHEN ARCHER;<sup>3</sup> married Sarah Hodges Oct. 14, 1697; she was his widow in 1737 and 1761; child: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born June 24, 1698; married Benjamin Masury. BENJAMIN ARCHER;<sup>3</sup> cooper; married Sarah Neal July 13, 1693; died in 170—; she married, second, Gilbert Tapley; and, third, — Wilkins, and lived in Boston; children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> 2. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> 3. Sarah;<sup>4</sup> married John Swasey; 4. Josiah.<sup>4</sup>

JONATHAN ARCHER;<sup>4</sup> coaster; married Abigail Allen Jan. 30, 1728-9; died in 1756; she died, his widow, Sept. 29, 1791; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 23, 1729; died young; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 13, 1730; died young; 3. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 13, 1730; tailor; married Bethiah Dod Sept. 4, 1761; was living in 1787; 4. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 22, 1732; 5. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 31, 1734; coaster in 1770; 6. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 9, 1736; married Israel Ober; 7. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 7, 1738; married Benjamin Knights; 8. Bethiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 8, 1740-1; married John Ward. SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>4</sup> wig and peruke maker; married Dorothy Ropes June 26, 1741; died in 1765; she died in 1794; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> born April 1, 1742; 2. —<sup>5</sup> (son), born Jan. 5, 1744; probably died young; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born July 4, 1748; died July 30, 1748; 4. John,<sup>5</sup> born June 14, 1751; trader; lived in Falmouth, Me., in 1782. NATHANIEL ARCHER;<sup>4</sup> cooper; married, first, Hannah Cook Aug. 2, 1733; she died May 21, 1767; married, second, Hannah (Hodges), widow of Samuel Ives April 3, 1768; died June 10, 1772; she was his widow in 1798; children: 1. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born March 21, 1734; 2. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 8, 1736; married Benjamin Browne; 3. *Stephen*,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 5, 1738; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 22, 1740; blind from infancy; never married; *non compos mentis*; lived in Andover and with her sister Hannah; was living in 1789; 5. *George*,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 10, 1742; 6. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 18, 1744; married Issacher Woodbury June 15, 1769; 7. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 13, 1746; 8. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 20, 1748; married Andrew Canibell; lived in New Gloucester, Me.; 9. Benjamin, born Dec. 1, 1750; laborer; died, unmarried, July 4, 1787. JOHN ARCHER;<sup>4</sup> shoreman, cordwainer and fisherman; married Rebecca Bickford Feb. 6, 1722; died in 1754; she died, his widow, in 1763; children: 1. *John*,<sup>5</sup> born in 1733; 2. Benjamin;<sup>5</sup> living in 1763; 3. Thomas;<sup>5</sup> living in 1763; 4. Sarah;<sup>5</sup> unmarried in 1817; 5. Bethiah;<sup>5</sup> unmarried in 1794; 6. Rebecca;<sup>5</sup> married

a considerable number of them mariners and fishermen. Others

Woolman Sutton. BENJAMIN ARCHER;<sup>4</sup> mariner; lived in Rowley until he removed to Boxford in 1715, and returned to Salem in 1721; married, first, Anna Bridges Jan. 15, 1710-1; second, Sarah Massey April 12, 1722; died in the spring of 1724; wife Sarah married, secondly, George Dean; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 3, 1712, in Rowley; 2. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 11, 1714-5, in Rowley; 3. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 4, 1716, in Boxford; died young; 4. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> born March 7, 1717-8, in Boxford; 5. Josiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. —, 1719-20, in Boxford.

JONATHAN ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> peruke maker; married, first, Bethiah Very (published March 13, 1756); and, second, Elizabeth Silsbee July 11, 1773; died Aug. 28, 1797; wife Elizabeth survived him, and was deceased the next year; children: 1. *Jonathan*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 9, 1757; 2. Bethiah,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 21, 1758; lived with her stepmother in 1796; 3. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 8, 1761; married Elisha Gunnerson July 27, 1784; 4. *James*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1762; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> living in 1789; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> hairdresser; living in 1789; 7. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born in 1768; married William Millet. SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> peruke maker and merchant; married, first, Mary Woodwell Aug. 31, 1762; she died Aug. 31, 1812; married, second, Mary Buffington May 13, 1813; died Oct. 19, 1825; she died, his widow, May 29, 1846; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 25, 1763; 2. John Woodwell,<sup>6</sup> born April 1, 1765; died Feb. 7, 1782; 3. William,<sup>6</sup> born April 2, 1767; 4. George,<sup>6</sup> born April 27, 1773; died Aug. 2, 1790; 5. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born April 1, 1776; died Sept. 29, 1796; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born March 1, 1779; died Aug. 8, 1780; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born July 9, 1783; died Dec. 2, 1802. NATHANIEL ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> fisherman; married Hannah Cheever March 30, 1760; she was living in 1775; he died in Norway, Me., July 12, 1825; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> mariner; living in 1808; 2. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> married Thomas Bowlin (or Boland); 3. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> married Henry Rust June 19, 1785; 4. Margaret,<sup>6</sup> married John Millet of Salem (published June 4, 1791). STEPHEN ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> married Sarah Pickering June 11, 1766; was dead in 1793; she was his widow in 1796; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1798; 2. Stephen,<sup>6</sup> died, unmarried, in or before 1796; 3. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Mary Alley March 3, 1796; 4. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> married Amos Foster. GEORGE ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> mariner; had been long absent and supposed to be dead in 1772; married Martha Needham Dec. 16, 1764; she married, secondly, Nathaniel Goyet Webb; children: 1. *George*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1765; 2. John,<sup>6</sup> born in 1768; mariner; lived in Craven, S. C., in 1792, and returned to Salem the next year; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born about March, 1771; master-mariner; married Sally Beckford Nov. 2, 1794; he was living in 1817; she died, his widow, Oct. 25, 1844. JONATHAN ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> peruke maker, tanner, trader and yeoman; conducted an inn on Union Street, and in the Revolution an office for shipping seamen on privateers; taught navigation; married Mehitable Kimball Nov. 3, 1772; she died first; he died in 1800; children: 1. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> master-mariner; died, probably unmarried, while residing in Liverpool, England, in 1806; 2. Andrew,<sup>6</sup> tanner; lived in Fairfield, Me.; married Abigail Brown Sept. 24, 1806; 3. Mehitable,<sup>6</sup> living in 1806; 4. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1806; 5. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1806; 6. Henry,<sup>6</sup> born in 1789; shipmaster; died March 28, 1848. CAPT. JOHN ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> coaster, fisherman, mariner and shoreman; married Elizabeth Norris June 28, 1758; she died April 3, 1814; he died Sept. 18, 1819; children: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> born in 1758; cabinet maker and housewright; probably never married; died, by an accident, Dec. 27, 1829; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1781; 3. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> living in 1829; 4. *Edward*.<sup>6</sup> JONATHAN ARCHER;<sup>6</sup> peruke maker, barber and, later, trader; married Rachel Woodman (published Nov. 10, 1781); she died in 18—; he died May 27, 1842; children: 1. Rachel,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 20, 1782; married William Ropes; 2. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born in 1785; seaman; married Mary M. Martin Sept. 1, 1811; died Sept. 12, 1841; she died Dec. 4, 1881; 3. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born July 18, 1787;



of them engaged in various other occupations that were necessary

married Capt. John Ropes; 4. Sarah;<sup>7</sup> married Robert Brookhouse Oct. 11, 1812; 5. Hannah;<sup>7</sup> married John Lefavour Jan. —, 1810; 6. Elizabeth;<sup>7</sup> married Benjamin Foster Nov. 3, 1816; 7. Lydia;<sup>7</sup> married Nathaniel Griffin Dec. 10, 1821; 8. *William*;<sup>7</sup> 9. John,<sup>7</sup> born in 1796; shipchandler; married Abigail B. Woodward Nov. 6, 1823; she died Jan. 26, 1868; he died March 5, 1884. JAMES ARCHER;<sup>6</sup> cordwainer and mariner; married Elizabeth Archer Feb. 17, 1787; she died first; he died March 7, 1841; children: 1. James;<sup>7</sup> living in 1841; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 15, 1789; married Samuel West. SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>6</sup> trader; married Sarah Woodbury Nov. 16, 1788; died June 13, 1815; she died Aug. 15, 1832; children: 1. John Woodwell;<sup>7</sup> bookseller; removed to Illinois in 1838; married Deborah H. Little of Beverly (published Sept. 22, 1821); living in Illinois in 1850; 2. *Samuel H.*;<sup>7</sup> born in 1796; 3. Elizabeth Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born in 1796; died, unmarried, Dec. 26, 1849. CAPT. GEORGE ARCHER;<sup>6</sup> master-mariner; married Judith Hathorne March 2, 1792; died Dec. —, 1799, on his passage from Hamburg; she was his widow in 1817; children: 1. George,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. —, 1793; sea-captain; married Eliza Osborn Aug. 24, 1817; died at Oswego, N. Y., June 23, 1833; 2. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> baptized Sept. 21, 1794; living in 1801; 3. Judith,<sup>7</sup> baptized July 3, 1796; died March 14, 1801; 4. Caroline,<sup>7</sup> baptized Nov. 18, 1798; living in 1801. EDWARD ARCHER;<sup>6</sup> married Elizabeth Phippen; died in 18—; she died, his widow, May 25, 1866, aged ninety-three; children: 1. Edward,<sup>7</sup> born about 1803; died July 9, 1826; 2. Sarah;<sup>7</sup> living in 1814; 3. *Rufus Phippen*,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 30, 1812.

WILLIAM ARCHER;<sup>7</sup> trader; married Elizabeth Daniels Oct. 8, 1815; died in 18—; she died, his widow, Aug. 31, 1879; children: 1. *William*,<sup>8</sup> born July 27, 1816; 2. Lucy C.,<sup>8</sup> born in 18—; married Ebenezer Tucker of Lynn Sept. 19, 1847; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>8</sup> born April 26, 1820. SAMUEL H. ARCHER;<sup>7</sup> schoolmaster; married Zervia Fidelia Worcester Oct. 21, 1823; died Dec. 27, 1838; she died, his widow, March 29, 1884; children: 1. Fidelia W.,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 26, 1824; died, unmarried, Feb. 11, 1865; 2. Mary Jane,<sup>8</sup> born in 1829; died, unmarried, Aug. 16, 1853; 3. S. E.,<sup>8</sup> (daughter), born about 1826; died Sept. 22, 1829. RUFUS PHIPPEN ARCHER;<sup>7</sup> cooper; married Elizabeth Dennis Sept. 2, 1841; she died Nov. 16, 1886; he died Feb. 7, 1909, aged ninety-seven; children: 1. Laura A.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1842; married Albert W. Brown; 2. Lizzie D.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1844; married George H. Kimball; 3. Benjamin M.,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 2, 1849; died May 29, 1852; 4. *Charles E.*,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 17, 1851.

WILLIAM ARCHER;<sup>8</sup> auctioneer and jeweler; married, first, Mary O. Glover (published July 10, 1842); she died Sept. 9, 1860; married, second, Mary J. Brown of Charlestown; died Dec. 31, 1874; she died, his widow, Jan. 18, 1911; children: 1. William A.,<sup>9</sup> born in 1843; died Dec. 31, 1845; 2. Rufus P.,<sup>9</sup> born about 1845; married Emeline P. Goodrich of Beverly May 21, 1868; she died May 26, 1915; no issue probably; 3. Benjamin,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. —, 1846; 4. Mary Elizabeth,<sup>9</sup> born in 1846; married Francis Perley Preston; 5. Sarah S.,<sup>9</sup> born May 28, 1849; died April 13, 1857. SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>8</sup> machinist; married Elizabeth S. Wellington Feb. 3, 1842; died April 17, 1871; she died, his widow, June 14, 1900; children: 1. William Henry,<sup>9</sup> born June 10, 1842; married Mary E. Frost; she died Dec. 23, 1876; he died at the soldiers' home, in Togus, Me., Jan. 29, 1900; 2. Samuel A.,<sup>9</sup> born May —, 1846; died Dec. 25, 1847; 3. Samuel A.,<sup>9</sup> born March 11, 1848; died by an accident June 20, 1866; 4. Ellen E.,<sup>9</sup> born May 4, 1851; died in Charlestown Aug. 11, 1852. CHARLES E. ARCHER;<sup>8</sup> teamster and butcher; married, first, Sarah Elizabeth Hayford Dec. 15, 1870; she died Jan. 14, 1901; married, second, Mary A. Beckford July 29, 1914; children: 1. *Charles Asa*,<sup>9</sup> born May 22, 1871; 2. Nellie Maud,<sup>9</sup> born July 13, 1875; 3. Anna Gertrude,<sup>9</sup> born June 17, 1877.

to the life and prosperity of the community. William Ager<sup>1</sup>  
*William Ager* (Eager) was also in the colony as

early as 1631, perhaps living  
 in Salem at that time. Jeffrey  
 Massey<sup>2</sup> appeared in Salem in 1630, having probably immigrated  
 that year.

*Jeffrey Massey*

CHARLES ASA ARCHER;<sup>9</sup> cashier; married Ella B. Martin of Lynn July 2, 1894; child: 1. Russell H.<sup>10</sup>, born July 23, 1897.

<sup>1</sup>WILLIAM AGER<sup>1</sup> (Eager); married Alice —; died in 1654; she survived him; children: 1. Joseph;<sup>2</sup> away from home in 1654; 2. Benjamin,<sup>2</sup> baptized Feb. 12, 1636-7; 3. Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 10, 1639; 4. Abigail;<sup>2</sup> married Arthur Kibben.

BENJAMIN AGER;<sup>2</sup> married Ann Cromwell; died in 1671; she married, secondly, David Phippen; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 7, 1671; 2. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 7, 1671; died before July 8, 1689, without issue. JONATHAN AGER;<sup>2</sup> shipwright; married Rebecca Hide June 27, 1661; died in 1717; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born July 27, 1662; married Robert Stone; 2. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 25, 1664; died young; 3. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized "at age" April 5, 1705; married Elias Langsford; 4. Richard;<sup>3</sup> shipwright; lived in Weymouth in 1718; 5. William,<sup>3</sup> baptized May —, 1692; died young.

BENJAMIN AGER;<sup>3</sup> shipwright; married Ann Phippen; died in the winter of 1690-1; she was his widow, in 1714; child: 1. Daniel;<sup>4</sup> living in 1689.

<sup>2</sup>JEFFREY MASSEY<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; planter; married Ellen —; died Nov. 9, 1676; she survived him three years or more; child: 1. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 1631, in Salem.

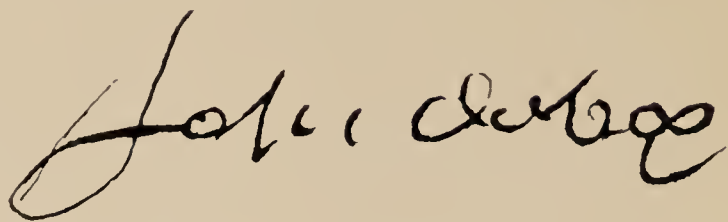
JOHN MASSEY;<sup>2</sup> husbandman and innholder; married Sarah Wells April 27, 1658; she was living in 1705; he died about 1709; children: 1. Jeffrey,<sup>3</sup> born May 14, 1664; tailor; removed to Gloucester about 1700; married Martha Augur of Gloucester Nov. 9, 1700; she was his wife in 1707; he died there about 1716; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 6, 1665; ferryman or waterman; living in 1739, when his nephew was to support him "handsomely" by the terms of the will of John's brother Nathaniel; 3. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 5, 1667; died Dec. 19, 1667; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born July 25, 1669; married Miles Ward; 5. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 26, 1671; married, first, Hilliard Williams; and, second, Jonathan Archer; 6. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born March 22, 1672-3; died Nov. 21, 1673; 7. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> baptized March —, 1677; 8. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born about 1679.

THOMAS MASSEY;<sup>3</sup> married, first, Abigail Williams Jan. 3, 1698; she was his wife in 1715; married, second, Mary Williams in or before 1717; she was his wife in 1730, when he was living; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. —, 1699; married Benjamin Archer; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 3, 1702; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born July 13, 1704; died young; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born May 15, 1707; 5. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 17, 1717; 6. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born May 1, 1720; 7. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 8, 1722; married Samuel Blyth. NATHANIEL MASSEY;<sup>3</sup> cooper; married Rebecca Tompkins Nov. 4, 1708; she died Jan. 19, 1735; he died Oct 15, 1739; children: 1. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born July 18, 1709; cordwainer; lived in Tolland, Conn.; married Rachel Mackmallin Nov. 23, 1740; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 31, 1712; 3. Daniel,<sup>4</sup> born July 28, 1714; 4. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born June 25, 171—; 5. Rebecca,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 14, 171—; probably died before 1739.

JOHN MASSEY;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer and innholder; married Jane Vining Feb. 15, 1732-3; died in 1740; she married, secondly, Elias Hart of Lynn Aug. 16, 1752; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> born June 23, 1734; truckman and cooper; married



John Devereaux<sup>1</sup> evidently came to Salem in 1630. He was a mariner and fisherman, and only a boy of fifteen at this time. The Devereaux farm and beach perpetuate his name in Marblehead.



Those who had the greatest interest in the success of the Massachusetts Bay Colony sought, in every way, to keep out undesirable persons; and at a meeting of the assistants, Sept. 7, 1630, it was voted that no person should plant within the patent without leave of the governor and assistants. This law was, probably, principally directed to the prohibition of new plantations made without such permission. Subsequently, the inhabitants of towns voted to receive or reject proposed citizens; and May 17, 1637, the general court ordered that no stranger should be received or entertained above six weeks without due license. This practice was continued for many years.

It is evident that the leading men of the colony did not intend to lose any of the planters by removal to any other settlement or return to England, as June 14, 1631, the court ordered that no person should travel out of this patent, by land or sea, without leave from the governor, deputy governor or some other assistant.

An account of Thomas Morton and of his May-day doings at Mount Wollaston has been given already. Subsequently, a man, who styled himself Sir Christopher Gardiner, incurred the dis-

Jane Phillips<sup>5</sup> of Lynn Nov. 27, 1766; died before April 6, 1767; 2. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 30, 1736-7; lived in Lynn; died in the summer of 1787; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 10, 1739. DANIEL MASSEY;<sup>4</sup> ferryman; married Abigail —; they were living in 1747; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 16, 1734; living in 1741; 2. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 25, 1736; living in 1741; 3. Deborah,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 21, 1738; living in 1740; 4. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> born July 3, 1741; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 24, 1743; 6. Rebecca,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 8, 1745; 7. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 13, 1747. SAMUEL MASSEY;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Mary Reid June 23, 1735; they were living in 1749; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born March 9, 1735; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 19, 1738; 3. Aaron,<sup>5</sup> born April 18, 1741; 4. —<sup>5</sup> (son), baptized Jan. 5, 1743; 5. Bartholmew,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1745; 6. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1747.

<sup>1</sup>JOHN DEVEREAUX, born about 1615; mariner and fisherman; lived in Salem until 1659, when he purchased the Peter grant in Marblehead, and removed thither, becoming a yeoman; married Ann — before 1664; she was born in 1621; he died in the spring of 1695; she was his widow in 1708; children: 1. Mary, baptized in Salem May 18, 1641; 2. Bethiah, baptized in Salem Nov. 30, 1643; married John Bartlett; 3. John; lived in Marblehead; 4. Anne, born about 1647; married — Nicholls; 5. Humphrey; married Elizabeth —; died in 1690; she was his widow in 1693; 6. Hannah; married, first, Peter Greenfield; second, Joseph Swett; 7. Robert; cordwainer, tanner and yeoman; married Hannah Blaney; lived in Marblehead; 8. Emma, born about 1656; married William Peach.

pleasure of the Bay colonists, and escaped to England. Both of these men endeavored to stir up the people against the New England government, and while they were thus engaged an incident occurred in Salem which furnished new material for Morton's critical pen.

Among the servants sent with the colonists by Governor Cradock was Philip Ratcliffe, who was an Episcopalian. He had charge of the business and other servants of Governor Cradock in the colony, and had sold some goods to one of the colonists. When payment therefor became due, Ratcliffe was sick, and instead of the beaver he was to receive there was delivered to him a letter, suggesting that as he was sick he might find it more profitable to attend to the welfare of his soul rather than to "transitory things that perished with the body, and to bethinke himselfe whether his conscience would be so prompt to demaund so greate a somme of Beaver as had bin contracted for." The reading of this letter led Ratcliffe to say: "Are these your members? if they be all like these, I believe the Devil was the setter of their church."<sup>1</sup> He also made some "malicious and scandalous speeches" against the colonial government.<sup>2</sup>

In his *New English Canaan*, Morton implies that this debt was contracted for the purpose of getting into some trouble with Ratcliffe and forcing him out of the colony, and probably when the chance for getting rid of him and his claim by banishment came, the debtor found it easy to publish the speeches, which the churches regarded as blasphemous. Complaint was duly made against the offending creditor, and he was sentenced, as Morton says, to have his tongue bored through, his nose slit, his face branded, his ears cut, his body whipped in every plantation in the Bay Colony, and to be fined forty pounds and be banished.<sup>1</sup> Through the interference of Sir Christopher Gardiner with Governor Winthrop, the boring of the tongue, slitting of the nose, and branding of his face was remitted;<sup>1</sup> and so the sentence appears on the record of the court held in Boston June 14, 1631, that he "shalbe whipped, haue his eares cutt of, fyned 40<sup>l</sup>, & banished out of y<sup>e</sup> lymitts of this iurisdiccon."<sup>2</sup> Morton, in his *New English Canaan*, devotes the whole of chapter twenty-five to this incident, as follows:—

There was an honest man, one M<sup>r</sup> Innocence Fairecloath, by M<sup>r</sup> Mathias Charterparty sent over into New Canaan, to raife a very good marchantable commodity for his benefit; for, whiles the man was bound by covenant to stay for a time, and to imploy such fervants as did there belong to M<sup>r</sup> Charterparty, hee defdained the tenents of the Seperatists

<sup>1</sup>*New English Canaan*, by Thomas Morton, Amsterdam, 1637, page 168.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 88.



and they also, (finding him to be none) disdained to be employed by a carnall man, (as they termed him) and fought occasion against him, to doe him a mischeife. Intelligence was conveyed to M<sup>r</sup> Charterparty that this man was a member of the Church of England, and therefore, (in their account,) an enemy to their Church and state. And, (to the end they might have some colour against him,) some of them practised to get into his debte, which hee, not mistrusting, suffered, and gave credit for such Commodity as hee had sold at a price. When the day of payment came, instead of monyes, hee, being at that time sick and weake and stood in neede of the Beaver hee had contracted for, hee had an Epistle full of zealous exhortations to provide for the soule; and not to minde these transitory things that perished with the body, and to bethinke himselfe whether his conscience would be so prompt to demand so great a somme of Beaver as had bin contracted for. Hee was further exhorted therein to consider hee was but a steward for a time, and by all likely hood was going to give up an accompt of his stewardship: and therefore perswaded the creditor not to load his conscience with such a burthen, which hee was bound by the Gospell to ease him of (if it were possible;) and for that cause hee had framed this Epistle in such a freindly maner to put him in minde of it. The perusal of this, (lap'd in the paper,) was as bad as a potion to the creditor, to see his debtor Master Subtlety (a zealous professor as hee thought) to deride him in this extremity, that hee could not chuse, (in admiration of the deceipt,) but cast out these words:

Are these youre members? if they be all like these, I beleeve the Divell was the fether of their Church.

This was called in question when M<sup>r</sup> Fairecloth least thought of it. Capt. Littleworth must be the man must presse it against him, for blasphemy against the Church of Salem: and to great Iosua Temperwell hee goes with a bitter accusation, to have Master Innocence made an example for all carnall men to presume to speake the least word that might tend to the dishonor of the Church of Salem; yea, the mother Church of all that holy Land.

And hee convented was before their Synagoge, where no defence would serve his turne; yet was there none to be seene to accuse him, save the Court alone.

The time of his sickness, nor the urgent cause, were not allowed to be urg'd for him; but whatsoever could be thought upon against him was urged, seeing hee was a carnall man, of them that are without. So that it seemes, by those proceedings there, the matter was adjudged before he came: Hee onely brought to heare his sentence in publicke: which was, to have his tongue bored through; his nose slit; his face branded; his eares cut; his body to be whip'd in every severall plantation of their Iurisdiction; and a fine of forty pounds impos'd, with perpetuall banishment: and, (to execute this vengeance,) Shackles, (the Deacon of Charles Towne,) was as ready as Mephistophiles, when Doctor Faustus was bent upon mischief.

Hee is the purser generall of New Canaan, who, (with his whipp, with knotts most terrible,) takes this man unto the Counting howse: there capitulates with him why hee should be so hasty for payment, when Gods deare children must pay as they are able: and hee weepes,

and fobbes, and his handkercher walkes as a signe of his sorrow for Maſter Fairecloaths finne, that hee ſhould beare no better affection to the Church and the Saints of New Canaan: and itrips Innocence the while, and comforts him.

Though hee be made to ſtay for payment, hee ſhould not thinke it longe; the payment would be ſure when it did come, and hee ſhould have his due to a doite; hee ſhould not wiſh for a token more; And then tould it him downe in ſuch manner that hee made Fairecloaths Innocent back like the picture of Rawhead and blowdy bones, and his ſhirte like a pudding wiſes aperon. In this imployment Shackles takes a greate felicity, and glories in the practiſe of it. This cruell ſentence was ſtoped in part by Sir Chriſtopher Gardiner, (then preſent at the execution,) by expoſtulating with Maſter Temperwell: who was content, (with the whipping and the cutting of parte of his eares,) to ſend Innocence going, with the loſſe of all his goods, to pay the fine impoſed, and perpetuall baniſhment out of their Lands of New Canaan, in *terrorem populi*.

Loe this is the payment you ſhall get, if you be one of them they terme, without.

The reader will not be ſurprised to learn of the diſſatisfaction this produced in England. Edward Howes of London wrote to his relative, John Winthrop, jr., a letter, dated April 3, 1632, and in a poſtſcript ſaid:—

I have heard diſverſe complaints againſt the ſeveritie of your Government eſpecially M<sup>r</sup> Indicutts, and that he ſhalbe ſent for over, about cuttinge off the Lunatick mans eares, and other grievances; well, I would and doe deſire all things might goe well with you all—but certainly you endeavour in all mildneſſe to doe Gods worke, he will preſerve you from all the enemies of his truth; though there are here a thouſand eyes watchinge over you to pick a hole in your coats, yet feare not, there are more with you than againſt you, for you have God and his promiſes which if you ſtick to, be ſure all things ſhall worke together for the beſt, when you have leaſure ſpare me two or 3 wordes of your minde in what Character you pleaſe, that I may ſolace myſelfe with your contentation, or helpe to beare the burthen, if not redreſſe your grievances, and ſoe I leave you to God, with my reſpective ſalutations to all my friends.<sup>1</sup>

Capt. John Maſon and Sir Ferdinando Gorges, who claimed the northern part of the territory of the Maſſachuſetts Bay Company, under grant of Aug. 10, 1622, ſupported Morton, Gardiner and Ratcliffe in their contentions againſt the Bay Company. Ratcliffe made an affidavit, which was uſed by them in their proceedings againſt the Company before the privy council.

<sup>1</sup>Maſſachuſetts Historical Society's Collections, ſeries 3, volume IX, page 243.



To offset any injurious results these incidents might have, Thomas Wiggin wrote, Nov. 19, 1632, to Sir John Cooke, principal secretary to the king and one of the privy council, the following letter:—<sup>1</sup>

Right hono<sup>ble</sup>

havinge lately bin in New England in America, and taken notice both of some comodities and advantages to this State wch that contrie will afford, and there havinge visited the plantations of the English and amongst the rest that especially in the Mattachusetts (being the largest best and most prospering in all that land) I have made bold to inform yo'r hono'r of some observations wch I have taken both of the contrie and that Plantation.

As for the contrie it is well stored with goodly Timber and Masts for shippinge, and will afford Cordage, Pitch and Tarr, and as good hempe and flax as in any pte of the world, growes there naturally fitt for cordage and sayles, whereof this kingdome will soone finde the benefitt, if the plantation proceed awhile without discouragemt. as hitherto it hath done.

For the plantation in the Mattachusetts, the English there being about 2000 people, yonge and old, are generally most industrious and fitt for such a worke, having in three yeares done more in buyldinge and plantinge then others have done in seaven tymes that space, and with at least ten tymes lesse expence.

Besides I have observed the planters there, and by their loving just and kind dealinge with the Indians, have gotten their love and respect and drawne them to an outward conformity to the English, soe that the Indians repaire to the English Governor there and his deputies for justice.

And for the Governor himselfe, I have observed him to bee a discreete and sober man, givinge good example to all the planters, wearinge plaine apparell, such as may well besee me a meane man, drinkinge ordinarily water, and when he is not conversant about matters of justice, putting his hand to any ordinary labour with his servants, ruling wth much mildness, and in this particular I observed him to be strict in execution of Justice upon such as have scandalized this state, either in civill or ecclesiasticall government, to the greate contentmt of those that are best affected, and to the terror of offenders.

Of all wch. I myselfe havinge bin an eye witnesse am the rather induced to present the same to yo'r hono'r to cleare the reputation of the plantation from certain false rumors and scandales, wch. I perceive since my retorne to England some persons, iff affected to the plantations there, have cast abroad, as namely one Sir Christopher Gardiner, whose leavinge two wives here in England, went with an other yonge woman into New England, there, being discovered by letters from England, he was seperated from his wench. A second is one Moreton whose (as I am Informed by his wife's sonne and others) upon a foule suspicion of

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, series 3, volume VIII, page 322.

Murther fled hence to New England, and there falling out with some of the Indians, he shott them with a fowling peice, for wch and other misdemeanors, upon the Indians complaint, his howse by order of Court there, was destroyed and he banished the plantation. A third was one Ratcliffe whoe as I am crediblie informed, for most horrible blasphemy was condemned there to lose his eares, whoe with the former two, and some other the like discontented and scandalous persons, are lately retorne hither, seekinge to cover the shame of their own facts, by casting reproaches upon the plantation, doe addressé themselves to Sir Ferdinando Gorges, whoe by their false informations is nowe projectinge howe to deprive that plantation of the priviledges graunted by his Ma'tie and to subvert their government, the effects wherof will be the utter ruine of this hopefull plantation, by hinderinge all such as would goe to them, and drivinge those alredy planted there either to retorne, or disperse into other places wch I leave to your grave judgm't myselfe being none of their plantation, but a neighbour by, have done this out of that respect I bere to the generall good. I have bin too breife in this relation in regard I feared to be over troblesome to yo'r hono'r. Soe I take leave and rest

Yo'r honors humble servant

THO. WIGGIN.

The XIXth daye of  
November 1632.

[Addressed:]

To the right hono'ble S'r John Cooke knt.  
principall Secretary to his Ma'tie and one of  
his highnes most hono'ble privie councill.  
These dr.

Pirates infested our shores in the seventeenth and early part of the eighteenth centuries. In 1632, Anthony Dike of Salem was taken by Henry Bull, the famous buccaneer, but later escaped. The next year, the council sent Lieutenant Mason to the eastward in a bark, with thirty men, to capture Bull and his crew. They did not succeed, but the pirate vessel seemed to absolutely disappear. In 1634, Hull relates, "There was one Henry Bull and his companions, in a vessel, derided the churches of Christ in our harbor, and when they came to Marblehead, in derision, acted the gathering of a church; going to sea, were cast away among salvage Indians, by whom they were slain." This accounts for the disappearance of Bull.

At a general court, May 9, 1632, it was ordered that two persons of each plantation be appointed to confer with the court about raising a public stock; and Roger Conant and Peter Palfrey were appointed for Salem.

The court of assistants, June 5, 1632, "taking into consideration the great mercy of God vouchsafed to the churches of God in Germany and the Pallattinate, etc., appointed the thirteenth of



the month to be kept as a day of public thanksgiving throughout the several plantations."

As the number of new settlers increased, the amount of land cleared became greater and greater. The clearing was usually done by fire. The trees were cut off some two or three feet above the ground, and fell one upon another, until a considerable area had been ready for the burning. These great fires were so intense that the boughs and the larger portion of the trunks and part of the stumps were consumed.<sup>1</sup> The thick layer of ashes fertilized the soil and made it highly productive without much spading or other preparation.

The danger of such fires spreading and causing great loss to property adjoining was so great that for the preservation of houses, hay, boards, timber, etc., it was ordered at a court, July 26, 1631, that no person should burn any year till the first of March, and if any person were desirous to burn any of his own ground for the planting of corn before that time he should make full satisfaction for any damage it might occasion. The months of March and April constituted the period for burning.

Although the forest stretched out before the settlers, almost without limit, two or three years' experience in clearing the ground for habitations, planting and roads, as well as accidental fires which were caused chiefly by the use of tobacco, evidenced the speed of the devastation of the timber lands. At a court, Nov. 17, 1632, for preservation of good timber for more necessary uses, it was ordered that no man should cut on common lands any wood for paling but such as should be viewed and allowed by an assistant.

Subsequently, the town of Salem took the control of the forest into its own local government. No. 28, 1636, the town ordered that if any person felling any timber or wood trees on common lands within the town should take away the trunk and leave the tops and limbs, he should be fined five shillings for each tree, and that any other man might appropriate such tree to his own use if it were not removed within one month after it was cut.

Jan. 16, 1636-7, the town of Salem ordered that no sawyer, cleaver or any other person should cut down, saw or cleave any boards or timber within "our lymits & transport them to other places" under penalty of five shillings for each hundred. A similar penalty was put upon persons who sold to be transported or transported any sawn boards, clapboards or other timber or wood, unless it was first offered to the thirteen men entrusted with the affairs of the town, who were to have the option of purchasing for

<sup>1</sup>See *Historic Storms of New England*, by Sidney Perley, Salem, 1891, page 105.

fifteen days thereafter. If liberty were given to sell or transport the same, the transporter should pay the town eighteen pence for each hundred for the privilege; and no master of any vessel was allowed to take or transport such merchandise until he had given notice to the town as to the quantity. Mr. Thomas Scruggs was appointed to have charge of the execution of these orders.

In 1642, the town ordered that no trees should be cut on the public lands without license from a magistrate, unless they were felled for lumber for a man's own dwelling or fence or the building of ships in Salem. In the winter of 1656-7, the town records state that there was still great spoil in cutting timber on the commons; and thereafter no person was allowed to fell any timber tree without leave of the selectmen.<sup>1</sup>

The old planters had followed the custom of those in Virginia in cultivating tobacco. The profit was slight and sometimes nothing on sales of tobacco in England. The Bay Company allowed the old planters to continue its cultivation, but discouraged them as much as they reasonably could, and resolved to discontinue the crop when other means should be found by which they could employ their time more comfortably and profitably. The new planters were forbidden to engage in it, as some of the adventurers, who had invested large sums in the Company, objected to this kind of business. Any of the colonists were allowed, however, to plant a small quantity of tobacco for mere necessity and for physic, for preservation of their health or to "bee taken privately by auntient men."<sup>2</sup>

Later the use of tobacco was prohibited because of economy and the fact that its use naturally tended to idleness. Oct. 3, 1632, the court ordered that no person should take tobacco; and, in 1634, proprietors of public houses were prohibited from allowing it.

At this time tobacco was smoked in pipes, and the people spoke of the practice as the drinking of tobacco.

Opposition to tobacco as an article of commerce was manifested by the general court March 4, 1634-5, in its order that no person should buy or sell any tobacco within the colony after September of that year; and that, in the meantime, no person should buy or sell any tobacco at a higher price than that fixed by the governor and two other persons, whom he should select. It was lawful, however, to buy and sell tobacco by wholesale to be transported out of the colony.

<sup>1</sup>The record of the meeting of the selectmen, March 25, 1657, shows that Thomas Goldthwaite, Isaac Estie, Richard Sibley, John Williams and Samuel Williams were liable for cutting trees on the commons.

<sup>2</sup>Second General letter of the Governor and Deputy of the Company in England to the Governor and Council in New England. See page 132.



All laws against tobacco were repealed Nov. 2, 1637. Subsequently, the use of tobacco increased; and, Sept. 6, 1638, the general court, finding that since the repeal of those laws, the use of tobacco was more abused than before, ordered that no man should take any tobacco in the fields, except on a journey or at meal times, nor in or near any dwelling house, barn, corn or hay rick, if it should endanger the firing of it, nor in any inn or common victualling house, except in a private room, so that neither the master of the house nor any guest should thereby take offence; nor light his pipe by fire kindled by gunpowder, except in his journey. Fires were frequently occasioned by the use of tobacco, and the general court, May 6, 1646, ordered that no person should take any tobacco in any common ground, or enclosed field or yard or other open place out of doors, except when he was on a journey and then only when five miles or more from any house and provided that he did not set the woods on fire to the damage of any man.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### COMING OF ROGER WILLIAMS.



AFTER the decease of Rev. Francis Higginson, Aug. 6, 1630, Mr. Skelton performed all the public services of the church, as he had for several months previously. The plantation was increasing in population, and Mr. Skelton, whose strength had begun to decline under the strain of his labors, was enervated by the death of his wife, March 15, 1631. She was "a godly and helpful woman, who lived desired & died lamented, and well deserves to be honorably remembered."

The winter of 1630-1 was one of great want among the planters here, especially in the matter of food, corn being extremely scarce, and February 6th was appointed as a day for fasting and prayer. The ship *Lion*, William Peirce, master, had sailed from Bristol December 1st and arrived at Nantasket the day before the fast was to be held. The vessel brought a large quantity of wheat meal, peas, oat-meal, beef, pork, cheese, butter, etc. That was so opportune, the prayer for help being answered before it was made, that the fast was not held; but as a day of thanksgiving the twenty-second of that month was immediately set apart in all of the plantations by order of the governor and council.<sup>1</sup>

March 29th, the *Lion* was at Salem, with Sir Richard Saltonstall and his sons and daughters on board, and sailed for England two days later. They arrived in London safely April 29, 1631. The next year this ship was cast away on the coast near Virginia, but Captain Peirce and his men were saved.<sup>2</sup>

Among the twenty passengers who came on the *Lion* were Rev. Roger Williams and his wife. He was son of James Williams of London, a merchant tailor, of whom Henry Fitz Waters wrote:

<sup>1</sup>Charlestown Records. See Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, pages 46 and 47, notes.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 193.



"His house was in Cow lane, opposite a public house or tavern called the Harrow, which he owned. This lane starts at Snow hill, near its intersection with Cock lane, famous for its ghost, and sweeps around in a curve to the north, ending, I think, in Smithfield market, near the place where John Rogers and other famous religious martyrs were burned at the stake. It was in the parish of St. Sepulchre's and between the church of that name and Charter house where young Roger got his schooling and was fitted for the University of Cambridge." He was born about the year 1600. He became a student at Charter House June 25, 1621, and obtained a scholarship at that school July 9, 1624.

*Roger Williams.*

Mr. Williams refused to join with the congregation at Boston because they declined to make a public declaration of their repentance for having communion with the churches of England while they tarried there. He also declared his opinion that the magistrates had no authority to punish offenders for the breach of the sabbath nor any other offence that constituted a breach of the first four commandments.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Williams went to Salem and was called by the church there to succeed Rev. Francis Higginson in the office of teacher. At a court of assistants, April 12th, Governor Winthrop was informed of this invitation. A letter was immediately sent to John Endecott, stating the facts. The court marvelled that the Salem church would choose Mr. Williams to that office without advising with the council, and expressed its desire to Mr. Endecott that he would forbear to proceed in the matter until the court had considered it.

This interference of the civil magistrates apparently prevented the service of Mr. Williams in Salem at that time. About a year later, he was an assistant to Rev. Ralph Smith, pastor of the church in Plymouth.

Governor Bradford wrote that Mr. Williams was "very unsettled in judgment," but he was kindly received in Plymouth and entertained to the best ability of the people. He preached there for some time and was admitted to the church. His teaching was "well approved," wrote Bradford, "for y<sup>e</sup> benefite wherof I still blese God, and am thankfull to him, even for his sharpest admonitions & reprove, so farr as they agreed with truth."<sup>2</sup>

Early in 1633, Mr. Williams "begane to fall into some strang oppinions," wrote Bradford, "and from opinion to practise." This caused him to have some controversy with the church, and becoming discontented, he left there somewhat abruptly. He went to

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, pages 52 and 53.

<sup>2</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, page 195.

Salem, where he was sympathetically received. He asked for dismissal from the Plymouth to the Salem church, which was reluctantly granted, with some caution to the church in Salem concerning him, and the care they ought to have of him. He probably came to Salem with the intention of remaining in the early spring of 1633. Some of his adherents, also, removed to Salem with him.

According to Winthrop, Mr. Williams preached for Mr. Skelton, but was not then elected to any office in the church.<sup>1</sup>

In the autumn of 1633, the ministers of the Bay and Saugus met fortnightly at their houses in course; and at a meeting in November Mr. Skelton and Mr. Williams spoke against the adoption of some matter of importance, apparently relating to the independence of the individual church, on the ground that it might, in time, result in a presbytery or superintendency, to the prejudice of the liberty of the churches. They all agreed, finally, that no church or person could have power over another church, and that they did not exercise such jurisdiction in their meetings.<sup>2</sup> This question probably arose from Mr. Williams' service in the church in Salem.

Presumably upon request, Mr. Williams sent to Governor Winthrop and the assistants a copy of a "treatise" he had written some time before and sent to the governor and council of Plymouth. Among other things in this writing, he disputed the right of the colonists to hold the lands they possessed here, asserting that the grant from the king conferred no title, and that the natives only were the owners. There were three other passages at which the magistrates were "much offended." First, Mr. Williams charged King James with telling "a solemn public lie," because in his patent he blessed God that he was the first Christian prince that had discovered this land; second, he charged him and others with blasphemy for calling Europe Christendom or the church world; third, he personally applied to King Charles three references in Revelations. Winthrop failed to mention what these three statements were, but doubtless they were not complimentary to the king.

The governor and assistants met at Boston Dec. 27, 1633, and considered the writing. Some of the most judicious ministers advised them, and condemned the error and presumption of Mr. Williams. It was ordered that he should appear at the next court and receive censure. Governor Endecott was absent from this meeting, and Governor Winthrop wrote to him, informing him of

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, pages 116 and 117.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, page 122.



what had been done, and arguing against the statements of Mr. Williams. He expressed his wish that Mr. Endecott would deal with Mr. Williams and endeavor to secure a retraction. Governor Endecott returned "a very modest and discreet answer." Mr. Williams wrote to the governor, and to Governor Endecott and the rest of the council, in a submissive manner, professing that he intended his writing only for the private satisfaction of the gentlemen of Plymouth and without intending to have it go further, but the governor there required a copy of it, and so it came to be more widely known. Mr. Williams offered the book or any part of it to be burned, if the authorities desired it. At the next court Mr. Williams appeared penitent, and gave satisfaction of his intention and loyalty, and the matter was dropped temporarily.<sup>1</sup>

The governor and council met again, at Boston, Jan. 24, 1633-4, to consider the letter of Mr. Williams, and with the advice of Messrs. Cotton and Wilson, decided that, as the book was written in very obscure and implicative phrases, which admitted of doubtful interpretation, the matters were not as evil as they seemed at first, and it was agreed that upon his retraction and taking an oath of allegiance to the king, it should be passed over.<sup>2</sup>

Another matter came up and was discussed after the lecture at Boston, March 7, 1633-4, which probably had reference to the preaching of Mr. Williams. This discussion probably had its origin in the fact that Mr. Williams had taught that women should wear veils in public. Mr. Cotton concluded that where, by the custom of the place, they were not a sign of a woman's sobriety, they were not commanded by the apostle, but Mr. Endecott took the opposite view, and defended it by the general argument of the apostle. After some debate, the governor perceived that the discussion was growing more and more earnest, and concluded that it would be wise to end it, which he did.<sup>3</sup> One Sunday morning, Rev. Mr. Cotton preached in Salem on the subject with so much conviction that the women "appeared in the afternoon without their veils."<sup>4</sup>

Five or six summers had now elapsed since the English settlers first planted their crops here. They had proved that as good English grain, especially rye, oats and barley, could be raised here as in England. Wheat and beans had not been planted to any considerable extent. They grew well in gardens, but it was thought that seed grown here would do better than seed imported

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, page 122.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, page 123.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, page 125.

<sup>4</sup>History of New England, by Rev. William Hubbard, pages 204 and 205.

from England, because the latter was usually injured on the voyage by the heat it generated.<sup>1</sup>

Cattle thrive here as well as they did in England, both in winter and summer; they were generally larger and the cows gave more milk, and were free from many diseases that were incident to them in the old country.<sup>1</sup>

In February, 1634-5, the town "agreed that the towns neck of land shalbe preserved to feed the Catle on the Lords dayes and therefore pticular men shall not feed their goates there at other tymes, but bring them to the h—— that grasse may grow against the Lords dayes." The neck continued to be a common pasture until recent times, except on the shore of Cat Cove and what is now the Willows settlement and where the city farm occupies land on the Collins Cove side.

March 2, 1636-7, it was agreed that the neat-herd should begin the charge of the great cattle April 5th. March 20, 1636-7, the town agreed with Roger Morie,<sup>2</sup> with the assistance of another man, to continue the occupation of neat-herd for eight months from April 5th. He was to be ready at the gate of the pen, which was at the western end of the common in front of the Second Church edifice, an hour after sunrise in the morning, and take all the town cattle to feed. The owners of cattle who did not have them there on time had to bring them after the herd. The neat-herd agreed to look after the cattle carefully and return them, and for this service received seven shillings per head for the season.

In the summer of 1638, the cow keeper was Richard Davenport. The season began April 1st, and continued until November 1st. He was to be paid thirty-six pounds for the season, and agreed to keep his man constantly on the work. The day was to be one hour longer than that of the previous year. The cows were to be taken from the pen when the sun was half an hour high in the morning, and to be returned half an hour before sunset.<sup>3</sup>

March 20, 1636, it was agreed to allow a goatherd two shillings for the care of a milk goat, one shilling each for a wether and a ewe lamb after weaning and sixpence for a wether lamb, per year.

The supply of provisions was increased by the arrival, from Virginia, May 27, 1631, of a pinnacle of eighteen tons burden, laden with corn and tobacco. She was bound to the northward,

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Prospect, by William Wood, chapter IV.

<sup>2</sup>Roger Morey (Maury) lived in Salem until 1649. Apparently, he had a wife and three children. Savage says that he removed to Providence, and died Jan. 5, 1668; and that by his wife Mary he had the following-named children: Bertha; Mehitable; Roger, born May 8, 1649; Thomas, born July 19, 1652; Hannah, born Sept. 28, 1658.

<sup>3</sup>Salem Town Records; volume I, page 66 (printed).



but put in here because of foul weather. The price of the corn was ten shillings per bushel.<sup>1</sup>

July 26, 1631, a small bark of twelve tons burden, belonging in Salem, while sailing towards Boston, was overset in a gust of wind. The vessel was loaded with two tons of stores and three barrels of train oil. Jo. Elston and two of Mr. Cradock's fishermen were in her. She was buoyed up by the oil and floated to and fro for forty-eight hours, until some men in a boat saw the plight of the men and went to their relief.<sup>2</sup>

Governor Winthrop records in his Journal that, Sept. 6, 1631, the ship *White Angel* set sail from Marble Harbor.<sup>3</sup> This vessel had been purchased, at Bristol, of Alderman Aldworth, that year, by Capt. Isaac Allerton, for himself, Mr. James Sherley, Mr. Richard Andrews, Mr. John Beauchamp of London, merchants, and Mr. Timothy Hatherly of London, feltmaker, to be used by Captain Allerton as the agent of the owners, in bass fishing and trading. It was well fitted with good ordnance and had won a reputation as a successful fighter on the sea. Instead of transporting goods for the Pilgrims, as was expected of him, he brought things for the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and was always interested in the Puritans at Salem.<sup>4</sup>

Captain Allerton was one of the wealthiest of the Pilgrims who came to Plymouth in 1620. He was born in the northeastern part of England about 1586; subsequently lived in London; and for several years preceding the time of the emigration was a merchant and prominent citizen of Leyden, Holland.<sup>5</sup> He had a fishing



<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 56.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 59.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 60.

<sup>4</sup>History of New Plymouth, by William Bradford, pages 320, 364, 390, 394, 413 and 455; Lechford's Note Book, page 120.

<sup>5</sup>Capt. Isaac Allerton married, first, Mary Norris, in Leyden, Nov. 4, 1611. She was from Newbury, England, and came to New England with her husband, on the first voyage of the *Mayflower*. The first child born to the Pilgrims after landing was a son born to Mr. and Mrs. Allerton, who did not survive his birth. There had come with them four children, who had been born in Leyden: Bartholomew, born about 1612, Remember, born in 1614, Mary, born in June, 1616, and Sarah, born in January, 1618. The daughter Sarah is said to have come on the ship *Ann*, with her aunt Sarah Priest in 1623. Mrs. Allerton was among the first of the Pilgrims to yield to disease, dying Feb. 21, 1620-1. Captain Allerton married, second, Fear, daughter of Elder William Brewster, in 1626, and she was the mother of

stage at Marble Harbor as early as the spring of 1633,<sup>1</sup> and probably in the autumn of 1631, when, as above stated, the ship *White Angel* sailed therefrom. It is said that he had eight vessels employed in fishing.

Governor Cradock had built at Marblehead, near Little Harbor, a house of considerable size, though of course poorly constructed and with a thatched roof. On the first day of February, 1633-4, it was occupied by Isaac Allerton and the fishermen whom he employed that season. A tailor, who was sitting up late that night at work in the house, at about midnight heard a noise and looked out. He saw that the house was on fire in the thatch above the oven. He gave an alarm and Mr. Allerton and the fishermen quickly arose and saved most of the goods that were in the house, as Winthrop says, "by a special providence of God." The house was destroyed by the flames.<sup>2</sup>

Captain Allerton was ordered by the general court, March 4, 1634-5, to appear at the next court of the assistants "that hee may understand the desire of the country for his remoueall from Marble Harbor."

Before the next session of the court (May 6, 1635), Captain Allerton gave to his son-in-law, Moses Maverick, all his houses, buildings and stages that he then had at Marblehead.

These lands of Governor Cradock and Captain Allerton, so far as the records reveal them, are shown on the map on the next page.<sup>3</sup>

Captain Allerton removed from Marblehead to New Haven, with his son Isaac, between 1639 and 1643, and died there in 1658.

Gov. Matthew Cradock was son of Matthew Cradock of Staffordshire, England. His mother was Dorothy Greenway of Berkshire. He lived in London, in St. Swithin's lane, near London Stone (which was preserved for centuries in the south wall of St.

his son Isaac, who was born at Plymouth in 1630. Mrs. Allerton died in 1633; and Captain Allerton married, third, Joanna —.

Of the children of Captain Allerton, Bartholomew returned to England and lived there; Remember died, unmarried, soon after 1627; Mary married Elder Thomas Cushman in 1636, and died in 1699, being the survivor of the *Mayflower* company, and "over ninety years old"; Isaac graduated at Harvard College in 1650, lived in New Haven, Conn., until his removal to Wicomico, Northumberland county, Virginia, as early as 1655, married, first, Elizabeth —, and, second, about 1663, Elizabeth, daughter of Capt. Thomas Willoughby, and widow of Col. George Colcough; and Sarah married Moses Maverick of Salem in 1637.

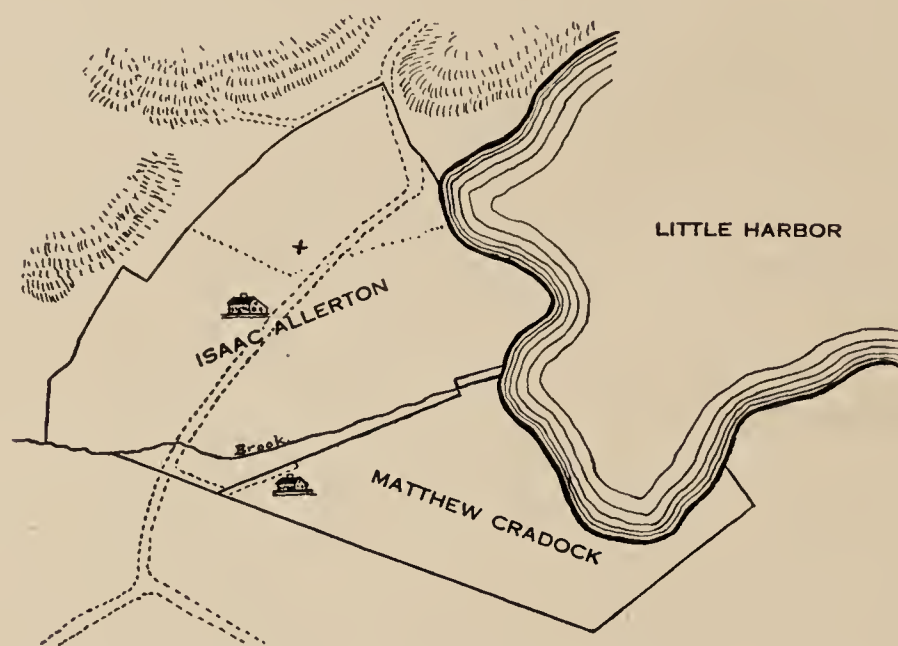
<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 104.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, page 124.

<sup>3</sup>The parallel rows of dashes on the plan indicate Franklin, Orne and Pond streets and Doak lane. The northeasterly end of the Cradock lot bounds on Merritt Street.



Swithin's church), in 1628, and was a merchant. He was interested in the West India trade before his attention was turned to New England. He never came to New England, but he had large financial interests in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and sent over many servants. He was interested in other lands, particularly on the Mystic River, at what is now Medford. He married, first, Damaris, daughter of Richard Winn of Shrewsbury (anciently Salop), in Shropshire,<sup>1</sup> and, second, Rebecca, daughter of Thomas Jordan of London, a merchant.<sup>2</sup> While a member of parliament, he died in the winter of 1640-1. His wife Rebecca survived him,



CRADOCK AND ALLERTON LANDS AT MARBLEHEAD.

and married, secondly, Richard Glover of London, gentleman, in or before 1644. Mr. Glover died before the spring of 1647; and, in 1652, she married, thirdly, Rev. Benjamin Whichcote, D. D., of a Lincolnshire family.

The house of Governor Cradock at Marblehead, which had been destroyed by fire was succeeded by another, apparently on the same site. By his will, he gave his real estate in New England equally to his wife Rebecca and his daughter Damaris. The widow, when she was Mrs. Glover, June 6, 1650, conveyed the house and land, for fifteen pounds, to Rev. William Walton, who was then minister to the people of Marblehead.<sup>3</sup> Mr. Walton had

<sup>1</sup>A daughter, Damaris, was born of this marriage. She was baptized Nov. 1, 1623, and married Thomas Andrews of London, a leather dealer.

<sup>2</sup>Of this marriage several children were born: Matthew, baptized, June 3, 1632; Thomas, baptized Feb. 10, 1634; and Mary, baptized Nov. 27, 1637.

<sup>3</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 24.

previously occupied the house. He died in 1668; and the house and land became the homestead of his son Samuel Walton of Marblehead, mariner, who conveyed the house and land around it to Ambrose Gale of Marblehead, merchant, Sept. 20, 1686.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Gale conveyed the same house and lot to Joseph Gallison of Marblehead, fisherman, Dec. 31, 1706.<sup>2</sup> Mr. Gallison died in 1754; and in the division of his estate, June 16, 1756, the old house and lot were assigned to his grandson, John Gallison of Marblehead, gentleman. The house was probably gone soon afterward.

Evidently, Moses Maverick had conveyed to John Lyon, a fisherman, that part of his lot lying northerly of the dots on the above plan, on which Mr. Lyon built a dwelling house at X. Subsequently, Mr. Maverick disposed of his house and land under and immediately adjoining it to Henry Stacey, who lived there in 1671. Mr. Stacey died in the autumn of 1689, having devised the estate to his wife Jane, and, after her decease, to his daughter Martha. The house and lot were then appraised at forty-five pounds. The house was gone in 1699, when the land still belonged to the estate of Mr. Stacey. Mr. Lyon conveyed his house and lot to Mr. Maverick, for fifteen pounds, Aug. 17, 1653.<sup>3</sup> The house had a leanto, and there was a shop upon the land when Mr. Maverick died, Jan. 28, 1685-6. His heirs agreed, Nov. 29, 1698, that the land and house, which was in a "much dicayed" and "ruinous condition", should be sold; and their attorneys conveyed the land and buildings, Aug. 16, 1699, to Francis Haines of Marblehead, gunsmith,<sup>4</sup> who conveyed the southern half of the house and lot to Jonathan Thompson of Marblehead, mason, Nov. 6, 1702;<sup>5</sup> and the northern half to Joshua Orne of Marblehead, cordwainer, March 29, 1707.<sup>6</sup> The house then had a chamber in the leanto. Apparently, the house stood for some years afterwards.

*John Lyon*

Moses Maverick was born about 1611, and was made a free-man in 1634. He came from Dorchester to Salem, and belonged to the Salem church. At the age of about seventy-three, he was one of the founders of the church at Marblehead, where he lived, being a merchant. He married, first, as above stated,

*Moses Maverick*

<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 7, leaf 115.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 19, leaf 127.

<sup>3</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 1, leaf 28.

<sup>4</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 13, leaf 169.

<sup>5</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 18, leaf 6.

<sup>6</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 45.



Sarah, daughter of Capt. Isaac Allerton. She died after 1652; and he married, second, Eunice, widow of Thomas Roberts, June 3, 1658. He died Jan. 28, 1685-6; and his wife Eunice survived him, being his widow in 1698.<sup>1</sup>

The lines between Salem and Marble Harbor, Salem and Saugus, and Marble Harbor and Saugus were ordered by the general court to be determined and marked by Mr. Nowell and Mr. Mayhew, between March 4 and 22, 1634-5. John Humphrey and John Endecott were allowed to go with them to represent Saugus and Salem and John Holgrave, Marble Harbor. Two years later (Nov. 20, 1637), the general court ordered that "Capt Turner, Goo: Rich<sup>d</sup> Right, M<sup>r</sup> Conant, & Goo: Woodberry are appointed to certify w<sup>ch</sup> bee the bounds between Salem & Saugust [Lynn], w<sup>ch</sup> they formerly did agree vpon."

May 6, 1635, the general court "ordered, that there shalbe a plantacon att Marble Head, & that the inhabitants nowe there shall have liberty to plant & impue such ground as they stand in neede of, & that as the s<sup>d</sup> plantacon increaseth, the inhabitants of Salem shall pte with such ground as shallbe impued by them there abouts, being payde for ther lab<sup>r</sup> & cost. Also, it is agreed, that none shsall goe to inhabite there without leave from the Court, or two of the magistrates. Further, it is ordered, that the land betwixte the Clifte & the Forest Ryver, neere Marble Head, shall for the present be improved by John Humfry, Esq, & that as the inhabitants of Marble Head shall stand in neede of it, the said John Humfry shall pte with it, the said inhabitants alloweing him equall recompence for his lab<sup>r</sup> & cost bestowed therevpon; provided, that if, in the meane tyme, the inhabitants of Salem can satisfy the Court that they have true right vnto it, that then it shall belong to the inhabitants thereof." The records of the general court for March 3, 1635-6, state: "It was proued this Court that Marble Necke belongs to Salem." Another year passed, apparently, and the boundaries of Salem were undetermined. The town ordered, Jan. 27, 1636-7, "That a peticon be drawne vnto the generall Court concerning the Limitts of Salem." At the same time it was "ordered that all the Land along the shore on Darbys fort side up

<sup>1</sup>The children of Moses Maverick were baptized in the church at Salem, to which he belonged until the church at Marblehead was formed, in 1684, as follows: 1. Rebecca, baptized Aug. 7, 1639; married John Hawkes of Lynn June 3, 1658; and died soon afterward; 2. Mary, baptized Feb. 14, 1640-1; died at the age of fifteen; 3. Abigail, baptized Jan. 12, 1644-5; married Capt. Samuel Ward of Marblehead; 4. Elizabeth, baptized Dec. 13, 1646; died young; 5. Samuel, baptized Dec. 19, 1647; 6. Elizabeth, baptized Sept. 30, 1649; married, first, Nathaniel Grafton; second, — Skinner; 7. Remember, baptized Sept. 12, 1652; 8. Mary, baptized Sept. 6, 1657; married, first, John Bullock; second, Archibald Ferguson of Marblehead; died in 1695; 9. Sarah; 10. Aaron, baptized March 20, 1663.

to the Hogsties [m<sup>r</sup> Humfries land] and so to run along towards marble head 20 pole into the Land shall be reserued for the Comons of the towne to serue it for wood & timber"; and that "aboue the measure of 20 pole into the land . . . The land shall be layed out for 10 acre lotts till the Town be supplied." The land was not laid out in that order in Marblehead, as an examination of the earliest titles shows. At the same time it was also "ordered that Ric<sup>d</sup> Brackenbury, Tho: Laythrop & Ric<sup>d</sup> Huchenson are to view what Inlande their is betwixt Jeffereys Creeke & Makerell Cove, 4 or ffyve miles."

Marblehead was so called as early as 1633, when John Bennett was fined for being drunk there.<sup>1</sup>

The matter of traveling in the early times in Salem and vicinity is well illustrated by the few facts known concerning the visit of Governor Winthrop and Capt. John Underhill and other officers to Salem. They left Boston Oct. 25, 1631, and walked to Saugus that day. There they remained overnight, and the next day tramped to Salem. Governor Endecott entertained them bountifully, as the crop then being harvested was abundant. On the twenty-eighth, they returned to Boston, by way of the ford at Saugus River and Mystic.<sup>2</sup>

On his trip to Agawam (afterwards Ipswich), in 1634, Governor Winthrop undoubtedly stopped in Salem when going and on his return. He left Boston on Thursday, April 3d, and, as the church at Agawam was without a pastor, he stopped and preached to the people on Sunday. He arrived home on Thursday, the 10th.

June 23, 1637, Governor Winthrop again went to Saugus, and so to Salem and Ipswich, at all of which places the men of the towns met him, and guarded him from place to place, though he neither desired nor expected it, to show him respect, as well as for his safety, as it was reported that Pequot Indians were in the vicinity. He returned on the twenty-eighth, being forced to travel all night by reason of the heat which was so great that several new comers died in their travel of a few miles.

The forests in and near Salem were sources of danger, not only from wild animals, but from liability of being lost in them as they were practically endless in extent and almost pathless. In January, 1632-3, a maid servant of Rev. Mr. Skelton was lost on her way to Saugus, and was in the woods seven days, without food, eventually finding her way back to Salem. The snow was very deep, and the temperature as low as it was at any time during that winter. She was so frozen into the snow some mornings that an

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 106.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 63.



hour's struggle was required to extricate herself. She suffered almost beyond endurance, but finally recovered her strength "through the Lord's wonderful providence", as Governor Winthrop wrote.<sup>1</sup>

The year 1632 was rather uneventful. In March, the bark Warwick stopped at Salem to sell corn, which it had brought from Virginia.<sup>2</sup> John Sweet first appeared here in that year, as the owner of the land on both sides of the creek south of what is now Norman Street. The creek was called Sweet's Cove after him. He probably died about 1640, leaving a widow.

June 13, 1632, was a day of thanksgiving in all the plantations, for the success of the king of Sweden and Protestants in Germany against the German emperor, and for the safe arrival of all the ships.<sup>3</sup>

The next month, the congregation of Boston wrote to the elders and brethren of the churches of Plymouth, Salem and other plantations for advice on three questions: 1. Whether one person might be a civil magistrate and a ruling elder at the same time; 2. If not, then what should best be done? 3. Whether there might be divers pastors in the same church. The first was agreed by all negatively; and the second and third doubtfully.<sup>4</sup> Probably these questions arose from trouble in the church in Watertown.

June 19, 1633, by order of the court another day of public thanksgiving was kept in the several plantations "for our delivery from the plots of our enemies, for the safe arrival of our friends, etc."<sup>5</sup>

At the general court, July 2, 1633, the matter of selling wine and strong water was discussed, and it was ordered that no person shall sell such liquors without leave from the governor or deputy-governor, and that no man shall sell or give any strong water to an Indian. This law remained in force several years. Nov. 2, 1637, the matter of excise on wine, strong water and tobacco was acted on; and in that year breweries were ordered to be licensed for their better government.

The matter of fences grew in importance as the plantation increased in size and cultivation. At the court held July 2, 1633, it was ordered that if any corn fence should be by the inhabitants of the town judged insufficient, and the owner forbore repairing it more than two days after being notified of a defect, the in-

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 99.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 71.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 78.

<sup>4</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 81.

<sup>5</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 104; Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 105.

habitants had to mend it, and the corn of the owner of the fence was liable for the cost of the repairs. This law undoubtedly originated in the necessity of producing and preserving all the food possible for the sustenance of the colonists.

The earliest fences were constructed for the protection of the homes, domestic animals and crops from the larger and more ferocious animals of the forest; to keep the domestic and small animals from injuring the crops; and to restrain the various kinds of cattle of the settlers from straying into the forest or getting into the fields.

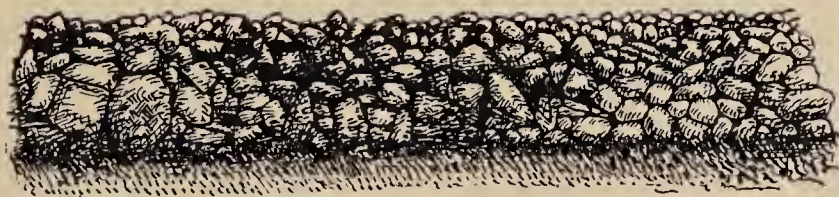
The palisade fence was the most effective. The pales or palings were stakes or small logs, some ten feet in length, touching each other, with one end driven into or



PALISADE FENCE.

imbedded in the ground, and sometimes pointed at the top. As the building of such a fence consumed much time and material, they were not as common as they otherwise would have been, and were rarely found away from the home place. This kind of a fence was used by Mrs. Lucy Downing at the end of her homestead next the common.

A stone wall best performed the service of keeping domestic and small wild animals from growing crops. This was con-



STONE WALL.

structed most frequently where stones were abundant. Not only was it effective, but enduring. In spite of their being more or less

frost-flung, they are a picturesque variation in many a New England landscape, and will so remain until they are removed or tumble down and sink beneath the surface of the ground.

Where stones and timber were equally scarce, the half-high wall with a rail above it, which rested on crossed stakes driven into the ground, was often built. This was not an enduring fence:

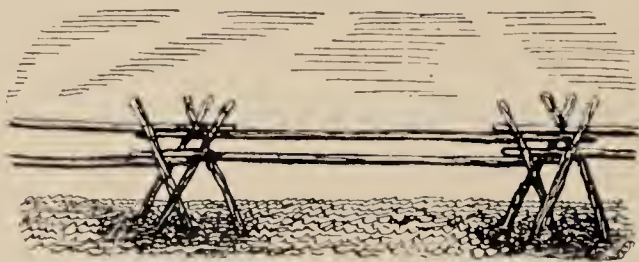
The earliest fence for the latter purpose was the two-rail or pole fence, which was made



HALF-HIGH WALL.



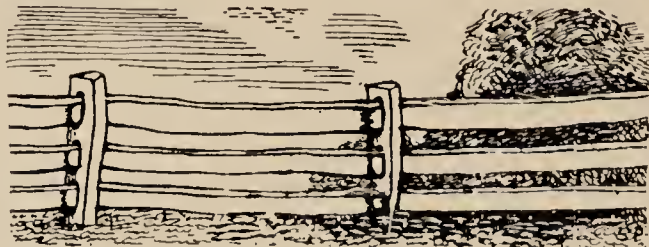
by driving stakes into the ground crossed and laying the lower rail or pole in the crotches thus formed. Other stakes were then driven crossed over the rails in such a way that another rail could be laid above the first one. This fence was not very substantial, but was quickly made.



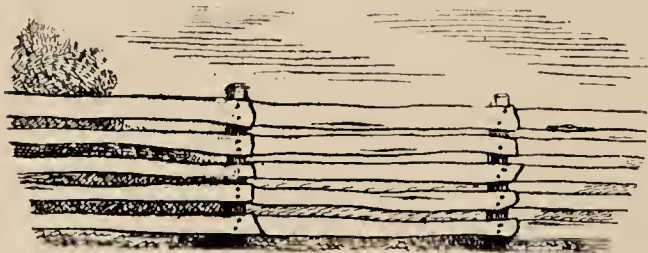
POLE FENCE.

A brush fence was made by lopping small trees along its line, only partially severing them from the stump and making them fall lengthwise of its course. This resulted in a very thick fence. This type has wholly passed away.

The split-rail fence is also an old form. Logs, generally of ash, about nine feet in length, and a foot in diameter, split the entire length into about sixteen equal parts, chamfered at each end, formed the rails. Of such split sections posts were also made, with holes cut in them in the proper places to receive the ends of the rails. This kind of fence endured for scores of years.



SPLIT-RAIL FENCE.



BOARD FENCE.

The board fence came later, when sawmills were common and lumber was cheaper.

March 20, 1636-7, the town ordered that "all o<sup>r</sup> fences" be repaired before April 1st "w<sup>th</sup> either post and rails or bound w<sup>th</sup> poles or laths on each syde w<sup>th</sup> in a foote & a half of the Topp, or some other way so sufficientlie, as the surveyors shall approue of." The surveyors of fences had general charge of them. The first fence surveyors mentioned, which was at this time, were Jacob Barney and Jeffrey Massie for the fences "bordering from John Talbies Lott along the North Riuer to Jn<sup>o</sup> Symonds house"; Sargeant Dixie and "Brother" Rayment between "the South side neck & the meeting house"; and Thomas Olney and Thomas Gardner between "the meeting house, all westward of the Towne." April 4, 1641, the town ordered that all fences, general and particular, shall be sufficiently made and maintained, in winter and summer, and appointed fence surveyors as follows: "In the field next to the ferry that leads to Ipsw<sup>ch</sup>, . . . [Ralph Elwood & goodman Bulfinch] William Bennett & George Roppes.

. . . In the field next to it where Jeffery Massys house is, Jacob Barney & Jeffry Massy. . . In the field where Goodman Wathen hath a howse and lott & in the field next to Mr Garford, we doe appoint Mr. Garford & George Wathen . . . In the ffield where Mr Norris dwells, John Gidney & Thomas weeks. . . In the ffield next to the meeting howse, Peter Palfrey & [Thomas Lothrop] || Henry Bartholmew ||. . . In the ffield where Mr Sharpes grownd is & Mr Peters his field, Mr ffogge & Goodman Addams. . . In the field where Mr Williams hows is, Mr kennistone & John Sanders. . . In the next field where Mr Gardner is, Mr Gardner and Goodman Spooner. . . In the next field wher Mr Bacon liues, Mr Alderman & Mr ——. . . In [Nor?]mans field where Mr Hathorne lived, Goodman — are appointed."

Among the immigrants who settled in Salem in 1633 was a Felton family from Coventry, Warwickshire, England, consisting of Mrs. Eleanor (Thrower) Felton,<sup>1</sup> widow of John Felton, and

<sup>1</sup>WIDOW ELEANOR FELTON<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem as late as 1652; children, born in England: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1613; 2. *Nathaniel*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1615; 3. *Judith*,<sup>2</sup> married John Ingersoll; 4. *Margaret*,<sup>2</sup> married Christopher Waller.

BENJAMIN FELTON;<sup>2</sup> turner; married Mary —; died in 1688; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Dec. 26, 1639; probably left Salem in 1685; 2. *Exercise*,<sup>3</sup> married Joseph Miles; 3. *Remember*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 28, 1643; married George Samon; 4. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. 18, 1645-6; died in 1668. LT. NATHANIEL FELTON;<sup>2</sup> husbandman; married Mary Skelton; she died May 8, 1701; he died July 30, 1705, aged ninety; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1644; 2. *Ruth*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 29, 1648; married James Houlton; 3. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 6, 1651; died young; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born March 18, 1652-3; married Thomas Watkins; 5. *Nathaniel*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 15, 1655; 6. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 15, 1657-8; 7. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 20, 1663; married Samuel Endecott; 8. *Susanna*,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 29, 1665.

JOHN FELTON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; married, first, Mary Tompkins Nov. 29, 1670; she died Dec. 12, 1688; married, second, Hannah — before 1693; she was his wife in 1715; he died Feb. 19, 1717-8; children: 1. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born June 8, 1672; 2. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> born March 30, 1673-4; married Freeborn Reeves; 3. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born March 22, 1676; died April 6, 1676; 4. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> born April 18, 1677; married, first, Arthur Chamnes of Marblehead Oct. 23, 1701; second, William Webber of Marblehead June 20, 1712; 5. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 28, 1678-9; died about 1765; 6. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 1, 1681-2; 7. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 22, 1686; 8. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 14, 1693; living in 1715; 9. *Susannah*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 15, 1696; school teacher; living in 1743. NATHANIEL FELTON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; lived in what is now Peabody; married Ann Horne; she was his wife in 1731; he died in the winter of 1733-4; children: 1. *Skelton*,<sup>4</sup> born about 1680; 2. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born about 1683; husbandman and cooper; lived in Marblehead; married, first, Mary Pitman of Marblehead Jan. 18, 1708-9; she died Jan. —, 1718-9; married, second, Sarah Foot Nov. 24, 1719; she died Feb. 18, 1749; he died about 1771; had children; 3. *Ebenzer*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1685; 4. *Daniel*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1687; lived in Marblehead; married Sarah Stephens (?); died May 8, 1760; had children; 5. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. —, 1693; 6. *Margaret*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. —, 1693; married — Sheldon before 1731; 7. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> married David Marsh.



her four children, Benjamin, twenty years old, Nathaniel, seventeen, Judith, about eight, and Margaret.

NATHANIEL FELTON;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in what is now Peabody; married Elizabeth Foot June 29, 1698; died in the winter of 1732-3; she survived him; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born May 12, 1699; married James Taylor of Beverly Aug. 25, 1737; 2. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 7, 1701; died Feb. 2, 1717-8; 3. *Malachi*,<sup>5</sup> born May 14, 1705; 4. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born March 16, 1707; married Caleb Balch of Beverly Nov. 20, 1753; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born May 17, 1709; living in 1765; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 29, 1710; died April 3, 1712; 7. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 9, 1712; scythe maker; lived in Watertown; married Joanna Ruggles of Roxbury; died Aug. 15, 1765; she married, second, Samuel Livermore of Waltham; had children; 8. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born May 9, 1714; lived in Roxbury; married Anna Jacobs July 13, 1746; died in Roxbury Feb. 24, 1807, aged ninety-two; had children; 9. Isaac,<sup>5</sup> born March 6, 1716-7; died Feb. 2, 1717-8; 10. Isaac,<sup>5</sup> born in 1719; living in 1748; 11. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born May 20, 1721; living in 1733. SAMUEL FELTON;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; married Sarah Goodale May 10, 1709; she was living in 1754; he died in Danvers Oct. 5, 1772, aged ninety; children: 1. *Stephen*,<sup>5</sup> born April 19, 1710; 2. Amos,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 7, 1711-2; died March 13, 1712; 3. Jacob,<sup>5</sup> born March 3, 1713; cordwainer; lived in what is now Peabody; removed to Marlborough about 1738; married, first, Sarah Barrett about 1740; she died March 26, 1742; married, second, Hasadiah Howe in 1749; died Nov. 20, 1789; she died, his widow, Feb. 25, 1819 aged ninety-three; had children; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 2, 1714-5; married John Webber of Marblehead June 14, 1739; 5. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 24, 1716; married Moses How of Marlborough; 6. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 17, 1718-9; lived in what is now Peabody; married Mary Smith in 1756; died Feb. —, 1782; she died Feb. 12, 1810; had children; 7. David,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 6, 1720; tanner; lived in Marlborough until 1762, when he removed to Petersham; married, first, Zerviah Howe Oct. —, 1747; she died in Petersham June 28, 1773; married, second, Elizabeth Wilder of Petersham in 1774; died in the winter of 1776-7; had children; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 2, 1722; died young; 9. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 19, 1723; married Benjamin Deland; 10. Zachariah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 20, 1725-6; lived in Danvers, in that part now Peabody; married Tamison Upton Dec. —, 1754; died March 23, 1780; she married, second, John Dodge May —, 1788; no children. JOHN FELTON;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Mary Waters April 6, 1721; she was living in 1765; he died in Danvers Jan. —, 1777, aged ninety; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born March 9, 1721-2; 2. *John*,<sup>5</sup> born July 28, 1723; 3. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 31, 1724-5; living in 1765; 4. Nathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized in 1725-6; died about 1760; 5. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 14, 1727-8; living in 1765; 6. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 23, 1728-9; married Archelaus Mackintire of Reading Feb. 5, 1761; 7. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 6, 1730; died young; 8. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 16, 1732; married William Upton of Reading Dec. 9, 1755; 9. Elisha,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 30, 1733; tanner; lived in Marlborough, Mass., and Amherst, N. H.; married Rachel Holt; died Sept. 2, 1805; she died Oct. 27, 1807; had children; 10. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 30, 1735; 11. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 7, 1736; lived in Amherst, N. H.; married Rebecca —; died in 1775; she survived him, and lived in Temple; had a child; 12. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 16, 1738; probably died young; 13. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 28, 1740; a soldier in 1775; 14. Timothy,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 19, 1742; soldier of the Revolution; lived in Danvers, in what is now Peabody; married Hannah Proctor Oct. 10, 1765; he died Oct. 12, 1811; she died Sept. 19, 1815; had children. SKELTON FELTON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; removed to Rutland about 1745; married Hephzibah Sheldon May 29, 1712; she was living in 1745; he died in 1749; children:

Because "of the many & extraordinary mercyes w<sup>ch</sup> the Lord hath beene pleased to vouchsafe of late to this plantacon, vz. a

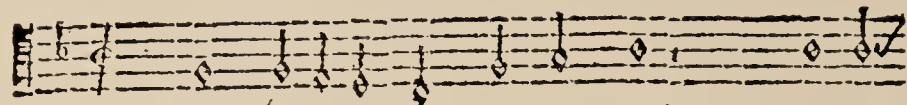
1. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 28, 1712; married Ebenezer Foster; 2. Rebecca,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 7, 1714; married Joseph Houlton; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 14, 1715; 4. Anna,<sup>5</sup> baptized in 1717; married Jacob Shaw of Leicester March 16, 1753; 5. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 8, 1720; died young; 6. Hepsibah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 20, 1722-3; married Samuel Haywood of Holden; 7. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized May —, 1725; married John Grout of Rutland March 8, 1747-8. DEA. EBENEZER FELTON;<sup>4</sup> housewright; removed to New Salem, Mass., in 1740; married, first, Mehitable —; second, Jehoadan Ward Oct. 26, 1716; he died in 1776; children: 1. *David*,<sup>5</sup> born in 1711; 2. Esther,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 3, 1727; married Isaac Southwick; 3. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> born about 1720; lived in New Salem; married Lydia Stacy June 24, 1753; had children; 4. Amos,<sup>5</sup> born June 5, 1724; lived in Shutesbury and New Salem; married Hannah Neal in 1776; died Jan. 20, 1806; she died in New Salem Oct. 21, 1836, aged ninety-four; had children; 5. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born in 1727; lived in New Salem; married, first, — Rich, who lived only a few months; second, Mary (Pierce), widow of Dr. Alexander Conkey of New Salem; died March 21, 1813; his wife Mary survived him, and died, his widow, April 5, 1829; had children; 6. John<sup>5</sup> (twin), baptized June 23, 1728; died young; 7. Nathaniel<sup>5</sup> (twin), baptized June 23, 1728; died young; 8. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 31, 1730; lived in New Salem; married Mary Whiting Nov. —, 1766; died about 1800; had children; 9. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 12, 1732; 10. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 15, 1735-6. JONATHAN FELTON;<sup>4</sup> married Rebecca Needham Jan. —, 1718-9; was living in 1761; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 29, 1721; married Jonathan Tarbell; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 5, 1723; lived in Danvers, in that part now Peabody; married Dorcas (Upton), widow of Stephen Felton, March 28, 1754; died Feb. 8, 1776; she died, his widow, March 23, 1803; had children; 3. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized in 1725; died young; 4. Anthony,<sup>5</sup> baptized in 1736; lived in Danvers; married, first, Elizabeth Pickard of Boxford Jan. 20, 1763; she died Aug. 2, 1781; married, second, Elizabeth Nichols Dec. 2, 1781; died April 26, 1789; his wife Elizabeth died Aug. 2, 1808; had a child; 5. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 6, 1736-7; married Anne Whittemore May 24, 1772; lived in Danvers; 6. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 25, 1740; married Stephen Whittemore March 18, 1762; 7. Archelaus,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 25, 1740; lived in Marlborough; tanner; married, first, Elizabeth Hunter; she died Feb. 9, 1774, aged twenty-nine; married, second, Lydia Newton Sept. —, 1774; died March 30, 1825; had children; 8. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 11, 1743; lived in Needham; potter; married Abigail Cook of Danvers Dec. 12, 1765; died Dec. —, 1828; had children.

DEA. MALACHI FELTON;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived on his father's place, in what is now Peabody; married Abigail Jacobs Feb. 5, 1735-6; she was living in 1768; he died about 1780; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 30, 1738; married Joseph Richardson of Stoneham Feb. 10, 1761; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 14, 1741; 3. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1742-3; married Dea. Benjamin Kent July 24, 1766; 4. Malachi,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 14, 1745; 5. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 10, 1750; married Robert Wilson. STEPHEN FELTON;<sup>5</sup> lived in what is now Danvers; married Dorcas Upton Nov. 16, 1742; died in 1751; she married, secondly, Nathaniel Felton; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized about 1748; 2. Stephen,<sup>6</sup> baptized about 1748. JOHN FELTON;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived in what is now Peabody; married Elizabeth Smith Nov. 8, 1744; she was living in 1770; he died in 1801; child: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> died Aug. 2, 1805. JOSEPH FELTON;<sup>5</sup> removed, in 1744, to that part of Rutland now Oakham; married Mary Trask Nov. 11, 1736; she died in Oakham Jan. 16, 1801; he died there Feb. 14, 1803; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 18, 1737; married Moses

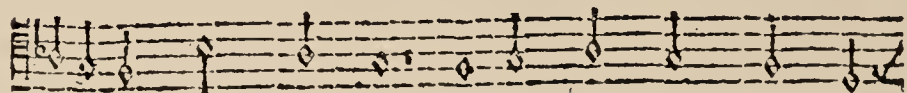


plentifull harvest, ships safely arrived w<sup>th</sup> psons of spetiall vse & quality &c.", Wednesday, October 16th, was observed as a day of public thanksgiving throughout the several plantations.

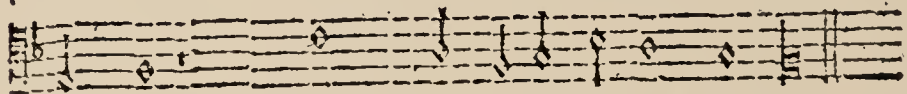
*Psalm. 100.*



1. *SHewt to Jehovah, al the earth. 2. Serve ye*



*Jehovah with gladnes: before him come with sing-*



*ing-merit. 3. Know, that Jehovah he God is:*

*Its he that made us, and not wee;  
his folk, and sheep of his feeding.*

4. *O With confession enter yee  
his gates, his courtyards with praising:  
confess to him, bless ye his name.*

5. *Because Jehovah he good is:  
his mercy ever is the same:  
and his faith, unto al ages,*

FROM THE BOOK OF PSALMS.

At this time, a change occurred in the hours of the church lectures. It was found that the ordinary hours in the forenoon at which they were then held were detrimental to the common good of the inhabitants, "both in the losse of a whole day & bringing oth<sup>r</sup> charges & trouble to the place where the lecture is kept," and it was ordered by the general court, Oct. 1, 1633, that no lecture should begin before one o'clock in the afternoon.

The music in the services of the church was wholly vocal. A singing book was used. This was "The Book of Psalms," by Henry Ainsworth, which was published in Amsterdam in 1612. It was limited to psalms, and contained notes as well as words.

Hamilton Jan. 15, 1767; 2. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> born March 12, 1739; captain; soldier of the Revolution; lived in Rutland, Sturbridge and Brookfield; married, first, Jennie Dorrity Dec. 24, 1767; second, Ruth Hamilton Jan. —, 1771; died Jan. 26, 1820; had children; 3. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 21, 1741; married — Curtis of Hartford, Conn.; 4. Hephshibah,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 21, 1743; married

Although the corn crop of 1633 was good and abundant, such a valuable food was not to be wasted, and at the general court in November it was agreed that no man should give his swine any corn except such as had been viewed by two or three neighbors and judged by them to be unfit for persons to eat.

William Wood left Lynn for England in the latter part of the summer of 1633, and in his book, entitled "New Englands Prospect," he wrote that Salem "stands on the middle of a necke of land very pleasantly, having a South river on the one side and a North river on the other side: upon this necke where the most of the houses stand is very bad and sandie ground, yet for seaven yeares together it hath brought forth exceeding good corne, by being fished but every yeare; in many places is very good ground, and very good timber, and divers springs hard by the sea side. .



PART OF WOOD'S MAP.

Although their land is none of the best, yet beyond those rivers is a very good soyle, where they have taken farmes, and get their Hay, and plant their corne; there they crosse these rivers with small Cannowes, which are made of whole pine trees, being about two foot & a half over, and 20 foote long: in these likewise they goe a fowling sometimes two leagues to sea; there be more Can-

Capt. Wyman Hoyt; 5. Desire,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 21, 1746; 6. Betsey,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 29, 1748; 7. Skelton,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 10, 1750; 8. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 17, 1753; 9. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> born July 3, 1755; 10. Isabell,<sup>6</sup> born March 23, 1759; 11. John,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 21, 1761; 12. ———<sup>6</sup> (daughter); died Nov. 13, 1775; 13. Abigail;<sup>6</sup> married Montgomery Bartlett. DAVID FELTON;<sup>5</sup> house carpenter; removed to New Salem in 1740; married Sarah Holton Nov. 14, 1736; she died Dec. 15, 1790; he died March 20, 1792; children: 1. James,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 8, 1738; lived in New Salem; representative; married Sarah Houlton Nov. 24, 1760; died in 1804; she survived him; had children; 2. Ebenezer,<sup>6</sup> born about 1741; lived in New Salem; married Hannah Page Jan. —, 1762; she died July 8, 1773; he was living in 1792; had children; 3. David,<sup>6</sup> baptized May —, 1745.



nowes in this towne than in all the whole Patent; every household having a water-hors or two. This Towne wants an Alewife river, which is a great inconvenience; it hath two good harbours, the one being called Winter and the other Summer harbour, which lyeth within Derbies Fort, which place if it were well fortified, might keepe shippes from landing of forces in any of those two places. Marvill Head is a place which lyeth 4 miles full South from Salem and is a very convenient place for a plantation, especially for such as will set upon the trade of fishing. There was made here a ships loading of fish the last yeare, where still stands the stages, and drying scaffolds; here be good harbour for boates, and safe riding for shippes."

Mr. Wood published in his book a map of the region, a part of which is reproduced on the preceding page.

The winter of 1633-4 was very mild, the wind being slight and principally from the south and southwest, but there were several great snow storms. February 15th, snow fell to the depth of nearly two feet on the average.

Robert Goodale<sup>1</sup> came here from Ipswich, England, in the Elizabeth, in 1634. He was thirty years of age, and lived in the

<sup>1</sup>ROBERT GOODALE,<sup>1</sup> born about 1604; planter; married, first, Catharine —; second, Margaret Lazenby of Exeter, N. H., in 1669; died in 1683; his wife Margaret survived him, and was his widow in 1685; children: 1. Mary,<sup>2</sup> born about 1629; married John Pease; 2. Abraham,<sup>2</sup> born about 1631; 3. *Isaac*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1633; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> married, first, John Smith; second, Henry Bennett; being the latter's widow in 1692; 5. —,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 31, 1640; 6. Jacob,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 9, 1641-2; 7. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> married John Bachelder of Wenham May 4, 1666; 8. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1645; married Lot Killam; 9. *Zachariah*.<sup>2</sup>

ISAAC GOODALE;<sup>2</sup> married Patience Cook Jan. 25, 1668-9; died in the autumn of 1679; she married, secondly, — Stimpson before 1693; and she was the latter's widow in 1699; children: 1. *Isaac*,<sup>3</sup> born March 29, 1670; 2. Hester,<sup>3</sup> born March 17, 1671-2; 3. *Zachariah*,<sup>3</sup> born May 15, 1675; living in 1699; 4. Abraham,<sup>3</sup> born May 3, 1677; died May 6, 1677; 5. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 1, 1678; unmarried in 1696; 6. —,<sup>3</sup> (son), born middle of September, 16—; died about November, 16—; 7. John;<sup>3</sup> living in 1705; probably married Elizabeth Witt Sept. 8, 1703. ZACHARIAH GOODALE;<sup>2</sup> husbandman and weaver; married Elizabeth Beachem Dec. 31, 1666; they were living in 1715; children: 1. *Zachariah*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 9, 1667; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 3, 1669; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 23, 1672; 4. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 27, 1674; 5. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 30, 1676; 6. *Abraham*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 7, 1678; 7. John,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 10, 1681; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 23, 1689-90; married William Fuller Oct. 16, 1714; 9. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 23, 1689-90; married Samuel Felton; 10. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born July 4, 1687; 11. *David*,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1689.

ISAAC GOODALE;<sup>3</sup> yeoman and house carpenter; married Mary — Dec. 31, 1692; died in the spring of 1739; she survived him; children: 1. *Isaac*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 23, 1692-3; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born May 8, 1694; 3. Esther,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 1, 1695-6; married, first, — Page; second, Elias Trask; 4. Ezekiel,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 20, 1698; died before 1739; 5. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 31, 1701; 6. Mary;<sup>4</sup> married John Oakes April 3, 1722; and died before 1736; 7. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 23, 1706; married — LeCraw of Marblehead; 8. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup>

field northeasterly of Cold spring in North Salem. His descendants have principally resided in the Danvers and Peabody

baptized July 6, 1707; husbandman and innholder; living in 1750; married Abigail Needham (published Dec. 23, 1729); 9. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 2, 1718; married Ebenezer Abbe; 10. Enos,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 2, 1718; cordwainer; lived in Shrewsbury and Marlborough; married Mary —; 11. Jacob,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 7, 1718. ZACHARIAH GOODALE;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married Sarah —; died in the spring of 1727; she survived him; children: 1. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 29, 1693; married John Salter of Marblehead Dec. 16, 1726; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 18, 1695; married Abel Rea; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born March 16, 1697-8; 4. Rebecca,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 9, 1702; living in 1727; 5. Zachary,<sup>4</sup> born March 24, 1703; probably died before 1727; 6. Eunice,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 11, 1709; married Samuel Boyce. SAMUEL GOODALE;<sup>3</sup> carpenter and husbandman; married Mary Buxton Dec. 25, 1697; died in 1717; she died in 1723; children: 1. Rachel,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 26, 1698-9; married Joshua Putnam; 2. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. —, 1700; died Dec. 29, 1700; 3. John,<sup>4</sup> born July 5, 1703; 4. Amos,<sup>4</sup> born May 9, 1707; housewright; removed to Sutton between 1729 and 1736; married Sarah Russell May 27, 1736; 5. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born July 10, 1708; housewright; lived in Andover; died about 1732; 6. Phebe,<sup>4</sup> born July 25, 1710; married Paul Upton; 7. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 25, 1712. JOSEPH GOODALE;<sup>3</sup> carpenter and husbandman; married Mary —son April 6, 1694; was dead in 1726; children: 1. Edward,<sup>4</sup> born May 4, 1695; died June 1, 1709; 2. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born July 5, 1696; married John Wilkins; 3. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 11, 1698-9; married Nathaniel Esty Oct. 21, 1724; 4. Keturah,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 11, 1701; married Jonathan Goodale; 5. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born April 8, 1704; married Ebenezer Upton of Reading Feb. 23, 1727; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 7, 1706; married Solomon Richardson; 7. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 4, 1709-10; died Feb. —, 1709-10; 8. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born July 20, 1711; housewright; lived in Marlborough in 1733. ABRAHAM GOODALE;<sup>3</sup> weaver and husbandman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married, first, Hannah Rhodes of Lynn April —, 1704; second, Mary Tarbell Jan. 23, 1725; died in the winter of 1753-4; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 24, 1705-6; married Benjamin Shaw; 2. Eliezer,<sup>4</sup> born May 12, 1707; had children; 3. Joshua,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 19, 1708; 4. Thankful,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 28, 1710; married — Singletary before 1753; 5. Abraham,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 8, 1712; 6. Anna,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 15, 1714; 7. Henry,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 30, 1717; died young; 8. Henry,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 23, 1727; 9. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 17, 1728; married Ebenezer Aborn of Lynn Nov. 9, 1752. DAVID GOODALE;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married Abigail Eliot of Boxford Jan. 7, 1712-3; died in 1717; she married, secondly, Joseph Hutchinson of Middleton Jan. 19, 1719-20; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born July 3, 1714; married Jonathan Wilkins Oct. 5, 1737; 2. David,<sup>4</sup> born April 30, 1716.

ISAAC GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> fisherman; lived in Marblehead until about 1728, when he removed to Salem, and from thence, in 1739, to New Salem; married Deborah Hawkins Jan. 1, 1717-8; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 6, 1720; 2. Isaac,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 25, 1722; died young; 3. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 19, 1724; 4. Isaac,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 9, 1730; 5. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 12, 1734; 6. James,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 28, 1736; 7. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 30, 1738. SAMUEL GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> blacksmith and fisherman; married Ann Fowler of Salisbury July 4, 1717; died in 1783; she survived him; children: 1. Esther,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 4, 1718; married Samuel Collins of Salisbury Oct. 14, 1734; 2. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born March 5, 1719-20; probably died young; 3. Bartholomew,<sup>5</sup> born June 10, 1723; 4. Enoch,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 9, 1725; 5. Robert;<sup>5</sup> 6. Hannah;<sup>5</sup> married John Mackintire; 7. Mary;<sup>5</sup> married Jude Hackett before 1772; 8. Ann;<sup>5</sup> married Enoch Fowler before 1772; 9. Sarah;<sup>5</sup> married Moses Day Feb. 28, 1756. JONATHAN GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> wheelwright; married Keturah Goodale Nov. 4, 1724; living in 1739; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> bap-



portions of original Salem and have been farmers and mechanics. Many of them have become pioneers in new settlements.

tized April 21, 1728; 2. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 8, 1729-30; shopkeeper; living in 1782. JACOB GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Mehitable Browne Dec. 1, 1737; died in the winter of 1767-8; she survived him; children: 1. Jacob,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 11, 1744; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Upton Dec. 19, 1763; died Sept. 17, 1773; she survived him; 2. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 11, 1744; married Ezra Upton Sept. 25, 1765; 3. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 11, 1744; died in Danvers, unmarried, March 11, 1834, aged ninety; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 28, 1747; married David Upton March 5, 1771; 5. Williams,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 11, 1751; yeoman; lived in Danvers; died Oct. 30, 1796; 6. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 5, 1754; living in 1767; 7. Asa,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 3, 1756; mariner; lived in Danvers; died in 1784; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 15, 1759; married Jeremiah Sheldon June 11, 1781. NATHANIEL GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer; married Lydia Whipple June 27, 1723; died in 1745; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born July 13, 1725; 2. Zachariah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 4, 1729-30; lived in Danvers; married Experience Majury Oct. 17, 1749; had children; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 28, 1731; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Prince Dec. 19, 1751; 4. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 10, 1736; married Benjamin Gilford, March 17, 1755; lived in Danvers. JOHN GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Ruth Bound Nov. 11, 1724; was dead in 1747; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 16, 1725; 2. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 11, 1726-7; married Job Harris in 1747. JOSHUA GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer and shopkeeper or trader; married, first, Experience Judd May 21, 1734; she died Aug. 14, 1748; married, second, Anna Derby Sept. 10, 1749; she died in Danvers Nov. 11, 1789; he died May 18, 1798; children: 1. Joshua,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 20, 1734-5; died Oct. 21, 1737; 2. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 17, 1736; probably died young; 3. Experience,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 12, 1738; married Miles Ward; 4. Nathan,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 14, 1740; H. C., 1759; merchant and esquire; in 1790 he removed to Boston, where he was living in 1802; was schoolmaster in Salem in 1768; married Mary Sewell Jan. 1, 1765; 5. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born June 24, 1751; died of apoplexy, unmarried, July 17, 1821; 6. Joshua,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 17, 1753; 7. Thankful,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 21, 1756; married William Safford; 8. Anne,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1759; married Benjamin Trask of Danvers Nov. 30, 1781. ABRAHAM GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Ruth Houlton Jan. 5, 1737-8; died April 4, 1794; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 12, 1738-9; lived in Danvers; married Anna Prince April 11, 1760; 2. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born May 17, 1741; married John Hutchinson of Middleton Sept. 12, 1766; 3. Eleazer,<sup>5</sup> born May 29, 1743; yeoman; lived in Danvers; published to Sarah Downing Nov. 5, 1767; married Sarah Swinerton Nov. 8, 1770; died April 6, 1804; 4. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 9, 1744-5; died, unmarried, March 11, 1834, in her ninetieth year; 5. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born March 1, 1746-7; married Joseph Dwinnell Dec. 5, 1769; and died May 6, 1836; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 2, 1748; 7. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 22, 1750; 8. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 12, 1752; 9. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 19, 1755; married Timothy Fuller March 17, 1779. DAVID GOODALE;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Lydia Putnam March 2, 1737-8; children: 1. David,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 26, 1747; 2. Emma,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 26, 1747; married Ezra Prince; 3. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 26, 1747; 4. Phebe,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 26, 1747; 5. Ede,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 27, 1747; 6. Huldah,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 15, 1750.

BARTHOLOMEW GOODALE;<sup>5</sup> cooper; married Mary —; died in 1750; she married, secondly, Samuel Stoning (published Oct. 26, 1754); children: 1. Bartholomew,<sup>6</sup> born about 174—; living in 1770; 2. Esther,<sup>6</sup> born about 174—. ENOCH GOODALE;<sup>5</sup> potter; married, first, Elizabeth Buxton Feb. 6,

Richard Hutchinson,<sup>1</sup> son of Thomas and Alice Hutchinson of Arnold, Yorkshire, England, about thirty-two years old, emi-

1746-7; second, Mary — before 1798; living in 1807; children: 1. Ezekiel;<sup>6</sup> lived in Danvers; mariner; married Elizabeth Hayward of Danvers Dec. 11, 1791; lived in Salem in 1808; 2. James;<sup>6</sup> baker and fisherman; lived in Marblehead until 1795, when he returned to Salem; married Barbara Bullock of Danvers Aug. 19, 1787; died in the winter of 1800-1; she married, secondly, — Tibbets before June 29, 1802; they had a daughter Polly baptized in Danvers Aug. 3, 1788. ROBERT GOODALE;<sup>5</sup> fisherman; removed to Weare, N. H., about 1783; married, first, Lydia Wallis Jan. 30, 1752; second, widow Mary Fowler Jan. 2, 1764; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born about 1753; mariner and yeoman; married Sarah Putney of Danvers (published Nov. 28, 1777); she was his wife in 1808; he died April 3, 1823; 2. Robert;<sup>5</sup> living in 1772. JOSHUA GOODALE;<sup>5</sup> blacksmith; married Mary Henfield March —, 1775; died Aug. —, 1795; she was his widow in 1802; children: 1. Joshua,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 1, 1775; master mariner and merchant; agent for Salem Iron Company; married Rebecca Page of Danvers Oct. 22, 1805; died March —, 1845; 2. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> born about 1782; married Solomon Towne; she married, secondly, — Hale of Newbury; 3. Polly,<sup>6</sup> born about 1784; 4. Thankful,<sup>6</sup> born about 1787; married Nathan Green July 15, 1813; 5. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born about 1790; 6. Nathan,<sup>6</sup> born about 1793.

<sup>1</sup>RICHARD HUTCHINSON<sup>1</sup> was born about 1602; husbandman; married, first, Alice Bosworth of Holgrave Dec. 7, 1627; she was his wife in 1643; married, second, Susanna, widow of Samuel Archer Oct. —, 1668; she died Nov. 26, 1674; married, third, Sarah, widow of James Standish; he died in 1682; his wife Sarah survived him, and married, third, Thomas Roots of Manchester; children: 1. Alice,<sup>2</sup> baptized in England Sept. 27, 1628; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized in England Aug. 30, 1629; married Nathaniel Putnam; 3. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized in England Dec. 28, 1630; married Thomas Hale; 4. Rebecca,<sup>2</sup> born in England in 1632; married James Hadlock; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>2</sup> born in North Muskham, England, in 1633; 6. Abigail,<sup>2</sup> baptized in Salem Dec. 25, 1636; married Anthony Ashby; 7. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized in Salem Jan. 20, 1638-9; married Daniel Boardman of Ipswich April 12, 1662; 8. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born May —, 1643.

JOSEPH HUTCHINSON;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married, first, Bethiah Gedney in or before 1660; second, Lydia (Buxton), widow of Joseph Small Feb. 28, 1677-8; she was living in 1708; he died in 1716; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; died young; 2. Bethiah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; died Nov. —, 1690; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; 4. *John*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; 5. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1668; 6. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 14, 1678-9; married Joseph Allen; 7. *Richard*,<sup>3</sup> born May 10, 1681; 8. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 9, 1682; husbandman; lived in Salem; living in 1712; 9. Ambrose,<sup>3</sup> born June 4, 1684; 10. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 13, 1685; married George Nurse; 11. Robert,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 13, 1687. JOHN HUTCHINSON;<sup>2</sup> lived in Salem Village; married Sarah Putnam July —, 1673; died Aug. 2, 1676; child: 1. Sarah;<sup>3</sup> married Dea. Joseph Whipple.

JOSEPH HUTCHINSON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem Village; married, first, Elizabeth Swinnerton; she died Dec. 21, 1699; married, second, Rebecca Knight of Topsfield Jan. 30, 1700-1; died in 1751; his wife Rebecca survived him; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 27, 1689; 2. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 26, 1690-1; married Josiah Putnam; 3. Bethiah,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 24, 1693; married Benjamin Putnam; 4. *Ebenezer*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 20, 1694; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 22, 1695; died Feb. 18, 1702; 6. Elisha,<sup>4</sup> born March 14, 1697; died March 1, 1702; 7. Jasper,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 31, 1698-9; died Feb. 16, 1702-3; 8. *Elisha*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 26, 1729; 9. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 19, 1702; married Benjamin



grated to America with his wife Alice and four children in 1634,

Buxton. JOHN HUTCHINSON;<sup>3</sup> farmer; married, first, Mary Gould May 7, 1694; second, Hannah Howard of Beverly March 4, 1710; she was his wife in 1741; he died in 1746; children: 1. ———<sup>4</sup> (son), born Sept. 2, 1695; died Dec. 1, 1695; 2. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 2, 1696; married Daniel Wilkins; 3. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born March 31, 1699; 4. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born March 17, 1702; married Benjamin Putnam; 5. *Ebenezer*,<sup>4</sup> born June 3, 1705; 6. Eunice, born April 9, 1712; married Holyoke Putnam; 7. *William*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 16, 1713-4. BENJAMIN HUTCHINSON;<sup>3</sup> was brought up by Nathaniel Ingersoll; innholder and yeoman; married, first, Jane Phillips Nov. 14, 1689; she died Nov. 7, 1711; married, second, widow Abigail Foster Jan. 26, 1714-5; she was living in 1732; he died in 1733; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 31, 1690; died Sept. 18, 1690; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born May 7, 1692; married William Henfield; 3. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 27, 1693-4; 4. Bethiah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 5, 1695-6; living in 1716; 5. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born May 3, 1698; 6. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 26, 1701; married Cornelius Putnam; 7. Bartholomew,<sup>4</sup> born April 27, 1703; 8. Jane,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 1, 1705; married Jonathan Buxton; 9. Israel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 5, 1708; died young; 10. John;<sup>4</sup> died before 1733; 11. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born July 18, 1716. RICHARD HUTCHINSON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; probably removed to Maine about 1738; married Rachel Bance Feb. 16, 1713-4; she was his wife in 1737; children: 1. Stephen,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 15, 1715; lived in Penobscot county and in Windham; married, first, Abigail Haskins Feb. 22, 1737-8; she died in 1777; married, second, Hannah ———; third, Ann, widow of Joseph Legro of Marblehead; he died about 1788; wife Ann died at Hebron, Me., Aug. —, 1805; had children; 2. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 2, 1716; probably published to Benjamin Ganson; 3. Rachel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 29, 1723; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 29, 1723; 5. Daniel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 17, 1729; 6. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> AMBROSE HUTCHINSON;<sup>3</sup> farmer; lived in Salem Village; married Ruth Leach June 24, 1709; she was his wife in 1731; he died in 1757; children: 1. *Amos*,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 10, 1711; 2. Israel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 23, 1713; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 24, 1714; 4. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 5, 1719; died in Lyndeboro about 1789; 5. James,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 11, 1721; died in 1752; 6. *George*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 1, 1730. ROBERT HUTCHINSON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married, first, Elizabeth Putnam Dec. 27, 1711; second, Sarah Putnam June 6, 1717; died in 1733; his wife Sarah survived him; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 21, 1713; married William Shillaber; 2. Robert,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 6, 1716; died before 1733.

JOSEPH HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> farmer; lived in that part of Salem Village which became a part of Middleton in 1728; married, first, Bethiah Gould Oct. 10, 1710; second, Abigail, widow of David Goodale Jan. 19, 1719-20; died in 1781; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 29, 1722; farmer; lived in Middleton; married, first, Hannah Richardson of Middleton June 12, 1746; second, Keziah Marble July 19, 1764; died in 1797; the famous Hutchinson family of singers are his descendants; 2. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 29, 1722; married Stephen Elliot of Middleton Dec. 15, 1741; died Aug. 31, 1826, aged one hundred and four years; 3. Abner,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 6, 1724; yeoman; lived in Amherst and Milford, N. H.; married Elizabeth Phelps; 4. Josiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 10, 1726; husbandman; lived in Middleton; married Sarah Dean of Middleton Dec. 8, 1748; died in 1782; had children; 5. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 31, 1728; married Job Swinnerton; 6. Elizabeth, born in 1730; 7. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 6, 1733-4; died young; 8. John,<sup>5</sup> born in 1736, in Middleton. EBENEZER HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; removed to Middleton in 1751; married, first, Hannah Gould Aug. 13, 1718; second, Hannah (Southwick), widow of Ebenezer Shaw April 5, 1727; died in 1775; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 20, 1730; married Amos Hutchinson; 2. Solomon,<sup>5</sup> born in 1721; lived in Middleton, Amherst, N. H., and Fayette, Me.;

and lived in Salem. The family have lived principally in Salem Village.

married Hannah Putnam of Salem Village Oct. 22, 1746; she died in Amherst in 1802; he died in Fayette about 1815; had children; 3. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 29, 1730; died young; 4. Bethiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 29, 1730; married Joseph Brown Nov. 26, 1751; 5. Robert,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 25, 1732-3; lived in Danvers; married Eunice Buxton June 16, 1767; died Dec. —, 1785; had children; 6. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 18, 1735; farmer and shoemaker; married Ruth Pritchard Jan. 29, 1767; died in 1769; had a child; 7. Jeremy,<sup>5</sup> born June 29, 1738, in Salem Village; farmer; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Putnam April 11, 1760; died April 7, 1805; had children. ELISHA HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> farmer; lived in Salem Village; married Ginger Porter Jan. 12, 1726-7; died before 1730; she married, secondly, Daniel Andrew; child: 1. Israel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 12, 1727; colonel; miller; representative; lived in what is now Danversport; served in the French War and Revolution; married, first, Anne Cue of Wenham (published Dec. 15, 1748); second, Mehitable (Putnam), widow of Dea. Archelaus Putnam in or before 1760; she was his wife in 1774; he died March 16, 1811; had children. JOHN HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> farmer; married Abigail Giles Nov. 17, 1720; died in 1726; she survived him; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 1, 1722; 2. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 19, 1724; 3. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 23, 1726. EBENEZER HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Mary Bound Dec. 13, 1726; children: 1. William;<sup>5</sup> 2. Ebenezer.<sup>5</sup> WILLIAM HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Joanna Trask Nov. 9, 1733; she was living in 1740; he died about 1757; children: 1. John;<sup>5</sup> 2. Hannah;<sup>5</sup> 3. Ebenezer;<sup>5</sup> 4. William;<sup>5</sup> blacksmith; lived in Danvers; married Mary Martin Jan. 11, 1768; died in 1771; she died in 1777; a child. BENJAMIN HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman and cooper; lived in Salem Village until 1734, when he removed to Bedford; married Sarah Tarbell Feb. 7, 1715-6; died in 1780; children: 1. Nathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 10, 1717; farmer; lived in Bedford, Mass., and Amherst and Milford, N. H.; married Rachel Stearns; died in Milford Jan. 12, 1795; had children; 2. Jane,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 20, 1719-20; married Jonathan Grimes of Bedford Feb. 18, 1745-6; 3. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 30, 1722; yeoman; lived in Bedford; married Rebecca Lane of Bedford July 31, 1750; he died in Bedford in 1813; had children; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 21, 1724-5; married Israel Putnam; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1727; died March 12, 1750; 6. Bartholomew<sup>5</sup> (twin), born July 5, 1734; died Sept. 20, 1749; 7. Mary<sup>5</sup> (twin), born July 5, 1734; died Sept. 14, 1749; 8. John,<sup>5</sup> born in 1737. NATHANIEL HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; removed to Sutton in 1733; married, first, Mary Cummings of Topsfield Jan. 24, 1722-3; second, Joanna Conant; died in 1757; his wife Joanna died at Sutton in 1802; aged ninety-three; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 15, 1723-4; married Jonathan Fitts; 2. Susanna,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 28, 1725; married Daniel Day; 3. Bethiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 14, 1730; married Ebenezer Fitts; 4. Bartholomew,<sup>5</sup> born June 28, 1734, in Sutton; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 1, 1736, in Sutton; 6. Nathaniel;<sup>5</sup> died in 1755, in the French War, at Skeensboro, now Whitehall; 7. Lot,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 1, 1741, in Sutton; 8. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 30, 1744; 9. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 2, 1746; 10. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. —, 1752. JONATHAN HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem Village until 1750, when he removed to Andover; married Elizabeth Ganson Jan. 30, 1734-5; she was his wife in 1750; he died in 1768; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 13, 1738; 2. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 26, 1740; killed at the battle of Lake George Sept. 2, 1758; 3. Elijah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 5, 1743, in Salem Village; yeoman; lived in Andover; married Mrs. Hannah Stiles July 31, 1765; died in Andover Sept. —, 1768; had children; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 20, 1746, in Salem;



John Marsh<sup>1</sup> probably came from England in the *Mary* and *John* in 1634. He was a cordwainer and lived in Salem near the head of North Central Street, now in Peabody.

*John Marsh*

5. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born June 28, 1753, in Andover; died Dec. 7, 1778. AMOS HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Hannah Hutchinson July 7, 1737; probably died at sea; she died Sept. 23, 1804; children: 1. Amos;<sup>5</sup> a cripple; died young; 2. Seviah;<sup>5</sup> married William Berry of Middleton Dec. 4, 1770; 3. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born May 23, 1752, in Danvers; married Benjamin Russell Sept. 10, 1795. SAMUEL HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> mariner; removed in or before 1748 to Woodstock, where he manufactured scythes; married Elizabeth Judd Nov. 13, 1735; both were living in 1748; children: 1. Amos;<sup>5</sup> 2. Samuel.<sup>5</sup> GEORGE HUTCHINSON;<sup>4</sup> farmer; removed to Lyndeboro, N. H., about 1764; married, first, Elizabeth Bickford of Middleton (published May 18, 1748); second, Susan Bevins; children: 1. William;<sup>5</sup> 2. Samuel;<sup>5</sup> 3. George;<sup>5</sup> 4. Mary;<sup>5</sup> 5. Susannah;<sup>5</sup> 6. Betsey;<sup>5</sup> 7. Effie,<sup>5</sup> born April 2, 1765, in Wilton, N. H.; 8. Eda;<sup>5</sup> 9. James;<sup>5</sup> 10. Ambrose;<sup>5</sup> 11. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 20, 1774, in Danvers; 12. Clark.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup>JOHN MARSH<sup>1</sup> married Susanna Skelton about 1635; died in the autumn of 1674; she survived him, and married, secondly, Thomas Rix; children: 1. *Zachariah*,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 30, 1637; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 19, 1639; 3. *Ruth*,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 5, 1641; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>2</sup> born July 8, 1646; 5. *Ezekiel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 29, 1648; living in 1674; 6. *Bethiah*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1650; married Jonathan Silsbee; 7. *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 2, 1652; 8. *Susanna*,<sup>2</sup> born May 7, 1654; 9. *Mary*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1656; 10. *Jacob*,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 6, 1658; living in 1674; 11. *Benjamin*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1661; joiner; lived in Rappahannock, Va., in 1690.

ZACHARIAH MARSH;<sup>2</sup> farmer; lived in Salem, in that part now Peabody; married Mary Silsbee; she was his widow in 1695; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 26, 1665; 2. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 8, 1666; married Ebenezer Cutler; 3. *Zachariah*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1668; died, unmarried, in 1694; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 10, 1670; married Samuel King; 5. *Jonathan*,<sup>3</sup> born April 14, 1672; 6. *Ebenezer*,<sup>3</sup> born May 28, 1674; 7. *Ezekiel*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1676; 8. *Abigail*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1680; died, unmarried, Sept. —, 1767; 9. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 20, 1687. JOHN MARSH;<sup>2</sup> mariner, trading with the West Indies; married Sarah Younge March 20, 1662; died Aug. —, 1668, in Barbadoes; she married, secondly, Nicholas Chatwell; children: 1. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 1, 1663; living in 1664; 2. *Ruth*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. —, 1668; married James Hardy. SAMUEL MARSH;<sup>2</sup> married Priscilla Tompkins Aug. 14, 1679; she married, secondly, William Hayward of Mendon May 6, 1708; children: 1. *Susannah*,<sup>3</sup> born May 12, 1680; living in 1693; 2. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 1, 1681; husbandman and weaver; lived in that part of Mendon which was incorporated as Bellingham in 1719; married Abigail —; died in Bellingham Sept. 8, 1727; 3. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 18, 1683; living in 1693; 4. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> born July 18, 1685; married Joseph Gould; 5. *Margaret*,<sup>3</sup> born April 8, 1688; living in 1693; 6. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born June —, 1693.

JOHN MARSH;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; lived in Lynn and Salem, Mass., and Killingly, Conn.; married Alice —; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> living in 1714; 2. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 28, 1687, in Lynn; 3. *Alice*,<sup>4</sup> born in Salem; married Thomas Nelson; 4. *David*,<sup>4</sup> settled in Gloucester, R. I.; married Sarah Felton Dec. 5, 1720; died in Gloucester Sept. 13, 1756; 5. *Zachariah*,<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Abigail Moulton Sept. 2, 1724; 6. *Eleazer*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1702, in Salem; lived in Killingly, Conn.; married Sarah Stimson of Salem Oct. 26, 1727; 7. *Ingraham*,<sup>4</sup> lived in Gloucester, R. I. JONATHAN MARSH;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; lived in Salem and Sutton; was wounded in the Indian fight

The settlers here relied upon Indian corn for sustenance. In its dry state, it was reduced to meal which was then used in the making of bread, puddings, etc. The Indians made the meal by

at Haverhill; married, first, Mary Very May 20, 1697; second, Hannah Buffington Oct. 7, 1725; children, born in Salem: 1. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born April 17, 1699; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 2, 1700; 3. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 4, 1701; 4. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born March 29, 1703; 5. Catherine,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 31, 1728; 6. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 31, 1728. EBENEZER MARSH;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married Alice Booth Nov. 1, 1699; died before May 28, 1722; children: 1. *Ebenezer*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 22, 1700; 2. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born April 2, 1702; married William Twiss; 3. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 10, 1704; husbandman; lived in Sutton; married, first, Mehitable King Jan. 3, 1729; second, Ruth Waters; third, Mrs. Abigail Harback Nov. 26, 1783. EZEKIEL MARSH;<sup>3</sup> married Rebecca Gould July 1, 1702; died about 1750; she died in 1772; children: 1. Zachariah;<sup>4</sup> probably died young; 2. Abigail;<sup>4</sup> probably died young; 3. Desire,<sup>4</sup> born about 1707; baptized July 10, 1709; married Jonathan Moulton Nov. 28, 1734; 4. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 10, 1709; 5. Ezekiel,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 27, 1711; 6. Daniel,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 5, 1715; 7. Rebecca,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 20, 1717. BENJAMIN MARSH;<sup>3</sup> became one of the first three settlers of Sutton in the winter of 1716-7; married, first, Hannah King June 24, 1709; second, Elizabeth Wheeler Feb. 11, 1748; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born April 1, 1711; married, first, Desire Moulton; second, Rebecca Carriel Jan. 14, 1742; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 29, 1713; married John Sibley March 13, 1731; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 20, 1714-5; lived in Sutton in 1755; 4. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 29, 1718, in Sutton, being the first white child born there; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born May 30, 1720, in Sutton; 6. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. —, 1722, in Sutton.

DEA. JONATHAN MARSH;<sup>4</sup> settled in Sutton about 1731; married Esther Osborne April 7, 1726-7; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born in 1728 or 1729, in Salem; married Hannah Holt July 20, 1749; both died at Rowe, Mass., she Dec. 13, 1808, and he March 1, 1815; 2. William,<sup>5</sup> born about 1732; 3. Zebadiah,<sup>5</sup> born about 1735; 4. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born in 1738; soldier of the Revolution; died at Croyden, N. H., in 1832, aged ninety-four; 5. Abner,<sup>5</sup> born about 1740; 6. Esther,<sup>5</sup> born about 1743; 7. John,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 11, 1749, in Killingly. JOSEPH MARSH;<sup>4</sup> removed to Killingly, Conn. in 1740; married Provided Gould June 8, 1721; child: 1. Joseph;<sup>5</sup> married Elizabeth Parrot Oct. 31, 1753; died in the winter of 1759-60; she survived him. SAMUEL MARSH;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem, Mass., and Killingly, Conn.; married, first, Elizabeth Flint Feb. 23, 1726; second, Martha Coates about 1744; died soon afterward; she married, second, Ezekiel Cutler of Killingly; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized in Salem June 7, 1730; 2. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 16, 1745, at Killingly. EBENEZER MARSH;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Deliverance French Sept. 13, 1727; children: 1. Humphrey;<sup>5</sup> lived in Danvers; married Mary Gardner July 30, 1756; 2. Ebenezer;<sup>5</sup> lived in Danvers; married Hannah Cook; died Nov. 3, 1784; 3. Caleb,<sup>5</sup> born July 27, 1736; lived in Sutton and Brookfield; soldier of the Revolution; married Ruth Dodge of Boxford; died in Brookfield in 1814; 4. Catherine,<sup>5</sup> born March —, 1738; died Dec. 19, 1831, aged ninety-three. ENS. EZEKIEL MARSH;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Sarah Buffington in 1732; died in 1798; she died in 1809; children: 1. Desire,<sup>5</sup> baptized in Salem Nov. 28, 1736; married Hezekiah Dunkle Sept. 4, 1755; 2. Ezekiel,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 26, 1740; lived in Danvers, Mass., and Fairfield, Me.; married Abiah Hartshorne May 30, 1764; died in Fairfield Sept. 15, 1822; 3. Stephen;<sup>5</sup> lived in Manchester; married Ruth Rea; died May 14, 1815; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 10, 1750; married Nathaniel Fitz; 5. John,<sup>5</sup> born May 26, 1750; married Frances Foster; she died July 30, 1778.



pounding the corn with a stone pestle in a cavity in a rock. The English adopted the same method, except that they used wood instead of stone. This method was not only slow, but laborious, and a mill of some kind was eagerly desired to relieve them of this burden.

About 1634, Capt. William Trask, who lived on the northern side of Boston Street just easterly of the Trask burying ground, built a grist mill, to be run by water, in what is now Peabody, in the rear of the present Universalist meeting house, on the upper side of the way from the main road into the North field. This way is still in use and called Wallis and Mill streets. This was the first corn mill to be constructed in Salem. The town gave him the right to flow a sufficient amount of the low land for his mill pond.<sup>1</sup>

This mill was discontinued in 1640, as the supply of water furnished insufficient power. The mill house was next used by Thomas Lovell for the exercise of his trade of currier.<sup>2</sup> About 1654, was established there a samp mortar mill, which was changed in 1662 into a corn mill. This mill was run for several years; and, after it had been unused for some time, was apparently removed, as, in 1692, a fulling mill was built upon the same site.

The title to the mill remained in the Trask family, passing by will from Capt. William Trask, who died in 1666, to his sons William and John. The son William died in 1691, having devised his half of the property to his sons William and John, both of whom conveyed their interests to their uncle John Trask, who immediately built the fulling mill. He died in November, 1729, having devised the mill to his son Nicholas, who had been running it as early as 1708. John Trask was the last owner of the mill, which was gone before 1754.

The first lands actually set apart, by the general court March 4, 1633-4, for public uses were the swamps of more than one hundred acres in area, regardless of whether they belonged to any town or not. They were to lie in common so that any of the colony might obtain wood therefrom at seasonable times, without prejudice to the inhabitants of the place where each swamp was located.

<sup>1</sup>See depositions of Benjamin Balch and John Massey, April 10, 1706 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 12); Robert Pease and Elizabeth Buxton, Feb. 25, 1706-7 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 12); Thomas Lovell, March 27, 1707 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 13); Samuel Goldthwaite, April 27, 1708 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 124); and of John King and William Curtis, in April, 1708 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 125).

<sup>2</sup>Deposition of Thomas Lovell, aged eighty-six years, March 27, 1707 (Essex Registry of Deeds, book 20, leaf 13).

On the first day of April following, the court ordered that the constable and four or more of the chief inhabitants of each town (to be chosen by the freemen of the place in a meeting), with the advice of some one or more of the assistants, should make a survey of the backside of each house, corn fields, mowing ground and other lands, improved, enclosed or granted by special order of the court, of every free inhabitant there, and enter the same in a book, fairly written at length in words and not in figures, with the several bounds and quantities, by the nearest estimation, and deliver a transcript thereof into the court, within six months from that time, and the same so entered and recorded should be a sufficient assurance to every such inhabitant and his heirs and assigns.

A similar record was made for assurance of the title of all houses and town-lots, and every future sale or grant of such houses or lots was to be duly entered, for which entry the purchaser was to pay six pence.

At a meeting of the general court May 14, 1634, it was decided that none other than that court could dispose of lands, that is, to give and confirm proprieties. But this decision was changed March 3, 1635-6, the court considering that the individual towns had many things which concerned only themselves, and the ordering of their own affairs. It was then ordered that the freemen of each town only should have power to dispose of their own lands and woods, to grant lots, etc.

At a town meeting in Salem, Aug. 22, 1635, it was ordered that all of the inhabitants of the town who had land should have the lot layers bound it, within a stated time, by stones or deep holes, and a record of the same made.

Nov. 16, 1635, Capt. William Trask, John Woodbury, Roger Conant, Jeffry Massey and John Balch were appointed overseers and layers out of lots of land granted by the town, and they were to have for their services four pence an acre for small lots and ten shillings per hundred acres for great lots so laid out and bounded.

In 1637, Ralph Fogg kept the records of the town. The existing records begin with the book of grants, Oct. 1, 1634.<sup>1</sup> For recording grants of land in the town book Mr. Fogg had nine pence for each twenty acres, twelve pence for thirty acres, fifteen pence for forty acres and one shilling and six pence for fifty acres.<sup>2</sup>

Aug. 1, 1637, the general court suggested that some course be taken to cause men to record the description of their lands, by

<sup>1</sup>Dec. 4, 1637, the whole town being met together, it was agreed "that there shall forthw<sup>th</sup> a faire book be pcured & all the lawes and orders or other records w<sup>ch</sup> are written in the Court booke shall be fairely written out at the cost & chardges of the towne."

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 37 (printed).



fining them for their failure to do so. These records were made in the town records, as registries of deeds did not come into existence until several years later.

Dec. 25, 1637, the town "agreed that the marsh & meadow Lands that haue formerly layed in comon to this Towne shall now be appropriated to the Inhabitants of Salem, proportioned out vnto them according to the heads of their families. To those that have the greatest number an acre thereof & to those that haue least not aboue haue an acre, & to those that are betweene both 3 q<sup>r</sup>ters of an acre, alwaies provided & it is so agreed that none shall sell away their proportions of meadow, more or lesse, nor lease them out to any aboue 3 yeares, vnlesse they sell or lease out their howses w<sup>th</sup> their meadow."

Rev. Samuel Skelton continued to be the nominal pastor of of the church in Salem, though unable to conduct many if any of of its services. The work fell to Rev. Roger Williams, who performed it with zeal. Mr. Skelton died Aug. 2, 1634.

Edward Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence," wrote the following lines:—<sup>1</sup>

Scelton for Chrif did leave his Native foile,  
 Chrif Grace first wrought for him, or he had never  
 A Pastor been in Wilderneffe to toile,  
 Where Chrif his Flock doth into Churches gather;  
 For five yeares fpace to end they war-faire thou,  
 Muft meete with wantes, what wants can be to him?  
 Whofe Shepheard's Chrif, Earths fullneffe hath forgon;  
 And Heavens rich Crowne for thee, with's conquest win.

After his death, the wife of Richard Beggarly attended to the settlement of Mr. Skelton's affairs. Who she was has never been determined. She was apparently the same person who, three years later, had a grant of land in Salem under the name of Mrs. Alice Daniel, who subsequently married John Greene. She was probably some connection of Mr. Skelton.<sup>2</sup>

After Mr. Skelton's death, his house went to ruin, and being in danger of falling, to the injury of persons and cattle, the quarterly court, held at Salem, Aug. 27, 1644, ordered that the house be taken down within ten days. This order was apparently complied with at once.

At a court of assistants, at Cambridge June 5, 1638, "It was ordered w<sup>th</sup> the consent of M<sup>rs</sup> Baggerly that the increase of M<sup>r</sup>

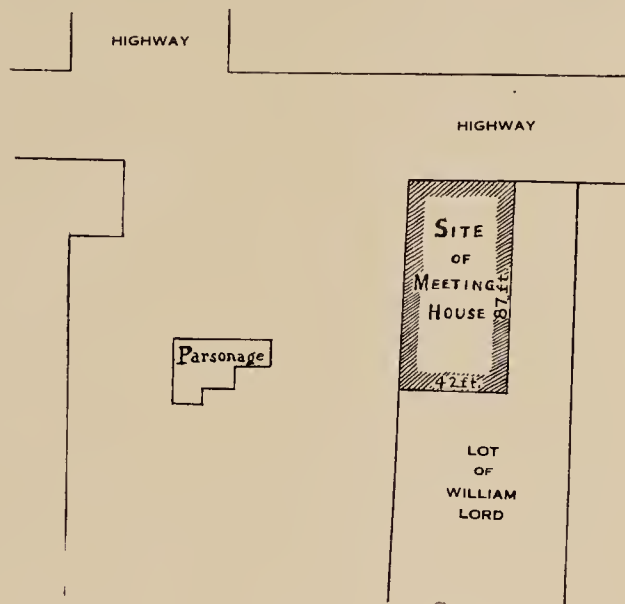
<sup>1</sup>History of New England; Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour in New England, By Edward Johnson, 1654.

<sup>2</sup>Copies of interesting accounts filed in the record office of the superior court in Boston are printed in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, volume 14, pages 143-152.

Skeltons cattle should bee divided according to M<sup>r</sup> Skelton's will, & that the goods & household stuffe which belongs to the 3 eldest child'n should bee divided by some of the church of Salem, and committed to the church of Salem."

Apparently, as soon as Rev. Mr. Williams took sole charge of the ministerial work here, the building of a meeting house was commenced, the front end being on Essex Street. It was completed before August, 1635.<sup>1</sup>

Its size is unknown, except what inferences may be drawn from the number of people it must have accommodated, and the character, education and means of the early settlers of Salem. Records relative to repairs of the building indicate that it was large. It had at least one gallery, with a pair of stairs leading to it, glass windows and a bell.



SITE OF MEETING HOUSE.

Apparently, the people erected the meeting house by subscription, as at a town meeting, May 15, 1637, "M<sup>r</sup> Sharpe hath remitted freely by the Towne y<sup>e</sup> 4<sup>th</sup> he did und<sup>r</sup>writ for meeting house. But Jn<sup>o</sup> Sweet 2<sup>d</sup> is not remitted."

No site had been left for a meeting house when the town was first laid out; and the northwesterly corner of the houselot of William Lord was taken therefor. This was the easterly part of the lot now occupied by the First Church edifice in Town House Square.<sup>2</sup>

Wednesday, Aug. 20, 1634, was kept as a day of public thanksgiving in the several plantations for the safe arrival of the ships and passengers that summer.

At the general court, held Nov. 8, 1633, the standard price of corn of the country was fixed at six shillings a bushel, cows from twenty to twenty-six pounds, mares at thirty-five pounds

<sup>1</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 1.

<sup>2</sup>By vote of the thirteen men (selectmen), March 28, 1636, Mr. Lord was granted a two-acre lot of land as near as possible to the ten-acre lots to compensate him for the land taken.

May 15, 1660, he was further granted by the selectmen ten acres of land for the same reason.

He made another claim for payment for his land so taken, but the town voted, March 19, 1667-8, that he had already been paid, "and he may take what further Courfe he feeth good."



and ewe goats from three to four pounds. These prices were high. Each year many cattle were brought from England and some from Virginia.

At the same court, on the same day, the maximum amount of profit on the sale of certain necessities, as provisions, clothing, tools, etc., was fixed at four pence in a shilling, or one-third more than the cost in England. The court added that "wee doe advise all men to be a rule to themselves, in keeping a good conscience, assuring them that, if any man shall exceed the bounds of moderacon, wee shall punish them seuerely."

An attempt was made by the general court, September 3, 1634, to regulate prices at the ordinaries. It was ordered that six pence was all that could be received for a meal and not more than a penny for an ale quart of beer, out of meal time.

In order to further economy among the people, the court, at the same sitting, undertook to regulate the cost of apparel, which they called a "great, superfluous and unnecessary" expense. The regulation was directed, principally, against "some new and immodest fashions," and, also, the ordinary wearing of silver, gold and silk laces, girdles, hatbands, etc. It was ordered that neither men nor women should make or buy any apparel, either woollen, silk or linen, with any lace on it, either silver, gold or thread. They were prohibited from making or buying any slashed clothes, other than one slash in each sleeve and another in the back; also, from making or wearing any cut work, embroidered or needle-worked caps, bands and rails, and gold or silver girdles, hatbands, belts, ruffs and beaver hats. The penalty in each case was the forfeiture of the article.

If any man was offended by another wearing prohibited articles, or long hair, or anything of a like nature, or if in his judgment it was "uncomely or prejudicial to the common good, and the party offending reform not the same upon notice given him," an assistant might bind the offender to answer at the next court. Such apparel as was on hand when the laws were passed, was allowed to be used until worn out, except "the imoderate greate sleeues, slashed appell, imoderate great rayles, longe wings &c."

Oct. 28, 1636, the general court ordered that no person should make or sell any bone lace, or other lace, to be worn upon any garment or linen; neither should any tailor set any lace upon any garment, except that binding or small edging laces might be used upon garments or linen.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE RED CROSS INCIDENT.



THE antipathy of Protestants toward Catholics in early days is little understood. Like some factions who, because of religious over-zeal, made rules of conduct in an endeavor to compel their believers to lead a life consistent with their recognized tenets, the Puritans in Salem sought to remove every vestige of Roman rule and religion and turn the thoughts of the settlers solely to what they believed to be pure faith and service. For this reason, for instance, the names of the days of the week and of the months were generally discarded, and they were known only by their numbers, as first, second, third and so on, in their order. Edward Johnson, in his *Wonder-Working Providence*, published in 1654, wrote<sup>1</sup> that it was done "not out of any peevish humor of singularity, as some are ready to censor them with, but of purpose to prevent the Heathenish and Popish observation of Dayes, Moneths and Yeares, that they may be forgotten among the people of the Lord."

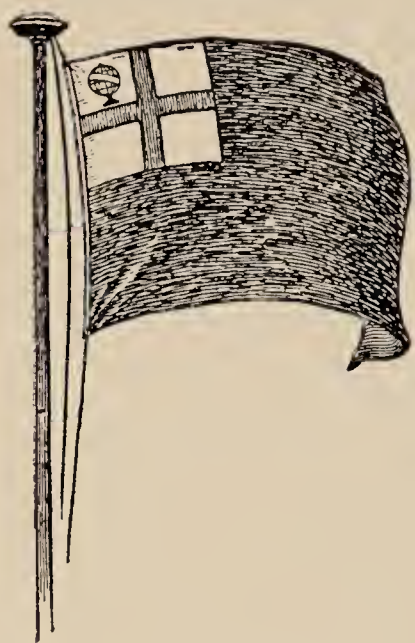
Governor Endecott was not a whit behind his associates in their endeavors to remove from the view of the people everything that seemed even suggestive of papacy.

National banners were occasioned more by religion than by patriotism, and it is not strange to find upon them emblems that were religious in their inception and use. The banner of William the Conqueror was presented to him by the pope, and others had similar origin. The British ensign, at this time, had, in its left-hand upper corner, a red St. George's cross. Governor Endecott believed that it was given to the King of England by the pope as an emblem of victory, and so a superstitious thing of the Anti-christ, and refused to recognize its authority. Some others of the

<sup>1</sup>History of New England; *Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour in New-England*, by Edward Johnson, 1654, book I, chapter 27, page 59.



military company in Salem also refused to follow the ensign. How far the expressed thought of Roger Williams may have induced this decision of Endecott will probably never be known.



ENSIGN.

Without conference with the magistrates or other colonial officials, Governor Endecott acted upon this determination, and deliberately removed the cross from the ensign, cutting it out, it is said with his sword. This was in the spring of 1634, at Salem.

Captain William Trask commanded the Salem company at this time and Richard Davenport was the ensign.

At a meeting of the assistants, held in October of that year, complaint was made by Richard Brown of Watertown, in the name of himself and others, that the ensign at Salem was defaced, by taking out "one part of the red cross." An "attachment"

was thereupon awarded against Richard Davenport, the bearer of the ensign, to appear and answer at the next session of the court, for defacing his colors, which he was ordered to bring with him, as well as any persons who had defaced the colors. It was considered to be a serious matter, for the defacement of the king's colors might be construed as an act of rebellion or treason or of like high nature. Probably most of the people as well as the officials approved of the change in the banner, but the reception of the news of the incident by the king might have a great influence, to say the least, upon the future of the colony as well as its very existence.

On the twenty-seventh of the next month, the assistants met at the house of the governor, Thomas Dudley, to discuss the subject. This was also considered at the meeting of the ministers in Boston, January 19, 1634-5. They were divided in their opinion as to whether it was lawful to carry the cross in their banners, and so the discussion of the matter was deferred until the next meeting.<sup>1</sup> It was finally decided to write to Mr. Downing, in England, the truth of the matter, as warily as possible, under the hands of all the assistants, so that, if occasion required, it might show as an excuse, because therein they would express their disapproval of the occurrence, and their purpose to punish the offenders.

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 154.

By reason of the great snow storms and cold weather the general court did not meet during the winter months, so the matter did not receive a hearing in court until March 4th following, when it was "cheifly caled about Captyne Indicott his fact about the crosse." Mr. Bellingham was the chief speaker. Mr. Endecott was required to answer for his defacing of the ensign. The court failed to agree, as to whether the men should be compelled to follow the ensign, and the matter was continued until the next session of the court; and it was ordered that, in the meantime, all ensigns be laid aside, etc. At this court Mr. Endecott, John Holgrave, Charles Gott and Peter Palfrey were present.

The next general court, at which the annual election took place, was held May 6, 1635. Mr. Endecott was left out. At this session, he was called to answer for defacing the colors; a committee was chosen to hear the evidence and report to the court, and recommend the character and extent of the censure that the offence demanded. After an hour or two, the committee reported that they found the offence to be great, and not only indiscreet, but positively rash; that Governor Endecott took upon himself more authority than he had; that he did not seek the advice of the court; and that it was unwarrantable that he, judging the cross to be a sin, did not seek to have the banner reformed in other places than Salem, laying blame also upon the other magistrates, suggesting thereby that they would suffer idolatry, and giving occasion to the government of England to think ill of the colony. The court decided that he should not hold any public office for one year.<sup>1</sup> Although they deemed the offence worthy of a heavier sentence, they would not inflict it because they were persuaded that he had committed the act from purely conscientious motives.

A petition on the matter of Endecott's censure was presented at this court, but the court refused to hear any one until the election was over.<sup>1</sup>

A proposition to change the emblem in the ensign was referred to the next meeting of the court, three weeks later. It was suggested to use, instead of the cross, a red and white rose, respectively emblematic of the union of the houses of Lancaster and York. In the meantime each man was requested to talk with his neighbors who insisted that the cross be retained, that they might be quieted

<sup>1</sup>The record of the general court is as follows:—"The comission<sup>r</sup>s chosen to consider of the act of M<sup>r</sup> Endecott concerneing the col<sup>r</sup>s att Salem did reporte to the Court that they apprehend hee had offended therein many wayes, in rashnes, vncharitablenes, indiscrecon, & exceeding the lymitts of his calling; wherevpon the Court hath sensured him to be sadly admonished for his offence, w<sup>ch</sup> accordingly hee was, & also disinabled for beareing any office in the comon wealth, for the space of a yeare nexte ensueing."

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 159.



in their minds, until an agreement could be reached. The ministers promised to make it a subject of prayer, and to write to England to learn the "judgment of the most wise and godly there."

No more appears upon the records touching this remarkable incident. It would seem that the magistrates took so much notice of it, not merely because it might have been deemed to be an act of treason, but because they were not consulted upon a proceeding that affected the people generally. There were plenty of enemies of the colony to present the matter to the king in the worst light, but nothing of that kind appears to have been done.<sup>1</sup>

A letter written in May, 1634, by Capt. Israel Stoughton of Dorchester to his brother Doctor Stoughton,<sup>2</sup> refers to this subject as follows:—

Grace & peace be with you & yo<sup>rs</sup> in Christ

Deere Brother There coming this frend M<sup>r</sup> Patricson (M<sup>r</sup> Cradocks agent here) so happilie in the spring, I thought I would not omit to write a word, & but a word bec: I hope to have many oportunities more this sumer: tho as yet we have not a ship come nor know not certaynly whither we shall, only we heare of many and hope the best. We are generally in good health: I and my familie have enjoyed our health I bless God with very little interruption from the beginning. Here are divers things where of I would write more fully to you about, but I am willing to waite a while, & Shall do it hereafter. It is like you will heare of many of them more or lesse there, but I hope God will give you & others that feare God ther wisdome to judge of things wisely, and not beleieve all that is reported with all aggravations and additions as are usuall in such cases. much you will heare I suppose about the crosse in the banners & many things true; for tis true Capt. Indicot did defase it upon his owne private head, and is now left out of place of government: & his fact publicly protested agaynst by the greater part of the country, & the ministers, and some of the magistrates too: It is allso true some of the magistrates with some ministers, and divers of the people do apprehend it an idoll unlawful to be continued in so honorable a plect & time to be abolished; & therefore do strongly incline that way; but tis all so true the greatest part esteeme no such daunger in it: but do desire to informe themselves well in the point, & then to be zealous according to knowledge & all judgment; not being willing to abuse their Christian liberty to licentiousness before God nor yet to a needless makeing of frends enimies, or to the prevoaking of those against us who are willing to lett us alone.

<sup>1</sup>A tract of nearly thirteen pages, in defence of the cross, by the celebrated Hooker, is among the manuscripts of the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Boston.

<sup>2</sup>Published in Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society, volume V, 1860-1862, page 134. It is entitled, by some one: "A relation concerning some occurences in New England." See, also, a letter written by James Cudworth of Scituate to his "father," Doctor Stoughton, in December, 1634, in English State Papers, Colonial Series, for America and the West Indies, volume I, page 194.

So that now the truth is this hath bred some evill blood in our body, & I feare will be a greater crosse & more widly to beare then the former: it hath already caused no little alienation of affection, strife, sensuring on their parts who are so zealous for the Crosse its rejection against, & almost contemning their brethren that have not beene so opiniated & affected as themselves, & the truth is if anything would have done it, that party that so deeply condemns the simple use of the crosse in banners, had overborne & chrushtt the other party tho the bigger most by farr; such was their zeale & potencie: but as yet it is not come to that point for the conclusion is, Councell shall be further taken of God, and the learned wise & godly there with you; and in the mean time there shall be a pause; and if there be any need of banners those that will may use their old as they are, without any alteration. And the party that did that fact must stand upon his owne bottom to answer for his attempt; for the greater part of ministers & country have washt their hands of it. ffinally for to end this matter: had not M<sup>r</sup> Hooker & the rest of the ministers stept in, & with great strength appeared against the contrary part, it had not beene as it is, & yet I daresay the greater number of the magistrates are best pleasd that it is thus & no other wise as well as the people. I forbeare to mention persons & particular passages bec: I will give none offence nor occasion: but I suppose you may informe yourselfe by M<sup>r</sup> Patricson & M<sup>r</sup> Cradock if you shall desire more full relations. . . .



## CHAPTER XV.

### BANISHMENT OF ROGER WILLIAMS.



ROGER WILLIAMS had a strong, independent and poetical mind. His style of writing was original; and the force or eagerness of his thought often overpowered nicety of expression. He was always clear, but not always correct. He had an active imagination, and used figures frequently to express himself.

The court of assistants was informed, Nov. 27, 1634, that Mr. Williams had broken his promise to it by teaching publicly against the patent, and their great sin in claiming right to the land and country generally and for usually terming the churches of England anti-christian. He was ordered to appear before the court at its next session; but nothing more was heard of the order.

April 30, 1635, Governor Dudley and the assistants sent for Mr. Williams. It was understood that he had taught publicly that a magistrate ought not to tender an oath to an unregenerate man, because he thereby would have communion with a wicked man in the worship of God, and cause him to take the name of God in vain. Mr. Williams was heard by all the ministers, and very clearly stated his position. Mr. Endecott was at first of the same opinion, but eventually agreed otherwise.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Williams became so rank in his enmity to the Church of England and the churches of New England that, as the church at Salem would not refuse communication with them, he declined to continue as its pastor. He sent a letter to the church which was read in the public church assembly. In this letter he notified the church of his decision. The latter's more conservative members were amazed at his method of procedure, and would not yield to his wishes. He never came into the church assembly afterward, and professed separation from them on the assumption that they

<sup>1</sup>Backus, volume I, pages 56, 57, 62 and 516.

were anti-christian. He also withdrew all private religious communication from every one who would hold communion with the church. He would neither pray nor give thanks at meals with his own wife nor any other of his family, because they attended the church assemblies.

Several members of the church, who had been thoroughly leavened by his teaching, were zealous in his support. He conducted religious meetings in his own house, to which a numerous company resorted, not only on Sundays, but on other days. In this way, they manifested their separation from, and opposition to, the local church. The magistrates noticed that this practice was increasing, and would, if not stopped, end in disturbance and division, and weakness of the church and commonwealth.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Williams finally embraced anabaptism and renounced his belief in the propriety or efficacy of the christening of infants.

July 8th of that summer (1635), at the meeting of the general court, Mr. Williams, who had been summoned to appear, did so, and he was charged by the magistrates and churches with uttering a variety of "dangerous opinions." These were four in number, viz: 1. A magistrate ought not to punish a person for the breach of the first table of the Mosaic law, when such breach did not disturb the civil peace. 2. He ought not to tender an oath to an unregenerate man. 3. A man "ought not to pray with such, tho wife, children, &c."<sup>2</sup> 4. A man ought not to give thanks after the sacrament, nor after meals.

The several churches in the colony thought it their duty to write to the church at Salem, requesting it to admonish Mr. Williams of these errors, notwithstanding the fact that the church had since called him to the office of teacher.

Much debate was had about these opinions of Mr. Williams, and they were adjudged by all, both magistrates and ministers (who were desired to be present), to be "erroneous and dangerous." Because the church at Salem, in face of the conclusions of the magistrates and ministers, called Mr. Williams to such office, the church was adjudged to be in great contempt of authority. Mr. Williams and the church at Salem were given until the next general court to consider these things. Then they were advised that they must give satisfaction to the court, or else expect punishment.

The ministers who gave their advice at the request of the court professedly declared that he who obstinately maintained such opinions was to be removed, and that the other churches

<sup>1</sup>New Englands Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, Plymouth, 1826, page 98.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 162.



ought to request the magistrates to do so. It was believed that, by holding such opinions, the church might run into heresy, apostacy or tyranny, and yet the civil magistrates could not interfere.

Four days after this meeting and discussion (July 12, 1635), some Salem men, who had prepared a petition and presented it to the general court, requesting some land on Marblehead Neck, to which they claimed title as belonging to Salem, failed to secure it at that time, because they had persisted in their election of Mr. Williams, while he was in disfavor with the court. Upon this refusal, the Salem church wrote to the other churches to admonish the magistrates and deputies of this as a heinous sin. Because of this last act of the church in Salem, at the next general court their deputies were not received, but were "sent backe to the freemen of their towne that sent them to fetch satisfaccon for their lres sent to the seuall churches, wherein they have exceedingly repched & vilified the magistrates & deputyes of the Genall Court, or els the argum<sup>ts</sup> of those that will defend the same with the subscripcon of their names."<sup>1</sup> Mr. Endecott protested against this proceeding of the court, and it was thereupon voted that he be committed to prison for his contempt in thus protesting, but upon his submission and full acknowledgment, he was discharged.<sup>2</sup> At this court there were also present Capt. William Trask, John Woodbury and Jacob Barney. Thereupon, Mr. Williams, who was then sick and unable to speak, wrote to his church, protesting that he could not communicate with the churches in the Bay unless it first refused communion with the rest of the churches, which grieved the whole of the church very much. It seems that the Salem church generally supported the contention of Mr. Williams, except on this matter of friendship and communion with the other Congregational churches in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

Two months later (November 1st), at a meeting of the general court, Mr. Williams was again present, together with the minister in the Bay. He was charged with two letters; one to the churches to complain of the magistrates for injustice and extreme oppression, and the other to his own church to persuade them to renounce communion with all the churches in the Bay, as being anti-christian and full of pollution. He attempted to justify both letters, and to maintain all his opinions, and being offered further conference or disputation and a month's respite, he chose to discuss the matters at once. Mr. Hooker was appointed to argue with him, but could not change him from any of his errors.<sup>3</sup> Thereupon, the next morning, the court sentenced Mr. Williams to

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 156.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 157.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 166.

depart out of the Massachusetts Bay Colony within six weeks, and never to return, without license from the court, in the following words:—

Wheras M<sup>r</sup> Roger Williams, one of the elders of the church of Salem, hath broached & dyvulged dyvers newe & dangerous opinions, against the auctoritie of magistrates, as also writt lres of defamacon, both of the magistrates & churches here, & that before any conviccon, & yet mainetaineth the same without retraccon, it is therefore ordered, that the said M<sup>r</sup> Williams shall depte out of this jurisdiccon within sixe weekes nowe nexte ensueing, w<sup>ch</sup> if hee neglect to pforme, it shalbe lawfull for the Goun<sup>r</sup>, & two of the magistrates to send him to some place out of this jurisdiccon, not to returne any more without licence from the Court.

If Mr. Williams refused or neglected to leave, the governor and two of the magistrates were authorized to send him to some place without the colony. Later, he was allowed to remain until spring.

All the ministers, except one, approved of the sentence. On his return to Salem, he refused communion with his own church, who openly disclaimed his errors and wrote a humble submission to the magistrates, acknowledging their fault in joining with Mr. Williams in the letter to the churches.

Sir William Martin sent a letter to Governor Winthrop, dated March 29, 1636, in which he wrote:—

I am sorry to heare of Mr. Williams separation from you: His former good affections to you, and the plantations, were well known unto me and make me wonder now at his proceedinges. I have wrote to him effectually to submit to better judgments, especially to those whom formerly he revered and admired; at least to keepe the bond of peace inviolable. This hath been alwayes my advice; and nothing conduceth more to the good of plantations. I pray shew him what lawful favour you can, which may stand with the common good. He is passionate and precipitate, which may transport him into error, but I hope his integrity and good intentions will bring him at last into the waye of truth, and confirm him therein. In the meane time, I pray God to give him a right use of this affliction. Thus leaving him to your favourable censures, &c.<sup>1</sup>

This did not end the matter of the letter that had been sent by the Salem church to the other churches, in criticism of the magistrates. At the meeting of the general court (September 3), when Mr. Williams was sentenced to banishment, Samuel Sharp was ordered to appear at the next "particular" court and answer for the letter, and to give the names of those who would justify it, or else acknowledge his offence under his own hand for

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 106 (119).



his part in the matter.<sup>1</sup> It was further ordered that if a majority of the freemen of Salem disclaimed the letter from the church of Salem to the several churches, the town might send deputies to the general court.<sup>2</sup> Though no record appears, the court became so far favorable to Salem that, at its session held March 3, 1635-6, "It was proved this court that Marble Necke belongs to Salem."

In January, 1635-6, the governor and assistants met at Boston to consider Mr. Williams' case, as it was known that, despite the injunction laid upon him not to go about making converts to his opinions, he entertained company in his house, and preached to them there, even on the very points for which he had been censured. Moreover, there were about twenty persons who believed that he was right, and they intended to go with him to establish a plantation about Narragansett Bay. It was realized that if this plan were carried out, the infection would easily spread into the churches there. Whereupon, a warrant was sent to him to come to Boston at once to board a ship which then lay at Nantasket. He returned answer by divers Salem people that he could not come without hazard of his life. Whereupon Captain Underhill was commissioned to apprehend Williams and take him to the ship. Underhill, with his soldiers, sailed to Salem in a pinnace, and went to Williams' house. They found that he had been gone three days; but the captain's inquiries elicited no enlightening answer as to whither Mr. Williams had gone.

With the few light things that could be carried by hand, he, and, it is said, his friend John Throgmorton,<sup>3</sup> who had crossed the Atlantic with him in 1631, had started at midnight, in the deep snow of an intensely cold period, with nothing but a pocket compass to guide them in their course southward. This compass is now preserved in the historical rooms in Providence. The health of Mr. Williams was unequal to such exertion and exposure, and when they reached the wigwam of Massasoit, the Indian chieftain and friend of the Pilgrims, he was unable to go forward. He remained there, nursed by the red men, for about three months. He then went to Seekonk (now Rehoboth), where he remained until about the middle of June (1636), when he removed to the site of the present city of Providence, R. I., having had the territory given him by Canonicus and Miantinomo, the chief sachems of Narragansett,<sup>4</sup> although a deed of release was not

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 161.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 158.

<sup>3</sup>John Throgmorton had a daughter Patience, who married John Coggeshall Dec. —, 1655; and died Sept. 7, 1676. Mr. Throgmorton removed from Providence to Monmouth, N. J., after 1666; and died there before 1687.

<sup>4</sup>Backus, volume I, page 89.

given to him until Oct. 8, 1636. Mrs. Williams followed her husband to Rhode Island with their two infants.<sup>1</sup>

A number of the Salem church members who adhered to the principles of Mr. Williams sooner or later removed to Providence. Those who first settled with him in Providence, in addition to John Throgmorton, were Thomas Angell, William Harris, John Smith, Joshua Verrin and Francis Wickes. Two of these five at least belonged in Salem, namely, William Harris and Joshua Verrin. William Harris was living in Salem in 1635, and removed to Providence the next year.<sup>2</sup> Joshua Verrin lived in Salem, having come from Salisbury, Wiltshire, England, in the ship *James* in the spring of 1635. He was a roper by trade. He went to Providence as a follower of Williams, in 1637; but lived in Salem part of the time until 1644.<sup>3</sup>

Several others joined the colony at various times prior to October 8, 1638, when Mr. Williams conveyed the territory to his "loving friends Stukely Westcott, William Arnold, Thomas James, Robert Cole, John Greene, John Throgmorton, William Harris, William Carpenter, Thomas Olney, Francis Weston, Richard Waterman, Ezekiel Holliman and such others as the major part of us shall admit into the same fellowship of vote with us."<sup>4</sup> Of these twelve men, at least nine were from Salem, namely, William Harris, Robert Cole, Ezekiel Holliman, Thomas James, Thomas Olney, John Throgmorton, Richard Waterman, Stukely Westcott and Francis Weston. Robert Cole came with the Winthrop fleet in 1630, and lived in Roxbury until his removal to Salem, from whence he went to Providence. He was living in Salem, however, in 1648. His wife was named Mary.<sup>5</sup> Ezekiel

<sup>1</sup>Their children were: 1. Mary, born at Plymouth the first week in August, 1633; 2. Freeborn, born in Salem the end of October, 1635; 3. Providence, born at Providence the end of September, 1638; died, unmarried, in March, 1685-6; 4. Mercy, born July 15, 1640; 5. Daniel, born Feb. 15, 1641-2; 6. Joseph, born the beginning of December, 1643; married Lydia Olney.

<sup>2</sup>William Harris went to England for the Rhode Island Colony to confer with the government officials upon some land question, and was taken by an Algerine corsair, January 24, 1679, and sold in Barbary. After a year in slavery, he was redeemed and reached London on his journey toward home in 1680. He died three days later. His widow was named Susanna; and his children were as follows: 1. Andrew, born about 1634; married Mary Tew of Newport Dec. 8 (30?), 1670; died in 1685; 2. Mary; married Thomas Burden in 1663; 3. Howlong; married Arthur Fenner in December, 1684; 4. Toleration, born in 1645.

<sup>3</sup>Joshua Verrin married Jane ——. She was before the Salem quarterly court December 25, 1638, for absenting herself from religious services.

<sup>4</sup>Bachus, volume I, page 92.

<sup>5</sup>Robert Cole died in or before 1654; his widow married, secondly, Matthias Hawes, and removed to Oyster Bay, L. I., with her children:



Holliman<sup>1</sup> was born at Tring, Hertfordshire, England, and had lived at Dedham before he came to Salem, in 1636 or before. He was apparently the leader of the followers of Roger Williams, and was summoned to appear before the general court, March 12, 1637-8, "because hee did not frequent the publike assemblyes, & for seduceing many." He was referred "to the ministers for conviction." Nothing further was heard of the complaint. Thomas James<sup>2</sup> was a planter, and after living in Providence awhile, returned to Salem where he was living in 1651 and as late as 1662.

*Thomas James*

He subsequently removed to Carolina. Thomas Olney<sup>3</sup> was a shoemaker from Hertford, Hertfordshire, England, and came in the ship Planter to Boston in 1635, sailing from London. He was born about 1600. He lived in Salem until he joined the colony at Providence in 1638. Richard Waterman<sup>4</sup> was born in 1590; married Bethiah —; and settled in Providence in the summer of 1638; and Stukely West-

1. John; 2. Daniel; lived at Oyster Bay; 3. Nathaniel; lived at Oyster Bay; 4. Robert; 5. Sarah; 6. Ann; married Henry Townsend; lived at Oyster Bay; 7. Elizabeth; married John Townsend; lived at Oyster Bay.

<sup>1</sup>Ezekiel Holliman married, first, Susanna, daughter of John Oxston alias Fox of Stanmore, in Middlesex County, England, and, secondly, Mary, widow of Isaac Sweet at Providence, about 1638. He removed to Warwick before 1653. His only (?) child, Priscilla, married John Warner of Warwick.

<sup>2</sup>Thomas James died in Carolina in or before 1675. His children were as follows: 1. John, deceased in or before 1675; 2. James, died in or before 1675; 3. Sarah; married Alexander Lillington of Albemarle County, Carolina, a planter, in or before 1675, being at that time the only surviving child and heir of Thomas James.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas Olney was treasurer of the colony in 1638, and an assistant in 1649; died in 1682; children: 1. Thomas, born at Hertford, England, about 1632; lived in Providence; married Elizabeth Marsh of Newport July 31, 1660; and died June 11, 1722; 2. Epenetus, born about 1634; 3. Nabadiah, baptized at Salem 27:6:1637; died young; 4. Stephen; 5. Mary; married John Whipple Dec. 4, 1663; 6. James; 7. Lydia; married Joseph Williams Dec. 17, 1669.

<sup>4</sup>Richard Waterman became a supporter of Samuel Gorton and, with him, incurred the displeasure of the ministers and magistrates. In October, 1643, he was in court with Mr. Gorton, and the case against him was continued until the next general court, May 29, 1644, when he was found guilty of being "erronious, hereticall, & obstinate," and it was agreed that he should be detained a prisoner until the next quarterly court (the next September), unless five of the magistrates find cause to send him away; "w<sup>ch</sup> if they do, it is ordered, that he shall not return w<sup>th</sup>in this iurisdiction, upon paine of death." Mr. Waterman died Oct. 26, 1673, and his widow, Bethiah, Dec. 3, 1680. Children: 1. Mehitable, married Arthur Fenner; died in 1684; 2. Wait, married Henry Brown; died Feb. 20, 1703; 3. Nathaniel, baptized in Salem Aug. 20, 1637; married Susanna Carder March 14, 1663; lived in Providence; died March 23, 1712.





Salem. 1. 5. 39.

33

Reverend and dearly beloved in the Lord. we thought it  
our bounden duty to acquaint you with the names of  
such persons as have had the great curse cast upon  
them in this our church, with the reasons thereof.  
Respecting you in the Lord not only to read these names  
in public to you, but also to give us the like notice  
of any dealt with in like manner here, that so we  
may walk towards them as we ought; for some of  
whom have had communion ignorantly with such as  
have bin cast out of other churches.  
2 Thes. 3. 14. we can do no less than have such  
noted as disobey the truth.

Roger Williams & his wife  
John Throckmorton & his wife  
Thomas Olney and his wife  
Elizabeth Westcott and her son  
Mary Hallman  
Widow Russell

(These wholly refused to  
leave the church  
it and all the  
in the  
churches  
(and) are  
still  
in the church)

John Elford for obstinacy after divers years was  
stood guilty of, and proved by witness.  
William James for pride, and divers other evils,  
in which he remained obstinate.  
John Talby for much pride, and unnaturalness to  
his wife, who was lately executed for murdering her child.  
William Westbrook for refusing to bring his child to  
ordinance, neglecting willing family duties &c.  
Thus wishing the continued enjoyment of both the  
glances (grace) and bonds, and that your souls may  
flourish as watered gardens, &c.

By the Lord Jesus  
plus Peter  
by the church &c  
and in his name.

cott<sup>1</sup> had gone there the preceding year. Francis Weston<sup>2</sup> lived in Salem until the spring of 1638, when he removed to Providence.

Four of these, Francis Weston, Richard Waterman, Thomas Olney and Stukely Westcott, obtained license from the general court, March 12, 1637-8, to remove themselves and their families out of the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, "& for that information hath bene given to the Court that yo<sup>r</sup> intent is onely to w<sup>th</sup>drawe yo<sup>r</sup>selues for a season, that yo<sup>u</sup> may avoyde the censure of the Court in some things w<sup>ch</sup> may bee objected against yo<sup>u</sup>."

The following is a copy of a letter sent by the church in Salem to the church in Dorchester:—

d. m. y.

Salem. 1. 5. 39.

Reuerend and deerly beloued in the lord. wee thought it our bounden duty to acquaynt you with the names of such persons as have had the great cenfure past vpon them in this our church, with the reasons therof. Befeeching you in the lord not only to reade their names in publike to yours, but also to giue vs the like notice of any dealt with in like manner by yours that so wee may walk towards them accordingly; for some of vs here haue had communion ignorantly with such as haue bin cast out of other churches.

2 Thef. 3. 14. wee can doe no less then haue such noted as disobey the truth.

Roger williams & his wife.  
John Throckmorton & his wife.  
Thomas Olney and his wife.  
Stukely Westcot and his wife.  
mary Halliman.  
Widdow Reeues.

{ These wholly refused to  
heare the church denying  
it, and all the churches  
in the Bay to be true  
churches and (except  
two) are all rebaptized.

John elford for obstinacy after diuers fyns hee stood guilty of, and proued by witnes.

<sup>1</sup>Stukely Wescott removed from Providence to Warwick in 1648; and died there Jan. 12, 1677-8; children: 1. Damaris, married Gov. Benedict Arnold Dec. 17, 1640; died in 1678; 2. Amos; 3. Jeremiah; 4. Robert, lived in Warwick and Kingston, R. I.; married Catharine —; died in 1676; she married, secondly, James Hazleton April 10, 1678; 5. Mary (or Sarah); married Samuel Stafford.

<sup>2</sup>Francis Weston was a representative to the first general court at Providence, and removed from there to Warwick. His wife was sentenced by the court of assistants of the Massachusetts Bay Colony June 5, 1638, to be set two hours in the bilboes at Cambridge and two hours at Salem, upon a lecture day. Mr. Weston was a supporter of Samuel Gorton, and suffered with him, also for conscience sake. November 3, 1643, he was convicted, with others, of heresy, and was ordered to be imprisoned during the pleasure of the court at Dorchester, to be free to go about, however, and to work, wearing such bolts or irons as might hinder his escape. If he should speak or write his heresies and that fact be found by a jury it was ordered that he should be condemned to death and executed. He died before June, 1645, leaving no issue.



William James for pride, and diuers other euills, in which hee remayned obstinate.

John Talby for much pride, and vnnaturalnes to his wife, who was lately executed for murdring her child.

william walcot for refusing to bring his child to the ordinance, neglecting willingly family dutyes ec.

Thus wishing the Continued enioyment of both the itaues (Beauty and Bonds) and that your foules may flowrifi as waterd gardens, res<sup>t</sup>

Y<sup>rs</sup> in the lord Jefus

Hue peter

by the churches order  
and in her name.

For the church in Dorchester.

Joshua Verrin refused to permit his wife to attend meeting as often as she wished, or, as some asserted, as frequently as Mr. Williams wished, because, as he said, he thought it inexpedient and unwise to do so. It was held by Mr. Verrin and others that liberty of conscience applied to the husband as well as to the wife in this instance, and that his conscience as well as hers should be considered. Nevertheless, Mr. Verrin was disfranchised for his refusal in this matter.<sup>2</sup> He returned to Salem, and his absence was considered a ground for the forfeiture of his legal interest in the land at Providence, according to the following letter in which he claimed title to his part of the territory:—

Gentlemen and countrymen of the town of Providence:

This is to certify you, that I look upon my purchase of the town of Providence to be my lawful right. In my travel, I have inquired, and do find it is recoverable according to law; for my coming away could not disinherit me. Some of you cannot but recollect, that we six which came first should have the first convenience, as it was put in practice by our house lots, and 2d by the meadow in Wanasquatucket river, and then those that were admitted by us unto the purchase to have the next which were about; but it is contrary to law, reason and equity, for to dispose of my part without my consent. Therefore deal not worse with me than we dealt with the Indians, for we made conscience of purchasing of it of them, and hazarded our lives. Therefore we need not, nor any one of us ought to be denied of our purchase. So hoping you will take it into seriuos consideration, and to give me reasonable satisfaction, I rest,

Yours in the way of right and equity,

JOSHUA VERIN.<sup>3</sup>

The church at Providence, which was founded, of course, upon the Baptist principles of Mr. Williams, was organized in March, 1638-9. Ezekiel Holliman baptized Mr. Williams, who

<sup>1</sup>History of Massachusetts, by Thomas Hutchinson, page 371.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, pages 282 and 283.

<sup>3</sup>See Backus, volume I, page 95.

then performed a similar ceremony for Mr. Holliman, William Arnold, William Carpenter, Robert Cole, John Green, William Harris, Thomas James, Thomas Olney, Richard Waterman, Stukely Westcott and Francis Weston, the twelve forming the church.

Mr. Holliman was probably unlettered, but nevertheless became a preacher and an assistant to Mr. Williams in the work of the ministry there.<sup>1</sup> The clergymen of the Massachusetts Bay Colony scarcely noticed him,<sup>2</sup> although he was a Christian man and an able preacher.<sup>1</sup>

The church at Providence had hardly been established when discordant elements became manifest and led to serious contentions. The cause of it was Samuel Gorton, who was a native of the parish of Gorton, in England, a man who, although he had received little schooling, became a broad-minded Puritan. He engaged in business in London as a clothier, but because of mixing his religion with his business too prominently he was unsuccessful. He decided to emigrate to America, and arrived in Boston in March, 1636-7. He naturally turned his steps towards Plymouth, rather than to the strict Puritans, and for four years lived in a part of the house of Rev. Ralph Smith. He became acquainted with Roger Williams and finally became involved in disputes with the magistrates in regard to what he thought the law ought to be.

He then went to Pocasset, which the followers of Anne Hutchinson had settled on the island of Aquidneck, in Narragansett Bay, in December, 1638. While there, he became contentious with the authorities, using abusive language, and finally removed to Providence. There he again came to the front and contended that the local law and government must come from the English government. Roger Williams took the opposite view.

Mr. Gorton and several of his supporters procured from Miantunnomoh, the Indian sachem of Narragansett, a deed of the territory at a place called Shawomet, which, a few years later, became the town of Warwick. The grantees were Randall Holden, Francis Weston, Samuel Gorton, Richard Waterman and seven others. Some of Mr. Gorton's enemies, not excluding Roger Williams, caused the Indians to repudiate the deed of the territory they had given to these settlers, and four of the people of Providence, including Robert Cole,<sup>3</sup> placed themselves and their lands

<sup>1</sup>Benedict, I: 47.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 293; History of New England, by William Hubbard, page 338.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 85.



under the government of the Massachusetts Bay Colony for the purpose of having it exercise jurisdiction over the territory, and so control Mr. Gorton and his followers. Complaints were speedily made that the settlers had no right to the land of Shawomet and should give it up, and the Massachusetts government was induced to proceed to expel the settlers from that place. Gorton and his companions were summoned to Boston to prove their claims and make their defence, but they refused to go, denying the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. Thereupon, a company of soldiers and Indians was sent to seize them and bring them to Boston for trial for blasphemy and other offences. They held their block-house against the attacks of the soldiers for a day or two, and finally surrendered.

Arriving at Boston, Mr. Gorton and his eight companion prisoners, four of whom were Randall Holden, Francis Weston, Richard Waterman and Stukely Westcott, were brought by the soldiers to the house of the governor in military order, the soldiers being in two files, and after every five or six soldiers a prisoner. The governor caused the captives to be brought before him in the hall, where a great number of people had assembled, and informed "them of their contemptuous carriage . . . and their obstinacy against all the fair means and moderation" that had been used to "reform them and bring them to do right to those of ours whom they had wronged, and how the Lord had now justly delivered them into" their captor's hands. In response, they pleaded that they were not of this jurisdiction, and that though they had now yielded themselves to come and answer, yet they did not yield as prisoners. They were then committed to the common prison. Subsequently, each of them was formally charged with being "a blasphemous enemy of the true religion of o<sup>r</sup> Lord Jesus Christ & his holy ordinances, & also of all civill authority among the people of God, & perticularly in this iurisdiction."<sup>1</sup> The accused were convicted of blasphemy alone, on the flimsiest theological grounds. All but three of the elders voted for the penalty of death; but the representatives of the people refused to assent to such a verdict. It was finally agreed, Nov. 3, 1643, that the punishment be imprisonment, in as many towns as there were prisoners, that they perform labor and be encumbered with wearing "such boults or irons" as might hinder escape. The order of the court made upon the verdict was as follows:—

It is ordered that Samu: Gorton shalbee confined to Charlstowne, there to bee set on worke, & to weare such boults or irons as may

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 51.

hind his escape, & to continue dureing the pleasure of the Co<sup>r</sup>t; pvided that if hee shall breake his said confinem<sup>t</sup>, or shall in the meane time, either by speach or writing, publish, declare, or maintaine any of the blasphemos or abominable heresies wherew<sup>th</sup> hee hath bene charged by the Gen<sup>r</sup>all Co<sup>r</sup>t, contened in either of the two books sent unto us by him or Randle Holden, or shall repach or repve the churches of o<sup>r</sup> Lord Jesus Christ in these United Colonies, or the civill governm<sup>t</sup>, or the public ordinances of God therein, (unless it bee by answers to some question ppounded to him, or conference w<sup>th</sup> any elder, or w<sup>th</sup> any other licensed to speake w<sup>th</sup> him privately, under the hand of one of the Assistants,) that imediately upon accusation of any such writing or speach, hee shall by such Assistant, to whom such accusation shalbee brought, bee comitted to prison, till the next Co<sup>r</sup>t of Assistants, then & there to bee tryed by a iury, whether hee hath so spoken or written, & upon his convixion thereof shalbee condeamed to death & executed.

Dated the 3<sup>th</sup> of the 9m<sup>o</sup>, 1643.<sup>1</sup>

Of these prisoners, Francis Weston was confined in Dorchester, Samuel Gorton to Charlestown and Randall Holden at Salem. The constables of the several towns where the prisoners were confined were ordered to provide for each of them a house and necessary things for their lodging and support and provide work for them.<sup>2</sup>

Richard Waterman was dismissed until the sitting of the court the twenty-ninth of the next May, when, "being found erronious hereticall, & obstinate, it was agreed, that he should be detained prisoner till the Quarter Co<sup>r</sup>t in the 7<sup>th</sup> m<sup>o</sup>, unlesse five of the ma<sup>trats</sup> do find cause to send him away; w<sup>ch</sup> if they do, it is ordered, that he shall not return w<sup>th</sup> in this iurisdiction, upon paine of death."

Nothing is known of Stukely Westcott's punishment. The record of the session of the court at which his companions were sentenced reads as follows: "If the souldiers did kill Stewkley Wasket a lamb, the Treasurer is to alow for it."

Many of the cattle of these prisoners were seized to pay for the capture, trial and support of the accused.

The order of the court was unsatisfactory, as it caused a burden upon the public, not only in the support of the prisoners, but in their influence upon their associates, for they were apparently free to talk with the people, except of their heretical ideas. It was finally concluded that their presence did harm in the several towns where they were confined, and especially by this dispersion, and the authorities did not know what to do with them.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 52.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume II, page 53.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 156.



After four months of confinement, March 7, 1643-4, the general court reconsidered the case of the prisoners and set them at liberty, banishing them from all places within the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. Before leaving they recited their wrongs in the streets of Boston and elsewhere to crowds of willing listeners.

Gorton settled in Portsmouth, R. I., where he was well received, becoming one of the most prominent and influential citizens and one of the first judges in that colony. No man was more influential in establishing liberty of conscience, mind and body in Rhode Island than Samuel Gorton. Rites and ceremonies he deemed non-essentials, and held a belief in a sort of transcendentalism, with Christian leanings. His religion was his own and not another's.

The published writings of Mr. Williams were as follows:—

A Key into the Language of America, or a Help to the Language of the Natives, in that part of America called New England, etc.; London, 1643.

The Bloody Tenet of Persecution, for Cause of Conscience, etc., 1634.

The Bloody Tenet yet more Bloody, by Mr. Cotton's Endeavor to wash it in the Blood of the Lamb, etc., London, 1652.

The Hireling Ministry none of Christ's, or a Discourse touching the Propagating the Gospel of Christ Jesus, etc., London, 1652.

George Fox digged out of his Burrowes, or an Offer of Disputation on fourteen Proposals, etc., Boston, 1676.

Mr. Williams had so far succeeded at Salem that many, especially women, embraced his opinions and separated from the churches, because some of the church members, going into England, attended the services of the Church of England, and upon their return the churches here held communion with them.<sup>1</sup> In fact, most of the members of the Salem church held it unlawful to hear in the ordinary assemblies in England, because their foundation was supposed to be anti-christian, and hearing with them was communion with them. Some went so far that they were ready to separate from the church for that reason. Whereupon the church at Salem sent two of the brethren with a letter to the elders of the other churches, for their advice in three points: 1. Whether (for satisfying the weak) they might promise not to hear in England any false church. This was thought not to be safe, because then they would draw them to the like towards the other churches here, who were of the opinion that it was lawful, and that hearing was not communion. 2. If it were not better to grant them dismission to be a church by themselves. This was

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, pages 175 and 176.

also opposed on the ground that it was not a remedy of divine ordering; neither would the magistrates allow them to be a church, being but three men and eight women; and besides that it was dangerous to raise churches upon such grounds. 3. Whether they ought then to excommunicate them, if they did withdraw. This was granted, yet, withal, that if they did not withdraw or run into contempt, they ought, in these matters of differences of opinion in things not fundamental nor scandalous, to bear each with the other.<sup>1</sup>

This action on the part of the Salem church indicates the breadth of the thought and charity of the people there, and clearly shows that the members sought to learn their duty in these matters that they might do it. Charitable tolerance was manifest here in a degree unexcelled by the other Puritan congregations, in either England or America.

The distractions in and about the church of Salem partly occasioned the general fast suggested, Feb. 25, 1635-6, by the elders of the churches, and assented to by the ministers, as the session of the general court was at hand.

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 185.



## CHAPTER XVI.

### COMING OF HUGH PETER.



THE first public market in Salem was established by leave of the general court granted Sept. 4, 1634. It was kept every Wednesday,<sup>1</sup> beginning Oct. 8th. The hours were from nine o'clock in the morning to four in the afternoon.<sup>2</sup>

Wednesday, Sept. 10, 1634, was observed as "a day of publique humilacon throughout the seuall plantacons."<sup>3</sup>

The following named men had taken the oath of freemen up to this time. John Black took the oath March 6, 1631-2. He was

*John Black*

born about 1591, was a planter, and lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668.<sup>4</sup> Elias Stileman and Samuel Sharp were made

freemen July 3, 1632. Elias Stileman may have come to Salem that year, though perhaps not until 1635. His wife Judith and sons, Richard, born about 1611, and Elias, born about 1617, came with him.<sup>5</sup>

*Elias Stileman*

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 127, which says: "There is leaue graunted to the inhabitants of Salem to keepe a markett weekly, on the fourth day of y<sup>e</sup> weeke, comonly called Wednesday."

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records, Book of Grants.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 128.

<sup>4</sup>John Black's first wife was living in 1646; married, second, Freeborn (Balch?), daughter of Robert Sallows July 29, 1664; died March 1, 1675; children: 1. Elizabeth (oldest); married — Kimball; 2. Percis (second daughter); married — Follett; 3. Lydia, baptized in Salem Dec. 25, 1636; 4. Lydia, baptized in Salem June 3, 1638; married — Davis; 5. — (daughter), baptized Sept. 29, 1640; 6. John, born about 1642; lived in Beverly in 1677.

<sup>5</sup>ELIAS STILEMAN<sup>1</sup> lived near the meeting house in Salem; was an innholder; and died in 1662; children: 1. *Richard*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1611; 2. *Elias*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1617.

Thomas James was made a freeman November 6, 1632, and John Holgrave, November 5, 1633. George Williams,<sup>1</sup> Edward

*George Williams*

Giles, William Dixy, George Norton and Thomas Eborne took the free-

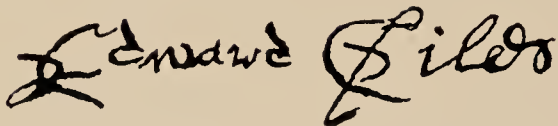
RICHARD STILEMAN<sup>2</sup> lived in Cambridge until about 1646, when he returned to Salem, where he lived until 1660, when he settled at Portsmouth, on the Piscataqua River; married, first, Hannah — about 1640; second, Mary — about 165—; died Oct. 11, 1678; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born May 23, 1644; living in 1660; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 6, 1658; married — Fox; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born May 8, 1663; married — Jordan; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born June 30, 1665; 5. Richard,<sup>3</sup> born March 20, 1668; lived in Portsmouth; died, probably unmarried, in 1703. ELIAS STILEMAN;<sup>3</sup> clerk of the court; removed to Portsmouth in 1661, and lived the last of his life at Newcastle; married, first, Deborah Wolfe; second, Ruth Maynard April 10, 1667; third, Lucy, widow of Humphrey Chadbourn; died Dec. 19, 1695; she died, his widow, in 1699; children: 1. Elias,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 15, 1640; lived in Portsmouth; merchant; married, first, Mary —; second, Lucy — before 1690; 2. Elizabeth;<sup>3</sup> married John Jordan; 3. Ruth;<sup>3</sup> married William Buswell.

<sup>1</sup>GEORGE WILLIAMS<sup>1</sup> lived on the southeastern corner of Williams Street; married Marie —; died Sept. —, 1654; she died the next month; children: 1. Marie;<sup>2</sup> married — Bishop in or before 1654; 2. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1636; 3. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 12, 1638; 4. Joseph,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 10, 1640; 5. Bethiah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 13, 1642; married Obadiah Rich; 6. George,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1644; living in 1654; 7. Sarah;<sup>2</sup> living in 1654, having an infirmity.

JOHN WILLIAMS;<sup>2</sup> cooper, fisherman and seaman; married, first, Elizabeth —; second, widow Elizabeth Smith Nov. 23, 1665; died in the winter of 1696-7; she died about 1699; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 5, 1663; married Thomas Marston; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> born May 29, 1664; 3. Henry,<sup>3</sup> born June 29, 1666; 4. George,<sup>3</sup> born July 2, 1668; died July 8, 1668; 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 25, 1669; unmarried in 1730; 6. George,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1671; 7. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 4, 1674; married Abraham Purchase; 8. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 7, 1678; cooper and mariner; died, unmarried, in 1729. SAMUEL WILLIAMS;<sup>2</sup> cooper; married Mary Veren April 2, 1662; died in the summer of 1689; she died in 1706; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 10, 1662; died Jan. 18, 1663; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 21, 1664; 3. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born March 7, 1666-7; died July —, 1667; 4. Hilliard,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 26, 1668; mariner; married Abigail Massey; died in 1699; she married, secondly, Jonathan Archer; 5. George,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 12, 1670-1; died March —, 1670-1; 6. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born July 15, 1672; married John Adams before 1706; 7. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 27, 1674; 8. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized April —, 1677; married Thomas Massey; 9. Richard,<sup>3</sup> born March 3, 1679-80; 10. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born March 2, 1680-1; married Thomas Massey; 11. Joshua,<sup>3</sup> born May — (baptized May 26), 1683; glover; lived in Boston; married Ann Smith June 3, 1708; 12. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> born July 25, 1685; 13. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 25, 1686-7. JOSEPH WILLIAMS;<sup>2</sup> cooper; married Sarah Browning Nov. 20, 1661; died in or before 1696; she was his widow in 1723; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 19, 1662; died young; 2. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. —, 1663; died Jan. 8, 1644-5; 3. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born March 17, 1664-5; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 28, 1666; 5. George,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 22, 1669-70; 6. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 3, 1671-2; died between 1696 and 1715; 7. Benjamin<sup>3</sup> (twin), born Dec. 7, 1673; 8. Abigail<sup>3</sup> (twin), born Dec. 7, 1673; lived with



man's oath May 14, 1634. George Williams was a cooper and a man of social standing and means. The only autograph of Mr. Williams known is the signature to his will, which is given on the preceding page. He was then sick and weak. Edward Giles



her mother; died, unmarried, between April 10 and May 18, 1719; 9. David,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 7, 1676.

JOHN WILLIAMS;<sup>3</sup> cooper; married Sarah Manning Dec. 8, 1686; was away from home probably from 1690 to 1699; died in the spring of 1732; she was then his widow; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 18, 1689; married Gamaliel Hodges; 2. Anstiss,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 25, 1700; married John Crowninshield; 3. John,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 14, 1702; cooper in 1750; 4. Henry,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 2, 1704-5; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born March 8, 1706; married Joseph Lambert; 6. George,<sup>4</sup> born March 14, 1708; died before 1750 (?); 7. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 27, 1710. SAMUEL WILLIAMS,<sup>3</sup> removed to Ipswich about 1705; currier; married Margaret Rust of Ipswich Oct. 24, 1694; children: 1. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 20, 1695; married Alexander Lovell of Ipswich Jan. 14, 1719; 2. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born March 22, 1696-7; married Anthony Dike; 3. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 7, 1700; sadler; lived in Ipswich and Portsmouth; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 17, 1701; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 13, 1704. RICHARD WILLIAMS,<sup>3</sup> married Elizabeth —; children: 1. —<sup>4</sup> (son), born May 9, 1695 (?); 2. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 5, 1700; 3. Israel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 3, 1700; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 7, 1702-3; 5. Katherine,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 29, 1705.

CAPT. HENRY WILLIAMS;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Mary Waters Jan. 26, 1727-8; wealthy; died July 23, 1750; she was his widow in 1770; children: 1. George,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 10, 1731; 2. Samuel;<sup>5</sup> 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 29, 1736-7; married, first, Joshua Grafton; second, John Adams Chapman; 4. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 3, 1739-40; unmarried in 1770; 5. Henry,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 22, 1744.

CAPT. GEORGE WILLIAMS;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner and merchant; representative; married, first, Hannah Hathorne July 13, 1752; second, Lydia Pickering March 15, 1758; died June 12, 1797; estate appraised at \$61,226.50; his widow Lydia removed to Boston before 1813; children: 1. George,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 28, 1754; 2. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 20, 1756; 3. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 6, 1760; lived in Boston; merchant and banker in London; 4. Henry,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 3, 1762; merchant; lived in Boston and Watertown; 5. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 2, 1763; married Theodore Lyman of Wells or Arundel, Me., in 1786; lived in Boston; 6. Timothy,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1765; merchant; lived in Boston; 7. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 9, 1767; married William Pratt of Boston Nov. 18, 1792; 8. John,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 13, 1769; lived in Watertown; 9. Stephen,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 8, 1774; married Alice Orne July 14, 1799; 10. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 8, 1774; married Dr. Moses Little April 17, 1799; 11. Francis,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 23, 1776; living in 1797; 12. Anna,<sup>6</sup> baptized March 14, 1779; unmarried in 1797; 13. Charles,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 18, 1784; living in 1800. CAPT. SAMUEL WILLIAMS;<sup>5</sup> mariner and merchant; married Sarah Porter of Danvers (published Oct. 9, 1756); died in the winter of 1813; she was deceased in 1814; children: 1. Samuel Porter,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 15, 1762; 2. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 13, 1766; 3. Israel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 2, 1772; 4. Polly,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 11, 1775; unmarried in 1814. CAPT. HENRY WILLIAMS;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner; married Abigail Russell of Andover Nov. 1, 1770; died Aug. 17, 1814; she died, his widow, May 5, 1822; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 11, 1771; 2. Henry Russell,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 13, 1773; 3. Joseph Warren,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 9, 1777; master-mariner; lived in Salem in 1805 and in Philadelphia in 1807

was in Salem as early as 1634.<sup>1</sup> The Gile's family lived principally

and 1809; 4. Catherine,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 6, 1780; married Thomas Downing; 5. Thomas Russell,<sup>6</sup> baptized March 30, 1783; cabinet maker; married Ruthy Abbot June 22, 1806; living in 1811; 6. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 23, 1785; 7. Willard,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 24, 1788; living in 1814; 8. John,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 30, 1792.

GEORGE WILLIAMS;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Mehitable West Sept. 14, 1777; died about 1797; she was his widow in 1808; children: 1. George,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 14, 1778; mariner; living in 1812; 2. Hannah Hathorne,<sup>7</sup> baptized Oct. 1, 1780; living in 1799; 3. Nancy,<sup>7</sup> baptized April —, 1783; 4. Nathaniel West,<sup>7</sup> born about 1785; captain; mariner and merchant; became a clergyman, and in 1816 removed to Beverly, where he was then ordained pastor of the First Baptist Church; married Priscilla Webb Oct. —, 1808. CAPT. ISRAEL WILLIAMS;<sup>6</sup> shipmaster and merchant; captain of the Salem Cadets and the Essex Guards; married Lydia Waite; died Dec. 9, 1831; she was his widow in 1853; children: 1. Israel Porter;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; lived in Boston; 2. *Henry Lawrence*;<sup>7</sup> 3. *Charles Frederick*;<sup>7</sup> 4. Elizabeth W.<sup>7</sup>; married John Chadwick; 5. George,<sup>7</sup> born about 1806; super-cargo of ship Monroe of Boston; died at sea in 1825; 6. Samuel M.,<sup>7</sup> born May 8, 1809; master-mariner; lived in Brazil; died in 1866; 7. John B.,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 28, 1810; mariner and merchant; consul at Auckland, N. Z., from about 1845 to 1854, and at Avolan, Fiji Islands, where he died, unmarried, June 10, 1862; 8. Aaron W.,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 29, 1801; master-mariner; died, unmarried, Sept. 11, 1830.

HENRY LAWRENCE WILLIAMS;<sup>7</sup> merchant; married Elizabeth Daland in or before 1845; died Sept. 27, 1879; she died, his widow, July 21, 1902; children: 1. Tucker Daland,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 31, 1846; died, unmarried, Sept. 21, 1915; 2. Lydia W.,<sup>8</sup> born April 5, 1848; died Sept. 1, 1849; 3. Elizabeth D.,<sup>8</sup> born in 184—; is unmarried. CAPT. CHARLES FREDERICK WILLIAMS;<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Sophia W. Silver Jan. 21, 1836; died June 4, 1865; she died, his widow, Jan. 31, 1879; children: 1. George W.<sup>8</sup>; druggist; married Mary E. Bray June 13, 1865; she died July 18, 1902; he died, childless, May 31, 1905; 2. James S.,<sup>8</sup> born about 1844; master-mariner; died, unmarried, Aug. 1, 1885.

<sup>1</sup>EDWARD GILES<sup>1</sup> lived in what is now Peabody; probably married, first, — —; second, widow Bridget Very in 1635; died about 1649; she died, his widow, in 1680; children: 1. Hannah;<sup>2</sup> married Thomas Very; 2. Mehitable,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 2, 1637; married John Collins of Gloucester March 9, 1658-9; 3. Remember,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1638; married Henry Moses; 4. *Eleazer*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 27, 1640; 5. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born April 15, 1645.

ENS. ELEAZER GILES;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; lived in what is now Peabody; married, first, Sarah More Jan. 25, 1664-5; she died May 9, 1676; married, second, Elizabeth Bishop Sept. 25, 1677; died about 1726; she died, his widow, in 1733; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 1, 1665-6; died May 9, 1676; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 7, 1667; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. —, 1669-70; 4. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 14, 1671-2; 5. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1673; 6. Eleazer,<sup>3</sup> born March 3, 1675-6; died young; 7. James,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 15, 1679; died May 20, 1689; 8. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 31, 1681; 9. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 7, 1684; 10. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born July 12, 1687; married William Lowther Dec. 13, 1711; 11. Edward,<sup>3</sup> born April 28, 1689; bricklayer; lived in Boston from 1710 to 1715, when he returned to Salem, and died, unmarried, in the spring of 1734; 12. James,<sup>3</sup> born May 15, 1691; lived in Marblehead; married Elizabeth Clarke of Marblehead; was living in 1743; 13. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 17, 1694; 14. Eliezer,<sup>3</sup> born July 8, 1698; probably married Elizabeth —; lived in Hopkinton; 15. Mehitable,<sup>3</sup> born April 11, 1701; married Joseph Pudney. JOHN GILES,<sup>2</sup> removed to Beverly in 1679; yeoman; married, first, — —; second, Elizabeth (Gally), widow of Osmund Trask of Beverly May 5, 1679; she



in what is now the city of Peabody. George Norton<sup>1</sup> may have come to Salem before that date. Thomas Eborne was a tanner,

*George Norton*

and well along in years, being called an aged man in 1642. The town granted to him three acres of land next to En-

was living in 1709; he died in or before 1715; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1671; 2. Eleazer,<sup>3</sup> born March 19, 1679-80, in Beverly; 3. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 29, 1681, in Beverly; 4. Bridget,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 1, 1683, in Beverly.

JOHN GILES;<sup>3</sup> seaman; married Ann Andrews Nov. 7, 1706; he was living in 1738; children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 9, 1710; 2. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 26, 1711. SAMUEL GILES;<sup>3</sup> yeoman, joiner and cabinet maker; married Susannah Palfrey Sept. 10, 1719; they were living in 1754; children: 1. Susanna,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 26, 1720; married John Raynolds of Bristol July 6, 1744; 2. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 5, 1721; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 9, 1723-4; married Cornelius Tarbell; 4. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 7, 1725; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 25, 1728; married Nathaniel Leavitt Nov. 14, 1749; 6. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 7, 1730-1; lived in South Danvers; cabinet maker; married Mary Jennison Nov. 4, 1753; died in 1775; she died, his widow, at Salem, where she lived after her husband's death, Nov. —, 1784. JOHN GILES;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married, first, Abigail Raymond March 29, 1694; second, Esther Swinnerton May 9, 1709; she was living in 1715; he died in 1729; children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 28, 1695-6; 2. Bridget,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 10, 1697; died young; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 3, 1699-1700; married John Hutchinson; 4. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born March 1, 1700-1; died young; 5. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 19, 1703; unmarried in 1733; 6. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 16, 1705; married Stebbins Cummings of Topsfield Feb. 26, 1730-1; 7. Bartholomew,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 6, 1711; died young; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 2, 1714; married Joshua Swinnerton; 9. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 5, 1715; living in 1733; 10. Esther,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 8, 1718; married James Taylor of Beverly Aug. 6, 1735.

JOHN GILES;<sup>4</sup> seaman; lived in what is now Peabody; married Mercy Aborn Feb. 27, 1730-1; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1732; died young; 2. Mercy,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 2, 1733; 3. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 18, 1735-6. JOHN GILES;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer; lived in Medford, 1718-1730, in Salem Village, 1731-1746, in Medford, 1747-1756, and in Woburn, 1757-1761; married, first, Susanna Hall of Medford March 27, 1718; she died May 21, 1754; married, second, Lydia Atwood of Woburn Nov. 25, 1756; died in Woburn Jan. 20, 1761; children: 1. Susanna,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 26, 1718-9, in Medford; died, unmarried, June 20, 1750; 2. John,<sup>5</sup> born June 27, 1721, in Medford; died July 2, 1747; 3. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 19, 1723, in Medford; died young; 4. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born June 30, 1726, in Medford; married Abigail Hall Jan. 31, 1754; tailor; lived in Medford; 5. Edward,<sup>5</sup> born March 2, 1729, in Medford; brickmaker; lived in Medford; married Hannah Skinner Dec. 12, 1751; 6. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 21, 1730-1, in Salem Village; shipwright; lived in East Greenwich, R. I.; 7. Bartholomew,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 9, 1734, in Salem Village; lived in Boston; 8. Nathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 3, 1736, in Salem Village; 9. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 21, 1741-2, in Salem Village.

<sup>1</sup>GEORGE NORTON,<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem until 1642, when he removed to Gloucester, which he represented in the general court the next two or three years; also, lived in Ipswich and Wenham, and returned to Salem before 1653; married Mary —; died in 1659; she married, secondly, Philip Fowler of Ipswich Feb. 27, 1659-60; and died in or before 1694; children: 1. Freegrace,<sup>2</sup> born about 1635; lived in Saco and Ipswich; married — Spencer; and was killed by the Indians at Hatfield Oct. 19, 1675; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 2, 1637; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 19, 1639; carpenter; living in 1662; 4. George,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 28, 1641; carpenter; lived in Ipswich; married

sign Davenport's ten-acre lot Feb. 20, 1736-7. He died in the spring of 1643. Jacob

*Jacob Barney*

Barney,<sup>1</sup> Thomas Lothrop,<sup>2</sup> Jeffrey Massey, Richard Brackenbury, Peter Wolfe,<sup>3</sup>

Sarah Hart Oct. 7, 1669; 5. Mary,<sup>2</sup> born Feb. 28, 1643, in Gloucester; married Thomas Hart of Ipswich Oct. 12, 1664; 6. Mehitabel,<sup>2</sup> born about 1645; married Samuel Adams Dec. 20, 1664; 7. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Feb. 14, 1647, in Gloucester; married Samuel Hart Feb. —, 1678; 8. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> born about 1649; living in 1659; 9. Abigail,<sup>2</sup> born about 1651; living in 1659; 10. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 7, 1653; married John Wainwright March 10, 1674.

JOHN NORTON,<sup>2</sup> carpenter; married Mary Sharp April 3, 1660; was living in 1716; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 4, 1661-2; died Feb. 4, 1661-2; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born April 26, 1664; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 17, 1668; 4. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 30, 1670-1; 5. George,<sup>3</sup> born April 20, 1672; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 30, 1674; married Humphrey Thomas in 1711; 7. John,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 30, 1679; 8. Experience,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. —, 1685.

<sup>1</sup>JACOB BARNEY<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; married Elizabeth —; representative; died April 28, 1673; she survived him; children: 1. Hannah;<sup>2</sup> married John Cromwell; 2. *Jacob*;<sup>2</sup> 3. Sarah;<sup>2</sup> married John Grover; 4. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 15, 1639; probably died before 1673.

JACOB BARNEY,<sup>2</sup> husbandman and Baptist minister; founded churches in Charlestown and Swansea; in 1668, a founder of the First Baptist Society in Boston; married, first, Hannah Johnson Aug. 18, 1657; she died June 5, 1659; married, second, Ann Witt of Lynn April 26, 1660; lived in Salem in 1694 and subsequently in Bristol and Rehoboth; died at Rehoboth Feb. 12, 1692-3; she died at Rehoboth March 17, 1701; children: 1. Hannah<sup>3</sup> (Josiah?), born May 30, 1659; 2. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> March 2, 1660-1; married Joshua Boynton of Newbury April 9, 1678; 3. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 12, 1662; married Henry Hampton; 4. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 31, 1663; married Peter Marshall of Newbury; 5. John,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 1, 1665; married, at Bristol, Mary Throop Nov. 4, 1686; lived at Bristol, Swansea, Rehoboth and Taunton; died May —, 1728; 6. Jacob,<sup>3</sup> born May 21, 1667; died about 1690; 7. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 27, 1669; unmarried in 1688; 8. Dorcas,<sup>3</sup> born April 22, 1671; married Daniel Throop Aug. 23, 1689; 9. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born March 9, 1672-3; lived in Swansea; married Constance Davis of Haverhill Sept. 4, 1692; died at Rehoboth Feb. 4, 1730-1; 10. Israel,<sup>3</sup> born June 17, 1675; lived in Rehoboth; married Elizabeth Barrett Nov. 18, 1696; 11. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born March 29, 1677; lived in Rehoboth; married Sarah Griffin; 12. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 10, 1678-9; living in 1692; 13. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 6, 1680-1.

<sup>2</sup>Capt. Thomas Lothrop lived in Salem until his removal to Beverly when it became a separate town; member of the artillery company in 1645; represented Salem and Beverly in the general court; married Bethiah Rea; and was killed by the Indians with his company, "The Flower of Essex." Sept. 18, 1675. He had no children, but brought up Sarah Gott as his own child, and called her by his name. His wife survived him, and married, second, Joseph Grafton, and, third, Dea. William Goodhue. Captain Lothrop had a sister Ellen (or Eleanor) who married Ezekiel Cheever of Boston, the schoolmaster, Nov. 18, 1652; and died Sept. 10, 1706.

<sup>3</sup>Serg. Peter Wolfe lived in that part of Salem which became Beverly; married Martha — before 1657; died Dec. 6, 1675; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah, baptized June 2, 1644; 2. John, baptized Oct. 18, 1646; 3. — (son); living in 1657; and probably died in or before 1675.



William Hathorne<sup>1</sup> and Francis Dent were made freemen May 14, 1634. Jacob Barney, born about 1601, probably came from

Buckshire, England, being a tailor. Thomas Lothrop became a prominent man in the town, especially as a military com-

*Thos. Lothrop*

<sup>1</sup>Maj. William Hathorne had a brother Robert Hathorne, who lived in Bray, Berkshire, England, in 1653. His sister Elizabeth married Capt. Richard Davenport of Salem. His brother John Hathorne married Sarah —; was a husbandman; and lived in Salem until about 1650, when he removed to Malden, and in 1651 he settled in Lynn, where he kept a public house, and died Dec. 12, 1676. John Hathorne had the following named children: 1. Sarah, baptized June 2, 1644; 2. John, baptized Oct. 18, 1646; 3. Priscilla, baptized July 22, 1649; married Jonathan Shore Jan. 15, 1669; 4. William, born Nov. —, 1651, in Lynn; 5. Mary, baptized May 1, 1653, in Lynn; 6. Ebenezer, born March —, 1656, in Lynn; 7. Phebe, born March 22, 1665, in Lynn; 8. Nathaniel.

MAJ. WILLIAM HATHORNE,<sup>1</sup> married Anna —; died in the spring of 1681; she survived him; children: 1. —; <sup>2</sup>married — Helwise; 2. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> born March 11, 1634-5; married Joseph Coker of Newbury April 13, 1665; 3. *Eleazer*,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 1, 1637; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 11, 1639; living in 1665; 5. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 4, 1641; 6. Ann,<sup>2</sup> born Dec. 12, 1643; married Joseph Porter; 7. William,<sup>2</sup> born April 1, 1645; captain; married Sarah —; died July 14, 1676; she survived him; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> born July 22, 1649; married Israel Porter.

ELEAZER HATHORNE;<sup>2</sup> merchant; married Abigail Corwin Aug. 28, 1663; died in 1680; she married, secondly, James Russell, esq., of Charlestown; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 14, 1665; married John Rayner of Charlestown; 2. George,<sup>3</sup> born April 17, 1668; died the last week of April, 1668; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 20, 1669-70; 4. William,<sup>3</sup> born May 9, 1672; mariner; lived in Charlestown; married Abigail —; they were living in 1702; 5. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 23, 1674; mariner; lived in Charlestown in 1702; 6. Eleazer,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 13, 1677; 7. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 11, 1680. COL. JOHN HATHORNE;<sup>2</sup> merchant; esquire, colonel, representative, judge, etc.; married Ruth Gardner March 22, 1674-5; died May 10, 1717; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 10, 1675; died before 1716; 2. *Nathaniel*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 25, 1678; 3. William,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 1, 1679; died young; 4. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. —, 1680; died young; 5. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> baptized July —, 1682; died young; 6. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> baptized March —, 1685; mariner; about 1725 settled in London, England, where he was living in 1732; 7. William,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. —, 1686; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 14, 1689; 9. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 9, 1690; 10. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May —, 1692; 11. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1694; married James Putnam; 12. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> 13. *Freestone*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 26, 1698-9.

NATHANIEL HATHORNE;<sup>3</sup> mariner; settled in Gosport, Hampshire (then Southton County), England, about 1710; married Sarah Higginson June 22, 1699; died about 1711; she married, secondly, Nathaniel Satall of Gosport in or before 1712; child: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> living in 1716. CAPT. JOSEPH HATHORNE;<sup>3</sup> mariner in early life, and then a yeoman; married Sarah Bowditch June 30, 1715; she was his wife in 1759; he died in the summer of 1762; children: 1. *William*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 20, 1715-6; 2. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 4, 1718; married Hannah Becket Feb. 20, 1742-3; 3. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 22, 1720; 4. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized Jan. 27, 1722-3; died young; 5. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 26, 1725; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 31, 1729; 7. *Daniel*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 22, 1731; 8. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 31, 1734; 9. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 15, 1735-6; married David Ropes; 10. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 16, 1738; married Daniel

mander. Peter Wolfe was a husbandman. William Hathorne was born about 1607, and came from London in the ship *Arbella*, in 1630, with John Winthrop; lived at first in Dorchester, and after 1633 in Salem. He was prominent and influential not only in the town, but in the colony, being speaker of the house of deputies, etc. Francis Dent lived here until his death in 1638.

*William Hathorne*

John Sibley, Moses Maverick, Richard Davenport, Ralph Fogg and John Hardy were made freemen September 3, 1634.

Cheever. BENJAMIN HATHORNE;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Hannah Derby May 25, 1727; probably died in or before 1736; she married, secondly, Miles Ward; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 18, 1727-8; latter; married Hannah — before 1752; they were living in 1764; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 5, 1730.

CAPT. WILLIAM HATHORNE;<sup>4</sup> mariner and fisherman; married Mary Touzel March 29, 1741; he was living in 1765; she died in June, 1805; children: 1. William,<sup>5</sup> born in 174—; mariner and merchant; married Abigail Ward Sept. 17, 1768; she died, his widow, Sept. 3, 1818; 2. Mary;<sup>5</sup> trader; died, unmarried, March 23, 1802, worth forty thousand dollars; 3. Ruth;<sup>5</sup> married James Bott; died in 1805; 4. John Touzel;<sup>5</sup> mariner; died in 1805; probably unmarried; 5. Susanna,<sup>5</sup> born about 1758; died, unmarried May 30, 1818; 6. Sarah;<sup>5</sup> died, unmarried, in 1804; 7. Elizabeth;<sup>5</sup> married Thorndike Proctor. JOHN HATHORNE;<sup>4</sup> married Susannah Touzel Oct. 16, 1746; died Feb. 6, 1750; she died, his widow, Aug. 28, 1802; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 21, 1749; 2. Susanna,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 21, 1749; married Capt. Samuel Ingersoll. CAPT. DANIEL HATHORNE;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Rachel Phelps Oct. 21, 1756; died in the spring of 1796; she survived him; children: 1. Rachel;<sup>5</sup> married Capt. Simon Forrester; 2. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> born June 23, 1759; died March 13, 1763; 3. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born May 11, 1763; married John Crowninshield; 4. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 4, 1766; died, unmarried, May 10, 1827; 5. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> born July 25, 1768; master-mariner; died at sea, unmarried, in 1805; 6. Judith,<sup>5</sup> born April 17, 1770; married Capt. George Archer; 7. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born May 19, 1775; 8. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 20, 1778; died, unmarried, July 21, 1847.

COL. JOHN HATHORNE;<sup>5</sup> esquire; merchant; married Susannah Herbert Oct. 18, 1772; she died Nov. 8, 1834; he died Dec. 24, 1834; children: 1. Benjamin Herbert,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 9, 1773; merchant; married Rebecca —; she was living in 1812; he died Feb. 9, 1824; had an adopted daughter, Rebecca Hathorne Hall; 2. John,<sup>6</sup> born July 16, 1775; merchant; married Elizabeth Burchmore Oct. 3, 1809; she died May 10, 1825; he died Jan. 18, 1829; 3. William,<sup>6</sup> born May 23, 1777; 4. Susannah,<sup>6</sup> born March 19, 1779; died April 21, 1797; 5. Ebenezer,<sup>6</sup> born May 11, 1781; died Nov. 8, 1789, having been run over by a cart; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born May 4, 1783; married Capt. Stephen Ranney of Marblehead Oct. 11, 1812; 7. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born March 30, 1785; died Sept. 8, 1796; 8. Ellen,<sup>6</sup> born June 23, 1787; married Adams Bailey, of Charlestown Dec. 25, 1815; 9. Ebenezer,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 5, 1789; went to sea and then to the West and Mexico; returned to Massachusetts and was employed at the Boston custom house; returned to Salem from Boston; farmer and nurseryman; married Mrs. Catharine Peale; died Nov. 6, 1858; 10. Henry,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 19, 1791; died Oct. 11, 1791; 11. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born April 30, 1793; married — Shillaber; 12. Philip,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 30, 1794; died Oct. 20, 1794; 13. George,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 25, 1796; died July —, 1798; 14. Catherine,<sup>6</sup>



John Sibley was a young man, apparently unmarried at this time.<sup>1</sup> Ralph Fogg removed to Salem from Plymouth.<sup>2</sup> John Hardy<sup>3</sup> was a middle-aged man. The only known autograph of Mr. Hardy is the signature to his will, which is given on the next page.

born Nov. 8, 1798; married Henry A. Breed of Lynn Dec. 1, 1823. CAPT. NATHANIEL HATHORNE;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner; married Elizabeth Clarke Manning Aug. 2, 1801; died in Surinam in the spring of 1808; she died, his widow, July 31, 1849; children: 1. Elizabeth Manning,<sup>6</sup> born March 7, 1802; living in 1806; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born July 4, 1804; author; married Sophia Peabody July —, 1842; and died at Plymouth, N. H., May 19, 1864; 3. Maria Louisa,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 9, 1808; lost in the steamer Henry Clay, burned on the Hudson River July 27, 1852.

CAPT. WILLIAM HATHORNE;<sup>6</sup> merchant; settled in Lynn in 1831; married, first, Mary Dutch April 3, 1800; she died April 16, 1836; married, second, her sister Sophia (Dutch) Fowle, widow, Jan. 7, 1838; he died June 9, 1851, in Lynn; children: 1. Susan Herbert,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 28, 1801; married Isaac Childs Oct. 2, 1838; 2. William Jones,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 22, 1802; mate; died at sea, unmarried, in 1826; 3. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born July 3, 1804; married Henry A. Breed Oct. 31, 1845; 4. John,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 27, 1806; married Agnes Bacon in Boston; 5. George,<sup>7</sup> born in 1807; died young; 6. Fanny;<sup>7</sup> died young; 7. Benjamin Herbert,<sup>7</sup> born April 10, 1811; Baptist minister; married — Sept. 20, 1835; died Sept. 5, 1837; 8. George,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 5, 1812; married — May 5, 1840; died Dec. 22, 1841; 9. Ezra Dutch,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 2, 1815; lived in Boston; married, first, Ruth Ann Wiley Oct. 3, 1838; married, second, — Sept. 30, 18—; died July 22, 1846; 10. Henry Gates,<sup>7</sup> born July 24, 1817; lived in Lynn; was a druggist in Boston; married Helen Maria Fay of Boston Oct. 18, 1842; died Nov. 14, 1893; had children.

<sup>1</sup>JOHN SIBLEY<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem until Manchester was incorporated, in 1645, when he became an inhabitant of that town; married Rachel —; died in 1661; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 18, 1642; living in 1661; 2. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 8, 1644; married Jonathan Walcott; 3. Rachel,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 3, 1646; 4. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 14, 1648; 5. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 22, 1651; 6. William,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 8, 1653; 7. —<sup>2</sup> (son); 8. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 12, 1657; 9. Abigail,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 3, 1659.

WILLIAM SIBLEY;<sup>2</sup> joiner and yeoman; married widow Ruth (Canterbury) Small Nov. 1, 1676; died April 28, 1691; she married, thirdly, — Osborn; children: 1. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born last of August, 1677; married Thomas Needham Aug. 8, 1706; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> living in 1691; 3. Joseph;<sup>3</sup> had a son; 4. Nathaniel;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; died in 1732-3; 5. Rachel;<sup>3</sup> living in 1691.

<sup>2</sup>RALPH FOGG.<sup>1</sup> In 1637, when he was town clerk, Mr. Fogg wrote in the town records that Edmund Giles said to him that he (Fogg) "was the strangest troublesome man, a falling out and quarreling" (Salem Town Records, volume I, page 49 (printed)). Lived in Salem until 1652, when he went to England, residing at first in Plymouth and last in London, where he was a citizen and skinner; he was a member of the Artillery company in 1644; married Susannah —; died about March 15, 1673-4; she survived him; children: 1. John;<sup>2</sup> merchant; lived in Barnstable, Devonshire, England, in 1665 and 1675; 2. Ezekiel,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 1, 1638; merchant; citizen and skinner of London in 1676; 3. David,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 15, 1640.

DAVID FOGG;<sup>2</sup> married Susannah —; child: 1. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born March 18, 1675-6.

<sup>1</sup>JOHN HARDY<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; married Elizabeth —; died in the spring of 1652; she survived him; children: 1. Joseph;<sup>2</sup> 2. Elizabeth;<sup>2</sup> married Roger Haskell.

Probably one of the results of the discussion initiated by Roger Williams, as to the relation of the magistrates to the spiritual affairs of the church, was the following record, made by the general court March 4, 1634-5: "This Court doeth intreate of the elders & brethren of euy church within this jurisdicon that they will consult & advise of one vniform order of discipline in the churches, agreeable to the scriptures, & then to consider howe farr the magistrates are bound to interpose for the preservacon of that vniformity & peace of the churches."

A complaint was made to the court, at the same session, that "divers" persons habitually absented themselves from church meetings on Lord's days, and it was ordered that two assistants might hear complaints and, at their discretion, fine or imprison the offenders.

As an aftermath of the contentious condition of the church during the winter of 1635-6, the period of the unsettled pastorship of Mr. Williams, meetings continued to be held in private houses. This continued after the banishment of Mr. Williams and before Rev. Hugh Peter had become the stated pastor of the church. The government was disturbed at the existence of this practice, and Governor Vane sent the following letter to the constable of Salem:

To the constable of Salem.

Whereas we are credibly informed, that divers persons, (both men and women,) within your town, do disorderly assemble themselves

JOSEPH HARDY;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Martha —; died in the spring of 1689; she survived him; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized July 30, 1648; died young; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 28, 1650; married Benjamin Pickman; 3. Martha,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 5, 1652; died Jan. 5, 1674; 4. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 30, 1655; 5. John,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1658; died young; 6. *James*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 4, 1660; 7. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born May 6, 1663; married John Marshall; she died in Boston, his widow; 8. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 5, 1665; died March 9, 1686-7; 9. William,<sup>3</sup> born last week of April, 1669; died in 1697; had no children.

CAPT. JOSEPH HARDY;<sup>3</sup> master-mariner; married Mary Grafton July 25, 1678; died April 14, 1687; she married, second, Edmund Feveryear; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born April 13, 1680; married Samuel Howard; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born March 20, 1681-2; 3. Martha,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 23, 1683; died Jan. —, 1688-9; 4. Seeth,<sup>4</sup> born June 13, 1686; living in 1691. JAMES HARDY;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Ruth Marsh June 20, 1687; died May —, 1703; she married, secondly, Ezekiel Upton of Reading Jan. 23, 1711-2; child: 1. Martha,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 20, 1699; probably died in 170—.

JOSEPH HARDY;<sup>4</sup> shipwright; lived in Salem and Boston; married Sarah Pickering June 25, 1707; children, born in Salem: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 25, 1708-9; married Benjamin Mansfield; 2. Martha,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 26, 1710-1; married Benjamin Goodhue; 3. Seeth,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 7, 1712-3; married Nathaniel Phippen; 4. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 14, 1716, at Haverhill; died Sept. 3, 1718; 5. John,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 4, 1718.



both upon the Lord's day and at other times, and contemptuously refusing to come to the solemn meetings of the church there, (or being some of them justly cast out,) do obstinately refuse to submit themselves, that they might be again received; but do make conventions and seduce divers persons of weak capacity, and have already withdrawn some of them from the church, and thereby have caused much (not only disturbance in the church, but also) disorder and damage in the civil state, so as if they be suffered to go on, your town is like to be deserted of many of the chief and most useful members, to the great dishonour of God; these are therefore to require you forthwith to repair unto all such disordered persons, (taking assistance of two or three honest neighbours,) and signify unto them that their said course is very offensive to the government here, and may no longer be suffered, and therefore command them from us to refrain all such disordered assemblies and pretended church meetings, and either to confine themselves to the laws and orders of this government, being established according to the rule of God's word, or else let them be assured that we shall by God's assistance take some such strict and speedy course for the reformation of these disorders and preventing the evils which may otherwise ensue, as our duty to God and charge over this people do call for from us. And when you have given them this admonition, you shall diligently attend how it is observed, and certify us accordingly, as you will answer your neglect herein at your peril.

H. VANE, *Gov'r.*

JO. WINTHROP, *Dept.*

THO. DUDLEY.

From Boston this 30 of the 3 month, 1636.<sup>1</sup>

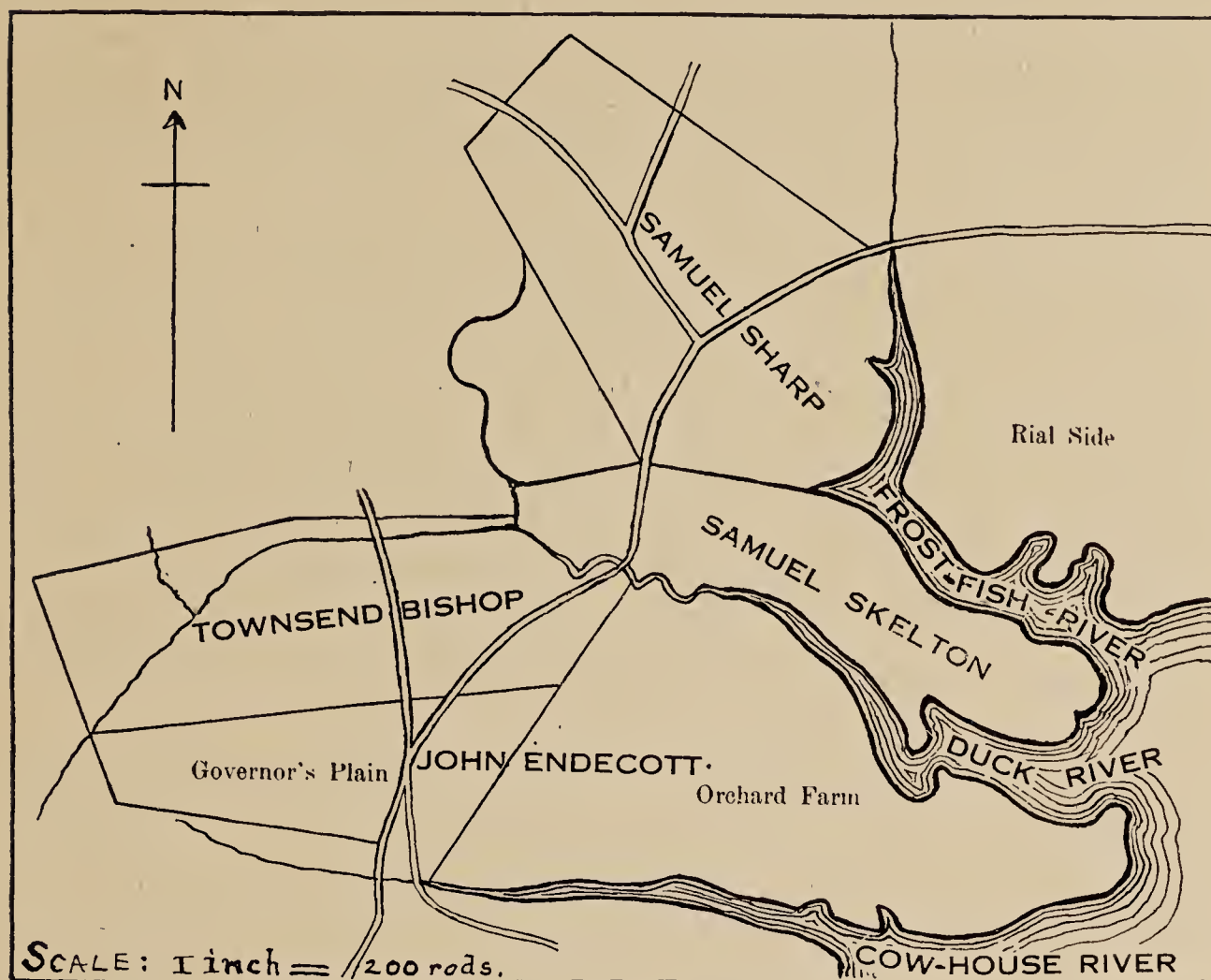
Upon the establishment of regular church services, under the leadership of Rev. Mr. Peter, this irregularity was lessened and finally several of the adherents of Mr. Williams removed to Rhode Island.

March 4, 1634-5, the general court ordered that no person shall keep a common victualling house without license from the court; thus the authorities obtained indirect control of the conduct of the business of the people. September 3d following, Elias Stileman was licensed to keep an ordinary in Salem during the pleasure of the court. This was probably located on the western side of Central Street, about midway between Essex and Front streets.

The sale and use of liquor in ordinaries was productive of so much drunkenness that it became intolerable and the general court, Nov. 2, 1637, forbade the keeper to sell either sack or strong water; and on the twentieth of the month it was ordered that no single man or other inhabitant of the Massachusetts Bay Colony should lodge or remain in any inn or common victualling house longer than is necessary, and the constable was to make diligent

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume II, page 343.

search and inquiry therefor, their oath of office including this service. This act was directed against idlers.



ENDECOTT LANDS.

July 3, 1632, the general court granted certain lands in Salem as follows:—

There is a necke of land lyeing aboute 3 myles from Salem, cont aboute 300 ac of land, graunted to Capt Jo: Endicott, to enioy to him & his heires for euer, called in the Indean tonge Wahquainesehcok, in English Birchwood, bounded on the south side with a ryver called in the Indean tounge Soewamapenessett, comonly called the Cowe Howse Ryver; bounded on the north side with a ryver called in the Indean tongue Conamabsqnooncant, comonly called Ducke Ryver; bounded on the east w<sup>th</sup> a ryver leadeing vpp to the 2 form ryvers, w<sup>ch</sup> is called in the Indean tongue Orkhussunt, otherwise knowen by the name of Wooleston Ryv<sup>r</sup>; bounded on the west with the maine land.

There is another necke of land, lyeing aboute 3 myles fro Salem, cont aboute 200 ac, graunted to M<sup>r</sup> Sam<sup>l</sup> Skelton, to enioy to him & his heires for euer, called by the Indeans Wahquack, bounded on the south vpon a little ryv<sup>r</sup> called by the Indeans Conamabsqnooncant; vpon the north abutting on another ryver; called by the Indeans



Pouomeneuhcant; & on the east, on the same ryv<sup>r</sup>, also there is graunted to M<sup>r</sup> Skelton one ac of land, on w<sup>ch</sup> his howse standeth, & 10 ac more in a necke of land abutting on the south ryver, vpon the harb<sup>r</sup> ryv<sup>r</sup> on the north, vpon Willm Allens ground on the east, & vpon M<sup>rs</sup> Higgen-sons ground on the west.

Likewise there is graunted to M<sup>r</sup> Skelton 2 ac more of ground, lyeing in Salem, abutting on the south ryv<sup>r</sup> on the east, vpon the maine vpon the west, on Capt Endicotts ground on the south, & on John Sweetes ground on the north.

The three hundred acres granted to Mr. Endecott was his orchard farm, which is now included in Danvers. He erected a house near the Cow-House River, now known as Waters River, opposite the letter C in Cow-House River. At the head of the little creek to the east of the house was a spring from which he obtained water. The house was standing as late as 1712. The cow house was also near the Cow-House River and about half way between the dwelling house and Sylvan Street.<sup>1</sup>

Rev. William Bentley records in his diary, under date of Sept 21, 1796, a tramp through the orchard farm; and he speaks of the site and environment as follows:—

We found that this house, gone before the memory of any persons living, was upon the descent of the hill facing southward. The place of the Cellar, which is to be seen is distinguished by an apple Tree growing on it. Behind was a building for the family servants, & domestic laborers, the place of which is now to be seen. There is a fine prospect in front, & a gentle descent to a little creek, in which the Gov. kept his Shallop. Tradition says there was a walk to this place, with damson trees & grape vines so thick that a person might walk unobserved. These have all been gone for many years. This place was called the Gov. Orchard, as he planted early Trees around his house. There is only one Tree left, which bears the Sugar Pear, and, by tradition, was planted in 1630. It is in front of the site of the house, it rises in three trunks from the ground, & is considerably high. . . . There is a beautiful spring near Crane river, just before we came to the gate on the road.

Under date of July 26, 1802, Doctor Bentley wrote concerning the site of the governor's house: "The old Cellar is filled up & the stones sold."

The grant of two hundred acres to Mr. Skelton constituted Danversport, and ran along the northerly side of Crane River as far westerly as Hadlock's bridge on Holton Street.<sup>1</sup> This grant and also that of Samuel Sharp subsequently became the property of John Porter.

<sup>1</sup>See Essex Institute Historical Collections, volume 51, page 361.

On the twenty-first of May, 1635, a Dutch ship of one hundred and sixty tons burden, arrived at Marblehead, from Christopher Island, as it was then called, in the West Indies. She brought one hundred and forty-two tons of salt and ten thousand weight of tobacco.<sup>1</sup> On Sunday, June 7th following, a ship arrived at Salem with passengers and cattle.<sup>2</sup>

For preventing excessive prices of commodities and loss of time by people going to the ships, it was ordered that one person in each town should buy for all; but this plan was not effective, for most of the people would not purchase unless they did their own trading. The seamen were much vexed, but some of them brought their goods on shore and sold them.<sup>2</sup>

The efforts of the general court to control commerce was again manifest in the order of the court, June 14, 1631, "that noe pson w<sup>t</sup>soeuer shall buy corne or any other pvision or merch<sup>t</sup>able comodity of any shipp or barke that comes into this bay without leaue from the Goun<sup>r</sup> or some oth<sup>r</sup> of the Assistants." The court ordered, March 4, 1634-5, that no Indian corn or meal should be transported out of the colony till the next harvest.

In the production of whatever the earlier settlers in the colony could raise from the soil or extract from the forest or the sea, encouragement was given by the colonial government from the first.

For special improvements in the colony, each of the settlements was required to pay its share of the cost. In 1631, Salem was assessed three pounds and five shillings, it being their part of the cost of thirty pounds "for the making of the creeke att the newe towne."<sup>3</sup> The succeeding winter a palisado was made about New Town, at an expense of sixty pounds, which was levied upon the several plantations. Salem's portion was four pounds and ten shillings and Marble Harbor's six pounds. Why the share of Marble Harbor should be thus separated from Salem and assessed thirty-three per cent more is not apparent. When the fort in Boston Harbor was being built, the town of Salem was ordered, Nov. 5, 1633, to contribute towards its construction to the extent of the price of three days' work for every man, except the magistrates and ministers.

The public colonial tax of 1633 amounted to four hundred and twelve pounds, the share of Salem being twenty-eight pounds. Of the six hundred pounds raised in 1634, to defray public charges, Salem's part was forty-five pounds.

<sup>1</sup>"Captain Hurlston came merchant." Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 160.

<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 161.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 89.



The general court, May 14, 1634, "ordered that in all rates & publique charges, the townes shall have respect to levy euy man according to his estate, & with consideracon of all other his abilityes, whatsoeuer, & not according to the number of his psons."

The colonial tax levy of July 8, 1635, amounted to two hundred pounds, Salem's share being sixteen pounds;<sup>1</sup> and of Sept. 3d following, of two hundred pounds and six shillings, Salem's part was sixteen pounds and six shillings.<sup>2</sup> The general tax levy for March 3, 1635-6, was three hundred pounds, of which Salem paid twenty-four pounds.<sup>3</sup> Of the colonial tax levy, Aug. 1, 1637, of four hundred pounds, Salem's share was forty-five pounds and twelve shillings.<sup>4</sup> Of the tax levy of Nov. 15th, in the same year, amounting to nine hundred and eighty pounds, Salem's part was one hundred and twenty pounds.<sup>5</sup> Of fifteen hundred pounds levied March 12, 1637-8, Salem was assessed the third largest and paid one hundred and seventy-two pounds and ten shillings.<sup>6</sup> The colonial tax rate of Sept. 6, 1638, amounted to four hundred pounds, Salem's share being forty-four pounds, eleven shillings and three pence.<sup>7</sup> That of June 6, 1639, amounted to one thousand pounds, and Salem's portion was one hundred and eleven pounds, thirteen shillings and eleven pence.<sup>8</sup> Of the levy, May 13, 1640, of twelve hundred pounds, Salem paid one hundred and fifteen pounds.<sup>9</sup>

At the general court, March 4, 1634-5, it was voted that taxes could be paid in corn reckoned at five shillings per bushel.

At that sitting of the court, the town of Salem was fined two pounds for not paying its tax levy at the time appointed, but the fine was remitted before the end of the session, no reason therefor being given.

At a court of assistants, Oct. 18, 1631, it was ordered that corn should pass for payment of all debts at the rate it was usually sold for, unless money or beaver was expressly named. The currency of the colony received a slight modification by the general court, March 4, 1634-5, when it was ordered that thereafter far-

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 149.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 158.

<sup>3</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 165.

<sup>4</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 201. This rate was made by Jo: Holgrave, John Woodbury, Jeffry Massy, Peter Palfrey, Daniel Ray, John Balch, Roger Conant, Richard Rayment and Thomas Browning. —*Salem Town Records, volume I, page 57* (printed).

<sup>5</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 209.

<sup>6</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 225. This apportionment was made by John Woodberry, Richard Adams and others.

<sup>7</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 243.

<sup>8</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 260.

<sup>9</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 294.

things should not pass for current pay, and that musket bullets, of a full bore, should pass currently for a farthing apiece, provided that no man should be compelled to take more than twelve pence in them at a time. It was ordered by the court, Oct. 7, 1640, that no man should be compelled to satisfy any debt, legacy or fine in money, but could pay in corn, cattle, fish or other commodities, the values to be fixed by the general court from time to time. The court then fixed the rates—Indian corn at four shillings a bushel, and barley at five shillings, summer wheat and peas at six shillings and flax seed at twelve pence a bushel. These prices appertained to corn and seed grown in this jurisdiction.

Nov. 15, 1637, the general court ordered that wampumpeag should pass at six for a penny for any sum under twelve pence.

March 4, 1634-5, the general court ordered that no Indian corn or meal should be transported out of the colony till the next harvest, and that no Indian corn (other than seed corn) should be sold before that time for more than six shillings a bushel.

Sept. 6, 1638, the court ordered that the townsmen in each town see that grist mills were supplied with weights and measures, and that the corn be weighed both to and from the mills, if any one desired it. The miller's toll for grinding corn was fixed by the general court March 3, 1635-6, at one-sixteenth.

Jan. 19, 1634, the town considered a proposition to set off a number of ten-acre lots; it was then voted that the smallest family should have ten acres, the other families more according to their numbers. Jan. 2, 1636-7, this order was annulled; and such lots in the future were to be specially granted upon the merits of each case.

In February, 1634-5, the town ordered that the highway (now Lynnfield Street) in South Peabody should run on the north side of Mr. Johnson's lot. Francis Johnson's plain comprised about one hundred and fifty acres of land lying south of the junction of Lynn, Lynnfield and Washington streets. Most of this road passed over common land, as this portion did, but the other parts in that section were not located, probably for the reason that they did not run near nor adjoining private land.

April 6, 1635, Lawrence Leach and Richard Ingersoll promised to make a sufficient highway between their lots for carts to bring home wood; and the strip of land next to the end of Captain Endecott's lot was ordered to be a highway four rods wide (now Washington Street).<sup>1</sup>

At the same meeting the town granted some land to Michael Sallows; to Townsend Bishop the second lot from the lane's (or land's) end; and to Joshua Verrin, Edmond Batter and his

<sup>1</sup>Salem Town Records, Book of Grants.



brother-in-law George Smith, James Smith and Richard Ingersoll a two-acre lot each.

This was the first appearance in Salem of Michael Sallows, Townsend Bishop, Edmond Batter, George Smith and James Smith. Michael Sallows<sup>1</sup> was a young man with five children. Townsend Bishop probably removed from Salem in 1646, when

*Townsend Bishop*

he sold his house and land here. Edmond Batter,<sup>2</sup> a maltster, was born in 1608;

came from New Sarum (now Salisbury), Wilkshire, England, in

*Edmond Batter*

the ship James, this year (1635), bringing with him his servant John Small, and lived on the northwest

<sup>1</sup>MICHAEL SALLAWS<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; probably married Ann —; she died before 1646; he died about Dec. 1, 1646; he called Edward Wilson "son-in-law" in 1646; children: 1. Martha;<sup>2</sup> living in 1646; 2. Thomas;<sup>2</sup> 3. Robert;<sup>2</sup> 4. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 1627; 5. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born in 1630; living in 1651; 6. Michael.<sup>2</sup>

THOMAS SALLAWS;<sup>2</sup> fisherman; married Grace Lemon; was drowned April 8, 1663; she died Sept. 7, 1663; children: 1. Robert;<sup>3</sup> living in 1680; 2. Hannah;<sup>3</sup> died Nov. 2, 1662; 3. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1662-3. ROBERT SALLAWS;<sup>2</sup> married Freeborn [Balch?] before 1654; was drowned April 8, 1663; she married, secondly, John Black; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 9, 1654; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born about 1656; baptized Feb. 2, 1658-9; 3. Robert,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 5, 1664; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 5, 1664. JOHN SALLAWS;<sup>2</sup> seaman; lived in Salem and Beverly; married Hannah Wolfe Dec. 9, 1655; died in Beverly March 9, 1707-8; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 12, 1656; 2. Peter,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 24, 1658; died July 4, 1668; 3. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 1, 1660; died March —, 1660-1; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 1, 1662; 5. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 24, 1665; 6. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born June 22, 1667.

<sup>2</sup>EDMOND BATTER<sup>1</sup> was brother-in-law to Ens. Hilliard Veren; married, first, Sarah —; she died Nov. 20, 1669; married, second, Mary Gaskin June 8, 1670; died in the summer of 1685; she died, his widow, in the winter of 1702-3; children: 1. Mary;<sup>2</sup> married Rev. John Emerson; 2. Elizabeth;<sup>2</sup> died, unmarried, in the spring of 1701; 3. Edmond,<sup>2</sup> born Jan. 8, 1673; Daniel,<sup>2</sup> born Jan. 25, 1682-3.

EDMOND BATTER;<sup>2</sup> tanner and yeoman; married, first, Martha Pickman Oct. 26, 1699; she died June 1, 1713; married, second, Barbara (Weld) Hide May 25, 1714; third, Hannah Higginson Sept. 25, 1724; died Nov. 2, 1756; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 12, 1700; died Sept. 26, 1700; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 20, 170—; married George Bickford; 3. Edmond,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 1, 170—; 4. John,<sup>3</sup> born May 18, 170—; died same day; 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 21, 170—; married Joseph Goldthwait; 6. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 6, 170—; died July 2, 1707; 7. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. —, 1708; died March 22, 1708-9; 8. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born May 16, 17—; married David Goldthwait; 9. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 21, 1712; married John Ward; 10. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> born March 12, 1714-5; died Jan. 24, 1715-6. DANIEL BATTER<sup>2</sup> removed to Boston in 1706; married Sarah Hunlock Feb. 12, 1704-5; died in Boston before 1713, when she was his

corner of Essex and Washington streets.<sup>1</sup> George Smith lived

widow; child: 1. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> born in Salem Nov. 7, 1705; probably died young.

<sup>1</sup>JOHN SMALL,<sup>1</sup> planter; married Ann —, who was born about 1636; died in the spring of 1688; children: 1. *Stephen*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1636; 2. *Thomas*,<sup>2</sup> 3. *Mary*,<sup>2</sup> married John Buxton; 4. *Joseph*,<sup>2</sup> 5. *Benjamin*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1649 (and possibly sons John and Samuel).

STEPHEN SMALL,<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Hannah Sibley Feb. 25, 1676; she was his wife in 1716; he died in 1722; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born March 21, 1677-8; married Samuel Cook; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born March 4, 1678-9; married Jeremiah Neale; 3. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 7, 1680; 4. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 18, 1681; married Benjamin Endicot of Topsfield March 16, 1709-10; 5. *Stephen*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April —, 1689; mariner; lived in Salem in 1713; 6. *Rachel*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April —, 1689; married Samuel Stacey, jr., Aug. 22, 1712; 7. *Anna*,<sup>3</sup> baptized April —, 1689; published to Joseph Jacobs; 8. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> baptized July —, 1691; 9. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May —, 1695. THOMAS SMALL,<sup>2</sup> farmer; married Ruth Cantlebury March 15, 1663; died Jan. 26, 1675; she married, secondly, William Sibley Nov. 1, 1676; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 11, 1665; living in 1676; 2. *William*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 8, 1667; 3. *Lydia*,<sup>3</sup> born March 10, 1669; married Gilbert Tapley, jr.; 4. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born July 12, 1673; living in 1676. JOSEPH SMALL,<sup>2</sup> married Lydia Buxton Dec. 26, 1672; died May 30, 1676; she married, secondly, Joseph Hutchinson Feb. 28, 1678; children: 1. *Lydia*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 13, 1673; died young; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 14, 1675; married William Allen. BENJAMIN SMALL,<sup>2</sup> sailmaker; married Martha Fisk Jan. —, 1671; died before 1702; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> born about Nov. 15, 1672; lived in New Salem; joiner, in 1739; 2. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 29, 1674; 3. *William*,<sup>3</sup> died in 1710, probably unmarried.

JOHN SMALL,<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Hannah Tapley Feb. 12, 1701; died in 1708; child: *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 18, 1702-3; apprenticed in Boston; living in 1717. SAMUEL SMALL,<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Hannah Stacey Dec. 22, 1715; died in 1730; she was his widow, living in Danvers, in 1765; children: 1. *Lydia*,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 9, 1717; married Edward Trask Oct. 2, 1734; he died before 1739; she was his widow, living in Danvers, in 1765, and in Salem in 1771; 2. *Stephen*,<sup>4</sup> yeoman; removed to Sutton in 1744; married Ruth King April 6, 1742; was living in 1771; 3. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized in 1721. WILLIAM SMALL,<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married Rachel Needham Feb. 21, 1712; she was his wife in 1733; he was "lately deceased" in 1749; children: 1. *Rachel*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 29, 1712; 2. *William*,<sup>4</sup> born April 14, 1714; 3. *George*,<sup>4</sup> born July 13, 1716.

JOHN SMALL,<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Lydia Jacobs (published April 20, 1745); she was his wife in 1763; he died in the summer of 1781; children: 1. *Lydia*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1763; married Benjamin Needham; 2. *Hannah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1763; married Andrew Curtice July 5, 1776; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1763; lived in Danvers; yeoman; married Sarah Webb Dec. 19, 1782; died in Danvers Feb. 7, 1830; she died Oct. 3, 1831, in Danvers; 4. *Stephen*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1763; lived in Danvers; married Mary Cutler (published Oct. 5, 1782); "Drowned near Hillburts", in Danvers, May 18, 1785; she died, his widow, in Danvers, Dec. 26, 1831. WILLIAM SMALL,<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Sarah Clark Aug. 23, 1733, in Andover; lived in Andover until 1735, when he returned to Salem, where he was living in 1749; children: 1. *Amos*,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 14, 1733, in Andover; 2. *William*,<sup>5</sup> baptized in Andover May 26, 1736; probably paper maker and living in Andover, wife Lucy, in 1794; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born June 15, 1736; 4. *Rachel*,<sup>5</sup> born April 16, 1738; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 13, 1740; 6. *Lydia*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 31, 1745; 7. *Hannah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 10, 1747; 8. *George*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 25, 1749. GEORGE SMALL,<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in the Danvers part of Salem; married Abigail Upton Feb. 23, 1737-8; they lived



here only a year or two, and probably removed to Ipswich. James Smith was a smith by trade, and above middle age.<sup>1</sup>

Aug. 22, 1635, the town ordered that Mr. Burdett should have a lot of land "upon the rock beyond Mr. Endecott's fence." This was probably the two-acre lot that the town permitted Mr. Smith, jr., to purchase from Mr. Burdett, for seven pounds, April 10, 1637.<sup>2</sup> Mr. Burdett was given "a tenne acre lot at the vpp end of Bass river" by the town Feb. 8, 1635-6, but the grant was made void. This was probably the lot granted to Lieutenant Davenport Jan. 2, 1636-7, by the town. July 4, 1637, the town granted to Mr. Burdett a ten-acre lot "adjoinyng to the fort next Marble head." This was Rev. George Burdett, who came from Yarmouth, Norfolkshire, England, where he had preached two years. He left his wife and children in distress, and emigrated to America. He came to Salem, and lived here about two years, being held in high esteem. He went from here to Dover, on the Piscataqua River, where he was quarrelsome, and subsequently he removed to York. He was finally forced to return to his family.<sup>3</sup>

The meeting house having been located, sites for shops for mechanics were discussed at a town meeting Aug. 22, 1635. It was suggested that they be "at the end of the meeting house from willm Lords corner fence." This was on the south side of what is now Essex Street, where the Hale block stands. Messsrs. Endecott, Sharp, Fogg and Alford were appointed a committee to find a convenient place for that purpose that might be secured with the owner's consent.

At this time (1635), there were a number of families living in Marblehead. They were principally fishermen, and located about Little Harbor. It was inconvenient for them to attend the services of the church at Salem town, and an endeavor was made to secure the services of a minister. Rev. John Avery, who had come to America from Wiltshire, England, where he had been a preacher of good repute and was then staying with his family in

in Danvers in 1774; children: 1. George,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 3, 1741-2; died young; 2. Rachel,<sup>5</sup> born March 16, 1742-3; married Daniel Putnam, jr., Sept. 14, 1769; 3. George,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 17, 1744-5; lived in Danvers in 1788; 4. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 5, 1746; married John Putnam, jr., Oct. 31, 1765; 5. William,<sup>5</sup> born June 11, 1749; 6. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born May 2, 1753, in Danvers; housewright; lived in Middleton in 1793; married Mary Hutchinson of Middleton June 12, 1776.

<sup>1</sup>James Smith became one of the earliest settlers of Marblehead; married Mary —; they were Quakers; he died in 1661; she died in 1663; children: 1. James, born about 1625; captain; lived in England in 1663, and afterwards in Marblehead; mariner; married — — before 1660; 2. Mary, born about 1627; married Richard Rowland of Marblehead; 3. Catherine; married Samuel Eburne.

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 45 (printed).

<sup>3</sup>Savage's Genealogical Dictionary.







WALTON'S SPRING, MARBLEHEAD.

Newbury, was invited to live in Marblehead and conduct religious services there among the fishermen. Cotton Mather, in his *Magnalia*, says that Mr. Avery declined the invitation, "there being no church there, and the fishermen there being remiss to form one." Apparently, he changed his mind, and determined to engage in that service.

Isaac Allerton sailed a pinnace between Boston and Piscataqua River; and at Ipswich, August 12th, Mr. Avery and his wife and five or six children, his cousin Anthony Thatcher, who had come from New Sarum, England, and had been in New England only a few weeks, with his wife and four children, embarked with two other passengers and four mariners. For two weeks the wind had been blowing steadily and with increasing force. It was so strong that for two days they were only off Cape Ann, then the wind suddenly changed to the northeast and a violent gale with heavy rain came on. At ten o'clock, on the evening of the fourteenth, the sails were rent, and the anchor was cast without effect. At about midnight, the boat was dashed to pieces against the rocky headland. When the vessel struck, Mr. Avery and his eldest son and Mr. Thatcher and his daughter were thrown into the waters and carried by a wave upon a rock. Mr. Avery raised his eyes and said, "Lord, I cannot challenge a preservation of my life, but according to thy covenant I challenge Heaven." In another moment, all were carried into the boiling waters.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Thatcher was again thrown upon the ledge, where he managed to find and maintain a foothold. Later, his wife, with a portion of the frame of the vessel, was washed upon the same rock and saved. Only these two of the twenty persons upon the vessel survived. The next day the storm ceased, and the August sun shed its hopeful rays over the blue waters. Mr. and Mrs. Thatcher discovered that they were upon an island. Another night came and went. On the second day, they were seen from a passing vessel, bound for Marblehead, and were taken aboard and carried thither.

This was one of the most violent northeasterly storms ever experienced on this coast. On land many trees were blown down and fields of corn destroyed, and on the ocean the vessels, with one or two exceptions, were wrecked.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Thatcher<sup>3</sup> remained in Marblehead, where he had a house, and probably performed missionary service among the fishermen

<sup>1</sup>John G. Whittier, the poet, put an account of this wreck into verse, with the title, "Swan Song of Parson Avery."

<sup>2</sup>*Magnalia Christi Americana*, by Rev. Cotton Mather, 2, ch. 2; Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 165; Young's Chronicles of Massachusetts, page 483; and Historic Storms of New England, by Sidney Perley, page 3.

<sup>3</sup>Anthony Thatcher came from Salisbury (New Sarum), England, where he had served in 1631 and 1634 as curate for his brother Peter



until 1639, when he removed to Yarmouth. He died in the summer of 1667.

Rev. William Walton,<sup>1</sup> who originated in Essexshire, England, took his degrees from Emmanuel College, Cambridge, England, in 1621 and 1625; and was settled over the parish of Seaton, Devonshire, until about 1634. Mr. Walton emigrated with the colonists who came from Hingham, Norfolkshire, England, to America, and settled the town of Hingham, Massachusetts. He remained there until 1638, when he removed to Marblehead

and began his missionary work of thirty years in that place. He was earnest, judicious and faithful. He lived in the house of Matthew Cradock, near Little Harbor, on the southeast side of and about half way down Doak lane. Mr. Cradock died in the winter of 1640-1, and his widow Rebecca, who had married Richard Glover, conveyed the house and land to Mr. Walton, for fifteen pounds, June 6, 1650.<sup>2</sup>

The removal of Roger Williams from his service to the church of Salem left a vacancy which was filled soon after by Rev. Hugh Peter, who was a son of Thomas Dirkwood of the parish of St. Ewe, in Fowey, Cornwall, England, where he was baptized June 6, 1598. His father was a merchant, whose ancestors were driven from Antwerp, on account of their religious belief, and his mother was Martha Treffrey of Place, a descendant of Sir John

Thacher, the rector of St. Edmunds, in that city. He was a non-conformist and had lived in Holland more than twenty years. He embarked on the James April 6, 1635, at Southampton, and arrived at Boston June 3d. He went to Ipswich and Newbury. By his first wife, Mary, he had a son Benjamin, born at Salisbury April 13, 1634. Both Benjamin and his mother died soon after. Mr. Thatcher married, secondly, Elizabeth Jones in England. The children who came with them and were drowned were named William, Peter, Mary and Edith. Subsequently, three children were born to them: 1. Judah, who settled in Connecticut; 2. John, born March 17, 1639; married, first, Rebecca Winslow Nov. 6, 1664; second, Lydia Gorman Jan. 11, 1684; 3. Bethiah; married Jabez Howland of Yarmouth.

<sup>1</sup>Rev. William Walton died about the first of November, 1668; his wife Elizabeth survived him, and was living in 1670; his house was scantily furnished, but he had a library which Mr. Higginson and Mr. Hale appraised at twenty pounds; children: 1. John, born April 6, 1627, at Seaton; died before 1669; 2. Elizabeth, born Oct. 27, 1629, at Seaton; married, first, Lot Conant; second, Andrew Mansfield of Lynn Jan. 10, 1681-2; 3. Martha, born April 26, 1632, at Seaton; married Benjamin Mountjoy; 4. Nathaniel, born March 3, 1636-7, at Hingham; lived in Marblehead in 1678; 5. Samuel, born June 5, 1639, at Marblehead; married — — —; had children; 6. Josiah, born Dec. 20, 1641, at Marblehead; was struck by lightning at sea, but lived to reach land, being "wounded", June 23, 1673, probably unmarried; 7. Mary, born May 14, 1644, in Marblehead; married Capt. Robert Bartlett.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book I, leaf 24. The history of this house is given on pages 235 and 236.







*Hus peter*

Treffrey, who, in the fourteenth century, defended Fowey against the French. Thomas Dirkwood, at some time and for some reason unknown, changed his surname to Peter.<sup>1</sup>

Hugh attended Trinity College, at Cambridge, where he received the degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1616 and Master of Arts in 1622.

In "A Dying Fathers Last Legacy to an Only Child: or Mr. Hugh Peter's Advice to His Daughter,"<sup>2</sup> he writes as follows of his family and early history:—

I was the Son of confiderable Parents, from *Foy* in *Cornwall*; my Father a Merchant, his Ancestors driven thither from *Antwerp* for Religion, I mean the Reformed; my Mother of the same Town, of a very ancient Family, the Name *Treffrey* of *Place*, or the Place in that Town, of which I would not boast.

These lived in very great abundance, their Loffes at Sea grew very great; in the midst of which Loffes, my elder Brother being at *Oxford*, I was sent to *Cambridge*, and that Estate, I had by an Uncle, I left with my Mother, and lived at the University; and a little from thence, about eight Years, took my Degree of Master of *Arts*, where I spent some Years vainly enough, being but Fourteen Years Old when thither I came, my Tutor died, and I was expos'd to my shifts.

Coming from thence, at *London* God struck me with the sense of my sinful estate, by a Sermon I heard under *Pauls*, which was about Forty Years since; which Text was, *The burden of Dumah*, or Idumea, and stuck fast. This made me to go into *Effex*: And after being quieted by another Sermon in that Country, and the Love and Labours of Mr. *Thomas Hooker*: I there Preacht, there Married with a good Gentlewoman, till I went to *London* to ripen my Studies, not intending to Preach at all; where I attended Dr. *Gouge*, *Sibs*, and *Davenports* Ministry, with others; and I hope with some profit. But in short time was forced to Preach by importunity of Friends, having had a Licence from Dr. *Mountain* Bishop of *London* before, and to *Sepulchres* I was brought by a very strange Providence; for Preaching before at another Place; and a Young Man receiving some Good, would not be satisfied, but I must Preach at *Sepulchres* and Monthly for the good of his Friends; in which he got his end (if I might not shew vanity) and he allowed Thirty Pounds *per Annum* to that Lecture, but his Person unknown to me: he was a Chandler, and died a good Man, and Member of Parliament. At this Lecture the Resort grew so great that it contracted envey and anger. Though I believe above an hundred every Week were perswaded from Sin to Christ.

<sup>1</sup>See sketch of Hugh Peter in Essex Institute Historical Collections, by Mrs. Eleanor Bradley Peters, volume 38, page 1. In this article, Mrs. Peters states that the marriage of Mrs. Dirkwood's sister Deborah to Henry Peter, member of parliament for Fowey, may have had some relation to this change of name.

<sup>2</sup>The first edition was published in London in 1660, and the first American edition was published in Boston in 1717.



I wish I may not be judged for saying so: There was fix or seven thousand Hearers, and the Circumstances fit for such good Work; But I am tender; there I had some Trouble, who could not conform to all; and went to Holland, where I was five or six Years, not without the presence of God in my Work; but many of my Acquaintance going for *New-England*, had engaged me to come to them when they sent, which accordingly I did: And truly, my reason for my self and others to go, was meerly not to offend Authority in that difference of Judgment; and had not the Book for Encouragement of Sports on the Sabbath come forth, many had itaid. That good Man, my dear firm Friend, Mr. *White* of *Dorchester*, and Bishop *Lake*, occasioned, yea founded, that Work, and much in reference to the *Indians*, of which we did not fail to attempt, with good Success to many of their Souls (through Gods Blessing.) See Bishop *Lake's* Sermon, 1 King. 8.37. who profest to Mr. *White* of *Dorchester*, he would go himself with us, but for his Age, for which he had the late Kings gracious Patent, Licence and Encouragement.

Mr. Peter was one of the earliest members of the Massachusetts Bay Company, and subscribed, in May, 1628, to its joint stock. He was one of the fourteen who signed the first instructions to Governor Endecott, Sept. 13, 1628; and also attended two meetings of the Company, in England, in May, 1629.

Mr. Peter was at that time, pastor of the English Independent church in Rotterdam, Holland. If he had been in London or some other place near there, so that he could have been consulted readily, he might have been the first pastor or teacher of the church in Salem; but he was far away and it was uncertain when he would return.

Sir William Brereton visited Rotterdam in 1634, and in his "Travels" calls Peter a "right zealous and worthy man."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Peter, having been in ill-health for several years and under surveillance of the bishop for his interest in Puritanism, determined to visit America, at least. It is doubtful if his wife Elizabeth came with him. She was the widow of Col. Edmund Reade of Essex, England, and probably daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh. She was apparently older than Mr. Peter. Among the children of Colonel Reade were Thomas, a colonel in the parliamentary army and governor of Stirling, and associated with Monk at the restoration; Margaret, wife of John Lake of Ipswich, Mass.; Martha, wife of Daniel Epes and Samuel Symonds, respectively; and Elizabeth, wife of John Winthrop, jr. It was this latter marriage that caused Governor Winthrop to address Mr. Peter as "brother."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Travels of Sir William Brereton.

<sup>2</sup>Mr. Peter's only child was Elizabeth, who married — Barker and lived at Deptford, Kentshire, England, widow, in 1702 and 1709.

If Mr. Peter had remained in England longer, he would probably have been arrested for his non-conformity. He sailed from Plymouth in July, 1635, in the *Abigail*, with John Winthrop, jr., Sir Henry Vane and many others. They arrived in America on the sixth day of the next month.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Peter preached some in Boston and also in Salem, undoubtedly, before Nov. 30, 1635, when the town of Salem granted to him and Captain Endecott a two-acre lot each at the west end of the great pen, bounding on the lots of Captain Trask and John Woodbury ("Father Woodbury").<sup>2</sup>

*Go woodbury*

When he came, he had no definite plan as to where he would go, or whether he would even remain in America. He had not given up his church, and Mr. Davenport was still supplying his pulpit the next March.<sup>3</sup> On the third of that month (March) he was made a freeman, and by that act indicated that he had determined to remain here.

Edward Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence of Sion's Saviour," says of Hugh Peter:—

This yeere came over the Famous servant of Christ Mr. Hugh Peters, whose courage was not inferior to any of these transported servants of Christ, but because his native Soile hath had the greatest share of his labours, the lesse will be said of him here:

With courage bold Peters a Souldier stout  
In Wildernesse for Christ begins to war,  
Much worke he finds 'mongst people, yet hold out;  
With fluent tongue he stops phantastick jars,  
Swift Torrent stayes of liberties large vent;  
Through crooked wayes of error daily flowing,  
Shiloe's soft streames to both in would all bent;  
Should he while they in Christian freedome growing,  
But back thou must, thy Talents Christs will have,  
Improved for him, his glory is thy crowne,  
And thou base dust while he thee honour gave;  
It matters not though the world on thee do Frowne.<sup>4</sup>

So Hugh Peter began his work in Salem, preaching irregularly until his settlement over the church, Dec. 21, 1636.

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I.

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records, Book of Grants.

<sup>3</sup>Letter of Samuel Reade to John Winthrop, jr., dated at London, March 5, 1635-6, in which he writes: "We wonder we haue noe certaine information whether my father Peter intendeth to stay with you, or to returne. It is necessary it should speedily be determined of, that his church may know how to dispose of themselues. Mr. Davenport supplyeth his place yet."—*Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, Fifth Series, volume I, page 217.*

<sup>4</sup>Wonder-Working Providence of Sion's Saviour, by Edward Johnson, 654.

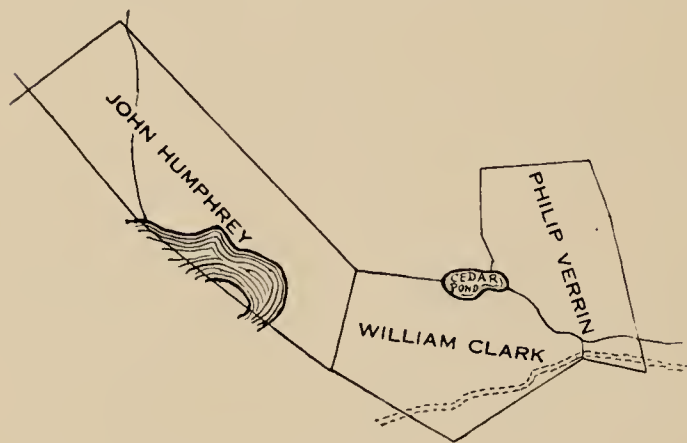


June 3, 1635, the general court ordered that Mr. Holgrave should impress men to help unload the salt at Marblehead, and he was excused from the court that he might oversee that work.

May 6, 1635, the general court made a grant of land to John Humphrey in the following words:—

There is 500 acres of land & a freshe pond, with a little ileland conteyning aboute two acres, graunted to John Humfry, Esq, lyeing betwixte nore & west from Saugus, pvided hee take noe pte of the 500 acres within 5 myles of any towne nowe planted. Also, it is agreed, that the inhabitants of Saugus & Salem shall have liberty to build stoorer howses vpon the said ileland, & to lay in such pvisions as they iudge necessary for their vse in tyme of neede.

The boundaries of this tract of land were not defined until March 12, 1637-8, when the general court determined



GRANTS AT SUNTAUG LAKE.

that M<sup>r</sup> Humfrey shall enioy the whole plaine on the east side of the pond, & the plaine also at the north end, to the length of a halfe a mile full, or more if the said plaines stretch further, not exceeding a mile that wee intend: also, three quarters of a mile on the westerly side of the pond, because the medowes there lying may bee w<sup>th</sup>in the said M<sup>r</sup> Humfreys

his owne ground, and on the south side of the pond to enioy the vpland & meddows, w<sup>th</sup> that meadow w<sup>ch</sup> is called by the name of Stones Meadow, & the said vpland, w<sup>ch</sup> is a hill, not very broad, beyond Stones Meadow, so called, to part the said ground of M<sup>r</sup> Humfreys from Linn townes medowes, layd out to the inhabitants thereof, all w<sup>ch</sup> said ground to bee his owne, as plaines, rocky ground, meadows, or swamps.

Dec. 7, 1635, a two-acre lot of land was granted to Gervas

*Gervas Garford*

Garford,<sup>1</sup> as he was here before the two-acre grants were limited to one acre. This lot was laid out on the north side of Birdless, or Burley's Cove, now known as Collins Cove. A two-acre lot

was also granted to his daughter Mrs. Ann Turland. Both of these lots adjoined the lands of Michael Sallows and James Smith. These grants were made upon the condition that the lots be built upon so that Garford might be ready to sell his house in the town.

<sup>1</sup>Gervas Garford had a wife Ann in 1649, and he was living in 1657. His daughter Ann married — Turland before 1635.

Dec. 21, 1635, the town granted to Robert Cole a farm of three hundred acres "in the place where his catle are by Brooksby." A week later it was stated to be "about 3 myles from Salem West ward vpon a freshe water brooke called the North brooke." Brooksby was southerly of the West Peabody railroad station. If Mr. Cole should desire to sell the land the town reserved the right to purchase it.

December 28, 1635, the town granted to Abram Warren a ten-acre lot and a house lot.<sup>1</sup>

Only seven men in Salem took the oath of freemen in 1635, viz: John Blackleach, John Legg and Robert Cotta, May 6; and

*John Blackleach* Richard Adams, Townsend Bishop, Philip Veren and Thomas Scruggs, September 2d. John Blackleach was a

young man,<sup>2</sup> and Robert Cotta<sup>3</sup> was a tailor and also young.

Richard Adams and his wife Susan came from Northampton this year in the ship Abigail, with

*Robert Cotta* John Winthrop, jr., Hugh Peter, Sir Henry Vane and many others. He was a bricklayer by trade, and twenty-nine years old. His wife was twenty-six.<sup>4</sup> Philip Veren and his wife Dorcas and five

*Phillip: Dorcas* children came from New Sarum, in the City of Salisbury, England, in the ship James, this year, sailing

from Southampton. He was a roper by trade and of middle age.<sup>5</sup> Thomas Scruggs is said by some to have come with Governor

<sup>1</sup>Abraham Warren; planter; lived in Salem; wife Isabel died April 5, 1672; he died in the summer of 1682; left a widow. His daughter Mary married John Green.

<sup>2</sup>John Blackleach married Elizabeth —; was living in Salem in 1663; children: 1. Desire, born April 13, 1636; 2. Exercise, born Jan. —, 1637-8; 3. Joseph, born Jan. 8, 1638-9; 4. Elizabeth, born Dec. —, 1641; died Oct. —, 1642; 5. Benony, born May —, 1643; 6. Elizabeth, born Aug. 12, 1644; married Thomas West of Beverly.

<sup>3</sup>Robert Cotta lived in the North field, near the home of J. Fred<sup>7</sup> Hussey; married Jone —; sold his homestead in 1664, and probably removed from the town; children: 1. — (son), baptized Jan. 28, 1637-8; 2. Bethshua, baptized March 24, 1639-40; 3. Mary, baptized Sept. 19, 1640; 4. Peter, baptized May 1, 1642; 5. Obadiah, baptized Sept. 10, 1643; 6. John, baptized May 11, 1645.

<sup>4</sup>Richard Adams probably removed to Charlestown or Malden; children: 1. Mary; married — Clough; 2. Sarah; married Edward Counts of Charlestown; 3. Ruth; married Lazarus (?) Glover; 4. Hannah, born Jan. —, 1663.

<sup>5</sup>PHILIP VEREN<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; married Dorcas —; died in 1649; she was his widow in 1659; children, born in New Sarum: 1. Robert;<sup>2</sup> 2. Philip,<sup>2</sup>



Endecott in 1628. He was a planter here; and died in the spring of 1654. His wife Margaret died Jan. 26, 1662-3.

*Thomas Swayze*

Benjamin Felton brought into the country, as his servant, a man named Robert Scarlett, a known thief, who, after he came, committed divers breaches of the law. It was ordered by the general court, Oct. 6, 1635, that said Scarlett be severely whipped, branded in the forehead with the letter T and be sent out of the colony. October 28, 1636, the general court, having heard that Scarlett showed signs of amendment, permitted him to remain, which he probably did not do, as he is not again mentioned.

John Galley appeared before the general court for a misdemeanor, and was fined, Oct. 6, 1635. He had just married, apparently, and his wife's name was Florence. He was at this time about thirty years old, and his wife was two years his junior.<sup>1</sup>

Widow Anne Scarlett came to Salem in 1635, bringing with her her three children, Mary, Margaret and Joseph. She died

baptized March —, 1619; 3. *Hilliard*,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 3, 1622; 4. *Nathaniel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 6, 1623; 5. Joshua;<sup>2</sup> lived in the parish of St. James, in Barbadoes; planter; died at Barbadoes in 1695.

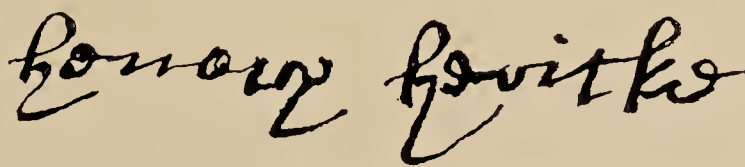
ROBERT VEREN;<sup>2</sup> died before 1639; child: 1. Robert;<sup>3</sup> living in 1647. PHILIP VEREN;<sup>2</sup> wheelwright; married, first, Jane — in or before 1640; second, Joanna —; she died Aug. 30, 1664; he was living in 1665; children: 1. Bethia,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 14, 1641; 2. Dorcas,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 16, 1643; 3. Philip,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 23, 1645; 4. Hannah;<sup>3</sup> 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 20, 1659; died April 20, 1662; 6. Deliverance,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 11, 1661; 7. Adoniram,<sup>3</sup> baptized before September, 1664. ENS. HILLIARD VEREN;<sup>2</sup> merchant and scrivener; called brother-in-law of Edmund Batter in 1669; married Mary Conant April 12, 1641; died Dec. 20, 1683; she died, his widow, in 1692; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 15, 1641-2; married Samuel Williams; 2. Deliverance,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 23, 1644-5; 3. Hilliard,<sup>3</sup> born April —, 1649; merchant; married Hannah Price May 4, 1670; died at Barbadoes in 1680; she died, his widow, in 1683; they left no children; 4. Dorcas,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 7, 1652; married Timothy Hicks; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 22, 1654; married Deliverance Parkman; 6. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1655; married Benjamin Marston. NATHANIEL VEREN;<sup>2</sup> married Mary —; died in or before 1665; she married, second, Lt. Joseph Putnam Nov. 14, 1666; child: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born in 1648; married Timothy Lindall.

<sup>1</sup>John Galley lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668; died in the autumn of 1683; wife Florence survived him, and died, his widow, in Beverly Dec. 23, 1686. Their daughter Elizabeth married, first, Osmund Trask; second, John Giles. In his will, dated May 22, 1683, Mr. Galley mentioned "my son-in-law William Hoare," "my son Killicress Ross," and "my grandchildren, Sarah Ross, Elizabeth Trask and Mary Johnson."

Feb. 28, 1642-3, and in her will, dated March 2, 1639-40, she mentioned the three children, "my brother Samuel, in old England," "my brother David's children," "my sister Dennis," "my brother James Hindes," "my brother Browning and his wife" and "my brother Joseph Grafton."

A lad, eleven years old, named Benjamin Scarlet, appeared in Salem at about the same time as Widow Scarlett and her family, but whether they were related is unknown. Benjamin was apprenticed in the same year to Gov. John Endecott and remained his servant until Governor Endecott's decease, a period of thirty years.<sup>1</sup>

Several others of the early settlers appear in the records of Salem this year for the first time. Among them was Henry Herrick, a young man,<sup>2</sup> and Richard Hollingworth who came from London in the ship *Blessing*. Mr. Hollingworth was at that



<sup>1</sup>Benjamin Scarlett was living in Salem as late as 1691, when he was about sixty-seven years old.

<sup>2</sup>HENRY HERRICK<sup>1</sup> was a yeoman; lived on Rial Side, in Salem; married Edith Laskin; died in 1671; she survived him; children: 1. Thomas;<sup>2</sup> married Hannah Ordway; died without issue; 2. *Zachariah*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1636; 3. *Ephraim*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Feb. 11, 1637-8; 4. *Henry*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 16, 1639-40; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1645; 6. *Elizabeth*,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 4, 1647; married Philip Fowler of Ipswich Jan. 20, 1672-3; 7. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 26, 1650; farmer; lived in Beverly; married Mary Redington of Topsfield May 25, 1674; died in 1680; she married, second, Robert Cue; 8. *Benjamin*,<sup>2</sup> died about 1677, without issue.

ZACHARIAH HERRICK;<sup>2</sup> carpenter; lived in that part of Salem which was set off as Beverly in 1668; married Mary Dodge in 1653; he died May 20, 1695; she died Aug. 18, 1710; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 10, 1654; married John Batchelder; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 25, 1657; married Samuel Stone; 3. *Henry*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1659; died in infancy; 4. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1662; married Samuel Morgan of Beverly Dec. 22, 1692; 5. *Martha*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 5, 1665; 6. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1669; married Jonathan Stone; 7. *Henry*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1671; lived in Beverly; married Susannah Beadle of Salem; died Sept. 28, 1747; had children; 8. *Abigail*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May —, 1674. EPHRAIM HERRICK;<sup>2</sup> lived in Beverly; married Mary Cross of Salem July 3, 1661; died Sept. 18, 1693; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born May 31, 1662; lived in Salem, Beverly and Wenham; married Bethiah Salart April 21, 1684; she died in Wenham Aug. 4, 1729; had children; 2. *Ephraim*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 13, 1664; lived in Beverly, Mass., and Preston, Conn.; married Judith —; had children; 3. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born June 14, 1667; 4. *Stephen*,<sup>3</sup> born March 15, 1670; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> 6. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born June 4, 1675; 7. *Timothy*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 4, 1681; 8. *Ann*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 20, 1683. HENRY HERRICK;<sup>2</sup> lived on his father's farm in that part of Salem which is now a part of Beverly; married, first, Lydia Woodbury (?) about 1660; second, Sarah, widow of John Giddings of Gloucester in 1690; died June —, 1702; children: 1. *Lydia*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1661; married John Porter of Wenham; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; captain of troop of mounted rangers in the French war; married, first, Mary —; second, Mary, widow of David Cushing of Hingham; had children;



time forty years of age. With him came his family, consisting of his wife Susanna, aged thirty, and their children, William, aged seven, Richard, four, Elizabeth, three, and Susanna, two. He was a shipwright and engaged in shipbuilding.<sup>1</sup> At the Salem court, Dec. 26, 1636, Richard Hollingworth was ordered to answer for misdemeanors at the "general court in the Bay;" but the order was withdrawn upon his submission.

Hugh Laskin, who also came that year, was a middle-aged man and a planter.<sup>2</sup> William Lord, who was here in 1635, and probably earlier, was born about 1575. He was a cutler, and lived where the Asiatic building now stands near the meeting house. His house was

*William Lord*

died in 1726-7; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized Dec. 6, 1668; 4. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> baptized in 1670; tailor; lived in Beverly and Gloucester; married Sarah Leach of Salem May 25, 1691; died in 1743; 5. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> baptized in 1672. JOSEPH HERRICK;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; lived on Cherry Hill, in Salem, which became a part of Beverly; married, first, Sarah Leach of Salem Feb. 7, 1666-7; second, Mary Endecott of Salem about 1677-8; she died Sept. 14, 1706; married, third, Mary, widow of Capt. George March of Newbury June 28, 1707; representative; died Feb. 4, 1717-8; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born April 2, 1667; lived in Beverly, Marblehead and Topsfield; married Elizabeth —; she died Sept. 30, 1748; he died Sept. 11, 1749; had children; 2. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 1, 1669-70; 3. John,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 25, 1670-1; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 4, 1674; 5. Henry,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. 26, 1679-80; 6. Martin,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 26, 1679-80; 7. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> baptized in 1680; 8. Tryphosa,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 16, 1681; 9. Rufus,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 21, 1683; 10. Tryphosa,<sup>3</sup> born April 9, 1685; 11. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 16, 1686; 12. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born April 29, 1688; 13. Edith,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 20, 1690.

<sup>1</sup>RICHARD HOLLINGWORTH<sup>1</sup> lived near Butt point, where he had his shipyard; married Susanna —; died in the winter of 1653-4; she was his widow in 1667; children: 1. William,<sup>2</sup> born about 1628; 2. Richard,<sup>2</sup> born about 1631; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> born about 1632; 4. Susanna, born about 1633; married Robert Starr.

WILLIAM HOLLINGWORTH;<sup>2</sup> mariner and merchant; married Eleanor —; died in 1677; she died, his widow, Nov. 22, 1689; children: 1. Mary;<sup>3</sup> married Philip English; 2. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born March 4, 1658-9; died before 1695. RICHARD HOLLINGWORTH;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Powell Aug. 23, 1659; they were living in 1674; children: 1. Richard,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 9, 1661; died Aug. —, 1662; 2. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born June 28, 1663; 3. John,<sup>3</sup> born May 12, 1665; 4. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1667-8; 5. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born April 4, 1670; 6. Caleb,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 22, 1673.

<sup>2</sup>HUGH LASKIN<sup>1</sup> lived on Front Street; married Alice —; she died July 23, 1658; he died the following winter; children: 1. Edith;<sup>2</sup> married Henry Herrick; 2. Timothy.<sup>2</sup>

TIMOTHY LASKIN;<sup>2</sup> married Damaris —; died before 1659; she married, secondly, Paul Mansfield; children: 1. John;<sup>3</sup> minor in 1659; 2. Timothy;<sup>3</sup> minor in 1659.

TIMOTHY LASKIN;<sup>3</sup> cooper; married, first, — —; second, Elizabeth —; died in 1700; she was his widow in 1702; child: 1. Thomas;<sup>4</sup> cooper; living in 1736; married Susanna Codner Aug. 12, 1706; she was his wife in 1728.

curious, two stories in height, very long and rambling, with a leanto. It was called a "row of houses." Near it was the barn and well. Though he repeatedly sought to recover more compensation for the site of the meeting house, he gave, in 1651, the house, barn and land "for and to" the use of the church, after the death of his wife.<sup>1</sup> Nicholas Merritt and John Peach also came

this year and settled in that part of Salem which became the town of Marblehead. Mr. Merritt was a young man,<sup>2</sup> and Mr. Peach was in his twenties,<sup>3</sup> and a fisherman. Thomas Read was made a free-man April 1, 1634, and was living in Salem as early as 1635.<sup>4</sup>

*Nicholas Merritt*  
<sup>1</sup>William Lord married Abigail —; died Jan. 14, 1672-3, aged ninety-seven; she married, secondly, Resolved White of Salem Oct. 5, 1674; and died about 1681. Mr. Lord gave his estate by will to his "kinsman," William Lord of Salem, husbandman. It is unknown what this kinship was, but probably the testator was uncle of the other William.

WILLIAM LORD,<sup>1</sup> the nephew, was a planter; lived in Salem; married Jane —; died in 1685; she survived him; children: 1. Abigail;<sup>2</sup> married Samuel Gray; 2. William,<sup>2</sup> born Feb. 27, 1656-7; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> born April 26, 1659; married William Godsoe; 4. Margaret,<sup>2</sup> born Sept. 21, 1660; unmarried in 1682; 5. Joseph,<sup>2</sup> born Jan. 1, 1661-2; 6. Jeremiah,<sup>2</sup> born April 2, 1667; of Beverly, husbandman, in 1689, and of Ipswich, weaver, in 1693; 7. Jane,<sup>2</sup> born May —, 1668; married Charles Price; 8. Rowland,<sup>2</sup> born April 7, 1672; died Dec. 5, 1674; 9. Dinah,<sup>2</sup> born Nov. 4, 1674; unmarried in 1696.

WILLIAM LORD;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married, first, Mary Moulton April 7, 1680; second, Dorothy Beadle Aug. 10, 1693; died about 1705; she married, second, Jeremiah Neal Oct. 31, 1707; children: 1. William,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 3, 1680-1; mariner; lived in Newport, R. I., in 1707; 2. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 21, 1682; 3. Mehitable;<sup>3</sup> spinster; lived in Boston, unmarried, in 1710; 4. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized June —, 1687; 5. Robert,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 3, 1690. JOSEPH LORD;<sup>2</sup> mariner; lived in Salem and Boston; died before 1746; children: 1. Mehitable;<sup>3</sup> married — Buttolph.

<sup>2</sup>Nicholas Merritt lived in Marblehead; married Mary Sandin; died in 1686; children (all living in 1685): 1. Martha; married — Owens; 2. Rebecca; married — Chinn; 3. Mary; helpless in 1685; 4. John; 5. James; 6. Samuel; living in Marblehead in 1669; 7. Nicholas.

<sup>3</sup>John Peach was born about 1614; lived in Marblehead; died Aug. 20, 1684. In his will, dated Oct. 2, 1682, he mentioned John Squire, his sister's son, in Barbadoes, widow of his brother Thomas, children of his sister Margaret, his estate in England in the hands of his cousin John Minson of Simsborough, his cousin William Peach, who had two sons, John and Thomas, his cousin John Legg, his cousin William Hines and wife Abigail and only child John Hines, his cousin Peter Dolliver and daughter Margaret Dolliver and his cousin Joseph Dolliver.

There was a John Peach, jr., apparently a mariner, wife Alice, living in Marblehead from 1644 to 1657 or later.

<sup>4</sup>Col. Thomas Read had gone to England in February, 1641-2, and probably did not return to America. He died before 1697. His only son and heir, Samuel Read, lived in London, England, in 1701, being a merchant.



John Thorndike, who is said to have come from Little Carleton, Lincolnshire, England, to Boston, as early as 1632, was one of the grantees of Ipswich and was living in Salem in 1635.<sup>1</sup>

*John Thorndike*

In the winter of 1635-6, locations for new settlements were discussed, and the territory on either side of Ipswich was proposed. It was therefore desirable to learn the extent of each town, and at the general court, March 3d, of that winter, the matter of "setting out" these bounds was referred to John Humphrey, Esq., and Capt. Nathaniel Turner, who were ordered to determine the bounds before the middle of the following summer, each town to run six miles into the country. Apparently, nothing was decided under this vote.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>John Thorndike lived in the Beverly part of Salem; probably married Elizabeth —; went to England in 1668, and died there in 1670; children: 1. Sarah; married John Low of Ipswich Dec. 10, 1661; 2. Elizabeth, born about 1641; married John Proctor; 3. Ann; insane in 1668; 4. Mary; 5. Alice; with her father in England in 1668; 6. Martha; with her father in England in 1668; 7. Paul; lived in Beverly; representative; married Mary (or Margaret) Patch April 28, 1668. In 1636, Mr. Thorndike had a servant named John Adams (Essex County Quarterly Court Records and Files, volume I, page 3).

<sup>2</sup>The boundaries were determined and located by a joint committee of the two towns March 27, 1643.







## CHAPTER XVII.

### ESTABLISHMENT OF THE TOWN.



ONE of the most interesting features of the settlement at Naumkeag was the orderliness of its conduct by its leading officers, who proceeded with scientific and economic accuracy and an apparent fulness of faith in the abundant success of the whole undertaking. The colony was founded by the most approved methods of a time far beyond its own, and on the most enduring basis.

The Company was aware of the importance of the settlement of private ownership of lands, and it was discussed while preparations were being made for the departure of the colonists in the spring of 1629. Each one must have a site for his house, ground to be enclosed and prepared for cultivation of crops, and pastures in which to graze his cattle.

In the very first letter of instructions sent to Governor Endecott, April 17, 1629, it was stipulated by the Company that the old planters should "enjoy not only those lands w<sup>ch</sup> formly they haue manured but such a further pporcon as by th' advice and judgm<sup>t</sup>" of Governor Endecott and the rest of the council "shalbe thought fitt for them or any of them."

The Company, by special committees and in general meeting, had vainly endeavored to decide how and where the plantation should be located, and wisely referred the whole matter with full authority to proceed to Governor Endecott and a committee to be chosen to assist him therein.

In building the town, Governor Endecott was requested to take the advice of Thomas Graves of Gravesend, Kentshire, a man well able to survey and lay out lands, whom the Company had sent for this and similar purposes, "that it may bee qualified for good ayre & water, . . . and may haue as much naturall helpe as may bee, wherby it may w<sup>th</sup> the less labor and cost bee made fitt to resist an enemye."



In regard to the quantity of land assigned to each person the lots were of equal proportion, but adventurers and some other persons had shares in the land according to the respective amounts they had contributed to the common stock, or the number of servants or cattle they had sent over, or for other reasons. The ordinary sized parcels of land were drawn by lot.<sup>1</sup>

Governor Endecott was ordered to allot lands to those who sent over servants or cattle in the several ships this year (1629) and convey the same to them, if they so desired, within one year after their entering upon their lots. But if any one disliked his allotment, at any time before a general distribution was made to all the adventurers, he was privileged to release the land and take instead a parcel by lot amongst other private adventurers.

The names of the adventurers with the several sums they had underwritten were sent to Governor Endecott, who was authorized to allot unto each adventurer or his assigns who desired, at the rate of two hundred acres of land in the first division for each fifty pounds adventured in the general stock.<sup>2</sup>

If within ten days after demand made by any adventurer who had an interest in the common stock or by his servant in his behalf his lot had not been allotted to him, he had liberty to build in any place he thought most convenient, provided that he did not build on or prepare land already occupied. If the plot of ground whereon the town was intended to be built were set out and publicly known to be intended for that purpose, no man could build his house elsewhere. If one's allotment were not set out within the town ten days after his request or demand of the governor or deputy and council to have it assigned to him, it was free for any adventurer in the common stock to build his house thereon. Later, the Company provided that each new colonist, adventurer in the common stock or servant could take possession of a lot to suit himself, and build his house thereon and enclose the same to his own use in a convenient place not built on or prepared, not exceeding one-half of that proportion which by the former order of the Company was allowed, if, within ten days after the arrival of the ships and due demand, an assignment was not made.<sup>3</sup>

A man entitled to land could build his house on an unoccupied lot in the town and impale it in the proportion of half-an-acre of ground for fifty pounds adventured, unless the governor and council changed the rate. If any one desired a deed of his land, a conveyance was made in the name of the Company, under its common seal.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, May 7, 1629.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, May 18, 1629.

<sup>3</sup>This was finally agreed by the Company May 22d, the ships being ready to sail, with the second letter to Governor Endecott, copies of records, etc.







MAP IN BRITISH MUSEUM.

Each person who came over at his own expense and was an adventurer in the common stock had forthwith allotted to him fifty acres of land for each individual in his family; but the master of a family who was not an adventurer in the common stock, had fifty acres of land and as much more as the governor and council deemed necessary according to his expenses and standing.

To such as had transported servants, land was allotted at the rate of fifty acres for each servant; and, if the master was responsible for or had paid the cost of the servant's transportation and wages, in order to recover what he had paid, he was entitled to sell the land.

The Company wished to deal fairly with the Indians, and in the first general letter to Governor Endecott the latter was advised to make composition with such of the savages as pretended to claim title to any of the land within the patent limits. In the second general letter Governor Endecott was requested to be careful to discover such claimants, and by the advice of his council to make such reasonable composition with them as might free the Company and council from any scruple of intrusion, "and to this purpose, if it might bee conveniently done, to compound & conclude w<sup>th</sup> them all, or as many of yo<sup>w</sup> can at one tyme, not doubting but, by yo<sup>r</sup> discreet ordering of this business, the natives wilbe willing to treat & compound w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>w</sup> vpon very easie conditions."

In the first general letter to Governor Endecott, the Company stated that it desired to grant to each of the Brownes two hundred acres in the first division of lands, but whether they received the land is doubtful. In the second general letter to Governor Endecott, the Company expressed its desire that Thomas Beard, the shoemaker, might have fifty acres of land since he had transported himself at his own expense. "But as well for him as all others that shall haue land allotted to them in that kinde, and are noe adventurers in the common stock, w<sup>ch</sup> is to support the charge of ffortyficacons, as also for the ministrie & divers affaires, wee holde it fitt that these kinde of men, as also such as shall come to inheritt lands by their service, should, by way of acknowledgm<sup>t</sup> to such from whom they receive these lands, become lyable to the pformance of some service certaine dayes in the yeare, and by that service they and their posterite after them to hold and inherite these lands, w<sup>ch</sup> wilbe a good meanes to enioy their lands from being held in capite, and to support the plantacon in genall and pticuler."

Salem was accordingly laid out between the North and South rivers.

Essex Street was a path probably before the old planters came, and this was doubtless true of the way to the location of their



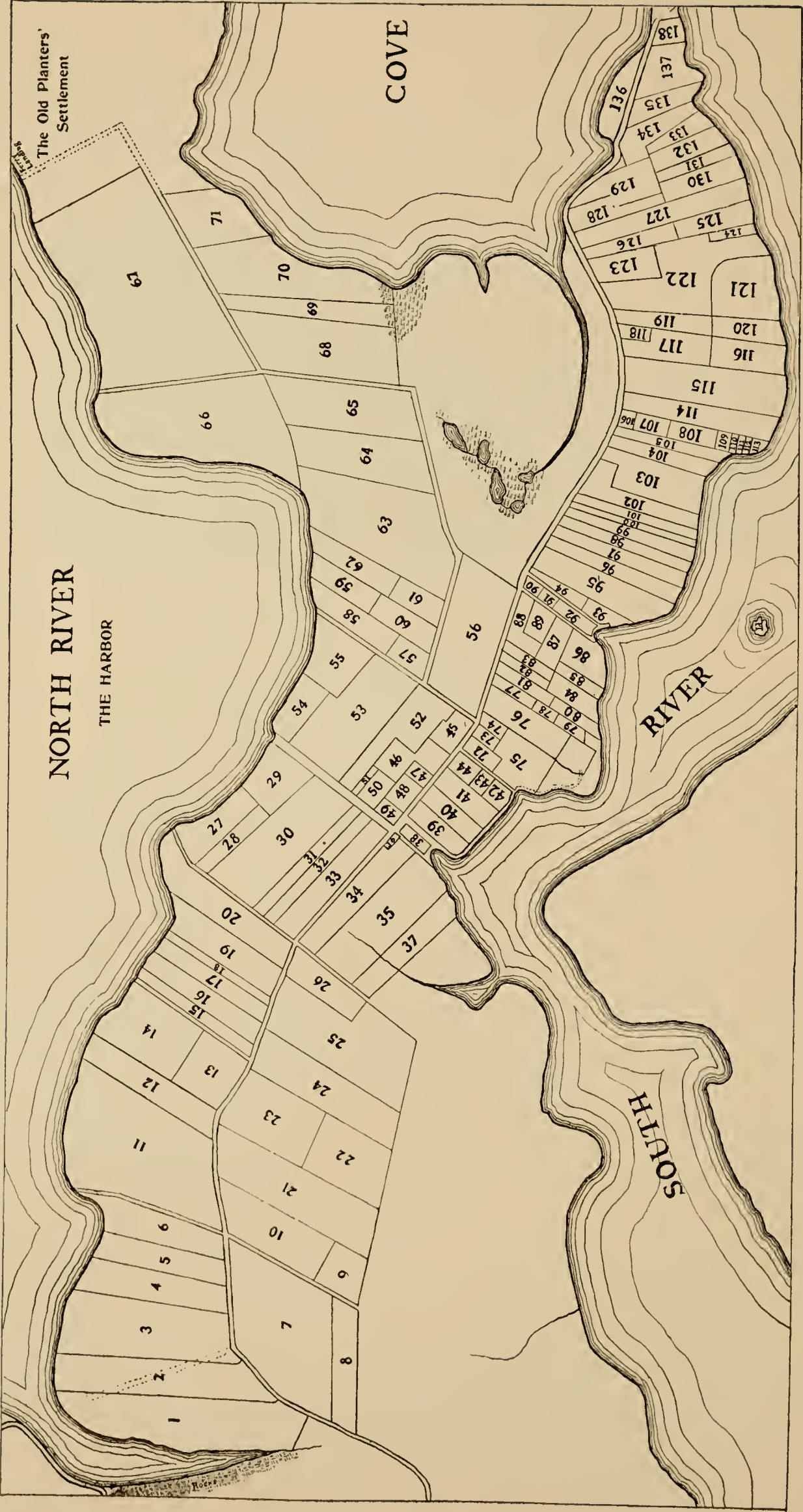


ANCIENT ROAD IN HIGHLAND PARK.

houses. From St. Peter Street each of these ancient ways led to a peninsula. In the other direction, from St. Peter Street, a way ran southwesterly, following the course of Essex Street, then through what was formerly Warren Street Court into the great pasture. It passed over the eastern side of the Bertram athletic field, then southerly through Highland Park, over Diamond bridge to Vinnin Square, then through Tedesco, Humphrey, Pleasant, Washington, Lee, Gregory, Hooper and Washington streets to the peninsula of Marblehead. From the Bertram athletic field, a branch of the ancient way passed westerly down Powder House lane, southeasterly of the high school building, crossing Highland Avenue, into Pope Court, thence between the river and the ridge to Putnam Street, then over Boston, Aborn, Washington and Lynn streets southerly to the present city of Lynn and on to Boston. At the junction of Boston and Aborn streets, a westerly branch ran through Main, Central and North Central streets, in Peabody, to the old path running on the southerly side of Waters River northeasterly to Great Cove. From the head of North Central Street the path ran around the head of Waters River, then by Sylvan, Ash, Elm, Conant, Dodge and Enon streets to Wenham Lake and from thence northerly toward Ipswich. From a point on Conant Street, easterly of Folly Hill, the path to the Cape Ann peninsula ran through the athletic field at the head of Bass River, then through Balch, Cabot and Hale streets and by the old Gloucester road through Manchester. Another path went from Danvers Square, through Maple and Locust streets, passing be-







LAYOUT OF THE TOWN.

tween the house and barn at the Rea-Fowler homestead, then past the Burley house, crossing Burley Street, and running on the northerly side of Cherry Hill, then by Trask, Cabot, Cedar and Cherry streets to Main Street, in Wenham, where it connected with the path running easterly of Wenham Lake. These paths were the ways of least resistance in which to pass to the various peninsulas and rivers, lakes and coves of the region. They were undoubtedly originated by animals, then used by the Indians and finally adopted by the English settlers, as they were the best land routes as probably centuries of use had proved. These various paths were crooked and long, but they were comparatively level and were the most feasible routes, passing around the hills, swamps, rivers and arms of the sea. A map, showing some of these through routes, was found some years ago by Henry Fitz Waters of Salem in the Sloane collection of maps in the British Museum, in London. It was made about 1633, but its delineator is unknown. So much of it as was included in original Salem is herewith reproduced, slightly reduced.

No record of the first layout of Salem is known to exist. The plan of the layout of that part of Salem known as the "town" has been prepared by tracing the land titles to the earliest date possible. The recording of deeds began too late to give the earliest changes of titles. Most of the earliest lots were two acres each, and soon after (before 1635) they were limited to one acre. Apparently the two-acre lots were on the North River and those of one-acre were along the South River and easterly of Central Street. Some of the lots shown on the plan were the aggregate of several original small ones, and in some instances several small ones constituted one original lot. The lot marked B. G. is the original burying ground. The lots are numbered only so that they can be here referred to intelligently. They were not so designated on the records. The following is a list of the names of the various owners of the lots at the dates stated, which is the earliest information that has been obtained. The scale of this map is one inch to eleven hundred and forty feet.

1. Thomas Trusler, 1654. 2. John Alderman, 1657. 3. Robert Moulton, 1640. 4. Henry Rennalds, 1655. 5. Philip Verrin, 1650. 6. William Bacon, 1640. 7. Thomas Goldthwaite, 1650. 8. Townsend Bishop, 1646. 9. Thomas James, 1652. 10. John Reeves, 1680. 11. Thomas Spooner, 1640. 12. Richard Bishop, 1657. 13. Thomas Robbins, 1663. 14. Thomas Trusler, 1653. 15. Thomas Cole, 1679. 16. Samuel Belknap, 1663. 17. Allen Kennison, 1647. 18. Jeffrey Massey, 1664. 19. Philip Verrin, 1649. 20. William Williams, 1637. 21. Robert Cotta, 1673. 22. John Pickering, 1657. 23. Michael Shafflin, 1638. 24. Thom-



as Antrum, 1658. 25. Richard Graves, 1654. 26. Philip Verrin, 1649. 27. Ralph Fogg, 1656. 28. William Browne, 1666. 29. Thomas Wilkes and wife Mary, 1656. 30. Samuel Sharp, 1629. 31. Edmond Thompson, 1639. 32. Robert Adams, 1649. 33. Edmond Batter, 1639. 34. John Humphrey, 1644. 35. Hugh Peter, 1636. 36. Hugh Peter, 1637. 37. George Emery, 1637. 38. Francis Higginson, 1629. 39. William Lord, 1634. 40. Hugh Laskin, 1647. 41. Samuel Skelton, 1629. 42. William Browne, 1687. 43. Elias Stileman, 1640. 44. William Browne, 1664. 45. Peter Palfrey, 1629. 46. John Gedney, 1660. 47. Thomas Weeks, 1656. 48. John Woodbury, 1629. 49. Hugh Peter, 1636. 50. John Horne, 1636. 51. George Ropes, 1661. 52. Thomas Oliver, 1661. 53. John Endecott, 1629. 54. George Burdett, 1636. 55. John Symonds, 1652. 56. Lucy Downing, 1639. 57. John Whitlock, 1650. 58. Christopher Waller, 1658. 59. Richard Stackhouse and wife Susan, 1658. 60. John Gedney, 1640. 61. Edward Norris, 1640. 62. John Burrows, 1637. 63. George Williams, 1653. 64. Thomas Watson, 1640. 65. Thomas Tuck, 1639. 66. John Neal, 1670. 67. Henry Skerry, 1673. 68. Henry Cook, 1638. 69. Richard Graves, 1649. 70. Miles Ward, 1650. 71. Gervas Garford and daughter Ann Turland, 1635. 72. Robert Gutch, 1651. 73. John Bourne, 1655. 74. John Holgrave, 1655. 75. Anthony Dike, 1638. 76. Francis Webb, 1636. 77. Alexander Field, 1649. 78. William Goult, 1659. 79. Edward Grove, 1669. 80. John Friend, 1654. 81. Eleazer Hathorne, 1653. 82. Peter Palfrey, 1652. 83. John Horne, 1655. 84. William Hathorne, 1654. 85. Alexander Field, 1650. 86. James Hyndes, 1649. 87. Joshua Ward, 1669. 88. William Allen, 1652. 89. Samuel Archer, 1658. 90. Daniel Rumball, 1659. 91. Samuel Archer, 1665. 92. John Archer, 1665. 93. Henry True, 1658. 94. John Browne, 1660. 95. William Jeggles, 1658. 96. Joseph Hardy, 1656. 97. John Ingersoll, 1656. 98. Richard Raymond, 1659. 99. John Baylies, 1649. 100. Elias Mason, 1661. 101. William Cockerel, 1660. 102. Paul Mansfield, 1661. 103. Timothy Watson, 1653. 104. John Swazey, 1652. 105. Timothy Laskin, 1656. 106. Joseph Grafton, 1661. 107. Matthew Dove, 1661. 108. Richard Prince, 1653. 109. Thomas Jeggles, 1661. 110. John Ormes, 1661. 111. Thomas Day, 1661. 112. Samuel Gardner, 1661. 113. George Gardner, 1661. 114. Thomas Browning, 1652. 115. Joseph Grafton, 1652. 116. Mr. Moore, 1661. 117. Edward Woolen, 1667. 118. Richard Lambert, 1661. 119. Richard Hilliard, 1655. 120. Joseph Grafton, 1664. 121. Henry Harwood, 1663. 122. John Becket, 1665. 123. Edward Harnet and wife Eunice, 1655. 124. John Smith, 1661. 125. William Goose, 1637. 126. Joseph Swazey, 1658. 127. Richard Hol-







lingworth, 1653. 128. Francis Collins, 1637. 129. Andrew Woodberry, 1658. 130. Joseph Younges, 1649. 131. Robert Lemon, 1667. 132. Mathew Nixon, 1667. 133. Andrew Woodberry, 1668. 134. Edward Hilliard, 1653. 135. Thomas Rix, 1661. 136. Roger Conant, 1658. 137. John Beckett, 1653. 138. Thomas Solas, 1661.

When the North field was laid out is unknown, but it must have been before the town records were begun. Apparently most of the original lots consisted of ten acres each. By tracing the land titles the accompanying plan is made possible. The following is a list of the lots with the names of the owners at the dates stated.

1. This was the horse pasture, which was owned by Capt. George Corwin (five-fourteenths), Philip Cromwell (five-fourteenths), William Browne, sr. (two-fourteenths), and Dr. George Emery (two-fourteenths) in 1669. 2. Thomas Watson, 1669. 3. Robert Batten before 1674. 4. John Shipley about 1650. 5. Robert Goodell, 1658. 6. Francis Skerry, 1682. 7. Francis Lawes and John Luff, being two ten acre lots, in 1659. 8. John Massey, 1700. 9. Francis Lawes and John Luff, 1659. 10. John Trask, 1695. 11. Thomas Robbins, 1680. 12. Daniel Ray, 1655. 13. Alice Fermaies, 1655. 14. Thomas Watson, 1655. 15. Thomas Tuck and Joseph Harris, 1659. 16. Mark Fermaies, about 1670. 17. Thomas Wilkes and wife Mary, 1656. 18. Thomas Watson, 1656. 19. Thomas Oliver, about 1670. 20. John Symonds, before 1670. 21. Robert Buffum, 1661. 22. The easterly part belonged to widow Spooner and the westerly part to George Corwin very early. 23. Robert Buffum before 1690. 24. John Kitchen, 1659. 25. Edward Gaskill, 1659. 26. Thomas Spooner, 1659. 27. John Trask, 1672. 28. — Marshall, about 1650. 29. Thomas Gardner, 1658. 30. Henry Phelps, 1658. 31. William Bacon, 1653. 32. Thomas Gardner, 1644. 33. Richard Bishop, 1654. 34. Samuel Gaskill, 1670. 35. Thomas Gardner, 1674. 36. Samuel Gaskin, 1682. 37. Robert Stone, 1682. 38. John Alderman, about 1650. 39. Samuel Gaskill, 1659. 40. Thomas Goldthwaite, 1659. 41. Job Swinerton, 1681. 42. William Place, about 1650. 43. James Symonds, 1698. 44. Samuel Ebourn, about 1680. 45. Col. Bartholomew Gedney, 1697. 46. Col. Bartholomew Gedney, 1697. 47. Samuel Ebourn, 1698. 48. John Blevin, 1698. 49. John Gedney and John Symonds, 1665. 50. John Gedney, 1667. 51. Hugh Peter, 1640. 52. John Higginson, 1679. 53. John Norman, sr., 1636. 54. Mr. Herbert, before 1650. 55. Robert Goodale, 1663. 56. Thomas Reed, 1663. 57. Henry Bartholomew, 1663. 58. Thomas Reed, 1667. 59. John Foster, 1700. 60. David Foster, 1700. 61. John Tompkins, 1675. 62. Edward Beacham, 1682. 63. Benjamin Gerrish, 1682. 64. Thomas Spooner, before 1680.



65. John Hill, 1675. 66. Hugh Pasco, 1682. 67. Caleb Buffum, 1682. 68. John Pease, about 1680. 69. Job Swinnerton, 1664. 70. Joseph Pope, 1664. 71. Henry Birdsall, 1650. 72. John Bourne, 1653. 73. Hugh Jones, 1688. 74. Anthony Buxton, 1680. 75. John Pudney, sr., 1692. 76. William Robinson, 1661. 77. Thomas Wheeler, about 1661. 78. George Corwin, 1658. 79. Edward Beachem, 1662. 80. John Alderman, 1656. 81. Thomas James, 1662. 82. John Foster, 1675. 83. John Small, 1700. 84. Henry Williams, 1654. 85. Robert Batten, before 1650. 86. William Towne, 1652. 87. Richard Waters, 1658. 88. John Tompkins, 1658. 89. John Tompkins, 1664. 90. Robert Cotta, about 1650. 91. John Foster, 1664. 92. Thomas Scudder, about 1660. 93. Thomas Robbins, 1681. 94. George Smith, 1679. 95. Henry Cook, 1680. 96. Samuel Goldthwait, 1687. 97. John Burton, 1683. 98. John Marsh, 1673. 99. Nathaniel Felton, 1667. 100. Lawrence Leach, 1660. 101. ——— Veren, 1660. 102. William Cattlebury, about 1660.

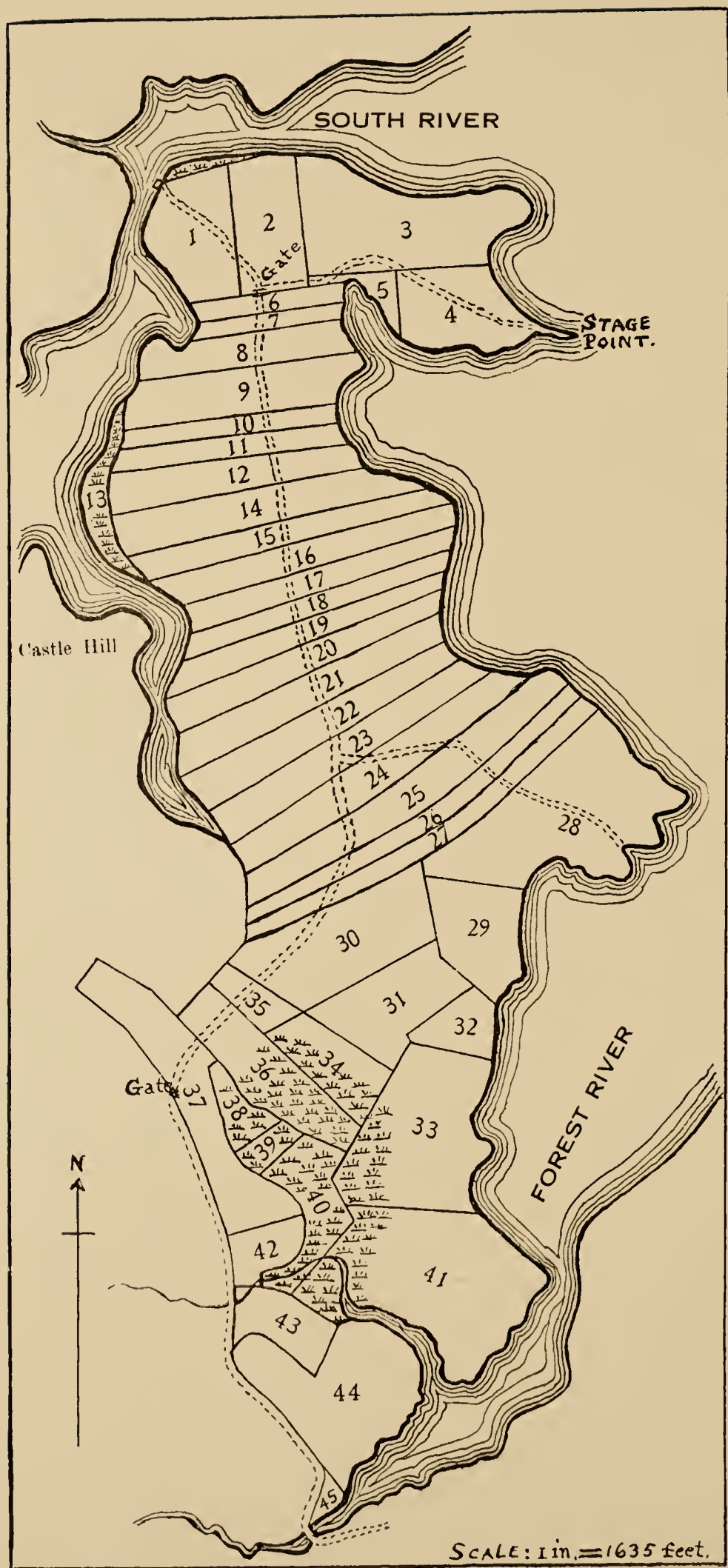
The South field was laid out probably at the same time as the North field. A fence ran along the upper end of it from the South River to Palmer Cove and along the southwesterly side of it from the first. Most, if not all, of the lots were originally of ten acres. The following is a list of them with the names of the owners at the dates stated.

1. Hugh Peter, 1640. 2. Daniel Rumball, 1652. 3. Henry Bartholomew, 1664. 4. Peter Palfrey, 1662. 5. Richard Hide, 1652. 6. John Swazey, 1652. 7. Richard Hide, 1652. 8. George Ropes, 1662. 9. Samuel Archard, 1660. 10. Richard Prince, 1662. 11. Joseph Hardy, 1675. 12. William Lord, sr., 1668. 13. Deacons' marsh, 1668. 14. Joseph Hardy, 1668. 15. William Allen, 1652. 16. Hugh Laskin, 1650 (?). 17. Joshua Rea, 1660. 18. John Orne, 1679. 19. Richard Raymond, 1662. 20. Mr. Gott, 1660. 21. William Ager, 1653. 22. Samuel Archer, sr., 1667. 23. Nathaniel Pickman, 1669. 24. Thomas Browning, 1658. 25. John Talby, 1652. 26. John Bourne, 1655. 27. Henry Harwood, 1661. 28. William Jeggles, 1658. 29. Elias Mason, before 1692. 30. Richard Waters and Richard Adams, 1650. 31. John Pickering, 1678. 32. Henry Cooke, 1652. 33. Daniel Baxter, 1644. 34. John Neale, sr., 1671. 35. Thomas James, 1652. 36. ——— Friend, 1660. 37. John Ruck, 1680. 38. William Lord, about 1680. 39. Alexander Field, 1652. 40. William Lord, about 1680. 41. Henry True, 1653. 42. John Mousar, 1639. 43. John Orne, about 1680. 44. John Holmes, 1672. 45. William Flint, 1670.

Salem was never incorporated until it received a charter as a city in 1836. Its origin as a municipality is unique. At first, it was the only settlement within the territory of the Massachusetts







DIVISION OF SOUTH FIELD.

Bay Colony. When other settlements were made within the borders of the colony, it became necessary to establish division lines between them. So the settlement of Agawam or Ipswich caused the line north of Wenham and Manchester to be established; the settlement of Gloucester induced the eastern line of Manchester to be determined; and the settlement of Lynn caused the western boundary of Salem to be fixed. Wenham was detached from Salem in 1643; Manchester in 1645; Marblehead in 1648; Beverly in 1668; and Danvers in 1752; leaving the territory of Salem practically as it is at present. It is the survival of many eliminations.

The origin of its town government is as interesting and peculiar as its beginning as a town. Originally, Salem was locally under the immediate control of the governor and council; but after the general court had been transferred to Newtown, the freemen of Salem held town meetings, granted land, made orders relating to its affairs and appointed a number of themselves to carry on the routine business of the settlement. The duties of the latter were similar to those of the later boards of selectmen. The freemen appearing to have thus acted for the town before March 3, 1635-6, were John Endecott, William Trask, Philip Verrin, Townsend Bishop, John Holgrave, Edmond Batter, Thomas Gardner, Roger Conant and Jeffrey Massy. The number of the settlements had so increased that the general court had too many important duties to which to attend to give its attention to the ordinary affairs of the individual towns, and, March 3, 1635-6, definitely provided that the freemen in each town be empowered to dispose of their own land and make such orders as might concern the well ordering of their town, enforce penalties for their breach, not exceeding one pound, and to choose their own officers, such as constables and surveyors of highways.

For at least a year or two before this order was passed the freemen of Salem met in what the town records, in some instances, called "a general court," but generally "a meeting of the freemen," "a town meeting" or "a meeting of the town in general," and afterward it was ordinarily called "a general town meeting," although sometimes "a general town meeting of the freemen," or "a public town meeting."

Commencing in 1636, "the town's representatives" granted land and performed other acts as if delegated by the freemen. March 28, 1636, the town records called "the town representatives" "the thirteen men;" among them during that year were John Balch, Edmond Batter, Townsend Bishop, Roger Conant, John Endecott, Thomas Gardner, John Holgrave, Jeffrey Massy, William Trask and Philip Verrin. In 1637, until June 19, the men



who served were John Balch, Jacob Barney, Townsend Bishop, John Endecott, Ralph Fogg, Lawrence Leach, Robert Moulton, Daniel Ray, Thomas Scruggs, Elias Stileman, Philip Verrin, — Wood and John Woodbury. At a general town meeting, June 19, 1637, twelve men were "chosen for manadging the affairs of the Towne" for six months. These were John Balch, Townsend Bishop, Roger Conant, Thomas Gardner, William Hathorne, John Holgrave, Jeffrey Massy, Robert Moulton, Peter Palfrey, Daniel Ray, Thomas Scruggs and John Woodbury. John Endecott appears as one of them on Christmas day, 1637, and through the next year. The meetings of these twelve men were called "town meetings." At a general town meeting, Dec. 31, 1638, seven men were chosen to manage the affairs of the settlement for the next year. These were John Balch, Roger Conant, John Woodbury, John Endecott, William Hathorne, Lawrence Leech and Jeffrey Massy; the same men were reelected for 1640. At a meeting in the autumn of 1642, Thomas Gardner, Peter Palfrey and William Lord appear in place of Roger Conant, John Woodbury and John Balch. At a general town meeting, Dec. 4, 1643, John Endecott, William Hathorne, William Lord, Jeffrey Massy, Peter Palfrey, Thomas Gardner and Henry Bartholmew were chosen and ordered to meet monthly. If any of them were absent at such meetings without "just ground" they were liable to a penalty of ten shillings. These men continued in this office until Feb. 23, 1646-7, when the "eight men" present at the meeting were William Hathorne, William Lord, John Hardy, George Corwine, John Porter, Samuel Archer and Edmond Batter. May 17, 1647, the "seven men" were the same persons and William Clerke. May 12, 1647, they were the seven men as of the preceding Feb. 23d. From March 20, 1647-8, until 1650, the "seven men" consisted of Henry Bartholmew, Edmond Batter, George Corwin, Emmanuel Downing, William Hathorne, Jeffry Massy and John Porter. Commencing with March 13, 1648-9, they were ever afterward denominated selectmen.

Next to the general managers of the affairs of the town, the constable was the most important officer. He had to preserve the peace, and perform other duties at various times. A staff was the emblem of his office before 1647. The first known constable in Salem was John Woodbury, who was chosen and sworn by the court of assistants at Charlestown Sept. 28, 1630. Elias Stileman was a constable in 1635, and Francis Weston in December, 1636. Philip Verrin was sworn constable April 10, 1637; and Samuel Archer was chosen Dec. 4, 1637. Verrin and Archer were those officers in November, 1638; and Daniel Ray, in 1639. John Alderman was sworn constable July 8, 1639; and Gervas Garford was

chosen to that office in January, 1639-40. Edward Burcham was sworn constable March 31, 1640; Robert Elwell of Marblehead June 30, 1640; William Lord July 1, 1640; and Joseph Batchelder in July, 1641. Gervas Garford was also constable in 1641. Thomas Spooner was sworn Oct. 20, 1641; Henry Bartholmew and Thomas Venner, Aug. 10, 1642; Robert Button Nov. 29, 1642; and Richard Prince Dec. 27, 1642. Thomas Truslar was sworn Sept. 4, 1643; and was constable in 1644. Moses Maverick was sworn constable Dec. 26, 1643. Thomas Edwards was chosen constable for Marblehead Feb. 26, 1643-4, and he and David Curwithin of Marblehead were sworn March 25, 1644. Richard Bishop was elected Sept. 30, 1644, and sworn Dec. 31st following. Henry Harwood was chosen and sworn April 7, 1645; and Michael Shaflin Jan. 26, 1645-6. Jeffry Massy was chosen Feb. 16, 1645-6, and sworn April 15, 1646. Walter Price was chosen and sworn Oct. 26, 1646. John Jackson was chosen May 1, 1647. Henry Skerry was sworn July 6, 1647; and Samuel Archer was constable Sept. 30, 1647. John Robinson was chosen, in Mr. Price's stead, Oct. 18, 1647. Daivid Curwithin of Marblehead was constable in 1647 and 1648; and Thomas Watson was sworn to that office June 27, 1648. John Kitchin was chosen constable, in place of Mr. Robinson, Nov. 11, 1648, and sworn three days later. Francis Skerry was chosen and sworn May 11, 1649.

Selectmen and constables were chosen by the freemen of the town generally, but lesser officers were appointed by the selectmen or constables.

Apparently, the early town meetings were warned by having them announced in the regular service of the church, even though only one day's notice might thus be given, as every freeman was presumed to be present, since he was compelled to attend the church services.

Nov. 30, 1635, the town agreed that "all such orders as the towne shall thinke meet to be published, shalbe published one the next lecture day after the towne meeting." Orders made by the town were recorded by Ralph Fogg, the clerk, as there was at that time (Feb. 6, 1636-7) no "print howse or some other meanes whereby to publish them," that the people then living here and those who would come might learn what they were.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

### LIFE IN THE COLONY.



UNTIL time allowed for the preparation of some kind of shelter, the vessels in which the early settlers came must have continued to be their abode, except for a few of the later immigrants who were without doubt taken into the cabins of their predecessors. A space of ground had to be cleared, and without delay logs felled, out of which a house of the rudest sort was constructed. If there were other hands to assist so much the better, but generally each man had all he could do to prepare a home for his own wife and children. Probably none of the earliest ordinary houses was more than one story in height, or contained more than one room; the upper part being an attic room open to the pitch roof of thatch, grass or bark, and reached by a movable ladder. A large chimney of stones was built on the outside at one end of the house, the lower portion forming a huge fireplace. The upper part of the chimney was often of wood. The windows were little more than holes a foot or two square, and the door was of plank hewn from the log. At first the ordinary log house had no cellar.

As ballast, ten thousand bricks and two loads of chalk were sent to Naumkeag in 1628. There were also sent a large quantity of nails, a barrel of red lead for painting, a ton of iron and two fagots of steel for the blacksmith to make into hinges, hasps, nails, etc. These various materials were worked into the early houses here. The imported bricks were used for hearths only. In the summer of 1629, a kiln for the burning of bricks and tiles was built by Thomas Trusler<sup>1</sup> at what is now estate numbered four

<sup>1</sup>Thomas Trusler lived on the westerly side of Beckford Street. He was in Salem in 1638, and probably came in 1629. In 1649, he was excused from training on account of his age. He married Eleanor, widow of — Phelps. She may have been a Moulton, as he speaks of "father Moulton." He had a daughter in England in 1654. He died March 5, 1653-4; and she died before June, in the spring of 1655.

hundred and twenty-four Essex Street, as brick clay was found there in quantity. He continued the business at that place until his death, which occurred in 1654. This is lot numbered 1 on plan of the

*Choi: Craytor*

layout of the town in 1629 at page 313. It was this kiln to which Rev. Francis Higginson referred in his New Englands Plantation, in 1629, when he wrote: "At this infant we are fetting a Brick Kill on worke to make Bricks and Tyles for the building of our Houfes." For more than a century this lot was known as "Brick kiln field," and after Boston Street was laid out (in 1640) and the ancient road came into disuse (in 1666), this part of Essex Street was called "Brick kiln lane." After the manufacture of bricks was begun here, there were few, if any, importations of bricks and tiles from England.

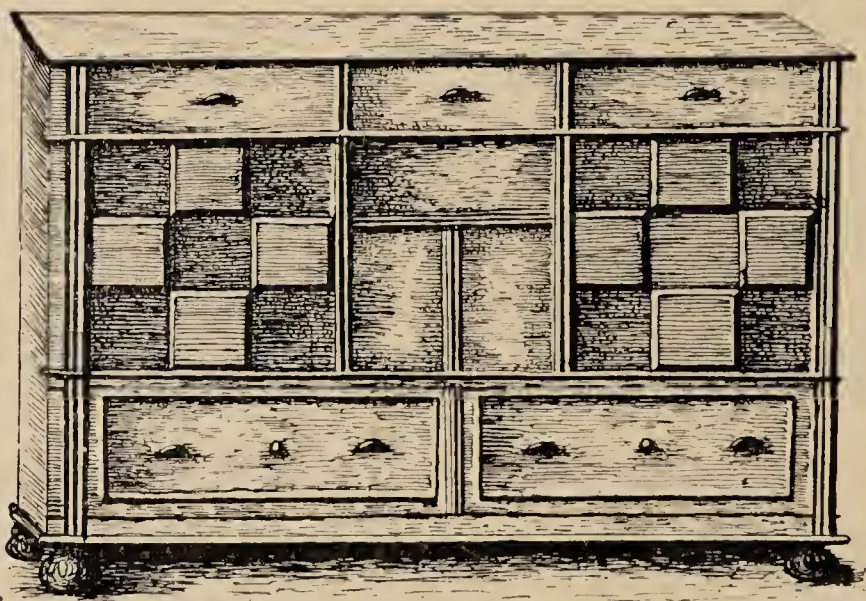
The furnishings of the dwellings were at first primitive, but through the inventiveness and skill of the settlers and the speedy importations of necessary articles from Europe they soon improved. The clay floor of the first cabins was ornamented and more or less covered by carpets—some of which, according to the records, were striped; and within a decade Turkey carpets were to be found in some of the houses. There were red and green rugs and a white coarse rug, besides mats.

The family and guests slept in a row on the floor. If privacy were desired, blankets or sheets were hung to divide the room into compartments. Corded bedsteads were soon made, however, and the use of the trundle bed for the children gave more room, since it was pushed under the bed during the day. Upon the tightly-stretched cords of the bedstead was placed the canvas bed-tick, which was filled with feathers or straw and sometimes with flock (coarse wool waste), and on the bed were sheets of fine or coarse canvas, linen or Holland. Blankets were common and generally white, but coverlets were often mixed in color. Quilts must have been rare, as only one is mentioned in the inventories of the estates of Salem people before 1650. Bolster ticks were filled with flock or feathers, and sometimes enclosed in cases. Pillows were filled with feathers. Pillow beers (cases) were made generally of flax, but sometimes of Scotch cloth, and ornamented with tassels. The best bed was often made with a frame above it, from which curtains were suspended. A ruffled valance was also hung around the bed. These were often made of green say material. Warming pans were used commonly to warm the chilly linen sheets upon retiring, and so are properly mentioned in connection with bed articles.



The original table was simply a wide thick board, fastened at one side to the wall of the house near the fireplace by hinges, so that when not in use, it could be let down against the wall out of the way. Ordinary tables, sometimes circular in form, were soon made, however, and became common. The better ones were covered with a "board cloth" of flax, which before long came to be known as a table cloth. The linen for the table was at first called board linen. The family linen generally included napkins of lockram, linen and diaper cloth, and sometimes of Holland. Occasionally, they were fringed or embroidered. Towels were generally of tow and sometimes ornamented by handwork.

Tapestry coverings were rarely found, but cushions were common. A great cushion wrought with worsted is early mentioned. Cupboard cloths and cupboard cushions are early and frequently mentioned. In the inventory of the estate of William Clarke of Salem, in 1647, are named a sempiternum (everlasting or perpetual "cubbard cloth" with silk fringe, and two "cubbard cushions," one of damask and the other of needle work.



TRASK CHEST.

Chairs were scarce, and stools and plank seats, called forms, served for seats until better means could be provided. Settles soon came into use. Looking glasses were rare indeed.

Trunks were common, and there was one piece of furniture, the chest, which was brought to America by each family, serving as a receptacle for small belongings on the ship. These chests continued to be very useful in the houses in the new land. Some were beautifully wainscotted and made of English black oak, but most of them were plain. After three centuries, some of these ancient chests are in use and treasured in the homes of descendants of the first settlers. Two of these which are extant to-day were without doubt brought over by Capt. William Trask who came with Endecott in 1628. One of them remained on the old homestead, in Salem, until 1870, when it was taken to Boston, where it is now in the possession of the Museum of Fine Arts.

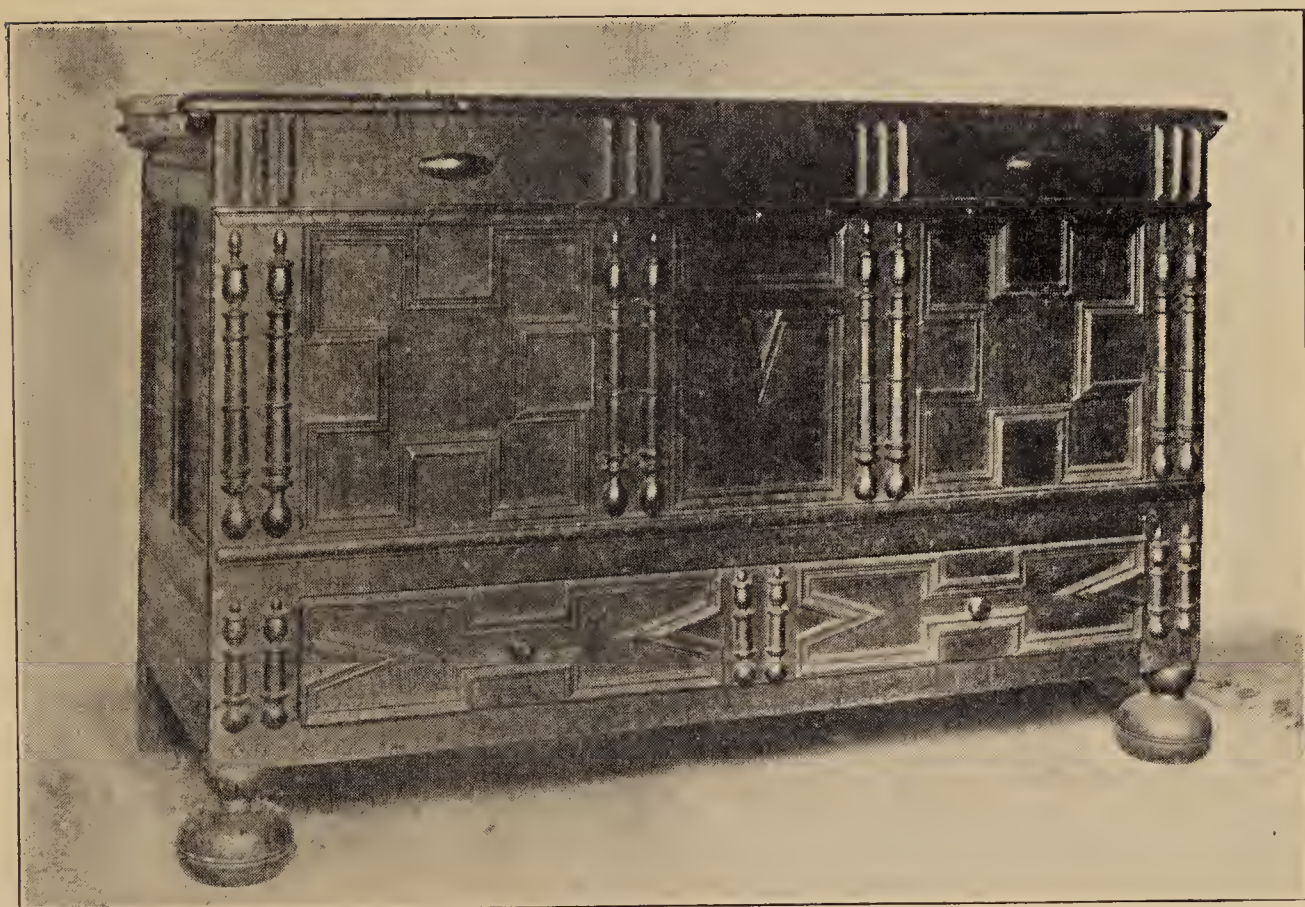






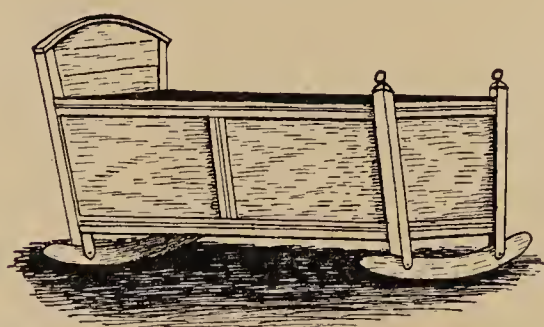
PUTNAM SIDEBOARD.





OSBORN CHEST.

The other remains in the neighborhood in which Captain Trask lived, and is in the possession of Lyman P. Osborn of Peabody. The ancient sideboard which is said to have been brought to Salem from England by John Putnam about 1638, descended to Mrs. Harriet Fowler of Danvers, and from her to her daughter Harriet Putnam Fowler who gave it to the Essex Institute, at Salem, which has possessed it for more than a score of years. The ancient



MASSEY CRADLE.

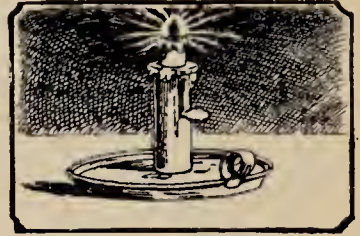
cradle used in the family of Jeffrey Massey in Salem is now in the possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Boston, having been given to it in 1799 by the Massey family. It measures three feet in length and one foot in width at the bottom, and is made of oak. It is now in a dilapidated condition.

In the fireplace, a fire of logs, laid upon stones, until andirons or iron firedogs were brought over, warmed the room and cooked the food. Sea coal and charcoal, also, were used somewhat. Starting a fire was not always easy. The flint and steel, tinder box and light kindling were all necessary; and often a long and ag-



gravating operation was the cost of the fire. Accompanying the fireplace were tongs, shovel and bellows.

For light, other than that obtained from the hearth fire, the first settlers learned from the Indians to use pine tree splints, made of short sections of pine cloven into thin slices. The pitch in them burned like a torch. Tallow candles were little used, except by the wealthier people, until beef tallow became common. Then, of course, candlesticks also increased in number; these were frequently made of brass. There were here very early, too, pewter and brass lamps, in which grease was probably burned. The



CANDLE STICK.



LANTERN.

ancient perforated tin lantern is still sometimes seen.

Suspended upon a spit and turned by hand before the hearth fire, were roasted fish and venison and other meats. The jack, a mechanical contrivance for constant turning of the meat, was occasionally found in Salem. The coarse bread was baked upon some flat surface as of a piece of plank, slanted toward the fire. Some of the immigrants brought great and small pots and kettles of iron, copper or brass with them; and suspending them over the fire in the fireplace, on pot hangers or hooks, boiled therein their meat, fish, lobsters, oysters, clams, green and dry corn, beans and peas, turnips, parsnips, carrots and pumpkins, or made their hasty pudding or other mush, pea or bean porridge, soup or broth from salt beef and pork mixed with corn meal, or brewed beer for a beverage, when they desired something stronger than water.

Baking was done in an oven of stone, later of brick, built into the house beside the fireplace. Sometimes, probably at the very first, the oven was made of stone in the ground near the house. In either case, a fire was built in the oven, and when the stones were sufficiently heated, the remains of the fire were removed, and the prepared food placed therein, to remain for some twenty hours, until it had become thoroughly cooked. This slow process gave a flavor to the food which is unequalled by any other method of cooking, ancient or modern. In this manner the Indian pudding, or English plum pudding, and brown bread, pandowdy and beans were baked. When the oven was built by the side of the chimney and was large, the earthen pots were carried to or drawn from their place in the oven by a long-handled flat iron shovel called a peel. It was so thin and flat that it could be quickly pushed under the pots, or jerked away without disturbing their equilibrium.

In one of the early families in Salem was a great pewter pot; in another, a chafing dish; in another, a jug pot; and in another,

a double saltcellar. Earthen pots and pans and other earthenware were early made here; and China dishes soon reached the houses of the settlers. The kneading trough was an important utensil, and so were the mortar and pestle, which were sometimes of brass. Bowls, mugs and wooden, iron and silver spoons and the child's porringer, for use in eating soups, broths, oatmeal and other kinds



PEWTER PORRINGER.

of porridge, were common. The pewter porringer and its cover shown herewith, reduced to one-fourth its size, is in the possession of the Essex Institute, at Salem. It is said to have belonged to Henry Herrick, the immigrant, who came in 1629. Saucers were rare. There were pewter plates and platters. Upon wooden plates or trenchers, solid food was cut with a knife. There were no forks. Wooden plates were easily made from a pine log cut into sections ten or twelve inches long, and split into slices about an inch thick. These were left square, generally, though they were sometimes rounded, and frequently were slightly hollowed. Other dishes and platters were sometimes made similarly. The frying pan, brass pan, baking iron, brass or iron skillet, gridiron, dripping pan, skimmer and sieve were in most of the kitchens; and the cooper soon furnished tubs, pails, buckets, kegs, barrels, rundlets and hogsheads. Flagons and silver beakers were in the possession of the wealthier families. Drinking horns were used in the house of Rev. Mr. Skelton, and probably they were not uncommon.

Within the house, the wife did what she could with the means at hand to properly prepare and conduct her household; and, without, the husband gave his attention to other things. A shelter had to be secured for the domestic animals, as cows, oxen, horses, sheep, swine, goats and hens, which he had brought with him or



had obtained after his arrival.<sup>1</sup> The house, barn and other shelter had to be as strong as possible for protection from the bear, wolf and fox. Some of the planters called their cows by pet names, which indicates the individual interest shown in them; John Balch had two cows which he called Reddie and Cherrie.

If a good spring were conveniently near, water for culinary and other household purposes and for the cattle could be obtained from that source most easily; but, unless houses were located near such a supply, wells had to be dug. From wells, water was drawn by a bucket attached to a pole or chain.

Each settler made a clearing in which to erect a house and other buildings and to plant his seed. The mattock and spade were the principal implements for preparation of the ground after the trees had been felled and burned. The wooden plow and harrow were soon made and used, however. Fences had to be built around buildings, and sometimes a garden.

Other tools of the settler consisted of broad and narrow hoes, broad and felling axes, hatchets, thwart, hand and whip saws, stone and ordinary hammers, planes, shovels, reaping hooks, scythes, rakes, pickaxes, augers, spoke shaves, chisels, wrenches, piercers, drills, punches, files, trowels, frows,<sup>2</sup> hand bills, beetles and wedges.

Associated with the dairy were milk pans, cheese press and churn.

Vehicles were rare. The rivers and bay were the first thoroughfares, and they were traversed by canoe, dugout and boat. On land, people ordinarily traveled on horseback, mother and child sometimes riding upon a pillion behind the father, who was in the saddle. Two-wheeled carts were the first wheel vehicles for both traveling and field work. The tip-cart, or tumbrill, which it was originally called, and hand carts were the first vehicles used on the farm. In winter, when the snow lay upon the ground, sleds were used for traveling and for hauling loads. These were large and clumsy, but good to pave the snow and make smooth roads.

To a limited extent clothing had been brought with the immigrants, but soon new articles were needed. These supplies were

<sup>1</sup>In the winter of 1628-9, the Company made an agreement with the Plymouth people that the latter would furnish the settlers at Naumkeag six sows with pig.

The Company sent over in the ships, in 1629, forty-two goats, which they had bought; and, at the same time, the Company and Mr. Cradock shipped a number of horses, mares, cows and bulls.

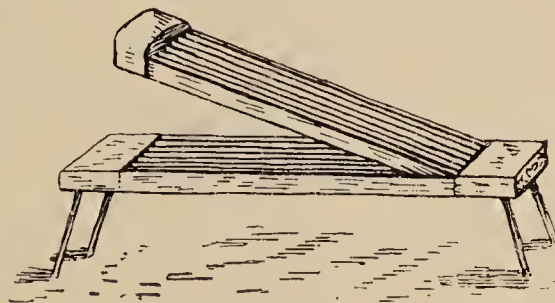
<sup>2</sup>A frow was a cleaving tool having a wedge-shaped blade, with a short handle set at right angles to the length of the blade, and used in splitting laths and staves for casks and pails. It was driven by a mallet.

slow in coming and patched clothes became common. An argument that afforded some consolation in the winter time found expression in this line:—

Patched clothes are warmer than single whole clothing.

The attire worn every day by both sexes was plain and simple, but at other times was remarkably bright and attractive. The people liked pretty things, and, although they made their own clothing of the few and unsatisfactory materials they could obtain, they used various dyes to make it showy. From the Indians they learned of roots and berries that would produce holiday colors, and Governor Endecott introduced the troublesome woodwax for a similar purpose. There was also the indigo plant. Ornaments and jewelry were not common; and all superfluities were for some years necessarily absent.

The wool for their clothing came from their own sheep. This they spun upon the woolen wheel. Cotton was early obtained, and that was spun upon the cotton wheel. They raised their own flax for their linen. This had to be broken by a flax brake, and the woody stalk cleared from the fibre by a swingle knife and hatchel, through which it was pulled. Then it was carded, that is, combed. This produced tow, which had to be spun upon the spinning wheel. The loom, for weaving, was not very common in the earlier days. It was very large and required much room, and was made at considerable expense and good workmanship. Weaving also required more skill than spinning.



FLAX BRAKE.

The man wore a loose-fitting coat, called a doublet, which reached a little below the hips, and was so called because it lay in folds over the larger part of the body of the person. Beneath the doublet was worn a long full waistcoat. Trousers were large and extended to just below the knee, and held by cords or garters. About the neck a broad white collar, called a falling band, was worn. It was sometimes prepared with wire and stiffened with starch that it might stand out horizontally; and was usually held by a cord and tassel at the neck. A great cloak added warmth in winter. The hat had a narrow brim and a conical crown.

A proper outfit for a man as an emigrant to New England consisted of three suits, one of a sort of canvas, one of frieze, and the other of cloth, three shirts, a waistcoat, three pairs of stock-



ings, four pairs of shoes, three falling bands and a Monmouth cap.<sup>1</sup> Some of the clothing was of cloth and some of leather.

A large amount of clothing was provided by the Company for the men who were sent to Naumkeag. There were four hundred shirts, four hundred pairs of shoes,<sup>2</sup> three hundred pairs of stockings, two hundred of which were of Irish make and one hundred knit, ten dozen Norwich garters, one hundred suits of doublets and hose<sup>3</sup> of leather, lined with oiled skin leather, the hose and doublets made with hooks and eyes, one hundred suits of Nordhausen or Hampshire kersey, the hose lined with skins and the doublets with linen, and other suits of Guildford or Gedleyman kersey, four hundred plain bands, one hundred of which were falling bands, one hundred green cotton waistcoats, bound with red tape, one hundred leather girdles,<sup>4</sup> one hundred mandilions,<sup>5</sup> lined with white cotton, one hundred leather suits of doublets and breeches of oiled leather, one hundred pairs of breeches of leather to wear with either of the other suits, one hundred Monmouth caps, five hundred red knit milled<sup>6</sup> caps, one hundred black hats, lined in front with leather, two hundred dozen hooks and eyes and small hooks and eyes for mandilions, sixteen dozen gloves, twelve of calfskin, two of sheep and two of kid. There were also sent linen for handkerchiefs, a bale of French cloth and linen and woolen cloth.

Materials for clothing and other supplies here in the earliest days were English jean, red perpetuance, lawn, say, kersey of various colors, coarse Holland, lockram, linsey-woolsey, cotton cloth, broadcloth, trucking cloth, buckram, striped calico, Norwich serge, Dutch serge, stuff, white flannel, baize, cambric and fustian.

The dress of the women was in general much the same as it has been ever since that time. The earliest gowns here were blue, cheny, black grogram, sad colored kersey, mixed color cloth, russet cloth and purple cloth and lined with green say. Under the skirt was worn a stuff or green kersey petticoat, although sometimes blue, red or purple in color; and one is mentioned as having three laces about it. Another petticoat is described as a

<sup>1</sup>Monmouths caps were so called from the place where they were made, and were worth about five times as much as those that were knit.

<sup>2</sup>These were made of cow-hide, seamed and with inner and outer soles. They were made by John Hewson, John Wise, Mr. Dunbridge and Robert Hanet, shoemakers, in London, by the Company's order.

<sup>3</sup>Coverings for the legs.

<sup>4</sup>Girdles were worn to hold the doublets close to the body, probably at first.

<sup>5</sup>These were short loose wraps, resembling long capes. The name was derived from the Italian outside loose garment.

<sup>6</sup>Milled caps were knit from double-twisted yarn, and were, of course, thicker and warmer than those knit from a single thread.

stamill kersey mitred about the skirt with velvet. Over the waist was worn a waistcoat, made of serge, cotton, cotton shag or Holland; white, red, black or purple, in color; and sometimes trimmed with lace. Aprons were common, being white, blue, green, russet or tawny in color, and made of shag, calico, say, linsey-woolsey and Holland and fleecy Holland. They were sometimes trimmed with lace.

Cloaks and girdles were worn, some of the latter being made of silk and embroidered. There were whalebone bodices, stockings knit or made of cloth, boots sometimes russet in color, stomachers of white stuff and occasionally wrought, neck cloths and handkerchiefs bordered with lace and mittens or gloves of cotton or white knit thread. A headdress, called a coif, was worn, being cutworked or bordered with lace, white or black in color and made of grogram, stuff or Holland. Caps or hoods were also known as coifs, and were made of kersey, sometimes red in color.

The supplies of the household were not confined to the meat, fish and vegetables already mentioned. Many of the families had powdered and loaf sugar, and spices, as pepper, ginger, clove, mace, cinnamon and nutmeg. Some of their butter and Holland and other kinds of cheese was imported, and some they made. They brought bacon with them, but afterward cured their own. They dried herring and other fish. Vinegar and Gallipoly, May-orke and salad oil they brought with them. White salt was imported, and also found evaporated from the sea water upon the rocks. Materials for soap, ashes and saltpetre were found in abundance, thus making further importation of soap unnecessary.

Growing in the grass were strawberries, pennyroyal, winter savory, sorrel, brooklime, liverwort, carvel and water cresses. Leeks and onions were common. Various fruits, as mulberries, plums, raspberries, currants, hurtleberries and hawes of white thorn, and nuts, chestnuts, filberts, walnuts and several small varieties were common. Raisins and prunes were imported.

There were excellent vines in the woods, and Captain Endecott planted a vineyard as well as apple and pear trees immediately upon his arrival at Naumkeag. The Company sent over Malaga, Canary and Spanish wines; and other drinks were aquivitaë (brandy) and a drink made of honey and water, fermented with yeast, called metheglen.

The environment was delightful during the summer season, especially, and in the autumn the New England foliage was a happy surprise. In the woods and clearings were abundant sweet plants and flowers, especially sweet damask roses. Undoubtedly roots and seeds of flowering shrubs and flowers from the English gardens were soon planted around the cabins.



The Company sent over plenty of field seeds for planting, so that the settlers had no lack of several kinds of seed when the ground was ready to be planted. There were a hogshead each of wheat, rye, barley, oats, beans and peas. There were also sent stones of peaches, plums, and cherries, pear and apple seeds, filberts, quince kernels and pomegranates, saffron heads, mustard and liquorice seed, madder roots and seed, sweet potatoes, hop roots, flax seed and currant plants. A native hemp was found fit for making cordage and cloth, but the Company also sent over seed of their cultivated hemp for planting.

The seed brought in the several vessels in 1629 arrived rather late for planting, yet much of it came to fruition, growing quickly in the sheltered clearings. Maize was the most important crop for the sustenance of the people. The old planters and the Indians had plenty of it for seed, and also seeds of pumpkins, peas, beans and other vegetables. Seeds of fruit trees were planted, and orchards of apple, pear, plum and peach were soon growing. Those were busy days. The people had no intention of making the settlement a camp simply,—their whole attitude was that of builders of a permanent abode for themselves and their posterity.

Several kinds of business were being carried on among these husbandmen. Trade was transacted with the Indians for furs of beaver, otter and other animals. Shipbuilding was one of the very first enterprises, because of its necessity. Vessels furnished not only the means of communication between the continents, but along the coast, in the bays and on the rivers. Boats and canoes were the vehicles prior to the existence of roads, and were easily propelled. In April, 1629, the Company sent to Salem six shipwrights, Robert Moulton being the head one. Pitch, tar, resin, oakum, cordage and sailcloth were sent over in the summer of 1629, in charge of George Farr.

Most of the settlers had their own nets or seines, hooks and lines for their private use, but fishing was also carried on as a business. In the summer of 1629, Governor Endecott was requested to secure shallops for the use of the six fishermen who were sent over from Dorchester and three others who were to be sent later and some of the ship's company, to salt the fish, pack it in hogsheads or otherwise and send it to England in the ships *Lion's Whelp* and *Talbot*, in each of which had been sent over five weigh of salt. There had also arrived in the ship *Mayflower* eleven weigh of salt, *Four Sisters*, fifteen, and *Pilgrim*, three, with seines, lines, hooks, knives, boots and barrels, necessary for fishing in the harbor or upon the banks.

Coopers were busy from the first, and wheelwrights prepared for the simplest uses of wheels and carts. Shoemaker Thomas

Beard brought some hides in the Mayflower for both soles and uppers, which he made into boots and shoes.

Men skilful in making pitch and salt and vine planters were also secured and sent to Naumkeag. Able men for these duties were always sought. The business of making salt was reserved for the benefit of the general stock, although each planter of the Company was to have as much as he had occasion to use, as cheaply as he himself could make it, and if the Company had not enough to supply the demand of the colonists the latter were given liberty to make salt at their own expense, for their own use, but not to transport or sell it.<sup>1</sup>

All were to labor, that they might be aided by so doing in living uprightly as well as for material benefits. Each one had to apply himself to some calling, and no idle drone was permitted to live among them. A daily register was kept in each family of what was done by each person in it.

The reason of the objection to the playing of cards, and the use of dice, apparently was to economise time as well as to improve morals. The playing of games of chance possessed certain fascinations which other games lacked, and so drew the attention of the people away from their occupations and unfitted them for steady employment. The court of assistants, March 22, 1630-1, ordered that all persons whatsoever that have cards, dice or tables in their houses should make away with them before the next court, under pain of punishment.

One purpose of the early laws was to prevent idleness by compelling workmen to labor in order to earn enough to support themselves and their families. The theory was that idleness was an occasion of excess and mischief, and occupation was useful in many ways, direct and indirect. In the general letters to Governor Endecott, the Company in England directed the constant employment of the planters and their families. Oct. 1, 1633, the general court ordered that no householder or other person should spend his time idly nor unprofitably, and the constables were to be specially careful and diligent to learn of offenders in this thing, "espetially of comon coasters, vnpfittable fowlers, & tobacco takers," and present them to the court.

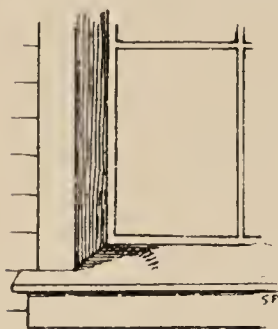
Swearing and drunkenness were prohibited and punished. At this time the following named crimes were punished capitally: idolatry, witchcraft, blasphemy, murder, bestiality, sodomy, adultery, rape, man-stealing, false-witness, conspiracy or rebellion against the government cursing or smiting father or mother after passing sixteen years of age, unless with justifying provocation or

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, March 2, 1628-9.



unchristian neglect in education, and filial rebellion after sixteen years of age.

The only means of telling time was by the sun's shadow, sometimes by the upright, inclined or horizontal stick and the dial, but more often by the notched window sill, and the calendar of the month and year was made by marking the shortening or lengthen-



HOURL MARKS.

ing shadows on the floor through the seasons. Governor Endecott had a sun dial, which was made for him, and is now in the museum of the Essex Institute. It is made of brass and octagonal in form. It is inscribed: "William Bowyer



SUN DIAL.

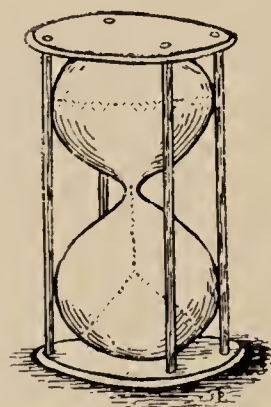
of London, Clockmaker, fecit, I. 1630. E." On one side of the gnomon is "Latitude 42," and on the other "Salem." Nighttime had no measure except the hourglass.

Sunday was observed religiously. All labor ceased at three o'clock on Saturday afternoon, and the rest of the day was spent in catechising and preparation for the Sabbath, as the ministers directed. Family worship was held morning and evening.



SAMPLER.

Life must have been lacking in many ways mentally. In some houses there was a book or two on some religious subject, but in many of them there was hardly a page of reading matter, and pictures were almost unknown. The little instruction the children had, if any, was received from their parents, and consisted of reading and writing the simplest words and learning enough of numbers to enable them to meet the ordinary problems of everyday life.



HOURLASS.

There were no school books. Playthings, games and other amusements for children were practically unknown. There was no time for fancy work by the wives and daughters of the immigrants. The fine sampler, now in the Essex Institute, wrought by Anna Gower, Governor Endecott's first wife, and shown above, was probably made in England.

Musical instruments were not found among the early settlers and the singing of Psalms was the only music heard.

Social life was confined to meeting together at the religious services. The people were too few, too busy and too far apart to indulge in formal society. Funerals were almost fete days, and largely attended, not only out of respect for the deceased and sympathy for the bereaved, but because of the social privileges.



## CHAPTER XIX.

### ESTABLISHMENT OF THE COURT.



AND was plentiful, and the great trees and good soil were desirable. Much of it was sought, and much was granted.

Jan. 4, 1635-6, the town granted to Lt. Francis Johnson a farm of two hundred acres on the north side of the river of Brooksby,<sup>1</sup> on condition that he maintain highways, and allow the rivers to be free. This was laid out by Roger Conant and John Balch Jan. 25, 1635-6. It was bounded by land of Mr. Thorndike on the north and the common land on the south, and was more than two miles from the town of Salem. This grant was relinquished by Mr. Johnson May 2d following. At the same time Mr. Thorndike relinquished his farm on the north side of Mr. Johnson's.<sup>2</sup>

Jan. 11, 1635-6, the freemen of Salem granted to Townsend Bishop a farm of three hundred acres, of which the town was to have the refusal, if the grantee desired to dispose of it. It bounded "vpon m<sup>r</sup> Endicotts farme on the east, and fowre hundreth pooles in length, and six score poles in breath, that is to say six score and fowre at the west end and one hundreth and sixteene at the East end, bounded by the water, betweene the fearme of the executors of m<sup>r</sup> Skelton, and him at the North East corner of his farme, And hath there allowed, from m<sup>r</sup> Endicotts farme, eight acres for an high way, is bounded again at the South west Corner by the brooke." See plan of this grant on page 289.

On the same day the freemen of Salem granted to Thomas Scruggs a farm of three hundred acres, of which "thirty acres are fitt to be mowed, . . . being in the outmost bounds of Salem towards m<sup>r</sup> Humphries and is from the Sea where the freshe water runs out, West and by North is the fearme next to m<sup>r</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Brooksby was a part of what is now South Peabody.

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records.

Humphries bounded by the Comon by the North west end & East end." This tract of land lies between Legg's Hill and the ocean, at Clifton, next the Swampscott line.

During this winter (1635-6), the establishment of a college was discussed, and by tradition it is stated that Mr. Scruggs contemplated offering and did actually tender this tract of land for the site of the college building or buildings and campus. However, Governor Winthrop and others of Boston were opposed to this site; finally Mr. Scruggs relinquished the grant to the town and received in its stead two hundred acres of land beyond Bass River which had been granted to Captain Trask, and been



HUMPHREY AND PETER GRANTS.

later renounced by him. This change was made at this particular time because John Humphrey desired to have a tract of land in the neighborhood near his Swampscott farm, and this was done as Mr. Scruggs wished to favor him. This transaction occurred at a town meeting, May 2, 1636, when it was proposed to make a division of Marblehead neck, as the present territory of Marblehead was then called. "A motion was brought in by Cp. Endicot in behalfe of m<sup>r</sup> John Humphries for some land beyond fforest River, moved by spetiall arguments one whereof was, Least yt should hinder the building of a Colledge, w<sup>ch</sup> would be manie mens losse." Thomas Scruggs, Roger Conant, John Woodbury, Capt. William Trask, Townsend Bishop and Peter Palfrey were appointed a committee to view the land and consider the matter. Nearly five hundred acres were subsequently granted to Mr. Humphrey by the general court, May 6, 1635, as follows: "it is



ordered, that the land betwixte the Clifte & the Forest Ryver, neere Marble Head, shall for the present be improved by John Humfry, Esq, & that as the inhabitants of Marble Head shall stand in neede of it, the said John Humfry shall pte with it, the said inhabitants alloweing him equall recompence for his lab & cost bestowed therevpon; provided, that if, in the meane tyme, the inhabitants of Salem can satisfy the Court that they have true right vnto it, that then it shall belong to the inhabitants thereof."

The general court, Oct. 28, 1636, agreed to give four hundred pounds towards a school or college, the next court to appoint the site and consider the kind of building required. The court held Nov. 15, 1637, voted that the college should be located at Newtown, now Cambridge; and five days later, the governor, deputy-governor, treasurer and nine others, including John Humphrey and Hugh Peter, were appointed "to take order" for the college. Because of the benefactions of Rev. John Harvard of Charlestown the general court voted, March 13, 1638-9, to name the new institution Harvard College. The success of this place of learning in its growth and standing among the colleges of the world is unparalleled. To this accomplishment the people of Salem have contributed money, books, philosophical apparatus and professors.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>At a town meeting, Feb. 3, 1644-5, it was "Ordered & Agreed that all such as God stirres vp their hearts to contribute to the aduancemt of learning ffor the maintayninge of poore skollers at the Colledge at Cambridge, that they bringe in to Mr. Price wthin one moneth what they please to giue & to enter their names w<sup>th</sup> Mr ffogge & what they giue or contribute."

Sept. 19, 1657, a tax was levied, among other things, for five pounds and six pence for the college.—*Salem Town Records*.

Dec. 8, 1663, a town tax of six pounds and twelve shillings was levied for the college.—*Salem Town Records*.

In 1669, the people of Salem contributed one hundred and thirty pounds, two shillings and three pence towards the erection of a new college building. The larger contributions were by Rev. John Higginson, who gave fifty pounds, William Brown, forty pounds, and Edmund Batter, twenty pounds.

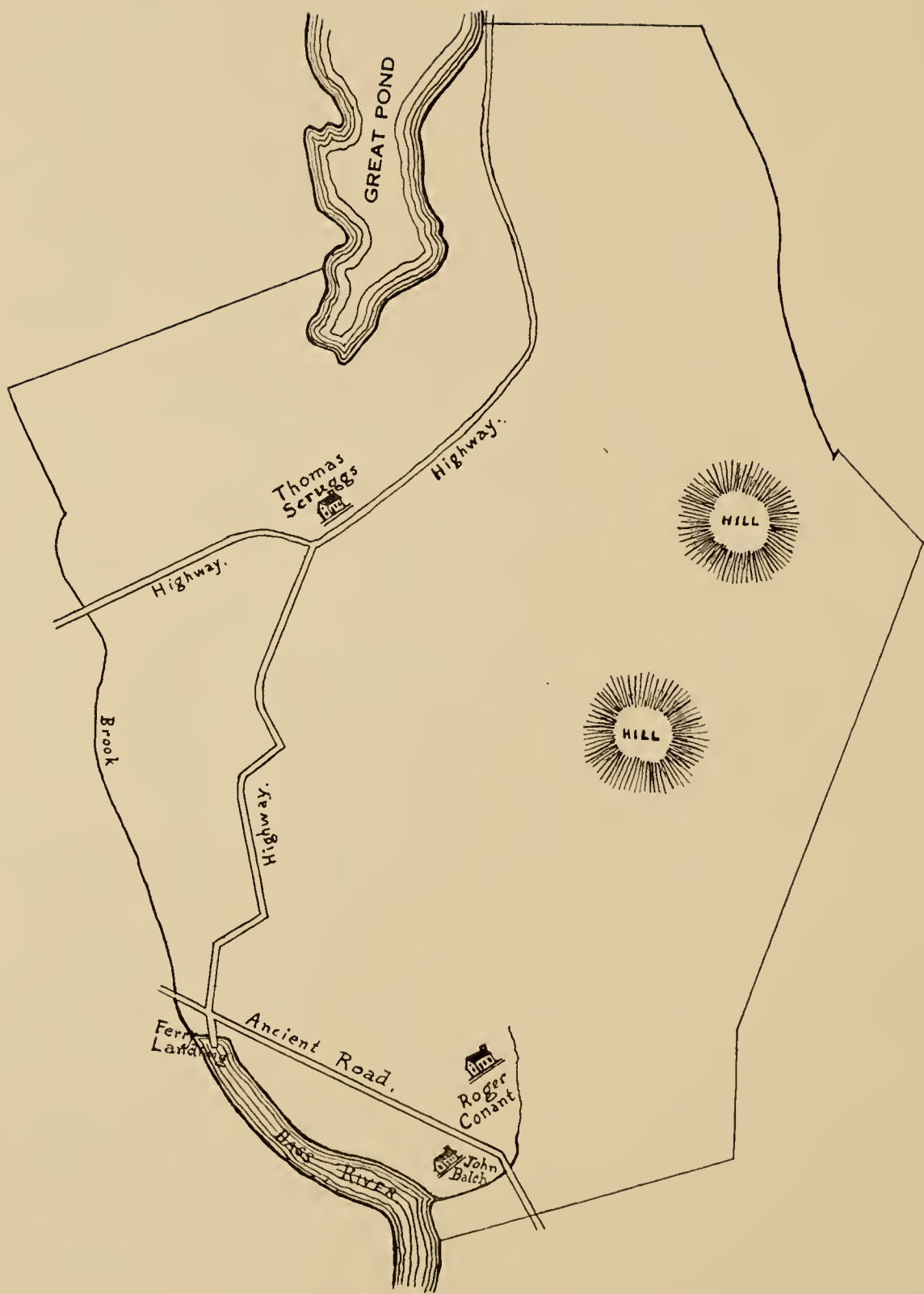
The Browne family of Salem have been the largest benefactors who have lived in Salem. Rev. Joseph Browne, who died in Charlestown May 9, 1678, was a graduate and fellow of the college, and in his will bequeathed one hundred pounds in money and fifty pounds in books for the library.—*History of Harvard College, by Josiah Quincy*.

Rev. Joseph Browne's father, Hon. William Browne of Salem, who died Jan. 20, 1687-8, added to the hundred pounds he is said to have given to the college, during his lifetime, by bequeathing in his will one hundred pounds for the bringing up of poor scholars.—*Suffolk Probate Records*.

Capt. Benjamin Browne, son of Hon. William Browne, who also lived in Salem, where he was a merchant, and where he died Dec. 7, 1708, bequeathed to the college two hundred pounds "towards ye bringing up of some poor scholars in a special manner such as may belong to Salem."—*Essex Probate Records*.







PLAN OF OLD PLANTERS FARMS.

Jan. 25, 1635-6, a lot of two or three acres, "a fearme of ground," granted to Henry Herrick, was laid out on the north side of Jeffrey Massey's Cove," bounded by the Rock on one side & Woolistons River on the other," on the same day the town granted to Capt. William Trask, John Woodbury, Roger Conant, Peter Palfrey and John Balch, five of the old planters, one thousand acres of land together, at the head of Bass River, and now in Beverly, the tract being one hundred and twenty-four rods

Maj. William Browne of Salem, another son of Hon. William Browne, died Feb. 14, 1715-6, having in his will bequeathed to the college one hundred pounds "to help support my grandchildren or their posterity while students there, if not any such then any other poor Salem scholars that may live at college."—*Essex Probate Records*.

Col. Samuel Browne of Salem, son of the last-named, Maj. William Browne, died in 1731; and in his will bequeathed to the college sixty pounds to be applied to the purchase of plate for the college, the plate to bear upon it the testator's coat-of-arms; also, the testator's two hundred acres of land and houses in Hopkinton for the bringing up some poor scholars.—*Essex Probate Records*.

The destruction of Harvard hall, by fire, in 1764 caused the loss of the library it contained, and the people of Salem contributed liberally in books and philosophical apparatus to repair the loss as far as possible. Benjamin Goodhue gave sixteen pounds and sixteen shillings; William Browne, Hon. Benjamin Lynde, Timothy Orne and Hon. Benjamin Pickman, ten pounds and ten shillings each; Samuel Gardner and Edward Kitchen, six pounds each; John Barton, four pounds, fourteen shillings and six pence; Joseph Blaney, four pounds and ten shillings; Ebenezer Putnam, four pounds and four shillings; John Higginson, three pounds and twelve shillings; Joseph Bowditch, Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke, Benjamin Pickman, jr., William Pyncheon and Nathaniel Ropes, three pounds and three shillings each; Richard Derby, jr., two pounds, eleven shillings and three pence; Jacob Ashton, Samuel Curwen and George Dodge, one pound and sixteen shillings each; and John Appleton and Thomas Poynton, one pound and one shilling each. Edward Kitchen, in his will, bequeathed to the college in 1766 one hundred and thirty-three pounds and six shillings. Doctor Holyoke also donated, in 1769, a telescope, twenty-eight feet in length.

Toward the establishment of the Massachusetts Professorship of Natural History, early in 1805, a goodly number of Salem men contributed. William Gray, jr., gave four hundred dollars; Benjamin Pickman, jr., three hundred and fifty dollars; Elias Haskett Derby, Joseph Peabody and Nathaniel West, three hundred dollars each; John Derby, two hundred and fifty dollars; Ezekiel Hersey Derby, Simon Forrester and Joseph White, two hundred dollars each; Edward Holyoke and Jerathmael Peirce, one hundred and fifty dollars each; and Jacob Crowninshield, Jonathan Gardner, Samuel Gerrish, Benjamin Hodges, Ichabod Nichols, William Orne and William Prescott, one hundred dollars each. Rev. John Prince gave books to the value of one hundred dollars.

In 1816, life subscriptions to the support of the Theological School were established. Clergymen could become such life members by the payment of two dollars, but from other persons a payment of one hundred dollars was required. Benjamin W. Crowninshield, George Crowninshield, John Derby, Humphrey Devereaux, Pickering Dodge, Samuel Endecott, Charles Forrester, Charles H. Orne, Joseph Orne, Samuel Orne, Joseph Peabody, Ben-



in width at the head of the river, and running "northerly to the River by the great pond side." It was laid out and surveyed by John Woodbury and John Balch. This gave each of the grantees a farm of two hundred acres. Mr. Trask relinquished his share; and, May 2, 1636, it was granted to Thomas Scruggs. This tract of land was apparently divided, from time to time, among the several owners.

Mr. Scruggs erected his house on the northerly side of Dodge Street, just easterly of its junction with Conant Street. He was living at this place in 1640; and died in the spring of 1654. His widow released his homestead to her son-in-law John Raymond June 24, 1654; and the latter's son John lived here in 1683. The father conveyed the house and land to John Jan. 12, 1696;<sup>1</sup> and the latter sold the estate to his brother Thomas of Salem Village. Thomas Raymond conveyed it to his brother Jonathan of Beverly Dec. 29, 1704;<sup>2</sup> and the latter conveyed it to Isaac Hull of Wenham Jan. 15, 1705-6.<sup>3</sup> Mr. Hull lived here, and died the next spring, having devised it to his daughter Sarah, who apparently removed the house in 1715.

Mr. Conant built a house on this lot in which he lived until his death, Nov. 19, 1679, although he conveyed the estate to his son Lot Nov. 20, 1666.<sup>4</sup> Lot Conant removed to Ipswich, and died May 14, 1715, having devised the ancient homestead to his son Jonathan. Jonathan Conant died June 18, 1749, and the next owner and occupant was his son Jonathan, who lived here until 1783, when he removed, but retained possession of the farm until June 24, 1789,<sup>5</sup> when he conveyed it to John Trow of Beverly.

jamin Pickman, Dudley L. Pickman, Stephen Phillips, Nathaniel Silsbee, Joseph Story, Gideon Tucker and Mrs. Eliza Wetmore were among the benefactors. Rev. John Prince of Salem was among the annual subscribers, who paid five dollars for the benefit of the Theological School.

Upon the new foundation of the Society for the promotion of Theological Education in the College, in 1826, about nineteen thousand dollars was raised by subscription. One ninth of this sum was donated by Salem people. Joseph Peabody gave five hundred dollars; Benjamin W. Crowninshield and Benjamin Pickman, three hundred dollars each; Joseph White, two hundred and fifty dollars; Pickering Dodge, two hundred dollars; Dudley L. Pickman, one hundred and fifty dollars; Humphrey Devereaux and Daniel A. White, one hundred dollars each; and John H. Andrews, Gideon Barstow, William Pickman and Stephen White, fifty dollars each.—*History of Harvard College*, by J. Quincy.

In 1922, Mrs. Aroline C. Gove of Salem established a scholarship of six thousand dollars in memory of her late husband, Hon. William Henry Gove.

<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 23, leaf 216.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 43, leaf 308.

<sup>3</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 39, leaf 175.

<sup>4</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 3, leaf 28.

<sup>5</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 150, leaf 275.

Mr. Trow apparently soon afterward sold it to Simeon Brown, who took the old house down.

Mr. Balch built a house upon this tract of land twenty-three feet long, sixteen feet wide and nine feet post, facing the south-east. The roof was steep, and probably thatched. The frame was of white oak; and the chimney was probably made of stone on the outside of the house at the northeasterly end. The first change in it was made about 1645, when the posts were lengthened about four feet and new rafters were placed above the original ones, to make two stories. The attic shows these two sets of rafters, one placed upon the other, but in the chamber the lower ends of the front original intermediate rafters were cut away in order to make the chamber clear of them, the lower ends of the back intermediate rafters were not disturbed and are to be seen in the closet in the chamber. Several subsequent additions to the structure (about 1760 and 1800) finally made it very large. The underpinning of the ancient house is of small stones laid in clay; there never was a cellar under the original part. This is the only house of an old planter in Salem in existence, and is probably the oldest house in New England. It is of great interest, and furnishes an attractive study. Mr. Balch died in June, 1648, having devised "the Roome newly built" to his wife Agnes and the remainder of the homestead to his son Benjamin. Benjamin Balch conveyed the estate to his grandson Benjamin Balch, who lived with him, Jan. 4, 1703-4.<sup>1</sup> This grantee lived here; and died Jan. 8, 1749-50, having devised it to his wife Mercy for her life and then to his daughters Mercy Lovett, Mary Woodbury, Martha Trask and Deborah Dodge and his grandson Benjamin Balch Lovett. The estate came into the sole possession of the daughter Deborah, who died, leaving it to her son Cornelius Dodge. Mr. Dodge died April 27, 1837, at the age of ninety-four; and the title descended to his son Azor Dodge, who, in December, 1869, conveyed it to his son Joshua F. Dodge and the latter's wife, Mary Alice for their lives,<sup>2</sup> with remainder to their children Addie F. and Martha.<sup>3</sup> Martha died Jan. 14, 1880, and Addie married Charles H. Herrick. Martha's half interest in the remainder was inherited by her mother, who released it to her daughter Addie April 30, 1913. June 8, 1916, Mrs. Herrick transferred the title to Joseph Balch of Westwood, John Balch of Milton, Franklin G. Balch, Francis Balch and William Sumner Appleton, all of Boston, and Franklin Balch of Topsfield, as trustees, for the preservation of the ancient house.

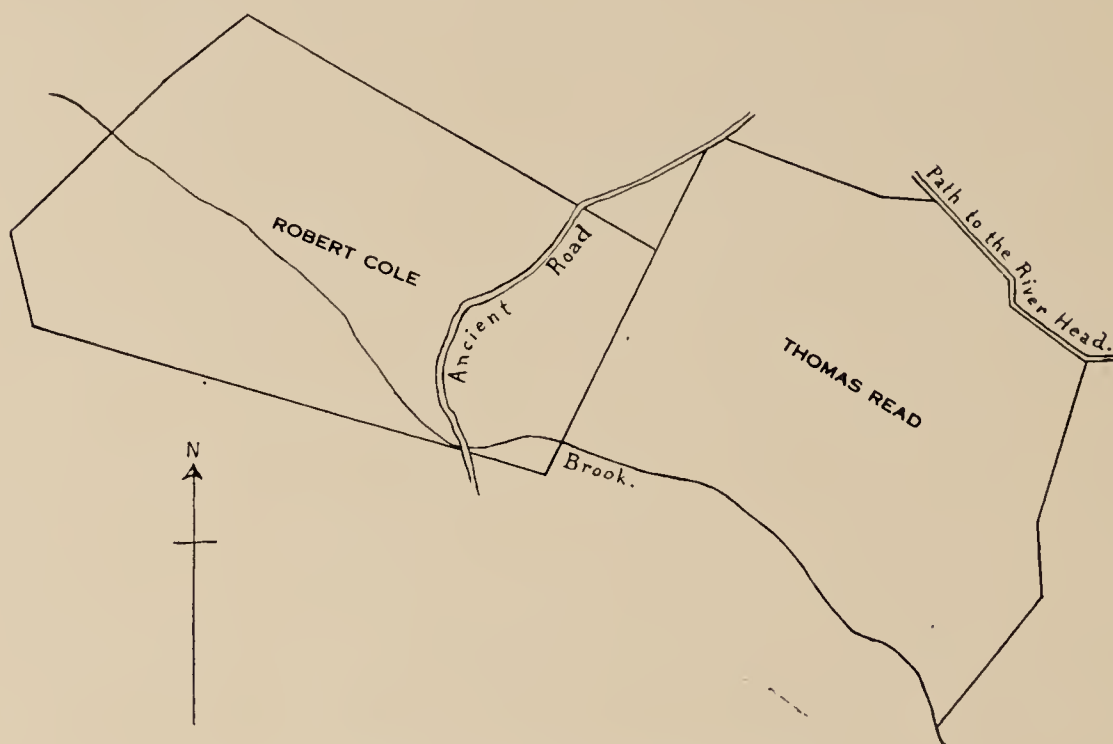
<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 19, leaf 209.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 787, leaf 144.

<sup>3</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 787, leaf 145.



Feb. 8, 1635-6, the town voted that Richard Bennett<sup>1</sup> might have a two-acre lot; and Richard Hollingworth half an acre "in the place he desires, but must take soe much from his 2 acre or howse lott else where."



COLE AND READ GRANTS.

Eight days later, the town granted to Thomas Read a farm of three hundred acres lying north-northwest from Salem, and to John Blackleach a farm of three hundred acres at Long marsh, now known as West Beach, in Beverly, extending easterly into what is now Manchester and northerly to the present boundary line of Beverly adjoining Wenham. This latter grant constitutes nearly the whole of Beverly Farms.

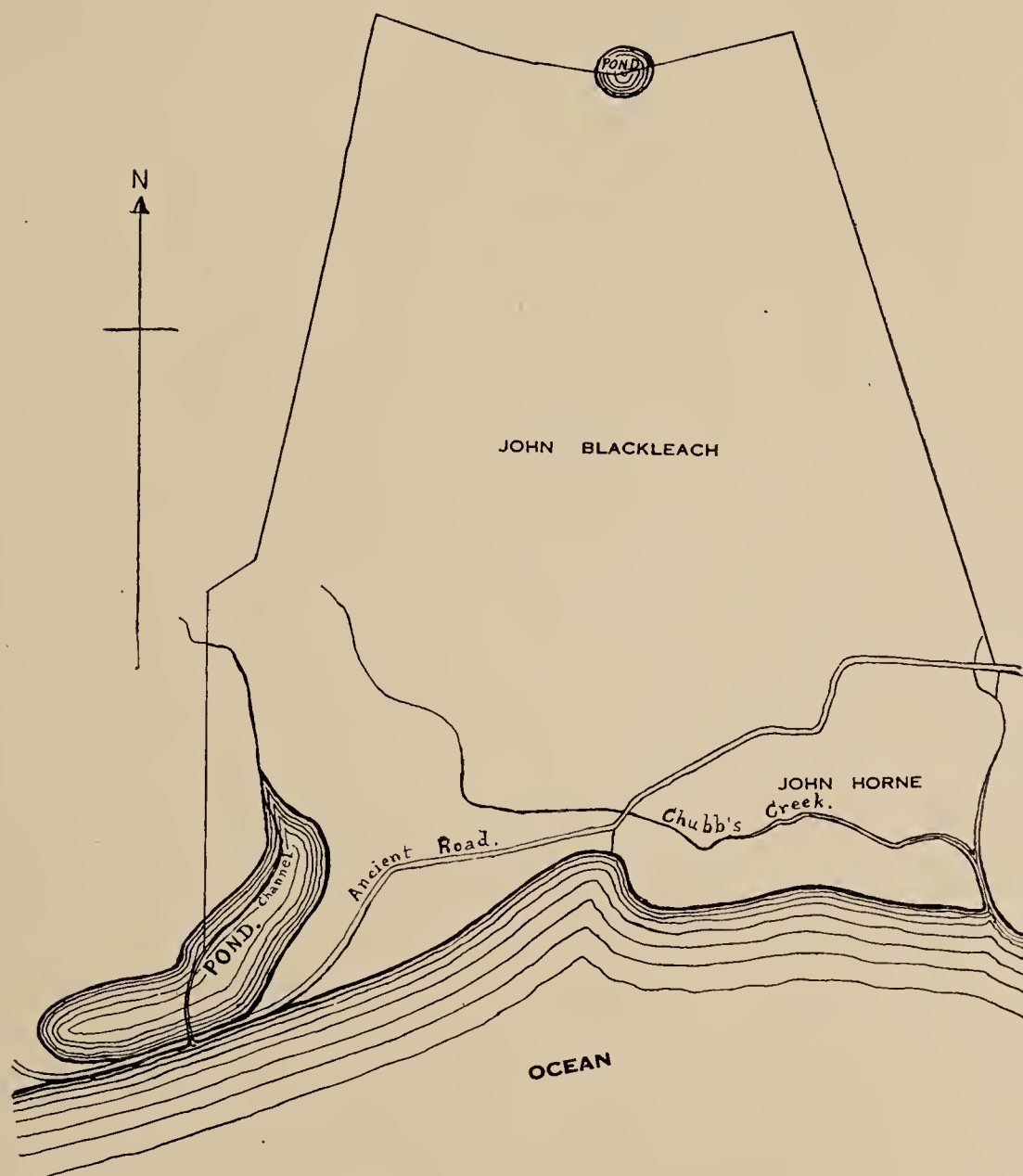
On the twenty-second of the month, "Richard Bishop<sup>2</sup> hauing planted his earable pte of his ten acre lot, Its ordered that soe much as he leaues of his said lott to the townes vse for fire

*Richard Bishop*

<sup>1</sup>Richard Bennett probably removed to Boston soon afterward.

<sup>2</sup>Richard Bishop was a husbandman; lived in Salem; married, first, before 1635, Dulzebella —, who was born about 1607; she died in Salem Aug. 23 (24), 1658; married, second, Mary Gould, July 22, 1660; she was born about 1611; he died in Salem Dec. 30, 1674; his widow, Mary, married Thomas Robbins; children: 1. Mary, born about 1635; married John Darling (called John Barret or Barbant); 2. Thomas; lived in Manchester; wheelwright; married Lydia —; died Oct. 15, 1694; she was his widow in 1702; had children; 3. Nathaniel; lived in Easthampton, Long Island, N. Y.; was dead in 1686; 4. John; lived in Southampton, Long Island, N. Y.; husbandman; was living in 1686.

wood & elce, soe much more earable ground he may haue for his pp use."<sup>1</sup> It was also agreed that Hugh Laskin may have "about ten pole to the water side, by that place where the old planters do move for."<sup>1</sup>



BLACKLEACH AND HORNE GRANTS.

March 28, 1636, John Peach, fisherman, and Nicholas Merritt<sup>2</sup> were allowed to improve the five acres of ground on Marble Neck, which they had illegally fenced, for immediate building or planting.<sup>1</sup> John Peach lived on Peach's Point, in Marblehead, and Nicholas Merritt at Little Harbor. Merritt Street runs through his homestead. Because the location of grants of land were so indefinite, encroachments often occurred.

<sup>1</sup>Salem Town Records.

<sup>2</sup>Written "Mariott" in the town records.



George Ropes,<sup>1</sup> a servant of Gervas Garford, for striking his master, throwing him down and spurning him with his feet after he was down was ordered by the general court, April 5, 1636, to be severely whipped at that court and again, in convenient time in Salem at a public meeting. John

*George Ropes*

<sup>1</sup>GEORGE ROPES<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; married Mary —; died June —, 1670; she was his widow in 1691; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 5, 1642; died Oct. 14, 1661; 2. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 3, 1644; married John Norman; 3. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 4, 1647; 4. George;<sup>2</sup> killed by the Indians at Bloody Brook Sept. 18, 1675; 5. William,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 26, 1651; 6. Abigail,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 29, 1654; 7. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 15, 1656-7.

JOHN ROPES;<sup>2</sup> housewright; married Lydia Wells Sept. 25, 1669; she was his wife in 1713; he died Jan. 30, 1721-2; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 22, 1669-70; 2. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 26, 1672; married Abraham Gale; 3. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 21, 1675; living in 1714; died unmarried; 4. John,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 13, 1678; 5. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born April 26, 1681; married Richard Bartlett of Newbury Nov. 21, 1706; 6. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 23, 1683-4; 7. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 24, 1686-7; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 23, 1689; married Daniel Webb; 9. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born in 1694. WILLIAM ROPES;<sup>2</sup> shipwright; married Sarah Ingersoll July 26, 1676; died in 1728; she was his widow in 1732; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 4, 1689; mariner; died, unmarried, in 1714, on board Her Majesty's ship-of-war Rumney; 2. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 9, 1683; married Miles Ward; 3. William,<sup>3</sup> born March 5, 1685; probably died before 1725; 4. George,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 12, 1688; probably died before 1725; 5. Richard,<sup>3</sup> born in 1690; 6. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 11, 1692; 7. John,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 4, 1694-5.

BENJAMIN ROPES;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer until 1716, when he bought the Globe tavern, which he subsequently conducted; married Anne Phippen March 10, 1694-5; died Nov. 20, 1717; she married, secondly, John Green; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 11, 1695-6; died March 1, 1695-6; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born May 5, 1699; died Oct. 9, 1703; 3. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 24, 1700-1; 4. David,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 7, 1702-3; died Oct. 14, 1703; 5. David,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 4, 1704; died before 1717; 6. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> born July 15, 1706; 7. George,<sup>4</sup> born May 15, 1709; died July 19, 1710; 8. Ann,<sup>4</sup> born March 5, 1710-1; died before 1717; 9. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 24, 1713; married Joseph Lambert; 10. George,<sup>4</sup> born March 24, 1715-6; removed to Marblehead in 1739; cooper; married Rebecca Diamond Jan. 20, 1743; was living in 1758. JOHN ROPES;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married Dorothy Bartlett of Newbury June 6, 1707; died in 1754; children: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> born July 27, 1709; 2. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 27, 1710; died Jan. 19, 1710-1; Dorothy,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 17, 1711; married Samuel Archer; 4. George,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 20, 1713-4; died young; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born July 25, 1716; married Jacob Ashton of Marblehead Nov. 6, 1743; died Nov. 8, 1812, aged ninety-six; 6. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 26, 1718; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born June 12, 1721; died young. SAMUEL ROPES;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married Lydia Neal Jan. 12, 1709-10; she was his wife in 1719; he died Oct. 12, 1761; children: 1. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 3, 1710; died Jan. 21, 1710-1; 2. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 23, 1711; deranged; died May 13, 1780; 3. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 1, 1714; cordwainer and merchant; married, first, Jane Seymore Sept. 7, 1755; second, Mary Barbara, widow of Samuel Stone, April 3, 1764; died March 9, 1781; no children; 4. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 7, 1717; living, unmarried, in 1762; 5. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 22, 1719; died before 1762, a young man; 6. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born March 22, 1721-2. NATHANIEL ROPES;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer and shopkeeper; married, first, Mary Flint Sept. 15, 1717; she was his wife in 1721; married, second, Abigail Pickman

Endecott was appointed to see that correction be given. The rea-

Oct. 8, 1724; died Oct. 22, 1752; she died in 1775; child: 1. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born May 20, 1726. RICHARD ROPES;<sup>3</sup> married Hannah Collins Nov. 26, 1714; died Dec. 21, 1761; she died Sept. 28, 1772; children: 1. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 8, 1715; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 17, 1716-7; probably married William Campbell Jan. 6, 1744; 3. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 4, 1718-9; died young; 4. *William*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Jan. 15, 1720-1; living in 1725; 5. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 30, 1722; 6. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1724; died young; 7. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 28, 1730-1. JOSEPH ROPES;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married, first, Elizabeth Purchase Oct. 29, 1719; she died in 1751; married, second, Hannah (Felt), widow of Edward Britton, Nov. 25, 1751; she died between 1762 and 1784; he died Oct. 3, 1765; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 8, 1721; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> born July 14, 1723; married Benjamin Felt; 3. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> born June 15, 1725; probably died before 1762; 4. *George*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 17, 1727; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born March 1, 1729-30; died young; 6. ———<sup>4</sup> (son), born Jan. 16, 1730-1; died Jan. 16, 1730-1; 7. *Abraham*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 27, 1731-2; probably died between 1750 and 1762; 8. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born May 6, 1734; probably died before 1762; 9. *David*,<sup>4</sup> born July 8, 1735; 10. *Daniel*,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 19, 1737. JOHN ROPES;<sup>3</sup> shipwright; married Mary Dean Dec. 13, 1723; she was his wife in 1746; he died Jan. 26, 1792, aged ninety-eight; children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 8, 1725; 2. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 21, 1728; married James Barr; 3. *William*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 1, 1729-30; probably died young, as his name does not again appear.

BENJAMIN ROPES;<sup>4</sup> mariner and innholder; married Hannah Moses Nov. 29, 1722; died Sept. 26, 1732; she was his widow in 1735; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 26, 1726; died, unmarried, between 1735 and 1758; 2. *David*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 13, 1727; died before 1735; 3. *Anne*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 19, 1730; died before 1735. THOMAS ROPES;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Sarah Hodges Aug. 10, 1731; she was living in 1734; he died in 1753; children: 1. *Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 29, 1737; married Eunice Bickford April 10, 1759; died Sept. 10, 1759; she married, second, Thomas Brintnall West Aug. 30, 1764; no children; 2. *David*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 14, 1739; cooper, yeoman, innkeeper, trader and merchant; married Priscilla Webb Oct. 9, 1760; died Dec. 20, 1793; she died Oct. 5, 1831, aged ninety-one. JOHN ROPES;<sup>4</sup> shopkeeper; married Jane Bartlett of Exeter, N. H. (published April 21, 1738); died in 1761; she died, his widow, in 1781; children: 1. *John*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 18, 1738-9; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 20, 1740; died young; 3. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> (twin), baptized Aug. 2, 1741; died young; 4. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> (twin), baptized Aug. 2, 1741; died young; 5. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 10, 1743; 6. *Abigail*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 8, 1744; died young; 7. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1747; died, unmarried, Oct. 20, 1783; 8. *Abigail*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 2, 1749; died, unmarried, in the summer of 1783. JONATHAN ROPES;<sup>4</sup> merchant; representative; married Mary Coffin of Newbury Dec. 10, 1761; she died Nov. 11, 1774; he died Jan. —, 1799; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 18, 1763; married Maj. Jonathan Waldo; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 31, 1765; died young; 3. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 31, 1769; probably died young. BENJAMIN ROPES;<sup>4</sup> cooper; married Ruth Hardy March 27, 1746; died April 20, 1790; she died Dec. —, 1795; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>5</sup> born July 10, 1747; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 26, 1749; mariner; died Aug. 8, 1768; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 21, 1751; died Nov. 7, 1751; 4. *Sarah*,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 7, 1752; married Jerathmeel Peirce; 5. *Lydia*,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 4, 1754; married Capt. Ichabod Nichols; 6. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> born March 8, 1757; 7. *Hardy*,<sup>5</sup> born March 15, 1759; died Oct. 2, 1761; 8. *Ruth*,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 12, 1761; married John Leach; 9. *Hardy*,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 17, 1763; 10. *George*,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 28, 1765; 11. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 7, 1770; died, unmarried, at sea, on schooner Active, Jan. 24, 1795; 12. *Timothy*,<sup>5</sup> born April 9, 1773. HON. NATHANIEL ROPES;<sup>4</sup> judge; married



sons of this unfortunate occurrence are unknown. The next year he asked that he might become an inhabitant, but the request was

Priscilla Sparhawk Sept. 25, 1755; died, of small pox, March 18, 1774; she died March 19, 1798; children: 1. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> born June 13, 1759; 2. Abigail F.,<sup>5</sup> born in 1761; married William Orne; 3. *John*,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 10, 1763; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 28, 1764; married Jonathan Hodges; 5. Jane,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 22, 1767; married Samuel Curwen Ward; 6. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 21, 1773; died at sea, unmarried, Sept. 21, 1794. JONATHAN ROPES;<sup>4</sup> coaster; married, first, Mary Skinner Feb. 28, 1741-2; she died Nov. 10, 1745; married, second, Mary Smith Feb. 25, 1747-8; she died May 28, 1751; married, third, Susanna (Tozer), widow of — Barnet July 29, 1756; they were living in 1763; she was his widow in 1785; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born July 3, 1743; married Robert Peale; 2. William,<sup>5</sup> born June 27, 1745; died Dec. 18, 1745; 3. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 3, 1749; 4. Susanna,<sup>5</sup> born June 9, 1757; married Capt. John Felt; 5. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 21, 1759; died Dec. 8, 1763; 6. William,<sup>5</sup> born May 16, 1761; died unmarried. JOSEPH ROPES;<sup>4</sup> married Elizabeth Bacon Oct. 10, 1745; died before 1751; she married, secondly, Capt. John Foster July 7, 1751; child: 1. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 21, 1746; shopkeeper and mariner; died, unmarried, in 1777. GEORGE ROPES;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Mary Dean Nov. 28, 1754; died Oct. 30, 1755; she married, secondly, Samuel Waters May 1, 1760; child: 1. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 28, 1755; died March 28, 1756. CAPT. DAVID ROPES;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Ruth Hawthorn Sept. 30, 1762; while captain of the privateer Jack he was killed in an action with the sloop-of-war Observer near Halifax May 28, 1782; she died June —, 1801; children: 1. *David*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1763; 2. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 2, 1764; died in infancy; 3. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 15, 1767; died, unmarried, July 25, 1797; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1770; 6. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 14, 1773; probably died young. DANIEL ROPES;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer and trader; married Priscilla Lambert Nov. 19, 1761; she died Sept. 22, 1808; he died Oct. 8, 1821; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 28, 1763; married Capt. John Sinclair; 2. Priscilla,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 4, 1765; married James Archer; 3. *Daniel*,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 1, 1767; 4. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 20, 1768; married Samuel Gray; 5. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 2, 1770; married, first, John Brown; second, Thaddeus Gwinn; 6. George,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 22, 1773; lived in New York City; mariner; married Hannah —; 7. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 29, 1774; mariner; sailed from New York Nov. 16, 1799, and was never heard from; 8. Sarah<sup>5</sup> (twin), born Oct. 5, 1776; died Nov. 26, 1776; 9. Abraham<sup>5</sup> (twin), born Oct. 5, 1776; died Sept. 16, 1777; 10. Sally,<sup>5</sup> born May 6, 1778; died Aug. 24, 1778; 11. —<sup>5</sup> (son), stillborn Aug. 22, 1780; 12. Sally,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 13, 1781; died Feb. 9, 1787. JOHN ROPES;<sup>4</sup> house carpenter and cabinet maker; married Sarah (Titcomb), widow of Thomas Stocker of Newbury Jan. 22, 1750 (when he was of Falmouth); died about 1782; she died April 16, 1799; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 2, 1758; married David Clark; 2. Anne,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 22, 1755; married Samuel Cheever; 3. *William*,<sup>5</sup> born May 6, 1758; 4. *John Titcomb*,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 25, 1762.

CAPT. JOHN ROPES;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner in the merchant service; married Abigail Hawkes of Lynn Sept. 23, 1762; died in 1781; she died Feb. 2, 1825; children: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 24, 1763; master-mariner; died at sea Oct. 13, 1788, on his passage from West Indies in the vessel which he commanded; 2. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> born July 12, 1765; married Capt. John Ropes; 3. Jane,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 7, 1769; married Capt. John Titcomb Ropes; 4. Lydia Burrill,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 27, 1775; died Feb. 28, 1776. NATHANIEL ROPES;<sup>5</sup> coaster; died in or before 1781; child: 1. Hannah;<sup>6</sup> living in 1783. LT. BENJAMIN ROPES;<sup>5</sup> cooper; married Margaret Symonds Feb. 6, 1772; died Nov. 21, 1778; she died, his widow, March 29, 1826; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 16, 1772; 2. *James*,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 16, 1774; 3. Margaret,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 3, 17—; married

refused, because he was still under apprenticeship to learn the

William Phipps Symonds. SAMUEL ROPES;<sup>5</sup> cooper, and later trader and merchant; married Sarah Cheever May 27, 1780; died Dec. 5, 1841; she died Oct. 12, 1842, at Cambridge, where she lived, his widow; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born March 24, 1781; supercargo of ship Henry; died of yellow fever, on the Island of Curasoa, Jan. 18, 1800; 2. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 18, 1783; mariner; second mate on board ship Belisarius; crushed to death Aug. 4, 1801; 3. William,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 19, 1784; lived in Boston and St. Petersburg; merchant; married, first, Martha Reed of Marblehead Aug. 15, 1811; she died April 27, 1830; married, second, Mary Anne Codman April 7, 1832; had children; 4. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 29, 1786; died, unmarried, April 13, 1819; 5. Hardy,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 12, 1788; lived in Boston; merchant; married Mary Ladd June 24, 1824; 6. Ruth Hardy,<sup>6</sup> born June 24, 1791; married Henry Prince; 7. Louisa,<sup>6</sup> born May 7, 1793; married Rev. Samuel Green of Reading Oct. 17, 1821; lived in Boston; she died in Salem March 26, 1842; 8. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 10, 1796; died March 25, 1816. HARDY ROPES;<sup>5</sup> mariner and merchant; removed to Orford, N. H., about 1800; married Hannah Elson Aug. 28, 1786; she died at Lyme, N. H., Feb. —, 1823; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born June 2, 1787; married Benjamin Swasey Nov. 26, 1814; 2. Hardy,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 30, 1789; emigrated to Ohio, where he died Aug. —, 1823, leaving a wife and son; 3. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> born June 24, 1790; clothier and then clergyman, being settled as a Baptist minister at Haverhill, N. H., in 1831; married Lucy Pushee of Lyme Feb. 8, 1813; died June 10, 1861; 4. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> born May 26, 1792; died Aug. 7, 1793; 5. Joseph Elson,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 7, 1795; died, unmarried, Aug. 18, 1820; 6. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born June 22, 1797; deranged; died unmarried; 7. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born March 25, 1799; married —; died in Ohio; no children; 8. George,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 29, 1800; married Miriam Johnson of Newbury, Vt., March —, 1826; 9. Timothy Pickering,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 13, 1802; graduated at Williams College; Baptist clergyman; married Eliza Keely; no issue; 10. Mehitable,<sup>6</sup> born June 12, 1805, in Orford; died in Boston, unmarried, April 15, 1857; 11. William Henry,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 9, 1809; died at Pilatka, Fla., Nov. 5, 1866. CAPT. GEORGE ROPES;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner in the merchant service; married Seeth Millett Dec. 27, 1787; died April 4, 1807; she died, his widow, July 29, 1823; children: 1. George,<sup>6</sup> born May 15, 1788; deaf and dumb; artist; died Jan. 24, 1819; 2. Henry,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 25, 1791; 3. Benjamin Mansfield,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 25, 1794; mariner and painter; died, unmarried, Feb. 2, 1871; 4. Sarah Hardy,<sup>6</sup> born June 6, 1796; married Henry Nichols; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born April 19, 1798; married Ephraim Felt; 6. *Jonathan Millett*,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 13, 1799, in Orford, N. H.; 7. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born July 12, 1801; super-cargo; died abroad Sept. 4, 1822; 8. Mary Wilson,<sup>6</sup> born March 20, 1803; died Dec. 31, 1847; 9. Nathan Millett,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 11, 1805; died March 3, 1825. CAPT. TIMOTHY ROPES;<sup>5</sup> cooper and mariner; married Sarah Holmes June 16, 1796; died Feb. 17, 1848; she died March 9, 1848; children: 1. *Timothy*,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 1, 1797; 2. Sarah Grant;<sup>6</sup> died, unmarried, Jan. 31, 1882; 3. Thomas Holmes,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 1, 1803; died at Louisville, Ky., unmarried, April 25, 1845; 4. Elizabeth Grant,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 11, 1807; died, unmarried, Sept. 7, 1855; 5. George,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 13, 1809; lived in Portland, Me.; married Charlotte Ruggles of Hardwick Aug. 19, 1832; died Dec. 6, 1842; she died, his widow, Aug. 27, 1861, in Salem, where her eldest son, George Ropes, lived; 6. Mary Ann;<sup>6</sup> married John Bertram; 7. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 11, 1812; artist in Rome; married Marcia Elizabeth Sewall of Bath, Me., June —, 1855; she died in Italy July 17, 1863; he died in Salem March 21, 1898; 8. David Nichols,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 5, 1814; lived in Orange, N. J.; mayor; in business in New York; married Lydia Laurelia Bisbe Oct. 6, 1846; living in 1882; 9. Henry,<sup>6</sup> born April 3, 1817; in business in New York; married Harriet Judson of Hudson, N. Y., Oct. 10, 1855;



trade of a carpenter. When his period of service terminated, in 1638, he visited England, and in his absence, Feb. 4, 1638-9, was

living in 1882. NATHANIEL ROPES;<sup>5</sup> lived in Salem and Danvers; merchant; married, first, Sarah Putnam April 17, 1791; she died Dec. 20, 1801; married, second, Elizabeth Cleveland April 12, 1803; died Aug. 8, 1806; she died March 1, 1831; children: 1. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 1, 1791; died Aug. 21, 1791; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born July 24, 1792; died Aug. 30, 1793; 3. *Nathaniel*,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 14, 1793; 4. Sarah Fisk,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 7, 1795; married Joseph Orne; 5. Abigail Pickman,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 20, 1796; died, unmarried, June 20, 1839. CAPT. JOHN ROPES;<sup>5</sup> merchant; married, first, Abigail Ropes June 10, 1784; she died March 30, 1786; married, second, Hannah Haraden Dec. 11, 1787; died July 9, 1828; his wife Hannah survived him and died June 29, 1845; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 25, 1784; died, unmarried, Jan. 5, 1846; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 27, 1788; died Oct. 13, 1789; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born March 14, 1790; died Sept. 29, 1811; 4. Hannah Haraden,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 30, 1791; died July 16, 1862; 5. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 5, 1793; died Dec. 27, 1795; 6. Eunice Diman,<sup>6</sup> born June 27, 1795; died, unmarried, March 28, 1821; 7. John Haraden,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 15, 1799; died Dec. 8, 1820, at Batavia, on board the ship *Hercules*; 8. Jonathan Haraden,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 24, 1803; died Aug. 16, 1804; 9. Polly Pickman,<sup>6</sup> born March 20, 1807; died April 20, 1831. JONATHAN ROPES;<sup>5</sup> cooper, fisherman and mariner; married Hannah Luscomb Dec. 24, 1772; she died Dec. 9, 1830; he died May 19, 1836; children: 1. *Jonathan*,<sup>6</sup> born June 16, 1774; 2. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born July 9, 1776; married Lemuel Church of Scituate Jan. 31, 1796; 3. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 4, 1778; died Jan. 14, 1781; 4. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born May 17, 1781; married William Stetson of Scituate April 23, 1801; 5. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> born May 25, 1784; 6. Sally,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 22, 1787; married Arad Pomeroy of Warwick Feb. 6, 1806; 7. Betsey,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 24, 1789; died Sept. 13, 1790. DAVID ROPES;<sup>5</sup> goldsmith; married Mary Hutchinson April 23, 1786; she died June —, 1803; he died Feb. —, 1812; children: 1. *David*,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. —, 1786; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 2, 1790; 3. *William*,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 10, 1792; 4. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 28, 1794; died, unmarried, July 1, 1854, in Danvers; 5. *Ebenezer*,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 15, 1796; 6. Robert,<sup>6</sup> born April 15, 1799; lived at the Eastward; never married; was lost on his passage from Bath to Eastport about 1829; 7. Ruth,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 12, 1801; died Nov. 20, 1826, in Danvers. CAPT. JOSEPH ROPES;<sup>5</sup> merchant; commander of the privateer *America* in the War of 1812; married Sarah Burchmore Feb. 3, 1801; she died July 30, 1842; he died Sept. 29, 1850; children: 1. Maria,<sup>6</sup> born June 2, 1802; died, unmarried, Dec. 18, 1878; 2. Sarah;<sup>6</sup> married William Henry Neal; 3. Ruth Maria;<sup>6</sup> died, unmarried, Dec. 18, 1878. CAPT. DANIEL ROPES;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner; married Alice Cheever Nov. 8, 1789; died in London Jan. 11, 1808, from the effects of being shipwrecked on the English coast; she died Oct. 3, 1853; children: 1. Priscilla,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1797; married Benjamin Upton; 2. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1797; died a prisoner of war at Chatham, England, Feb. 9, 1814, aged nineteen; 3. Sarah Hodges,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 17, 1798; died Sept. 25, 1799. CAPT. WILLIAM ROPES;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner; married Mary Brown June 4, 1780; she died Aug. 1, 1818; he died March 25, 1828; children: 1. *William*,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 25, 1781; 2. *John*,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 26, 1783; 3. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born April 28, 1785; died Jan. 15, 1796; 4. Mercy,<sup>6</sup> born June 2, 1787; died Dec. 21, 1795; 5. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born March 6, 1789; married Capt. Henry Tebbetts Oct. 8, 1809; 6. Phebe,<sup>6</sup> born May 19, 1792; died, unmarried, Oct. 23, 1850; 7. Hannah Browne,<sup>6</sup> born March 19, 1795; married Capt. Franklin Chase of Portland, Me., Jan. 18, 1821; 8. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born May 18, 1797; married Robert Barr; 9. Francis,<sup>6</sup> born May 11, 1799; died at Padang, on brig *Ontario*, May 22, 1822; 10. Mercy,<sup>6</sup> born March 20, 1802; married Capt. Joseph Webb. CAPT. JOHN TITCOMB ROPES;<sup>5</sup> master-mariner; married Jane Ropes Nov. 11, 1789;

granted twenty acres of land, which was ordered to be land out to him upon his return. He was in Salem soon afterwards and became the progenitor of a large and prominent family.

was lost at sea March —, 1792; she married, secondly, Capt. Benjamin Shillaber; children: 1. ———<sup>6</sup> (daughter), born May 20, 1791; died May 21, 1791; 2. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 16, 1792; died Sept. 8, 1796.

CAPT. BENJAMIN ROPES;<sup>6</sup> cooper and merchant; married Frances Wilkins May 13, 1804; died July 29, 1845; she died, his widow, April 14, 1870; children: 1. Benjamin Gardner,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 6, 1804; lived in Port Chester, N. Y.; married, first, Caroline Silsby of Bradford Oct. 1, 1840; she was lost, with her son, on the steamer Arctic, off Cape Race, Sept. —, 1854; married, second, Mary Jane Purdy of Rye, N. Y.; died at Port Chester Jan. 1, 1871; 2. Fanny Wilkins,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 5, 1806; married George Manning of Buenos Ayres Dec. 9, 1833; 3. Henry James,<sup>7</sup> born March 5, 1809; lived in South America; married Marcellina Grenaux of Buenos Ayres; 4. Amelia,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 19, 1811; married James Diman Aug. 23, 1831; lived in Connecticut; 5. Reuben Wilkins,<sup>7</sup> born July 16, 1813; lived in New York; married, first, Nancy W. Reed Nov. 18, 1845, in New York; she died in Brooklyn Jan. 18, 1850; married, second, Maria Lucinda Thompson of Monson Dec. 22, 1852; 6. Almira,<sup>7</sup> born March 14, 1816; died Dec. 28, 1818; 7. *Charles Augustus*,<sup>7</sup> born March 14, 1818; 8. *Eleazer Wheelock Ripley*,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 30, 1820. JAMES ROPES;<sup>6</sup> trader; married, first, Lucy Groce Jan. 3, 1803; she died Jan. 27, 1821; married, second, Hannah Perkins Dec. 7, 1826; died July 21, 1840; his wife Hannah died July 29, 1864; children: 1. Lucy,<sup>7</sup> born June 17, 1803; married Samuel Church; 2. *James*,<sup>7</sup> born March 12, 1805; 3. Elizabeth G.,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 22, 1806; died, unmarried, July 26, 1833; 4. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born June 19, 1810; died Jan. 16, 1819; 5. Mary F.,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 29, 1813; married Daniel P. Galloup of Danvers March 23, 1837; 6. Samuel G.,<sup>7</sup> born June 17, 1816; died Aug. 10, 1836, at sea, on his passage from London to New York; 7. Sarah Sophia,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 22, 1821; married James Upton Oct. 9, 1845. HENRY ROPES;<sup>6</sup> treasurer of the Salem Savings Bank; married Mary Prince March 27, 1821; died Sept. 29, 1861; she died, his widow, Feb. 1, 1873; children: 1. *George Nathan*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 9, 1822; 2. ———<sup>7</sup> (son), born Sept. 15, 1824; died Sept. 15, 1824; 3. Henry Samuel,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 18, 1825; H. C., 1846; lawyer; died Sept. 1, 1850; 4. Joseph Hardy,<sup>7</sup> born July 20, 1827; went to Boston about 1875; died there, unmarried, Jan. 5, 1890; 5. Benjamin Augustus,<sup>7</sup> born April 24, 1829; died May 15, 1829; 6. Benjamin Augustus,<sup>7</sup> born April 14, 1830; removed to Dorchester about 1876; died there, unmarried, Jan. 17, 1901; 7. Mary Seeth,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. —, 1831; died, unmarried, Feb. 26, 1869; 8. Sarah Osgood,<sup>7</sup> born March 29, 1836; died April 8, 1836; 9. Sarah Osgood,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 26, 1837; died, unmarried, May 7, 1868. CAPT. JONATHAN MILLETT ROPES;<sup>6</sup> lived in Utica, N. Y., and Elizabeth, N. J.; master-mariner; married Mary Miller of Peterboro, N. H., Sept. 4, 1828; children: 1. *James Miller*,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 21, 1829, in Utica; 2. Martha Seeth,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 9, 1831, in Utica; married Charles Wilson Felt of Salem June 2, 1863; 3. Sarah Nichols,<sup>7</sup> born March 15, 1836; married Joseph Warren Crowell of Raleigh, N. J., Dec. 12, 1854; 4. William Bucks,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 20, 1839; physician; lived in Yonkers, N. Y.; married Sarah S. Bailey of Norton, Mass., July 12, 1860; no issue; 5. George Henry,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 19, 1841; lawyer; 6. Elihu Harrison,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 10, 1845; served in the Civil war; 7. Mary Augusta,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 7, 1848. TIMOTHY ROPES;<sup>6</sup> crockery and hardware dealer; married Mary Silver June 10, 1829; died April 25, 1873; she died, his widow, June 20, 1895, aged ninety-one; children: 1. Mary Silver,<sup>7</sup> born April 1, 1830; died, unmarried, June 24, 1866; 2. Sarah Holmes,<sup>7</sup> born May 4, 1833; died, unmarried, May 27, 1907; 3. Susan Howard,<sup>7</sup> born April 10, 1835; died, unmarried, Oct. 19, 1870; 4. *Edward Delhonde*,<sup>7</sup> born April



Benjamin Felton lived in Salem in the spring of 1636, being granted a two-acre lot May 2, 1636, and twenty acres at another time. He relinquished a ten-acre lot on Bass River, and was granted another on the south side of Darby fort Aug. 14, 1637.

The increase in the number and size of the settlements in the colony multiplied the demands upon the general court for ad-

3, 1838. NATHANIEL ROPES;<sup>6</sup> lived in Cincinnati, O.; merchant; married Sarah Evans Brown of Cincinnati July 10, 1826; died in Cincinnati July 19, 1885; children: 1. Sarah Putnam,<sup>7</sup> born March 27, 1827, in Ohio; died, unmarried, in Salem Sept. 2, 1899; 2. Isabella Brown,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 17, 1829; died Nov. 11, 1834; 3. Elizabeth Cleveland Orne,<sup>7</sup> born March 28, 1831; died Aug. 27, 1832; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>7</sup> born in Cincinnati Jan. 7, 1833; lived in Salem, where he died Feb. 6, 1893; 5. William Augustus,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 22, 1834; died Feb. 3, 1879; 6. Eliza Orne,<sup>7</sup> born March 7, 1837, in Cincinnati; died in Salem, unmarried, April 18, 1907; 7. John,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 29, 1839; died Jan. 16, 1842; 8. Abigail Pickman,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 17, 1842; died Feb. 1, 1842; 9. Mary Pickman,<sup>7</sup> born March 30, 1843, in Covington, Ky.; died, unmarried, in Salem, Sept. 30, 1903. CAPT. JONATHAN ROPES;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Mary Hanscom Dec. 25, 1802; died in 1808, at Havana; she died May 2, 1870, aged ninety-six; children: 1. —;<sup>7</sup> died young; 2. William;<sup>7</sup> died young; 3. Jonathan,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 21, 1804. SAMUEL ROPES;<sup>6</sup> cordwainer and weigher and gauger; married Hannah Felt June 16, 1811; died July 11, 1854; she died, his widow, June 23, 1873, in Taunton; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 14, 1812; married George C. Hodgdon of Boston April 12, 1838; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 24, 1815; died Nov. 12, 1817; 3. Samuel,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 10, 1816; cordwainer; married Bethia C. Pitman Nov. 3, 1841; died Sept. 28, 1864, in Somerville; she died, his widow, March 17, 1878; no children; 4. Sally,<sup>7</sup> born May 25, 1819; died April 8, 1833; 5. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 23, 1820; died Jan. 11, 1821; 6. John F.,<sup>7</sup> born April 2, 1822; 7. Mary Jane,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 21, 1824; died Feb. 22, 1826; 8. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 30, 1827; died Feb. 20, 1833; 9. William Henry,<sup>7</sup> born May 1, 1829; killed in Swampscott by a train of cars Sept. 7, 1842; 10. Edward,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 12, 1831; died May 21, 1831 (?); 11. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born July 14, 1833; died Sept. 22, 1838. DAVID ROPES;<sup>6</sup> lived in Salem and on Long Island; goldsmith and mariner; married Mary Magoun of Pembroke; died on Long Island Jan. —, 1840; child: 1. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born in 181—; married — Moore of Boston. JOSEPH ROPES;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Sally Lang Alley Nov. 10, 1812; died before 1833; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born about 1813; 2. David A.,<sup>7</sup> born about 1817; married Lucy Jane Holt Aug. 22, 1839; she died, his widow, Jan. 20, 1903. WILLIAM ROPES;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Olive Flint Sept. 22, 1816; probably lost at sea about 1820; she removed to Haverhill, and died in Lynn about 1861; child: 1. William,<sup>7</sup> born about 1817; went to California, and died there, leaving a widow and four sons in Swampscott, where he married. CAPT. EBENEZER ROPES;<sup>6</sup> master-mariner; married Elizabeth Babbidge July 30, 1826; died at Majunga, Island of Madagascar, on board his ship Lady Sarah, April 20, 1832; she died, his widow, June 17, 1876; child: 1. Ebenezer,<sup>7</sup> born April 20, 1827; died April 20, 1827. DEA. WILLIAM ROPES;<sup>6</sup> dealer in stoves and tinware; married Rachel Archer Dec. 19, 1802; died July 9, 1859; she died Sept. 8, 1870; children: 1. Rachel,<sup>7</sup> born May 21, 1803; married Tarrant Putnam Derby; 2. William Archer,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 23, 1804; mariner, married Sarah A. Saul June 5, 1828; died at Batavia Aug. 12, 1833; she died Feb. 20, 1847; no children; 3. Mary Browne,<sup>7</sup> born May 12, 1807; married Asa Brooks; 4. Jonathan Archer,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 10, 1808; H. C., 1832; lawyer; lived in Baltimore, Md.; married Emilie W. Tucker of Baltimore Jan. 13, 1852; died in Baltimore Oct. 2, 1855; 5. John Titcomb,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 7, 1810;

judication of civil matters and the trial of persons against whom

6. Henry Tibbets,<sup>7</sup> born June 12, 1812; merchant; lived in Liverpool, Eng.; married Elizabeth Prentiss of Marblehead Jan. 6, 1836; 7. Joseph White,<sup>7</sup> born March 14, 1816; lived in Danvers; dealer in stoves and hardware; married Margaret Dale Putnam of Danvers April 8, 1840; died March 24, 1880; father of George F. Ropes, the druggist. CAPT. JOHN ROPES;<sup>6</sup> master-mariner; married Mary Archer March 21, 1813; died July 30, 1825; she died, his widow, Jan. 19, 1875; children: 1. John Francis,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 11, 1814; lived in New York; editor of the Sunday Atlas; married Lavinia Gage of Dover, N. H., Sept. 20, 1835; died in New Jersey Dec. 24, 1885; no children; 2. Abigail Woodward,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 23, 1815; died, unmarried, July 14, 1892; 3. Elizabeth Archer,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 15, 1816; married Nathaniel Chapman of Marblehead Jan. 25, 1836; 4. Samuel Woodman,<sup>7</sup> born June 15, 1821; lived in Boston; married Mary Torrey Wildermath of Boston Sept. 8, 1842; died June 26, 1874; 5. Mary Archer,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 7, 1822; died, unmarried, Jan. 2, 1856.

CHARLES AUGUSTUS ROPES;<sup>7</sup> grain dealer; married, first, Mary Anne Barker Nov. 16, 1843; she died March 22, 1853; married, second, Lucinda Whipple April 13, 1854; died March 19, 1890; she died March 20, 1906; children: 1. Anna Theresa,<sup>8</sup> born about 1845; died April 20, 1849; 2. *Benjamin Barker*,<sup>8</sup> born June 11, 1847; 3. George Augustus,<sup>8</sup> born July 12, 1849; went west, unmarried, about 1880, and was never heard from; 4. Charles Ripley,<sup>8</sup> born March 3, 1853; died Oct. 1, 1853, in Fairfield, Conn.; 5. *Willis Henry*,<sup>8</sup> born March 26, 1855; 6. Mary Theresa,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 19, 1857; married Frederick Cate; 7. Emily,<sup>8</sup> born May 17, 1859; unmarried; 8. *Reuben Wilkins*,<sup>8</sup> born May 10, 1861; 9. Marian Cloutman,<sup>8</sup> born March 7, 1863; died Aug. 4, 1864; 10. *Charles Fisher*,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born June 26, 1865; 11. Edwin Chapin,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born June 26, 1865; married Carrie Slade Raymond June 26, 1899; no children; 12. Lucinda,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 24, 1868. ELEAZER WHELOCK RIPLEY ROPES;<sup>7</sup> lived in Salem and New York; flour dealer; married Elizabeth Graves Oct. 22, 1846; she died, his widow, in Brooklyn May 25, 1910; children: 1. Grace Frances,<sup>8</sup> 2. Elizabeth Graves,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 1, 1849; 3. Frederick Ripley,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 11, 1850; 4. Albert Gardner,<sup>8</sup> born April 29, 1852; 5. Alice,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 17, 1853; died, by accidental burning, July 4, 1863; 6. Charles Arthur,<sup>8</sup> born March 21, 1857; died June 20, 1863; 7. Walter Peirce,<sup>8</sup> born July 6, 1861, in Salem; 8. Lincoln,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born June 2, 1865, at Brooklyn, N. Y.; died in Bermuda Feb. 26, 1877; 9. Louis Wheelock,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born June 2, 1865, at Brooklyn. JAMES ROPES;<sup>7</sup> trader and register of probate; married Susan Maria Colby of Weare, N. H., Aug. 13, 1855; died March 4, 1875; she died Sept. 26, 1910; children: 1. Lizzie Maria,<sup>8</sup> born April 26, 1856; unmarried; 2. James,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 28, 1858; unmarried; 3. Samuel George,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born Jan. 20, 1861; Baptist minister; lives in Tunkhannock, Pa.; married Elizabeth (Miller), widow of Eleazer Dana of Tunkhannock Dec. 12, 1911; had no children; 4. Susie Colby,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born Jan. 20, 1861; died Feb. 25, 1867; 5. William,<sup>8</sup> (name changed to William C.), born June 19, 1863; died in Swanzey, N. H., unmarried, July 22, 1901; 6. Lucy Houghton,<sup>8</sup> born May 28, 1866; died March 21, 1871; 7. Susan Ellen,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 4, 1868; school teacher; unmarried; 8. Alice Colby,<sup>8</sup> born May 27, 1871; died May 29, 1911. CAPT. GEORGE NATHAN ROPES;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; married Priscilla Lambert Upton Sept. 24, 1846; he died Sept. 1, 1865; she died, his widow, in Worcester Feb. 10, 1874; children: 1. George Henry,<sup>8</sup> born May 30, 1847; died May 27, 1848; 2. Priscilla Chever,<sup>8</sup> born about 1849; married Jonathan Brown of Marblehead Feb. 15, 1877; 3. Mary Prince,<sup>8</sup> born about 1854; living in 1873; 4. Alice Putnam,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 12, 1856; died March 9, 1858; 5. ———<sup>8</sup> (son), stillborn Sept. 23, 1860. MAJ. JAMES MILLER ROPES;<sup>7</sup> United States army officer;



complaint had been made for criminal offences. Many of these complaints and questions were of minor importance, but officers, parties and witnesses were compelled to travel long distances from home, over forest paths and bridgeless streams. The burden upon all parties concerned became so great that means to relieve it had to be adopted. It was deemed expedient to establish local courts for the trial of ordinary cases. At the session of the general court held March 3, 1635-6, it was ordered that such courts be inaugurated, to meet quarterly. One was ordered to be located at

married Sarah Ellen Henderson of Salem Sept. 4, 1867; died June 4, 1897; children: 1. ———<sup>s</sup> (son), born June 23, 1869, at Camp McDermot, Col.; died June 27, 1869; 2. James Miller,<sup>s</sup> born Aug. 7, 1870, in Salem; married ——— Knight; 3. Mary Frances,<sup>s</sup> born Oct. 10, 1873; unmarried; 4. Augusta L.,<sup>s</sup> born in 1876, in Texas; married Lewis P. Tufts of Middleton June 26, 1899; 5. *Putnam Harris*,<sup>s</sup> born in 1881, in Del Rio, Texas. EDWARD DELHONDE ROPES;<sup>7</sup> merchant; married Mary Goodhue; died Aug. 8, 1902; children: 1. Arthur E.,<sup>s</sup> born July 13, 1863; 2. Edward D.,<sup>s</sup> born Sept. 3, 1864; lived in New York; died in Salem, unmarried, Oct. 30, 1903; 3. Lucy Goodhue,<sup>s</sup> born Feb. 2, 1869; died March 15, 1875; 4. John Bertram,<sup>s</sup> born Feb. 20, 1873; 5. Mary Goodhue,<sup>s</sup> born Nov. 13, 1874; died Aug. 16, 1883; 6. Gertrude,<sup>s</sup> born Oct. 5, 1876; married Dr. James Edwin Simpson. JONATHAN ROPES;<sup>7</sup> lived on Ropes street; shoemaker; married Jane Baker Melzard of Marblehead Jan. 15, 1826; she died April 11, 1849; he died April 21, 1885; children: 1. William,<sup>s</sup> born Jan. 22, 1826; died Sept. 25, 1827; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>s</sup> born March 19, 1829; 3. William,<sup>s</sup> born July 10, 1830; died Aug. 1, 1905; 4. Mary Jane,<sup>s</sup> born Dec. 23, 1832; married Benjamin Brown; 5. Sarah,<sup>s</sup> born April 5, 1834; married Daniel S. Brown of Lynn; 6. Benjamin,<sup>s</sup> born March 6, 1836; died June 11, 1840; 7. Edward,<sup>s</sup> born Nov. 9, 1838; died May 19, 1840; 8. Benjamin,<sup>s</sup> born July 27, 1840; lived in Marblehead; mechanic; married Lydia A. Atkins of Marblehead Dec. 24, 1874; 9. Elizabeth,<sup>s</sup> born Aug. 6, 1842; married Philip Atkins of Marblehead; 10. Edward,<sup>s</sup> born Dec. 29, 1844; died Dec. 8, 1861. CAPT. JOHN F. ROPES;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; married Sarah A. Millett Oct. 14, 1847; was drowned in Boston Jan. 12, 1861; she survived him, and with her son removed to Woburn before 1873; child: 1. John Henry,<sup>s</sup> born about 1855; living in 1878. JOHN TITCOMB ROPES;<sup>7</sup> stove and hardware dealer; married Lucy Collins April 28, 1834; died March 17, 1879; she died, his widow, April 24, 1887; children: 1. *John Collins*,<sup>s</sup> born Feb. 13, 1837; 2. *William*,<sup>s</sup> born Dec. 26, 1839; 3. Lucy.<sup>s</sup>

BENJAMIN BARKER ROPES;<sup>s</sup> currier; married Emma A. Parsons Sept. 28, 1881; died March 25, 1910; children: 1. Leslie Parsons,<sup>9</sup> born April 19, 1886; 2. Alma Theresa,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 27, 1888; 3. Arthur Newhall,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 25, 1889; 4. Helen Wilkins,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 20, 1893; died young. WILLIS HENRY ROPES;<sup>s</sup> hay and grain dealer; married Louisa King Farley of Peabody June 1, 1882; children: 1. Frances,<sup>9</sup> born July 23, 1883; married Stillman Pierce Williams of Boston Nov. 12, 1906; lives in Winchester; 2. Lucy,<sup>9</sup> born July 2, 1886; unmarried; 3. Phebe,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 18, 1890; married Leslie C. Coleman. REUBEN WILKINS ROPES;<sup>s</sup> hay and grain dealer; married Grace Austin Tuttle June 18, 1895; children: 1. Lawrence Goodhue,<sup>9</sup> born June 24, 1898; 2. Esther,<sup>9</sup> born Dec. 16, 1899; 3. Grace Austin,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 18, 1901; died April 19, 1903; 4. Marian Wilkins,<sup>9</sup> born Dec. 1, 1903; 5. Austin Tuttle,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 25, 1905. COL. CHARLES FISHER ROPES;<sup>s</sup> hay and grain dealer; married Margaret Linton Robertson of Beverly June 19, 1900; children: 1. Charles Augustus,<sup>9</sup> born March 13, 1902; 2. Margaret,<sup>9</sup> born April 8, 1904; 3. Anna,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 1, 1906; 4. John Spencer,<sup>9</sup> born July 18, 1907. JONATHAN

Salem, with a jurisdiction which comprised the towns of Salem and Saugus.<sup>1</sup> The sessions were ordered to be "kept by such magistrates as shalbe dwelling in or neere the said townes, & by such other psons of worth as shall from tyme to tyme be appoynted by the Genall Court, soe as noe Court shalbe kept without one magistrate att the least, & that none of the magistrates be excluded, whoe can & will intend the same; yet the Genall Court shall appoynt w<sup>ch</sup> of the magistrates shall specially belonge to" the court. "Such psons as shalbe ioyned as assotiates to the magistrates in the said Court shalbe chosen by the Genall Court, out of a greater number of such as the seual townes shall nominate to them, soe as there may be" in the court five, including the magistrate. One magistrate and two other persons so appointed could hold the court.

The jurisdiction included all civil cases where the debt or damage did not exceed ten pounds, and all criminal offences not concerning life, limb or banishment. Appeal was allowed to the next great quarter court in Boston.

These inferior courts were ordered to be held on the last Tuesday of June and of each succeeding third month thereafter. The court in the district where the defendant lived had jurisdiction in any action.

May 25, 1636, the general court ordered that in the place where the court sat "the kings ma<sup>ties</sup> armes shalbe erected soe sone as they can be hadd." The royal arms continued to be

ROPES;<sup>8</sup> married Sarah Kimball July —, 1860; child: 1. Ellen H.,<sup>9</sup> born June 28, 1864. PUTNAM HARRIS ROPES;<sup>8</sup> bank clerk; married Sarah Gertrude Hyde of Lawrence June 12, 1905; child: 1. Helen,<sup>9</sup> born April 21, 1906. JOHN BERTRAM ROPES;<sup>8</sup> married Lucy Pickering Robinson Oct. 1, 1898; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 17, 1899; 2. Ruth Robinson,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 26, 1908. JONATHAN ROPES;<sup>8</sup> shoemaker; married Abigail E. Burding of Danvers Nov. 2, 1854; she died April 12, 1861; he died Dec. 4, 1863; children: 1. Abby Ella,<sup>9</sup> born about 1855; married William L. Vollor Sept. 8, 1875; 2. *William Henry*,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 4, 1859. JOHN COLLINS ROPES;<sup>8</sup> machinist; married Sarah J. Kimball July 26, 1860; died Oct. 7, 1904; she survived him; children: 1. ———<sup>9</sup> (son), born May 25, 1861; died May 27, 1861; 2. Ella H.,<sup>9</sup> born June 28, 1864; unmarried in 1904. WILLIAM ROPES;<sup>8</sup> tinplate worker and stove dealer; married Harriet Adeline Blake of St. Johnsbury, Vt., March 25, 1863; died Sept. 17, 1911; children: 1. Lucy R.,<sup>9</sup> born April 19, 1865; married, first, Oliver F. Goodell of Brooklyn, N. Y., April 20, 1887; and, second (?), Dr. John H. Dearborn; died in 1913; 2. James Hardy,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 3, 1866; 3. Hattie Reid,<sup>9</sup> born March 20, 1868; 4. William,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 5, 1869; 5. Susie Kidder,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 3, 1873; died Feb. 6, 1878; 6. Anna Blanchard,<sup>9</sup> born April 29, 1875.

WILLIAM HENRY ROPES;<sup>9</sup> lived in Lynn and Salem; grocer; married, first, Etta —; second, Henrietta Henningren April 25, 1894; child: 1. Bertha M.,<sup>10</sup> born in 1887; married Malcolm H. Merrill May 1, 1904.

<sup>1</sup>Salem then included Beverly, Danvers, Manchester, Marblehead, Peabody, Salem and Wenham, and Saugus comprised what is now Lynn, Lynnfield, Nahant and Saugus.



exhibited upon the walls of the room where the court sat until the Revolution.

At the same court, Mr. John Humphrey, Mr. John Endecott, Capt. Nathaniel Turner, Mr. Thomas Scruggs and Mr. Townshend Bishop were appointed to keep the quarterly court for Salem and Saugus. Captain Turner was a resident of Lynn, a deputy to the general court several sessions, and had commanded the militia from 1633. In 1636 and 1637, he was in command of several expeditions against the Pequot Indians. His house was burned in 1637, and the next year he removed to the new settlement at Quinnipiac (Quilipeake), now New Haven, Conn.

The first session of the quarterly court in Salem was held June 27, 1636. The judges present were Capt. John Endecott, Capt. Nathaniel Turner, Townshend Bishop and Thomas Scruggs. The same magistrates sat at the September and December sessions; and March 28, 1637, the court was presided over by Messrs. Endecott, Humphrey, Bishop and Scruggs. May 15, 1637, the freemen of Salem chose Townshend Bishop, William Hathorne, Robert Moulton and John Holgrave to be assistants to the magistrates; and two days later the general court added Roger Conant to the list of assistants and confirmed William Hathorne. The judges of the court for June, 1637, were Messrs. Endecott, Conant and Hathorne, and for October, Messrs. Endecott, Humphrey, Howe, Conant and Hathorne. At the December session they were Messrs. Endecott, Humphrey, Conant and Hathorne. The judges from Salem were the same as at the sitting for March, 1638. June 8, 1638, the general court chose William Ballard, a farmer, of Lynn, in place of Captain Turner. At the first session of the court, Townshend Bishop and Thomas Scruggs were sworn as commissioners to end small causes.

At the first session of the quarterly court, there were three civil cases to be adjudicated, but no criminal proceedings. The clerk of the court was Ralph Fogg. The trial jury<sup>1</sup> consisted of

<sup>1</sup>The trial jury for the September session of the court were John Black-leach, foreman, Charles Gott, Philip Verrin, Thomas Gardner, Lawrence Leech, Jeffrey Massie and Thomas Smith, all of Salem, and five of Lynn. At the December session, they were Robert Moulton, foreman, Philip Virrin, Daniel Ray, Richard Waterman, Jeffry Massey, Richard Rayment, John Hardy, Peter Palfrey, Roger Conant, Lawrence Leech, John Black and George Williams, all of Salem. The trial jury for March, 1637, court consisted of Roger Conant, foreman, Lawrence Leach, Peter Palfrey, John Woodbury, Daniel Ray and Thomas Reed, all of Salem, Moses Maverick of Marblehead and five others of Saugus. The jury for the June court were Thomas Gardner, foreman, John Woodbury, Peter Palfrey, Thomas Olney, Samuel More and Richard Rayment, all of Salem, and six of Lynn. At the September session, the jury consisted of Robert Moulton, foreman, John Woodbury, Richard Davenport, Peter Palfrey, Edmond Batter, Thomas Olney, Francis Weston, John Balch and Richard Walker, all of Salem, and

Timothy Tomlins, foreman, Jeffrey Massey, Lawrence Leach, Daniel Ray.<sup>1</sup> Richard Waterman, Richard Raymond, Henry

three others of Lynn. At the December session, it consisted of Lawrence Leach, foreman, Richard Davenport, John Balch, William Allen, Richard Brackenbury, Peter Palfrey and John Woodbury, all of Salem, and five of Lynn. When the court came in, Jeffry Massie, Edmund Batter and Anthony Dike were on the jury at this session, but they had been challenged by Mrs. Weston, in the case of William Pester against Francis Weston and his wife Margaret, for defamation.

<sup>1</sup>DANIEL REA,<sup>1</sup> living in Plymouth in 1630, removed to Salem Village; married Bethiah —; died in the spring of 1662; she died in 1663; children: 1. *Joshua*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1629; 2. Bethiah;<sup>2</sup> married, first, Capt. Thomas Lathrop who was killed in the battle of Bloody Brook Sept. 18, 1675; married, second, Joseph Grafton, who died in 1683; married, third, Dea. William Goodhue in 1683; she died in Ipswich Dec. 6, 1688.

JOSHUA REA;<sup>2</sup> husbandman; married Sarah Waters Feb. 26, 1651; she died May 19, 1700; he was living in 1701; children: 1. *Daniel*,<sup>3</sup> born March 30, 1654; 2. Rebecca,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 4, 1656; married, first, Samuel Stevens; he was killed in the battle of Bloody Brook Sept. 18, 1675; married, second, Simon Orne; 3. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 10, 1658; died young; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 3, 1659-60; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born June 4, 1661; married Thomas Haines; 6. Bethiah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 3, 1662-3; married Joseph Gould; 7. *Joshua*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 6, 1664; 8. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born May 23, 1666; 9. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 1, 1668.

DANIEL REA;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; soldier in King Philip's war; married, first, Hephzibah Peabody April 10, 1678; second, Mary (Read), widow of John Tompkins Feb. —, 1708-9; died March 5, 1714-5; his wife Mary married, secondly, Lt. James Putnam March 16, 1719-20; children: 1. Jemima,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 29, 1680; married Nicholas Howard; 2. *Daniel*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 23, 1682; 3. *Zerubbabel*,<sup>4</sup> born May 12, 1684(5?); 4. Hephzibah,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 14, 1687; married Samuel Leach; 5. —<sup>4</sup> (daughter), born in 1690 (?); 6. *Uzziel*,<sup>4</sup> born March —, 1693; 7. Pilgrim,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 30, 1695; died young; 8. Lemuel;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; died, unmarried, in the spring of 1749; 9. Keturah;<sup>4</sup> married William Douglas March 3, 1723-4; 10. —<sup>4</sup>; died — —, 1702-3. JOSHUA REA;<sup>3</sup> married Elizabeth Leach Oct. —, 168—; died in the autumn of 1710; she survived him; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born April 28, 1686; married John Batchelder; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 13, 1687; married John Town Jan. —, 1708; 3. Zerviah,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 1, 1689; living in 1710; 4. *Joshua*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 16, 1691; 5. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born March 28, 1694; published to Richard Foster March 19, 1714-5; 6. John,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 14, 1696; weaver; married Abigail Herrick of Beverly April 22, 1718; 7. —<sup>4</sup>, born April —, 1700; died May —, 1700. JOHN REA;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married, first, Ruth —; she died Sept. 11, 1722; married, second, Mary Houlton Oct. 3, 1723; died in 1731-2; his wife Mary survived him; children: 1. —<sup>4</sup> (son), born — 5, 1691 (?); 2. —<sup>4</sup> (daughter), born Aug. 18, 1692; 3. —<sup>4</sup> (daughter),<sup>4</sup> born — 7, 1694 (?); 4. *Gideon*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 26, 1700; 5. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 26, 1700; died before 1731; 6. Kezia, baptized May 26, 1700; married Timothy Houlton; 7. Emma,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 26, 1700; married Simon Lovett; 8. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 21, 1702; removed to Beverly in 1733; yeoman; married, first, Hannah Brown May 25, 1725; she died in 1732; married, second, Anna (Dodge), widow of Timothy Clements; died March 19, 1750-1; she died Sept. 7, 1751; had children; 9. *Bartholomew*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 5, 1704; 10. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 6, 1707; married Ezekiel Hayward of Beverly Oct. 19, 1725.

DANIEL REA;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Rebecca Griggs of Beverly March 7, 1710-1; she was his wife in 1726; he died before 1746; children: 1. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> born March 4, 1711-2; 2. Pelatiah,<sup>5</sup> born May 11, 1715; 3. Uzziel,<sup>5</sup> born



Freake, Boniface Burton, John Woodbury, Thomas Talmadge,

Sept. 13, 1718; 4. Nathan,<sup>5</sup> born April 20, 1720; 5. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 15, 1723; probably married Stephen Colass of Boston (published Dec. 2, 1748); 6. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born June 7, 1725; probably married John Roundy of Beverly (published Nov. 14, 1747); 7. Emma,<sup>5</sup> born July 11, 1727; unmarried in 1746; 8. Isaiah,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 22, 1729; living in 1746; 9. Euphemia,<sup>5</sup> born March 22, 1733-4; died March 24, 1733-4; 10. Jeremiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 18, 1736; living in 1746. ZERUBBABEL REA;<sup>4</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now Danvers; yeoman; married Margaret Rogers April 20, 1724; died in the winter of 1739-40; she survived him; children: 1. Caleb<sup>5</sup> (twin), born July 17, 1727; lived in Gloucester and Danvers; physician; married, first, Abigail Sargent of Gloucester Nov. 14, 1748; she died Sept. 2, 1749; married, second, Ruth Porter of Wenham; died, of smallpox, at Danvers, Jan. 10, 1760; she married, second, John Proctor; 2. Sarah<sup>5</sup> (twin), born July 17, 1727; married, first, Bartholomew Brown; second, Benjamin Porter; 3. Moses,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 2, 1728; died Oct. 24, 1728; 4. Hephzibah,<sup>5</sup> born June 9, 1730; married Joseph Elson; 5. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 1, 1732; married Ebenezer Nurse; 6. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> born June 14, 1735; married Jonathan Porter; 7. Aaron,<sup>5</sup> born June 24, 1739; died at Gloucester Aug. 24, 1756. UZZIEL REA;<sup>4</sup> husbandman and house carpenter; married Mary Porter Dec. 27, 1720; died Nov. —, 1754; children: 1. Judith,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 6, 1721; married (when she was of Killingly) Joseph Batchelder of Beverly Oct. 30, 1742; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born July 2, 1727; 3. Archelaus,<sup>5</sup> born May 5, 1731, in Danvers. JOSHUA REA;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Mercy Taylor of Beverly March 7, 1715-6; died March —, 1745-6; she survived him; children, baptized in the Second church in Beverly: 1. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 16, 1717-8; died in 1733; 2. Mercy,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 17, 1719; married John Blashfield Feb. 14, 1741-2; 3. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 30, 1721; died Aug. 11, 1721; 4. Joshua,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 2, 1722-3; lived in Beverly and Boxford; married, first, Sarah Prince of Beverly Feb. 19, 1743-4; second, Hannah Peabody Oct. 5, 1777; died in 1784; 5. —;<sup>5</sup> died May 12, 1725; 6. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1726; died before 1746; 7. —;<sup>5</sup> died Jan. 15, 1730-1; 8. James,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 10, 1733; lived in Beverly; married Elizabeth Dodge Sept. 9, 1755; died in 1760; she married, second, Peter Woodbury June 23, 1761, and removed to Amherst, N. H.; 9. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 7, 1733; died before 1746; 10. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 7, 1733; died in 1733; 11. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 16, 1735; died before 1746. GIDEON REA;<sup>4</sup> weaver and husbandman; married, first, Mary Herrick Jan. 21, 1722-3; she died in 1739; married, second, Jane, widow of Benjamin Raymond Nov. 11, 1740; died in the winter of 1749-50; she died in 1787; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born April 14, 1728; married John Roundy; 2. Gideon,<sup>5</sup> born July 10, 1731; died young; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born May 19, 1734; 4. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born July 29, 1736; living in 1757; 5. Gideon;<sup>5</sup> living in 1751. BARTHOLOMEW REA;<sup>4</sup> tailor; married, first, Mary Andrews Feb. 8, 1727-8; second, Mary Clark March 19, 1761; died in 1784; his wife died Feb. 25, 1792; children: 1. Anna,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 30, 1728; married Daniel Marble; 2. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 7, 1732; died in infancy; 3. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 24, 1735; died March 11, 1751; 4. John,<sup>5</sup> born March 18, 1737-8; lived in Danvers; was a carrier of bundles and letters between Salem and Boston in 1781; and died April 20, 1797; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born May 8, 1745; married Daniel Prince.

ARCHELAUS REA;<sup>5</sup> lived in Topsfield and Danvers; yeoman; married Marv Batchelder of Beverly Nov. 6, 1750; died Nov. 5, 1819; children, born in Topsfield: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 20, 1752; 2. Archelaus,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 26, 1752; 3. Caleb,<sup>6</sup> born May 13, 1756; 4. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 12, 1758; 5. Uzziel,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 31, 1763; lived in Salem; tailor; married Elizabeth Nurse of Salem Oct. 18, 1790; she died March 18, 1791; eccentric; he died in Danvers Feb. 6, 1839; 6. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 22, 1766; 7. Anna,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 18, 1770.

John Smith and John Sibley. Messrs. Massey, Leach, Ray, Waterman, Raymond, Woodbury and Sibley belonged in Salem, and the others in Lynn.

Daniel Rea<sup>1</sup> was a young man who had come from Plymouth.

*Richard Raymond*

He had a wife and one or two children. Richard Raymond<sup>1</sup> was of middle age.

After the establishment of the quarterly courts, only two general courts were held each year,—one for elections, in May, and the other for legislation and trials, in October.

ARCHELAUS REA;<sup>6</sup> lived in Danvers until about 1782, when he removed to Salem; blacksmith and subsequently a watch maker and clock repairer; married Mary Cook March 6, 1777; died Dec. 13, 1792; she died March 6, 1808; children: 1. *Archelaus*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 12, 1778; 2. *Mary*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 20, 1780; died June 2, 1800; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 3, 1782; 4. *Frances*,<sup>7</sup> born July 21, 1784; died April 29, 1804; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 26, 1786; died Oct. 10, 1811; 6. *Rosamond*,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 27, 1788; married George Dutch; 7. *Elizabeth*,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 14, 1792; married Stephen W. Shepard.

CAPT. ARCHELAUS REA;<sup>7</sup> lived in Salem, mariner and then agent of the Salem Iron Company; then in Amesbury, as agent of the iron factory there; then in Danvers, at the iron factory; then removed to Roxbury about 1840; married, first, Elizabeth Mason Nov. 10, 1805; she died March 31, 1809; married, second, Maria March Woodbridge April 7, 1814; died in Roxbury Aug. 18, 1864; children, born in Salem: 1. William Archelaus,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 26, 1807; published to Mary F. Wheeler of Boston Oct. 11, 1834; 2. Mason,<sup>8</sup> born March 21, 1809. CAPT. SAMUEL REA;<sup>7</sup> mariner and merchant; married Sarah Barr Aug. 30, 1807; died Sept. 30, 1842; she died, his widow, Nov. 17, 1862; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>8</sup> born July 1, 1808; died Dec. 22, 1809; 2. Mary,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 2, 1809; died Oct. 20, 1810; 3. *Samuel George*,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 17, 1811; 4. *Mary*,<sup>8</sup> born March 17, 1813; died Nov. 20, 1838; 5. George Campbell Smith,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 16, 1815; died March 29, 1820; 6. *Caroline*,<sup>8</sup> born April 10, 1819; died, unmarried, March 9, 1899; 7. *Charles*,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 22, 1824; died July 21, 1830; 8. *George*,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 19, 1825; died at sea, on board the barque Borneo, Feb. 13, 1848.

SAMUEL GEORGE REA;<sup>8</sup> merchant; married Sarah R. Peirce Nov. 1, 1842; she died Jan. 21, 1887; he died Dec. 17, 1890; child: 1. Charles Samuel,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 22, 1844; unmarried; president of the Salem Savings Bank.

<sup>1</sup>Richard Raymond removed to Norwalk, Conn., in 1662, and to Saybrook in 1664; was engaged in coastwise trade with the Dutch and English settlers on Manhattan Island; married Judith —; died at Saybrook in 1692, aged ninety; children: 1. John; lived in Norwalk; married Mary Betts of Norwalk; 2. Bathsheba, baptized July 11, 1637; married Humphrey Coombs; 3. Joshua, baptized March 3, 1639-40; lived in New London, Conn.; married Elizabeth Smith Dec. 10, 1659; died April 24, 1676; she married, second, George Dennis Jan. 26, 1681; 4. Lemuel, baptized Jan. 3, 1640-1; living in 1660; 5. Hannah, baptized Feb. 12, 1642-3; married Oliver Mannerling of New London; 6. Samuel, baptized July 13, 1645; married Mary Smith of New London; 7. Richard, baptized Jan. 2, 1647-8; died in or before 1680; 8. Elizabeth, baptized April 28, 1650; 9. Daniel, baptized April 11, 1653; lived in Lyme, Conn.; married, first, Elizabeth Harris; she died Aug. 10, 1683; married, second, Rebecca (Long) Sage; died in 1696; his wife Rebecca married, thirdly, Samuel Gager of Norwich, Conn.



The first grand jury in the Massachusetts Bay Colony was provided for by the general court March 4, 1634-5. One such jury reported to the court in March and the other in September of each year. They were not only to report misdemeanors, but to "doe any other service of the commonwealth that they shalbe enioyned." The first grand jury met Sept. 1, 1635, and presented about one hundred offences; among the offenders were some of the magistrates.<sup>1</sup> John Holgrave, Daniel Ray and Richard Adams were on this jury in 1637. The first grand jury appearing in the county court at Salem was at the session of the court held Jan. 25, 1641-2. Until that time, apparently, they had reported to the general court.

Thomas Goldthwaite,<sup>2</sup> who was then about twenty-six years of age, from Roxbury, appeared as an inhabitant of Salem July 4, 1636, when he was granted ten acres of land, which was subsequently assigned to him in the North field.

*Thomas Goldthwaite*

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 166.

<sup>2</sup>THOMAS GOLDTHWAITE,<sup>1</sup> born in England about 1610, probably came to New England in 1630, living at first in Roxbury; married, first, Elizabeth —; second, Rachel (Leach), widow of John Sibley; died March —, 1683; his wife Rachel survived him; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 20, 1637; 2. *Mehitable*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 27, 1640; died, unmarried, May 3, 1668; 3. *Elizabeth*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 20, 1642; married John King.

SAMUEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>2</sup> cooper; married Elizabeth Cheever of Charlestown Sept. 6, 1666; died in 1718; she was living in 1722; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 7, 1667; died Nov. —, 1667; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born March 5, 1668-9; 3. *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 14, 1670; died young; 4. *Ezekiel*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 3, 1674; 5. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born in 1677; lived in Boston; mason; member of Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company; married, first, Sarah Hopkins of Boston March 13, 1701; she died Oct. 31, 1715; married, second, Jane (Tawley), widow of John Halsey of Boston (published March 21, 1715-6); she died June 25, 1766; 6. *Nathaniel*,<sup>3</sup> 7. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> married John Nichols Dec. 20, 1710; 8. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> married Thomas Price of Boston Aug. 3, 1713; 9. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born April 9, 1686-7; married Edward Nichols of Topsfield; 10. *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1688-9; probably died young.

SAMUEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>3</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; husbandman and innkeeper; married Mary Thomas Dec. 2, 1697; she died about 1736; he died about 1748; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 21, 1699; married Evan Evans; 2. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 13, 1701; married Henry Newman of Lynn Jan. 6, 1726; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 30, 1702; 4. *Mehitable*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 4, 1706; married Thomas Needham; 5. *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. —, 1708; 6. *Lydia*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 14, 1710; married Gideon Foster; 7. *Rebecca*,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 31, 1715; married Nathaniel Goldthwaite. EZEKIEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>3</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; mason; married Esther Boyce March 20, 1695-6; died in 1761; children: 1. *Esther*,<sup>4</sup> born about 1697; married John Case; 2. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> born about 1700; died, unmarried, in 1778; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born about 1703; 4. *Ezekiel*,<sup>4</sup> born about 1706; lived in Sutton; mariner; married Eunice Cutler of Salem (published Jan. 23, 1730-1); 5. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1709; 6. *David*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1712. NATHANIEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>3</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now

Henry Vane was elected governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony May 25, 1636. He was about twenty-four years of age,

Peabody; husbandman; married Elizabeth Burt Aug. 21, 1705; died about 1732; she was living in 1742; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 1, 1705-6; probably died unmarried; 2. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1707; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 23, 1734-5; 4. Mary;<sup>4</sup> married John Proctor; she probably married, second, Daniel Marble; 5. Sarah;<sup>4</sup> married John Langford April 27, 1740; 6. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup> born about 1717; lived in Danvers; married Sarah Newman of Lynn Jan. 16, 1751; died in 1753.

SAMUEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>4</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; married, first, Mary Pulsifer of Gloucester (published Oct. 24, 1730); and, second, Abigail Proctor of Salem Aug. 22, 1738; his wife Abigail was living in 1762; he probably died in 1772; children: 1. Samuel;<sup>5</sup> probably died at the capitulation of Fort William Henry in 1757; 2. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born in 1738; lived in Danvers; served in the wars of 1756 and 1759 and in the Revolution; married Rebecca Trask July 2, 1770; died in 1778. THOMAS GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>4</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now Peabody; sadler; married, first, Eunice Flint (published July 4, 1730); and, second, Mary — before 1746; died in 1756; children: 1. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> born in 1738, in Voluntown (now Petersham, Mass.); lived in Danvers and Springfield, Mass.; potter; soldier in the war of 1755 and 1756 and in the Revolution; married, first, Lucy Flint of Danvers July 15, 1759; and, second, Lois Stebbins of Springfield Sept. 5, 1765; 2. Eunice;<sup>5</sup> married Isaac Buffum; 3. William,<sup>5</sup> born about 1743; lived in Danvers; potter; served in the Revolution; married Abigail King of Danvers Feb. 28, 1765; he died in 1808; she died about 1820; had children: 4. *James*,<sup>5</sup> born in 1746; 5. *Elijah*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1749; impressed into the British navy from his home, probably underage, and was never heard from; 6. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born in 1752; lived in Beverly; master-mariner; married Sarah Gowing of Lynn Oct. 22, 1772; he died July 21, 1807; 7. Aaron,<sup>5</sup> born in 1755; died at sea. SAMUEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem, in that part now Peabody until 1735, when he removed to Smithfield, R. I.; later lived in Northbridge, Mass.; farmer; married Sarah Reed Jan. 18, 1726; she died May 9, 1787; he died May 8, 1789; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 26, 1727; married Joseph Buxton of Smithfield Feb. 10, 1752; 2. Lois,<sup>5</sup> baptized in 1729; 3. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized May —, 1731; lived in Smithfield; married Hannah —; died about 1800; 4. Stephen,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 7, 1734; lived in Northbridge; married Patience Very; died June 19, 1812; she died Feb. 9, 1826; 5. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born in 1735; lived in Northbridge; soldier of the Revolution; married Mary Goldthwaite of Danvers Jan. 7, 1759; died Dec. 29, 1812; 6. Hannah;<sup>5</sup> married Japhet Taft of Mendon; 7. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 14, 1742, in Smithfield; 8. Jacob,<sup>5</sup> born in 1744, in Smithfield; 9. *Ezekiel*,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 18, 1848, in Smithfield. JOSEPH GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>4</sup> married Mary Batter Oct. 30, 1741; died in 1759; children: 1. Esther,<sup>5</sup> born about 1742; married Abraham Shaw of Danvers Dec. 9, 1759; 2. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born about 1744; married Amos Trask. DAVID GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>4</sup> lived at Salem, Point Shirley and Danvers; married Sarah Batter Jan. 15, 1736; died in 1778; children: 1. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> born about 1737; died in his teens, when about to enter college; 2. John,<sup>5</sup> born in 1739; lived in Danvers; married Anna Girdler Nov. —, 1768; died Jan. 6, 1772; 3. Ezekiel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 18, 1743; died young. NATHANIEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>4</sup> lived in Danvers; married, first, Rebecca Goldthwaite Feb. 18, 1736; and, second, Sarah (Cavendish), widow of Richard Girdler of Marblehead (published May 27, 1749); died in Danvers Dec. —, 1794; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born in 1738; married Joseph Goldthwaite; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born April 19, 1743; married Nathan Upton; 3. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born July 9, 1752; soldier of the Revolution; lived in Danvers; 4. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> born in 1754; killed in the



and had come to Boston the preceding year. He was son of Sir Henry Vane of Hadlow, in Kentshire, England, where he was

battle of Lexington April 19, 1775; 5. George,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 12, 1762; 6. Rebecca,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 24, 1763.

JAMES GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>5</sup> cordwainer; soldier of the Revolution; married Hannah Whittemore of Danvers Jan. 19, 1769; died Jan. 31, 1824; she survived him; children: 1. Mehitable;<sup>6</sup> died, unmarried; 2. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born in 1779; died Sept. —, 1827. EZEKIEL GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>5</sup> lived in Northbridge and Danvers; married Anna Adams of Sutton Dec. 3, 1772; died June 18, 1800; she married, secondly, Capt. Caleb Moulton of Sudbury; children: 1. Ezekiel,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 1, 1774; 2. Joel,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 9, 1776; lived in Salem; baker; died, unmarried, Jan. 1, 1853; 3. Elijah,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 12, 1777; lived in Salem; mariner; died at sea May 3, 1800; 4. Prudence,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 14, 1779; married Jonathan Wilson; 5. Beulah,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 31, 1781; married Stephen B. Dockham; 6. Lucinda,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 16, 1783; married, first, Ezra Dodge; and, second, Stephen Fogg; 7. *Luther*,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 12, 1786, in Northbridge; 8. *Moses*,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 29, 1787, in Danvers; 9. *Willard*,<sup>6</sup> born July 6, 1790, in Northbridge; 10. *Aaron*,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 6, 1793, in Northbridge; 11. Anna,<sup>6</sup> born March 8, 1797; married William Johnson.

LUTHER GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>6</sup> married Hannah Meader Lawrence of Marblehead April 30, 1813; died Oct. 11, 1857; she died March 11, 1865; children: 1. *Luther M.*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 5, 1814; 2. Abigail,<sup>7</sup> born April 22, 1817; married George Baldwin July 7, 1839; died in Malden May 15, 1842; 3. Elizabeth Adams,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 23, 1822; married John W. Rhoades; 4. Lucinda Dodge,<sup>7</sup> born July 16, 1824; married Solomon Varney; 5. Susan Ellen,<sup>7</sup> born May 9, 1826; married John Stewart Oct. 14, 1855; died Oct. —, 1886; 6. Hannah Augusta,<sup>7</sup> born April 2, 1831; married William H. Thomas; 7. *William Johnson*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 12, 1833. MOSES GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>6</sup> married Margaret D. Garney of Marblehead May 31, 1812; died July 13, 1864; she died Nov. 17, 1875; children: 1. Moses,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 18, 1812; lived in Springfield; dry goods merchant; married Elizabeth Barker Wormstead of Marblehead; died July 22, 1877; 2. Margaret,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 7, 1815; married John Stevens of Marblehead; 3. Susan L.,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 1, 1817; married John Gardner; 4. Ann A.,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 8, 1819; married William Lamprell; 5. John,<sup>7</sup> born July 2, 1823; lived in Boston; merchant; married Helen Brown of Boston July 16, 1851; died Jan. 16, 1899; 6. Benjamin F.,<sup>7</sup> born July 1, 1825; lived in Marblehead; married; 7. Joel,<sup>7</sup> born April 4, 1831; lived in Boston; carpet dealer; married Ellen A. Rand March 5, 1857; 8. William Johnson,<sup>7</sup> born May 7, 1834; lived in Marblehead; married Mary A. Pitman of Marblehead May 1, 1862. WILLARD GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>6</sup> lived in Wayland; married Dolly Johnson April 19, 1819; died Feb. 5, 1835; she died Sept. 1, 1852; children, born in Weston: 1. *Willard*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 27, 1820; 2. *George Edward*,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 28, 1822; 3. Dolly Maria,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 10, 1824; married Merritt Cook. AARON GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>6</sup> married Christiana Rose Peabody Nov. 23, 1817; died Jan. 22, 1870; children: 1. Christiana Rose,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 25, 1818; married John Russell Feb. 9, 1842; 2. Amelia P.,<sup>7</sup> born July 26, 1820; married Francis Babbidge; 3. *Aaron*,<sup>7</sup> born March 9, 1822; 4. Edward A.,<sup>7</sup> born April 26, 1824; married Martha Newhall; died Sept. 9, 1875; 5. Ezra,<sup>7</sup> born April 13, 1828; died, unmarried, in Japan Jan. 24, 1848, "from the hardships of his imprisonment, being one of the crew of the American ship *Ladoga*"; 6. Francis,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 10, 1830; lived in Cambridge; married Amelia R. Allen; 7. *Charles*,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 13, 1832; 8. George,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 4, 1838; died in infancy.

LUTHER M. GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>7</sup> married Eliza Ann Todd Dec. 25, 1836; children: 1. —<sup>8</sup> (son); 2. Lizzie.<sup>8</sup> WILLIAM JOHNSON GOLDTHWAITE;<sup>7</sup>

born in 1612. The father was knighted by King James I, at the age of seventeen, and represented Carlisle in parliament. His abilities attracted the notice of the court, and he became cofferor in the household of Prince Charles, whose favor he subsequently gained by advocacy of the King's extravagant demands for money. In 1630, he was a privy councilor and comptroller of the household, and an ambassador to the kings of Denmark, Sweden and the German princes in alliance with them. He was so much in the favor of the king, that, in 1633, he attended the latter to Scotland, and entertained him and his suite at magnificent Raby Castle, which he then owned, being in the possession of a large fortune.<sup>1</sup>

Henry Vane, the son, was educated at Westminster school, living at Charing Cross, and, about 1628, entered Magdalen College, Oxford. He did not graduate, as he was appointed to a position in the service of the English ambassador to Vienna. He also resided for some time in Geneva and in France. While he was abroad, he became interested in Calvinism, and brought back to England strong sentiments which were adverse to the religion and government of his native land. His father was greatly displeased, and the king, hearing of young Henry's deflection, appointed Bishop Laud to controvert his Puritanic ideas. This was tried, but without favorable results.

The court of Charles I had no attraction for him, and he had tired of the continent. His friend, Roger Williams, had gone to

married Sarah Holt Nourse June 20, 1858; was killed by a fall from a building Dec. 9, 1875; children: 1. Georgianna Bagley,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 26, 1860; died April 17, 1864; 2. Lawrence Winslow,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 27, 1861; married Rosa Foster Gray; 3. Elizabeth Holt,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 18, 1866; pastor of the Universalist Church in East Calais, Vt.; 4. Mabel Johnson,<sup>8</sup> born April 13, 1875; married Horace O. Southwick of Peabody in 1898. WILLARD GOLDTHWAITE,<sup>7</sup> carpet dealer; married Martha Brown Oct. 19, 1848; she died Dec. 29, 1889; he died Sept. 1, 1893; child: 1. Willie,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 14, 1851; died Dec. 14, 1851. GEORGE EDWARD GOLDTHWAITE,<sup>7</sup> married Sophronia E. Smith Jan. 27, 1853; died Nov. 12, 1913; children: 1. Mariella,<sup>8</sup> born April 23, 1854; 2. Wilbur,<sup>8</sup> born May 8, 1855; died June 19, 1882. AARON GOLDTHWAITE,<sup>7</sup> married Mary Upton; he died Feb. 11, 1885; she died Jan. 4, 1892; children: 1. *Edward Augustus*,<sup>8</sup> born June 1, 1847; 2. William Summers,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. —, 1851; lived in Boston; married Annie Dalton of Salem Sept. 27, 1879; 3. Mary Abby.<sup>8</sup> CHARLES GOLDTHWAITE,<sup>7</sup> married Mary E. Claridge; died April 27, 1885; child: 1. Charles Summer,<sup>8</sup> born in 1857; lives in Peabody; married Ida May Berry Dec. 1, 1880.

EDWARD AUGUSTUS GOLDTHWAITE,<sup>8</sup> married Isa M. Paine Nov. 12, 1873; children: 1. Bessie Florence,<sup>9</sup> born April 21, 1874; 2. Jennie Leslie,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 3, 1877.

<sup>1</sup>In 1639, Sir Henry Vane was appointed treasurer of the king's household and afterward principal secretary of state for life. These positions he lost, a few years later, because he was opposed to the Earl of Strafford, the tool of the king. Parliament, by express declaration, disapproved of the king's conduct toward the knight, and, in 1645, recommended him to a baronetcy.





SIR HENRY VANE.

America; and another, Hugh Peter, was preparing to go. He concluded to go to New England, also; and sailed from London about Aug. 10, 1635, arriving at Boston Oct. 3, 1635. His manners were of the cavalier type and winsome, and his deep-brown flowing locks of hair added to his other attractions.

He had gained wide knowledge of and had great interest in the colonization of New England. Although he possessed deep thoughtfulness, strong imagination, bravery and good judgment, many thought that he was visionary, because his ideas were so far in advance of their time. He believed strongly in what was long afterwards termed government of, by and for the people.

His ideas of government and religion, his grace of manner and speech, his family and means, and more than all his enthusiasm, charmed the people in the colony, who, in spite of his lack of years, elected him governor the following May.

About seven weeks later, July 9th, the young governor visited Salem.<sup>1</sup> It was a great day for the town. This young, unmarried courtly gentleman made a deep impression wherever he went.

<sup>1</sup>Under this date, in his Journal, John Winthrop wrote: "The governour, &c. went to Salem."

Unrestrained in his manner and in full sympathy with his constituents he must have appealed to all classes of Puritans.

He probably came to Salem at other times, and made many friends. His stay in New England was brief, however. Disputes in religion became frequent, and he grew weary of his office towards the end of the year. In December, he had occasion to visit England on business, and requested the court to permit him to resign his office. They opposed it so pathetically that he burst into tears and declared that he would stay in Massachusetts though his estate was ruined. He finally told them that he thought that he himself, as he tolerated the views of Ann Hutchinson, was the cause of much of the religious dissension among the people, and that he ought to go on that account. The churches, however, would not agree to his resignation; and he consented to complete his term.

After his term of office expired, Aug. 3, 1637, he sailed for England. He left behind pleasant memories and deep regrets for his departure. Roger Williams called him "truly noble." John Milton, the great poet of liberty, was contemporary with Governor Vane, to whom he inscribed the following sonnet:—

*To Sir HENRY VANE, the younger.*

VANE, young in years, but in sage council old,  
 Than whom, a better senator ne'er held  
 The helm of Rome, when *gowns* not arms repell'd  
 The fierce Epirot and the African bold;  
 Whether to fettle peace, or to unfold  
 The drift of hollow-states, hard to be spell'd;  
 Then to advise how war may, best upheld,  
 More by her two main nerves, *iron and gold*,  
 In all her equipage: *befides to know*  
 Both spiritual pow'r and civil, what *each means*,  
 What severs each, thou hast learn'd, *which few have done*:  
 The bounds of either sword *to thee we owe*:  
 Therefore on thy firm hand religion leans  
 In peace and reckons thee her eldest son.

In 1640, Henry Vane became associated with Sir William Russell in the office of treasurer of the navy, and, with the approbation of Cromwell, succeeded him upon his death, in 1643. His salary was thirty thousand pounds a year, but he refused to receive more than two thousand pounds. He was elected a member of parliament in June, 1640, and was knighted the same year by Charles I. He became conspicuous during the stormy period of the Civil War between the Commonwealth and the Protectorate, as a consistent champion of pure parliamentary



government. Next to Cromwell, he is said to have been the foremost personage in England.<sup>1</sup>

In 1641, he carried to the House of Lords the articles of impeachment against Archbishop Laud, and a few months later made a masterly speech upon Episcopacy. In 1643, he was nominated one of the Assembly of Divines. In September of that year, he was sent by parliament on a commission into Scotland, and to him was given the chief credit of producing the famous articles of covenant, which he signed next to Cromwell. Early in 1645, he was a commissioner from parliament at the treaty of Uxbridge, and also at the Isle of Wight.

He fell out with Oliver Cromwell, and subsequently organized a party against Richard Cromwell. In 1659, the long-parliament constituted him one of the council of state, and the first of seven commissioners of the admiralty. In October of that year, he was one of a sub-committee of six, appointed to consider a form of government for the three countries as a commonwealth.

Charles II came to the throne in 1662, and Sir Henry Vane was arrested as one of those that caused the death of Charles I. The charge was based upon his acts in parliament in 1640, as burger for the town of Kingston-upon-Hull. His trial was a farce, his conviction was upon the weakest of charges and evidence, and he was beheaded on Tower Hill, London, June 14, 1662. Richard Baxter was preaching in London at the time of the execution, and probably spoke from personal knowledge when he said, "No man could die with greater appearance of a gallant resolution and fearlessness than he did, insomuch that the manner of his death procured him more applause than all the actions of his life."<sup>2</sup>

John Talby lived in Salem in 1636. His wife was named Dorothy; and for frequently laying hands on her husband, to the danger of his life, and contemning the authority of the court, she was sentenced by the Salem court June 27, 1637, to be chained to a post; being allowed to "come to the place of god's worship," until she repented. They had a daughter Difficulty baptized here Dec. 25, 1636. The mother was convicted of the murder of the child, and hanged Dec. 6, 1638. Mr. Talby was living in Salem in 1654.

At a town meeting, July 11, 1636, John Talby was granted an acre house lot "next to the Marshalls," and Benjamin Felton

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, series I, volume 5, page 171.

<sup>2</sup>The American Pilgrim's Way in England, London, 1907, contains an interesting article on Sir Henry Vane, and his portrait, and an engraving of Raby Castle, in Durham, Vane's house at Hampstead, his coffin in Shipbourne Church and a colored view of the shaded walk, where, it is said, his headless ghost still walks on the night of each anniversary of his death.

was granted a similar lot next to Mr. Talby's. At the same time Thomas Moore, son of widow Moore, and his wife were received as inhabitants. She<sup>1</sup> was widow of Thomas Moore, and pursued the vocation of a midwife.

In the summer of 1636, a ship of one hundred and twenty tons burden was built at Marblehead. It was named *Desire*. Among the articles of its outfit were the following, donated from the bark *Warwick* or its owners: three falcons and one falconet, weighing thirty-eight and three-quarters hundred weight, with the old carriages, valued at twenty-one pounds, five shillings and ten pence; an old poop lanthorn and a small crow of iron, valued at seven shillings and six pence; two spindles for vanes, a pump bolt and a wooden brake, valued at two shillings and two pence; a small anchor stock, a pistol barrel and three small tackle hooks, valued at five shillings and six pence; a copper funnel, two sponge staves, a rammier and ladle, valued at eleven shillings; eleven falcon shot and a small bell, valued at seven shillings; and a small anchor, valued at two pounds.<sup>2</sup> The falcon was a kind of cannon, which threw a projectile of one pound in weight, and the falconet, less than half a pound. Capt. William Peirse was appointed commander of the vessel. He was no stranger to this region.

In the summer of 1637, Captain Peirse went on a cruise to the West Indies, taking a cargo of dry fish and strong liquors, and fifteen boys and two women, who had been taken captive in the Pequot war. These captives were to be carried to Bermuda and probably sold as slaves, but he passed that island, and made Providence Isle in the West Indies.<sup>3</sup> The return cargo consisted of cotton, tobacco, negroes, etc., from Providence Isle and salt from Tortuga. Captain Peirse "met there," says Winthrop, two men-of-war, set forth by the lords, etc., of Providence with letters of mart, who had taken divers prizes from the Spaniard, and many negroes.<sup>4</sup> It was a number of these negroes, probably, that Captain Peirse secured to transport to New England, as a part of his cargo. Although there is no express statement that the Indians were carried to the West Indies and sold as slaves, and the

<sup>1</sup>Mrs. Moore lived here as late as 1668. Thomas Moore, the son, married Martha —, who was called "sister" by Christopher Youngs of Wenham; and removed to Southold, L. I., about 1653. Their children were baptized in Salem, as follows: 1. Martha, Oct. 21, 1639; 2. Thomas, Oct. 21, 1639; 3. Benjamin, Aug. 2, 1640; 4. Nathaniel, July 3, 1642; 5. Hannah, Dec. 29, 1644; 6. Elizabeth, Jan. 31, 1646-7; 7. Jonathan, June 3, 1649; 8. Mary, Dec. 15, 1650.

<sup>2</sup>Journal of John Winthrop, volume I, page 193.

<sup>3</sup>Journal of John Winthrop, volume I, page 234. See letter from John Winthrop to Governor Bradford, dated July 28, 1637, in *History of Plymouth Colony* by William Bradford, page 429.

<sup>4</sup>Journal of John Winthrop, volume I, page 254.



negroes were brought here for the same end, it is generally so understood. If it is so, then it was the beginning of the slavery system in New England. This cargo arrived here Feb. 26, 1638.

The attitude of the government here relative to slavery was expressed in the Body of Liberties, prepared by Nathaniel Ward, and adopted by the general court in 1641, as the code of laws for the colony, as follows:—

There shall never be any bond slaverie, villinage or Captivitie amongst us unles it be lawfull Captives taken in just warres, and such strangers as willingly selle themselves or are sold to us. And these shall haue all the liberties and Christian usages which the law of god established in Israell concerning such persons doeth morally require. This exempts none from servitude who shall be Judged thereto by Authoritie.<sup>1</sup>

Dec. 13, 1636, the general court ordered that no ballast should be taken from the shore in each town without leave from the townsmen.

At the same session of the court the first tariff law was passed. It applied to purchasers from vessels of fruit, spices, sugar, wine, strong water and tobacco, brought from "beyond the seas." If the goods were purchased for consumption the tariff was one-sixth of the cost or value, and if for retailing it was one-third. The reason given for the law was the prevention of immoderate expense of provisions brought from abroad. Wine for public use of the church was excepted.

Dec. 20, 1636, the town granted to Mr. Hathorne "one howse lott of an acre on this side the Rocks towards the Mill being the sixt lott from the Marshalls howse."

<sup>1</sup>The Body of Liberties, first published in the Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society, third series, volume VIII, page 216, section 91.

## CHAPTER XX.

### FISHING AND SHIP BUILDING.



A LARGE number of new settlers are mentioned in the records of Salem in 1636 for the first time. Among them was William Alford,<sup>1</sup> who came, in 1634, from London. He was one of the Skinners' Company of the City of London, an association of furriers and skin dressers established under royal charter granted by Edward III about the middle of the fourteenth century. Mr. Alford was a merchant here. Another was Robert Allen,<sup>2</sup> who lived in that part of Salem which became Manchester. John Barber<sup>3</sup> was a carpenter by trade. John Bushnell<sup>4</sup> was a glazier, and came in the Hopewell in 1635, at the age of twenty-one. Hugh Browne<sup>5</sup> was a fisherman. Thomas Chubb,<sup>6</sup> a carpenter, was born in Crewkern, Somersetshire, England, about 1608; he was of Dorchester, Mass., in 1631, and removed to Salem in 1636, living on

*John Barber*

<sup>1</sup>William Alford married, first, Mary — before 1636; second, Ann —; died Jan. 11, 1677; children: 1. Nathaniel, baptized March 21, 1637; perhaps died before 1677; 2. Samuel, baptized Feb. 17, 1638-9; 3. Bethiah, baptized June 26, 1642; 4. Elisha; died before 1677; left a widow; 5. Mary; married, first, Peter Butler; second, Hezekiah Usher; third, Samuel Nowell; she survived them all, and died Aug. 14, 1693; 6. Elizabeth; 7. John, born Nov. 29, 1658; died when two months old.

<sup>2</sup>Robert Allen removed from Manchester to New London, Conn., in March, 1651, and from thence to Norwich before 1662. He returned to New London. His children were as follows: 1. John, baptized May 22, 1642; married Elizabeth Gager Dec. 24, 1668; 2. Sarah, baptized May 22, 1642; married George Geer; 3. Mary, baptized Nov. 19, 1648; married Thomas Parke; 4. Hannah; married Thomas Rose; 5. Deborah; married John Gager.

<sup>3</sup>John Barber was "late of Salem" in 1653, when he sold land here.

<sup>4</sup>John Bushnell married Jane —, and removed to Boston before 1652.

<sup>5</sup>Hugh Browne, with his wife, lived in Salem as late as 1641.

<sup>6</sup>The wife of Thomas Chubb was named Avis, 1649-1661; and he died Oct. 17, 1688. They had a daughter Deliverance and probably a son Thomas, who lived in Beverly.



Cape Ann Side, which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668. William Comins was here a short time, and disappeared about 1642. Nicholas Draper lived here only a few years, living in that part of Salem which is now Beverly. Isaac Davis came here from England without his wife. June 6, 1637, the general court ordered that he be sent to her in England; and the town of Salem was ordered to have it done. Accordingly, Dec. 31, 1638, the town appointed Samuel Archer and William Allen to collect the claims due to Davis and sell the property which belonged to him, and with the money received thereby to pay the charge for his passage and his debts as far as it would go.

The most important settler this year was William Browne,<sup>1</sup> son of Francis Browne of Brundish, Suffolk County, England. He was born in England

*William Browne*

<sup>1</sup>HON. WILLIAM BROWNE<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; merchant; judge of the county court, representative, assistant and one of the council of Andros; married, first, Mary Young, who came to America with him; she died in 1638; married, second, Sarah Smith of Wenham; she died Feb. 10, 1668; he died Jan. 20, 1687-8; children: 1. *William*,<sup>2</sup> born April 14, 1639; 2. John,<sup>2</sup> born Oct. —, 1641; died in 1669; 3. Joseph,<sup>2</sup> H. C., 1666; married Hannah Brenton; she died Sept. 14, 1676; he died, while preaching in Charlestown, under a call, May 9, 1678; 4. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born July 31, 1644; died in 1655; 5. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 28, 1646; died before 1687-8, probably unmarried; 6. *Benjamin*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1648; 7. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> born Dec. 23, 1649; married Thomas Dean of Boston in 1665; 8. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 4, 1651; died young; 9. James,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 3, 1653; died young; 10. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 28, 1656-7; married Wait Winthrop of Boston before 1687; died June 14, 1690; 11. James,<sup>2</sup> born Dec. 28, 1658; died Aug. —, 1659.

MAJ. WILLIAM BROWNE;<sup>2</sup> merchant; representative, member of governor's council, judge of court of general sessions and of the court of common pleas; married, first, Hannah Corwin Dec. 29, 1664; she died Nov. 21, 1692; married, second, widow Rebecca Bayley of Boston April 26, 1694; died Feb. 14, 1715-6, having made many public bequests in his will; his wife Rebecca survived him, and died June —, 1736; children: 1. William,<sup>3</sup> born July 28, 1666; died Oct. 24, 1666; 2. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born March 16, 1667-8; died June 30, 1668; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 8, 1669; 4. William,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 5, 1671; died Sept. 18, 1671; 5. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 21, 1672; 6. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 10, 1674; died before 1715; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized March —, 1677; died young; 8. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 27, 1679; married Benjamin Lynde; 9. William,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1681; died before 1715; 10. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 9, 1681; died before 1715; 11. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 6, 1683; died before 1715; 12. Mercy,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 22, 1684; died before 1715. CAPT. BENJAMIN BROWNE;<sup>2</sup> merchant and esquire; married Mary Hicks of Charlestown in 1686; she came from England, and died before himself; he died Dec. 7, 1708, leaving an estate of thirty thousand pounds; he made many public bequests in his will; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 10, 1698-9; died Aug. 6, 1700; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. —, 1700; died young.

COL. SAMUEL BROWNE;<sup>3</sup> merchant and esquire; representative, member of the governor's council and judge of the court of general sessions and of the court of common pleas; married, first, Eunice Turner March 19, 1695-6; she died before 1706; married, second, Abigail Keech of Boston Feb. 21,

March 1, 1608. His wife Mary came with him. He was a merchant, became a judge and statesman and a man of wealth and influence. Probably he was the richest person in Salem in the early days. Harvard College received from him valuable financial assistance in its struggle to become an established institution; and

1705-6; she died Feb. 8, 1725; he died in the spring of 1731; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Jan. 4, 1701-2; died young; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born April 7, 1708; 3. *William*,<sup>4</sup> born May 7, 1709; 4. John,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 23, 1713; died young; 5. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 19, 1715-6; died in 1737; 6. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 10, 1716-7; died young; 7. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 30, 1719. CAPT. JOHN BROWNE;<sup>3</sup> merchant and esquire; representative and judge of the court of general sessions; married, first, Sarah Burroughs of Boston April 21, 1698; she died Nov. 24, 1715; married, second, Mary, widow of Capt. Roger Plaisted of Berwick; died April 14, 1719; made public bequests in his will; his wife Mary survived him, and returned to Berwick; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 12, 1698-9; died before 1719; 2. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 27, 1701; married Col. Ichabod Plaisted; 3. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> born July 25, 1706; 4. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 30, 1709; died young; 5. William,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 15, 1711; esquire; married Mary Frost Dec. 13, 1733; she was his wife in 1740; he died in the spring of 1755; had no children; 6. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> baptized Feb. 28, 1713-4; probably died young; 7. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 4, 1715; probably died young.

SAMUEL BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> H. C., 1727; merchant and esquire; married Katharine Winthrop of Boston; died Nov. 26, 1743; his estate was valued at upwards of twenty-one thousand pounds; his wife survived him and married, secondly, Col. Epes Sargent of Gloucester Aug. 10, 1744; Colonel Sargent removed to Salem; children: 1. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 27, 1736-7; esquire; representative, judge of the superior court and one of the mandamus council; colonel in the militia; resided in England during the Revolution; governor of Bermuda; loyalist, his estate in Salem being confiscated by the colonial government; 2. Anne,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 17, 1738; died young; 3. Abigail;<sup>5</sup> married Joseph Blaney. HON. WILLIAM BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> H. C., 1729; built the famous mansion on Folly Hill; judge of the court of general sessions, representative and member of the governor's council; married, first, Mary, daughter of Gov. William Burnet of Boston Nov. 14, 1737, in New York (see *The Essex Antiquarian*, volume XIII, page 160B), when she was fourteen; she died Aug. 1, 1745; married, second, Mary French of New Brunswick, N. J., before 1749; she died in Beverly in 1761; he died April 27, 1763; children: 1. William Burnet,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 7, 1738; esquire; lived in King William County, Va.; married Judith Walker Carter of Virginia in 1764; she was his wife in 1773; 2. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 5, 1739; died before 1763; 3. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 7, 1740; died in 1762; 4. Thomas,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 7, 1742; died about 1760; 5. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. —, 1743-4; died in Virginia, unmarried, in 1770; 6. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born July —, 1745; died in 1756; 7. Philip,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 29, 1750; 8. Francis,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 30, 1752; died in 1756; 9. Ann;<sup>5</sup> lived in New York City. COL. BENJAMIN BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> H. C., 1725; esquire; representative; married Eunice Turner June 19, 1729; died Feb. 3, 1749-50; she married, secondly, Nathaniel Balston, Esq., of Boston Sept. 5, 1751; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born July 12, 1730; died about 1750; 2. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 13, 1731; married, first, Capt. Ichabod Plaisted; he died Dec. —, 1755; married, second, Timothy Fitch of Boston about 1770; she lived in Medford, his widow, in 1792, and died about July, 1799; 3. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 4, 1733; probably died young; 4. John,<sup>5</sup> born July 10, 1735; merchant and esquire; lived in Boston; married Martha — before 1780; they were living in Boston in 1785.



his family for four generations continued to thus bestow its philanthrophies. Another settler was John Alderman,<sup>1</sup> who came from Dorchester to Salem with his wife Jane, apparently somewhat earlier.

*John Alderman*

Jeffry Estie,<sup>2</sup> probably born in the parish of Freston, Suffolk County, England, in 1587, was the eldest son of Christopher and Ann (Arnold) Easty, and came to Salem with his wife Margaret

*Isaac Foote*

and children, Mary, aged eleven, and Isaac, aged nine. Pasco Foote,<sup>3</sup> a fisherman, came in 1636 from Bedfordshire, England. Edmund Grover was born about 1600,

<sup>1</sup>John Alderman died Aug. —, 1657. Apparently alone in the world, and having acquired a considerable estate, especially in live stock, he displayed in his will a real philanthropy for that time in giving his best cow to Rev. Mr. Norris of Salem, and a cow each to Rev. John Eliot, the Apostle to the Indians, at Natick, the Indians he preached to, Mr. Thacher of Marblehead, Rev. Mr. Whiting of Lynn, Rev. Mr. Walton of Marblehead, and Rev. Mr. Cobbet of Ipswich. One of his heifers he gave to Dea. John Horne of the Salem church.

<sup>2</sup>Jeffry Estie removed to Huntington, Suffolk County, Long Island, in 1651; married Margaret Pote (Pett) in Freston May 29, 1609; died, Jan. 4, 1657; children: 1. Mary, baptized at Freston Feb. 17, 1625; 2. Isaac, baptized Nov. 17, 1627; cooper; lived in Salem until after 1653, when he removed to Topsfield; married Mary Towne, who became a victim of the witchcraft delusion, being executed Sept. 22, 1692; died in Topsfield in 1712; 3. Catherine; married Henry Scudder of Huntington.

<sup>3</sup>PASCO FOOTE<sup>1</sup> lived here, except from 1649 to 1652; died Nov. 28, 1670; children, baptized in Salem Feb. 6, 1652-3: 1. John;<sup>2</sup> probably died young; 2. Malachi;<sup>2</sup> probably died young; 3. Samuel;<sup>2</sup> lived in Salem in 1698; 4. Elizabeth;<sup>2</sup> married George Birch; 5. Mary;<sup>2</sup> unmarried in 1670; 6. Isaac;<sup>2</sup> 7. Pasco;<sup>2</sup> 8. Abigail;<sup>2</sup> married George Early.

ISAAC FOOTE;<sup>2</sup> fisherman; married Abigail Jeggles Dec. 2, 1668; died in 1741; she survived him; children: 1. Isaac,<sup>3</sup> born April 4, 1670; died last of June, 1670; 2. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 21, 1671; unmarried in 1734; 3. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born April 29, 1673; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized April —, 1675; married Nathaniel Felton; 5. Malachi,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 11, 1680; 6. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 7, 1682; died young; 7. Pasco,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 2, 1684; 8. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1685-6; 9. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1691-2; lived in Manchester, unmarried, in 1734. PASCO FOOTE;<sup>2</sup> mariner; lived in Salem until about 1676, when he went to Newfoundland, and afterward to New London, Conn.; married, first, Martha Ward Dec. 2, 1668; second, Margaret Stallion Nov. 30, 1678, at Killingworth; died about 1685; she married, secondly, James Haynes in 1688; children: 1. Malachi,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 18, 1669; 2. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 14, 1671-2; 3. Pasco,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 1, 1674.

SAMUEL FOOTE;<sup>3</sup> shoreman; married Mary Palmer Nov. 12, 1696; died in 1741 (?); she was his widow in 1749; children: Isaac,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 18, 1697; 2. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born May 13, 1700; 3. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born March 15, 1703;

and lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Beverly.<sup>1</sup> His house was on the road leading to Draper's point, now Beckford Street.

4. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born March 15, 1703; married Timothy Mansfield; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 13, 1707; married John Short; 6. Malachi,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1709; 7. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 16, 1710; married Joseph Mansfield; 8. Pasco,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 13, 1714; mariner; living in 1751. MALACHI FOOTE,<sup>3</sup> shoreman, and later gunner in Boston; removed to Boston about 1736; married Elizabeth Marsters Dec. 13 (17?), 1710; children: 1. Malachi,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 18, 1711; married Ruth Jones Sept. 6, 1733; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 13, 1715; 3. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 2, 1717; shipwright; lived in Boston in 1777; married Elizabeth Peirce March 3, 1739. THOMAS FOOTE,<sup>3</sup> fisherman; married Sarah Ellis Dec. 2, 1708; died in 1714; she survived him; child: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 14, 1710; married Samuel Dodd of Marblehead Sept. 27, 1726.

ISAAC FOOTE,<sup>4</sup> mariner; living in 1749; married Mary Fowles Oct. 17, 1722; children: 1. *Enoch*,<sup>5</sup> 2. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 2, 1727. SAMUEL FOOTE,<sup>4</sup> mariner; married, first, Elizabeth Britton Aug. 1, 1723; second, Elizabeth Messervy Oct. 6, 1745; he died in 1759; she was his widow in 1779; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 17, 1727-8; probably died young; 2. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 17, 1727-8; probably died young; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 24, 1729; probably died young; 4. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 27, 1730; probably died young; 5. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 3, 1732; probably died young; 6. *Pasco*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 2, 1734-5; 7. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1747; living in 1759; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 20, 1750-1; probably died young.

ENOCH FOOTE,<sup>5</sup> lived in Andover; married Ruth Ingalls of Andover March 8, 1747-8; died in 1764; she survived him; children, born in Andover: 1. Enoch,<sup>6</sup> born June 11, 1748; 2. *Caleb*,<sup>6</sup> born July —, 1750. PASCO FOOTE,<sup>5</sup> married, first, Mary Tapley May 9, 1753; second, Mary Mascoll; died before 1805; she died, his widow, March 23, 1809; children: 1. ———<sup>6</sup> (son); mariner; 2. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> married George Southward; 3. Mary,<sup>6</sup> married James Clearage.

CALEB FOOTE,<sup>6</sup> served in the army of the Revolution and as privateersman, being a prize-master; prisoner in Forten prison, England, 1778-1780 (see Essex Institute Historical Collections, volume 26, page 90); married Mary Deadman Feb. 13, 1775; died in 1788; she died, his widow, Nov. 2, 1834; children: 1. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 19, 1776; 2. *Caleb*,<sup>7</sup> born July —, 1778; 3. John,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 2, 1788.

CALEB FOOTE,<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Martha West Jan. 3, 1802; died at sea in 1812; child: 1. *Caleb*,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 28, 1803.

CALEB FOOTE,<sup>8</sup> editor and a proprietor of the Salem Gazette; representative and postmaster; married Mary Wilder White Oct. 21, 1835; died June 17, 1894, aged ninety-one; children: 1. Eliza Dwight,<sup>9</sup> born July 10, 1836; 2. Henry Wilder,<sup>9</sup> born June 2, 1838; rector of King's Chapel, in Boston; died in 1889; 3. William O. White,<sup>9</sup> born March 31, 1841; 4. Martha West,<sup>9</sup> born March 20, 1842; 5. Mary Wilder,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 20, 1843; married John B. Tileston of Milton; 6. Arthur,<sup>9</sup> born March 5, 1853; musician; lives in Brookline; married Kate G. Knowlton July 7, 1880.

<sup>1</sup>EDMUND GROVER<sup>1</sup> had a wife in 1649; and died June 11, 1682. Children: 1. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1628; 2. Nehemiah,<sup>2</sup> born about 1640; lived in Beverly; married Ruth Haskell of Gloucester Dec. 2, 1674; died Feb. 12, 1693-4; she died, his widow, Nov. 26, 1714; had children; 3. Naomi,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 17, 1646; 4. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 17, 1646; living in 1660; 5. Lydia,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 17, 1646; living in 1660; 6. Deborah,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 26, 1648; married John Bennett in 1671.



He gave the homestead to his son Nehemiah Grover in 1677. Roger Haskell,<sup>1</sup> born about 1613, was a farmer on Bass River Side (now Beverly). Robert Isbell was a carpenter, and with his wife Ann lived in that part of Salem which became Manchester in

*Edmond grover*

*Robt Leech*

1645. Robert Leech<sup>2</sup> lived in the Manchester part of Salem. William Marston lived here only a short time, and removed to Hampton in 1637. Thomas Marston

was about eighteen years of age in 1636; he removed to Hampton in or soon after 1637, being probably unmarried. Robert Morgan<sup>3</sup> lived on Cape Ann Side (Beverly).

Mrs. Margaret Pease<sup>4</sup> was probably widow of Robert Pease, and is said to have come from Great Baddow, Essex County, England.<sup>4</sup> With her son Robert, she sailed in the Francis

*Robt Morgan*

JOHN GROVER;<sup>2</sup> lived in the Beverly part of Salem; married Sarah Barney May 13, 1656; died Aug. 2, 1716; children: 1. Abigail;<sup>3</sup> lived in Beverly; 2. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 28, 1659; died Nov. 26, 1662; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 9, 1662; married Azariah Smith May 27, 1662.

<sup>1</sup>Roger Haskell had brothers William and Mark and sister Joanne, and called John Stone "father in law"; married Elizabeth Hardy; he died June —, 1667; children: 1. Elizabeth; married William Dodge; 2. Roger; lived in Beverly; married Hannah Woodbury Dec. 21, 1680; 3. Josiah, born about 1659; married Sarah Griggs of Gloucester Nov. 22, 1682; died May 9, 1684; 4. Samuel; living in 1667; 5. Hannah; living in 1667; 6. Sarah; living in 1667; 7. Mark; living in 1667; 8. John; husbandman; lived in Salem in 1668; 9. William; husbandman; living in 1668.

<sup>2</sup>Robert Leech died in the summer of 1674; wife Alice survived him, and married, secondly, — Elwell before 1691. His sons Robert and Samuel were living in 1691.

<sup>3</sup>ROBERT MORGAN<sup>1</sup> married Margaret Norman; died in the spring of 1673; she survived him, and died before 1694; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 23, 1650; 2. Luke,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 23, 1650; died before 1673; 3. Joseph,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 23, 1650; died before 1694, without issue; 4. Benjamin,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 23, 1650; died before 1694, without issue; 5. Robert,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 15, 1650; died before 1694, without issue; 6. Bethiah,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 29, 1653; married Samuel Weed.

SAMUEL MORGAN;<sup>2</sup> lived on Cape Ann Side (Beverly); married Elizabeth Dixy Dec. 15, 1658; living in 1694; children: 1. Aaron,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 24, 1663; 2. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; 3. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1666; 4. Robert,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 8, 1670; married Ann Ober July 4, 1692; died July 16, 1762, aged ninety-three; 5. John,<sup>3</sup> baptized July —, 1673.

<sup>4</sup>MRS. MARGARET PEASE<sup>1</sup> died in the winter of 1644-5; child: 1. Robert,<sup>2</sup> born about 1607.

ROBERT PEASE<sup>2</sup> married Marie —; died in the winter of 1644-5; she survived him; children: 1. Robert,<sup>3</sup> born about 1628; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> born about 1630; 3. Abraham,<sup>3</sup> living in 1645; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1643; married Mary Hobbs March 15, 1667; living in 1673; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1643; 6. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1643.

for America from the port of Ipswich in April, 1634, and landed

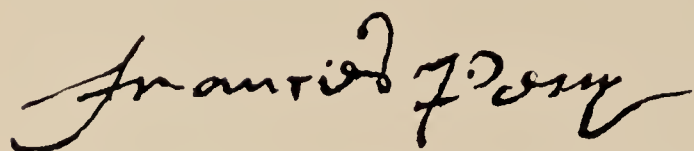
ROBERT PEASE;<sup>3</sup> weaver; married Sarah — before 1660; she was his wife in 1705; he was living in 1713, having been cowherd, etc., from 1644 to 1704, at least; children: 1. Bethiah,<sup>4</sup> born June 11, 1660; died first week in November, 1667; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 20, 1662; 3. Deliverance,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 6, 1664; 4. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 15, 1666-7; 5. Robert,<sup>4</sup> born March 25, 1669; 6. Isaac,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 30, 1671; 7. Bethiah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 18, 1673; 8. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 28, 1677-8. CAPT. JOHN PEASE;<sup>3</sup> his grandmother, in her will, gave him to Thomas Watson as his own child; removed to Enfield, Conn., in 1682; married, first, Mary Goodale; she died Jan. 5, 1668-9; married, second, Ann Cummings of Topsfield Dec. 8, 1669; she died in Enfield June 29, 1689; he died there July 8, 1689; children: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> born May 20, 1654; 2. Robert,<sup>4</sup> born May 14, 1656; 3. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 8, 1658; 4. Abraham,<sup>4</sup> born June 5, 1662; lived in Enfield; married Jane Mentor; died in 1735, without issue; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 5, 1667; probably married Alexander Renalds July 16, 1686; 6. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 2, 1668-9; lived in Enfield; married Elizabeth Booth Oct. 11, 1692; died in 1721; had children; 7. James,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 23, 1670; lived in Enfield; married Hannah Harmon Oct. 18, 1695; died at Enfield in 1748; had children; 8. Isaac,<sup>4</sup> born July 15, 1672; lived in Enfield; deacon; married Mindwell Osborn in 1691; died July 9, 1731; 9. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 15, 1675; died in Enfield July 9, 1689.

ISAAC PEASE;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which became Danvers in 1752; married Elizabeth Thomas April 20, 1697; died in the spring of 1745; she survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 11, 1697-8; married Nathaniel Whittemore; 2. Isaac,<sup>5</sup> born July 1, 1698-9; husbandman; living in 1747; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born after 1699; married Samuel Frail; 4. John;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; lived in Danvers; probably married Mary King (published April 5, 1729); living in Danvers in 1777; 5. Hannah;<sup>5</sup> married John Harwood; removed to Sutton; 6. Ruth;<sup>5</sup> married Joseph Harwood; lived in Sutton; 7. Joseph;<sup>5</sup> died, probably unmarried, before 1777. NATHANIEL PEASE;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; married Elizabeth Ashby Oct. 20, 1701; died in the spring of 1737; she was his widow in 1748; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born May 10, 1702; laborer; living in 1773; 2. John,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 4, 1703-4; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born May 15, 1706; married William French July 3, 1732; 4. Jonathan;<sup>5</sup> 5. Nathaniel;<sup>5</sup> 6. Lydia;<sup>4</sup> married Joseph Brown May 13, 1740. CAPT. JOHN PEASE;<sup>4</sup> joiner; removed to Enfield in 1682; married Margaret Adams of Ipswich Jan. 30, 1676-7; died in Enfield in 1734; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> born April 22, 1678; lived in Enfield; married Elizabeth Spencer of Hartford, Conn.; died at Enfield in 1761; 2. James,<sup>5</sup> born in 1679; lived in Somers; married Mary Abbe in 1710; 3. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 24, 1683, in Enfield; 4. Ann,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 29, 1685, in Enfield; 5. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 29, 1687; 6. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born May 24, 1688, in Enfield; 7. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 27, 1689, in Enfield; 8. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born March 10, 1692, at Enfield. ROBERT PEASE;<sup>4</sup> lived in Enfield; married Abigail Randall Dec. 16, 1678; died in Enfield in 1744; children: 1. William,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 26, 1679, in Salem; died at Enfield in 1688; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born March 11, 1680-1; married Israel Phelps in 1703; 3. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born in 1682, in Enfield; 4. Robert,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 2, 1684, in Enfield; 5. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 30, 1686; 6. Ephraim,<sup>5</sup> born April 9, 1689; 7. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> born May 23, 1692, in Enfield; 8. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born June —, 1694, in Enfield; 9. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. —, 1695, at Enfield; 10. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> born in 1699, in Enfield.

JOHN PEASE;<sup>5</sup> husbandman and cordwainer; married Elizabeth Gooden of Newbury July 27, 1725; died in the autumn of 1761; she died, his widow, in the winter of 1801-2; children: 1. John;<sup>6</sup> living in 1761; 2. James;<sup>6</sup> living in 1761; 3. Martha;<sup>6</sup> married — Hambleton before 1761; 4. Susanna;<sup>6</sup>



at Boston. They settled in Salem. Francis Perry,<sup>1</sup> born about



1608, a carpenter and wheelwright, lived in Salem apparently before 1636. William Pester was a mercer,

had wife Dorothy and left the country in 1643. In 1652, not having been heard from, his wife was given liberty to marry again.

Mr. Pester was granted by the town July 16, 1638, one hundred and fifty acres of land for a farm on "condition that w<sup>th</sup>in a twelue moneth or thereabouts hee returne psonally & give satisfaction to the towne for the improving of it." This land belonged to Capt. William Trask in 1655 when he sold it to Robert Prince, and it became the great Prince farm in Danvers. Spring Street now runs over its southern end.

living in 1788; 5. Sarah;<sup>6</sup> living in 1788. JONATHAN PEASE;<sup>5</sup> carter; married Sarah Blake Dec. 11, 1739; died May —, 1770; she survived him; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 16, 1740; probably died young; 2. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 26, 1742; married William Munday; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 25, 1746; married Peter Warner May 22, 1768; 4. Jonathan,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 28, 1747; 5. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 28, 1749; 6. Robert,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 28, 1751; probably married Hannah Woodman April 12, 1778; 7. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 6, 1754; mariner; married Sarah Gray Aug. 22, 1773; died in the winter of 1774-5; she married, secondly, Peter Clough Jan. 23, 1777; 8. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 21, 1755; probably married Jonathan Woodman July 2, 1777; 9. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> baptized March 5, 1758; probably published to Joseph Lawrence Oct. 2, 1779 (probably married Samuel Willard Sept. 16, 1785); 10. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 10, 1764; died young; 11. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 19, 1767; married Joseph Wilson July 11, 1790. NATHANIEL PEASE;<sup>5</sup> husbandman; married Jemima Munnion Feb. 19, 1750; died in the spring of 1774; she died Nov. 19, 1805; children: 1. Mercy;<sup>6</sup> married Gideon Henfield; 2. Amos;<sup>6</sup> youngest son, minor, in 1773; 3. Nathaniel;<sup>6</sup> carter; probably published to Sarah Bird Dec. 9, 1775; 4. Edmond;<sup>6</sup> living in 1773; 5. Jemima;<sup>6</sup> married Joseph Bridget June 15, 1797.

JONATHAN PEASE;<sup>6</sup> mariner and fisherman; married Hannah —; died in 1785; she married, secondly, Tobias Smethurst Nov. 28, 1792, and was living in 1806; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>7</sup> baptized Jan. 13, 1771; mariner; married Mary Pickworth Sept. 3, 1798; 2. Samuel,<sup>7</sup> baptized Feb. 28, 1773; 3. Richard;<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Polly Atkinson Sept. 21, 1800; 4. Rachel,<sup>7</sup> baptized April 15, 1778; 5. Benjamin,<sup>7</sup> baptized Dec. 17, 1780; died, a minor. BENJAMIN PEASE;<sup>6</sup> married Mary Mackintire Nov. 26, 1772; child: 1. Polly,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 30, 1776.

SAMUEL PEASE;<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Mary Lawrence April 12, 1795; died in the spring of 1805; she married, secondly, Phineas Wentworth Dec. 8, 1805; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>8</sup> born about 1795; living in 1806; 2. Mary,<sup>8</sup> born about 1800; living in 1806.

<sup>1</sup>Francis Perry married Jane —, who was his wife from 1639 to 1650 at least, and may have been a widow when he married her, as a daughter-in-law of Mr. Perry is mentioned in 1652. He and one of his sons worked at the iron works in Lynn in 1653, and the next year he removed thither. In 1655, he removed to the Island of Barbadoes. Children, baptized in Salem: 1. Benjamin, baptized July 18, 1641; 2. Sarah, baptized July 18, 1641; 3. David, baptized Aug. 2, 1641; 4. Samuel, baptized April 10, 1642; 5. Elisha, baptized Aug. 11, 1644.

Jonathan Porter,<sup>1</sup> a planter, lived in that part of Salem which is now Beverly. Widow Emma Mason<sup>2</sup> lived here as early as 1636. Joshua Roots was a drummer, and became a drum major in 1666. Thomas Ringe removed to Exeter, where he died in 1667. Widow Smith lived here in 1636 and 1638. Edmund Marshall,<sup>3</sup> a weaver, lived here until 1650, when he settled in Manchester. William Walcott<sup>4</sup> and John Sanders<sup>5</sup> lived here in 1636. William Bound<sup>6</sup> was here in 1636 and probably removed to Marblehead about 1645.

*William King*

William King<sup>7</sup> was born about 1607; and Savage says that he came in the Abigail, from London, in 1635. He was in Salem as early as 1636; and settled on the shore of Bass River.

<sup>1</sup>Jonathan Porter married Eunice —, and removed to Huntington, L. I., in 1665; she was his wife in 1660, and married, secondly, Silas Smith of Fairfield; children: 1. Mary, baptized Oct. 12, 1645; 2. Jonathan, baptized March 12, 1648.

<sup>2</sup>MRS. MASON<sup>1</sup> apparently had a former husband named Roots; she died in 1646; children by Roots (Thomas Roots called her mother): 1. Thomas;<sup>2</sup> 2. Richard;<sup>2</sup> lived in Salem in 1681; 3. Josiah.<sup>2</sup>

THOMAS ROOTS;<sup>2</sup> weaver; lived on Bass River Side, in Salem, in 1636; married Sarah —; died Nov. —, 1683; child: 1. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> baptized in Beverly March 24, 1677-8; probably

*Thos. Roots*

died in infancy. JOSIAH ROOTS;<sup>2</sup> planter; lived on Bass River Side, in Salem; married Susanna —; died June 3, 1683; she survived him; children: 1. Josiah<sup>3</sup> (probably); mariner; living in Salem in 1669; 2. Bethiah;<sup>3</sup> married John Lovett; 3. John;<sup>3</sup> living in 1683; 4. Thomas;<sup>3</sup> living in 1683; 5. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 28, 1665; minor in 1683.

<sup>3</sup>Edmund Marshall married Millicent —; died in 1673; children: 1. John; living in 1663; 2. Naomi, born Jan. 24, 1636; 3. Ann, born April 15, 1638; 4. Ruth, born May 3, 1640; 5. Sarah, born May 29, 1642; 6. Edmund, born June 16, 1644; living in 1673; 7. Benjamin, born April 18, 1646.

<sup>4</sup>William Walcott lived here in 1652; married Alice Ingersol; and had two children. He was so idle the court took measures to preserve his estate.

<sup>5</sup>JOHN SANDERS<sup>1</sup> married a daughter of Joseph Grafton, according to Savage; child: 1. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 1, 1640.

CAPT. JOHN SANDERS;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Hannah Pickman Nov. 5, 1661; died in the summer of 1694; she was his widow in 1705; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born March 15, 1662; died May 4, 1672; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 22, 1665; 3. James,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 23, 1667; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born July 2, 1670; 5. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born in 167—; mariner; died, unmarried, in the spring of 1698; 6. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 21, 1673; died Aug. 7, 1674; 7. Hannah;<sup>3</sup> married — Flint in 1695; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 28, 1678; living in 1694; 9. William;<sup>3</sup> shopkeeper; lived in Boston; married Bridget Ladd Sept. 7, 1708.

<sup>6</sup>William Bound married Ann —; children, baptized in Salem: 1. James, baptized Aug. 25, 1636; 2. Andrew, baptized Aug. 12, 1638; 3. Philip, baptized Dec. 7, 1640.

<sup>7</sup>WILLIAM KING<sup>1</sup> married Dorothy —; died in 1650; she was his widow in 1653; children: 1. Mary;<sup>2</sup> eldest daughter; married John Scudder; 2. Katherine;<sup>2</sup> second daughter; married John Swazey; 3. Hannah;<sup>2</sup> third daughter; unmarried in 1651; 4. William;<sup>2</sup> eldest son in 1651; lived in Salem;



Mrs. Keniston was received for an inhabitant of Salem Dec. 26, 1636, but was not given any land. She was, however, allowed to purchase land, and bought the house of Lieutenant Davenport.<sup>1</sup>

Benjamin Parmiter<sup>2</sup> was received into the house of John Elford. He was twenty-seven years old, with a trade, and was granted five acres of land in 1637. He also had a ten-acre lot, which he conveyed to William Pester in 1638. July 25, 1639, he was granted an acre of land "vpon the north side of the neck next to Henry Bayly," and also ten acres at Jeffry's Creek.<sup>3</sup>

*Benjamin Parmiter*

Salem became engaged in fishing at a very early date. Cod and mackerel were caught, the former being cured upon flakes. The original stage was located on the point running easterly into the harbor for a considerable distance, at low water probably two

cooper; married Katherine Shafflin in or before 1665; died in the autumn of 1684; she died, his widow, in 1718; 5. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born about 1633; living in 1651; 6. Mehitable,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1636; 7. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 1, 1638; 8. Deliverance,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 31, 1641.

JOHN KING,<sup>2</sup> cooper; married Elizabeth Goldwaite Sept. —, 1660; she was his wife in 1687; he died in 1717; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. —, 1661; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born May —, 1664; 3. William,<sup>3</sup> born June —, 1669; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. —, 1671; married Nathaniel Waters; 5. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized July —, 1673; 6. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. —, 1674; 7. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. —, 1677; died Oct. —, 1680; 8. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born April 15, 1681; married Benjamin Marsh; 9. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born March 28, 1687; spinster in 1728.

JOHN KING,<sup>3</sup> husbandman and cooper; married Annie Hoar Sept. 10, 1688; died in 1718; she was his widow in 1731; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> married Benjamin Orne; 2. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> captain; yeoman; married Abigail Buffington Aug. 13, 1714; she was his wife in 1734; he died about 1740; 3. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> married Joseph Verry; 4. Annis,<sup>4</sup> married Benjamin Parnal; 5. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> cordwainer in 1728; 6. Mary,<sup>4</sup> married John Pease. ENS. SAMUEL KING,<sup>3</sup> husbandman, of Salem, 1706, 1715-1719; cooper, of Southold, N. Y., 1709 and 1710; married Elizabeth Marsh Dec. 15, 1696; children: 1. ———<sup>4</sup> (son); 2. John,<sup>4</sup> youngest son; of Southold, mariner, 1709 and 1710; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 8, 1698, in Salem. WILLIAM KING,<sup>3</sup> yeoman; became one of the first settlers of Sutton about 1717; married, first, Hannah Cook June 4, 1695; she was his wife in 1713; married, second, Rebecca Wakefield Sept. 19, 1717; died Nov. —, 1748; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 25, 1696-7; died young; 2. William,<sup>4</sup> born June 1, 1699; lived in Sutton; died in early manhood; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 11, 1700; 4. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 16, 1702-3; 5. Mehitable,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 15, 1705; 6. Henry,<sup>4</sup> born July 8, 1707; lived in Sutton; captain; representative; married Abigail Green; she died Nov. 16, 1759; he died Feb. 6, 1782; 7. Isaac,<sup>4</sup> born June 22, 1709; died, unmarried, in Sutton; 8. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 19, 1712-3. JONATHAN KING,<sup>3</sup> husbandman; was deceased in 1719; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> lived in Sutton; husbandman; married Alice Verry Feb. 2, 1726-7; they were living in Sutton in 1733; 2. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born in 170—; living in 1719; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born in 170—; living in 1719; 4. John,<sup>4</sup> born in 17—; cordwainer in 1733; 5. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> spinster in 1738; 6. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> spinster in 1738; 7. William,<sup>4</sup> cordwainer in 1739.

<sup>1</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 29 (printed).

<sup>2</sup>Benjamin Parmiter apparently lived in Marblehead, where he died in 1689. He had wife Mary and a daughter Mary.

hundred feet farther than at high tide, and now included in the area occupied by the plant of the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company. This was called Stage Point as early as 1640.

Hugh Peter was much interested, publicly, in the development and enlargement of the fisheries in New England, and, Nov. 26, 1636, he incited the country to raise a stock for fishing, as the only probable means of saving the people in the colony from the oppression of seamen and others who had control.<sup>1</sup> He went from place to place, laboring publicly and privately to raise up men to a public spirit, and secured a goodly sum of money for the purpose. He also wrote to England to raise as much more there. The plan was to set up a magazine of provisions and other necessities for fishing, that men might have things at hand, and for reasonable prices; as the merchants and seamen took advantage to sell at most excessive rates, in many things two to one.<sup>2</sup>

Before 1636, the fishing business centered around Winter Harbor, which was between the outward part of the Neck and Winter Island. The name of Winter Harbor was probably given to this body of water, because the fishing vessels remained there during the winter months, when fishing was difficult; and Winter Island apparently received its name from Winter Harbor. The fishermen lived in houses there, had flakes for drying and curing fish and warehouses for its storage. The town records early give grants to the fishermen of half-acre lots on the shore of the Neck and on Winter Island, to hold for life or a term of years, and not inheritable. July 11, 1636, a fishing lot on the Neck, being Juniper Point, was granted to Thomas Moore. This was apparently the first of a number of fishing lots on the Neck. Jan. 16, 1636-7, the town granted to Mr. Jackson, Anthony Dike, Mr. Rayment, Pasco Foote, John Sibley, Robert Leech, George Williams and Humphrey Woodbury half an acre each at Winter Harbor to build upon and carry on the fishing trade.<sup>3</sup> A week later, William Hackford was allowed a fishing lot; and, Aug. 14, 1637, Sergeant Wolfe was allowed one at Winter Harbor. Dec. 25, 1637, the town granted to Richard Graves half an acre of land upon the Neck "for the setting of his house," as he promised to follow fishing. Jan. 21, 1638-9, John Browne was granted a half-acre for a fishing lot near Winter Harbor; two weeks later Joseph Younge,<sup>4</sup> Christopher

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1790, volume I, page 91.

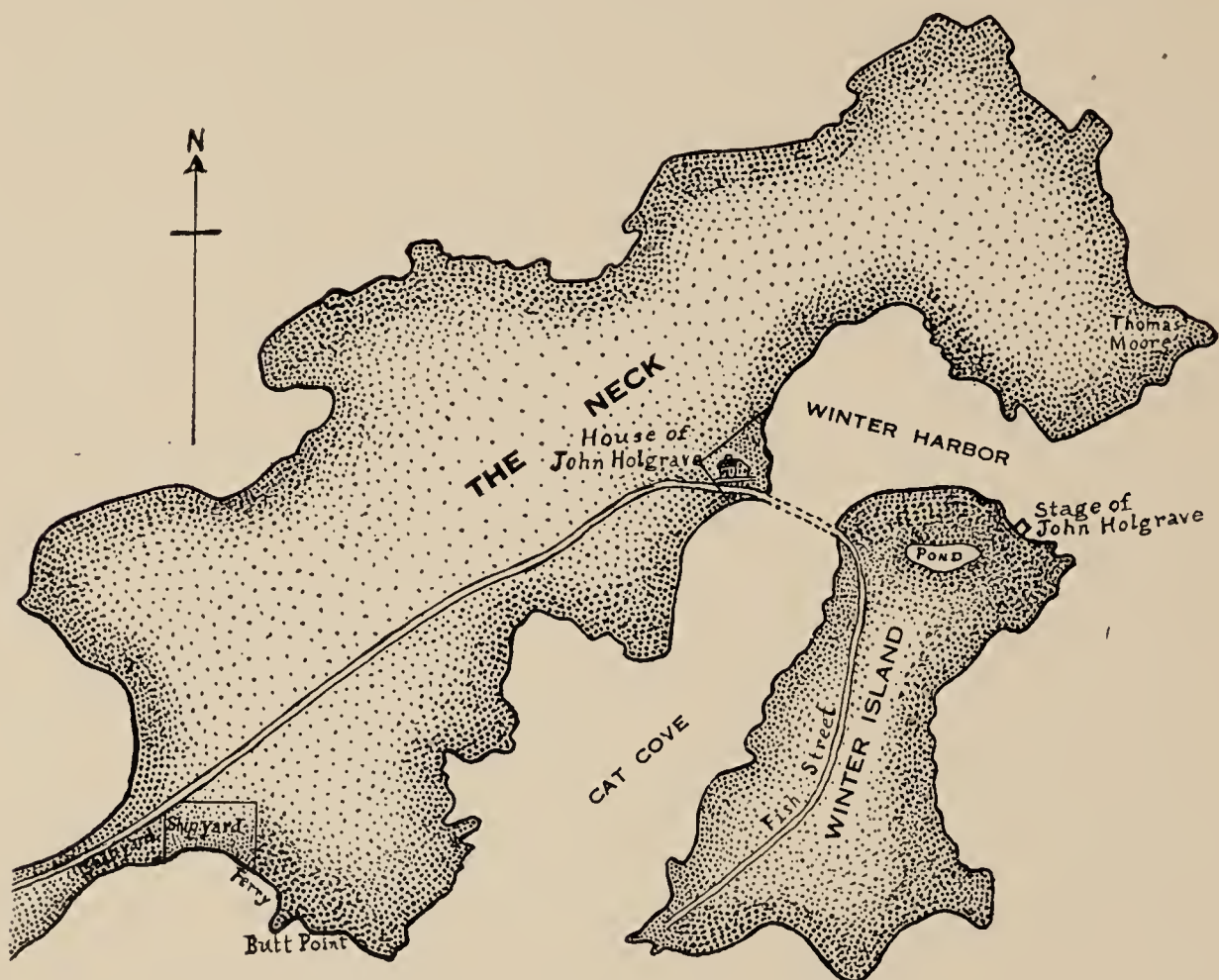
<sup>2</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 176.

<sup>3</sup>To this record is added, in shorthand, probably by Ralph Fogg, "John Sibley gives nothing to the requital, but gave unto me his allowance if he come not again."

<sup>4</sup>He owned two houses on the south side of Derby Street about midway between English and Webb streets, and sold them in 1649, when he apparent-



Younge, Hugh Browne, Thomas Fryar and Daniel Jeggles were granted half an acre each at Winter Harbor for fishing; and a week later Henry Swan<sup>1</sup> was granted a half-acre lot near Winter



THE NECK AND WINTER ISLAND.

Harbor for fishing. May 15, 1639, Joseph Kitcherill<sup>2</sup> was granted half an acre of land at Winter Harbor, if he employ it in fishing. Nov. 18, 1639, Edmond Tompson,<sup>3</sup> Henry Hayward and Richard Moore<sup>4</sup> were granted half an acre of land each at Winter Harbor

ly left the town. He was probably brother of Christopher Youngs, as the latter called Mrs. Joseph Younge "sister."

<sup>1</sup>Henry Swan had the following named children baptized in Salem: Thomas, Feb. 26, 1642-3; and Elizabeth, Feb. 8, 1645-6. He apparently removed to Boston where he had wife Joan and his daughter Sarah; died Dec. 23, 1651.

<sup>2</sup>He was of Charlestown in 1643.

<sup>3</sup>Edmund Thompson, a fisherman, lived near the meeting house, and is said to have been son of John Thompson of Holkham, Norfolkshire, England. He came to Salem from the neighborhood of Framlingham, Suffolkshire, where he married Martha, daughter of John Fiske. Children, born in New England: Martha; Edmund; Thomas, baptized in Salem Feb. 12, 1642-3; Anna, baptized in Salem July 4, 1647. He returned to England, and had three more children, John, Esther and John, all of whom died in infancy. He was then a sea-captain, in the employ of the States of Holland.

<sup>4</sup>July 8, 1643, Richard More, as a fisherman, was granted by the town half an acre of land adjoining his house.

for fishing lots ; and, on the same day, the town "pmitted that such as have fishing lotts about Winter Harbo' & the Iland shall have libertie to fence in their lotts to keepe of the swine & goates from their fish, soe that they leave it open after harvest is in." In January, 1639-40, the town ordered "That the Iland Caled Winter Iland may be fenced Inn for the saftie of the ffishing trade & so to Continue vntill the prim. of the third month Caled may vnless such as haue Goats doe fence in the flaks for the saftie of the ffish." June 13, 1644, the town ordered that "the doggs at winter neck shall be tyed vp in the day tyme, & if any doggs there spoile fish, That they also shall be sent away or killed."

March 9, 1668-9, the town "Ordered that in Anfwere to the pettion p<sup>r</sup>ferred by feu<sup>r</sup>all shoremen that dry fish at winter Iland that they shall haue liberty to fence it about morde chais that fo it may be fecured from all Cattell (except sheep & wenlinge Calves) who shall haue liberty to goe ther at any tyme and noe other, and foe long they fhall haue liberty to fence it as af orefaid, till the towne see cause to cause them or some other to pull downe the fence, and to leaue it as before". At a meeting of the selectmen, Dec. 5, 1670, "The shoremen of this Towne that make or dry fish vpon o<sup>r</sup> fish Iland haue liberty to Cutt flake stuffe vpon o<sup>r</sup> Comons puided they cutt noe oacke nor walnut tree, & only for that vse".

The houses which were built and occupied by these fishermen must have been meanly constructed, as they survived but a few years. John Hardy was granted a fishing lot by the town Feb. 7, 1636-7, and died possessed of half a fish house at Winter Island, which half was valued at three pounds, and also a fractional interest in three ketches,—Alligator, Gift and Return. In his will, he gave to his son Joseph "my part of the house beinge one half in which we lay fish beinge on winter Iland." Capt. Walter Price, at the time of his death, in 1674, owned a warehouse on Winter Island, which was still standing in 1699. Thomas Ives of Salem sold, in 1686, to Stephen Sewall of Salem and Nathaniel Dumer of Stoughton, England, his warehouse or fish house, with the leanto, on Winter Island.<sup>1</sup> Thomas Gardner died possessed of a warehouse or fish house at Winter Island, in 1698; and Thomas Maule owned a warehouse or fish house there as late as 1699. Timothy Lindalle died possessed of "an old tattered house at Winter Island" in the latter year. The later houses were located on the Cat Cove side of the island where there were a number of wharves.

There were a number of lots of land granted around Cat Cove and Winter Harbor, which were occupied by the houses of fishermen, fish houses or flakes. June 20, 1637, Richard Johnson

<sup>1</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 7, leaf 111.



was granted by the town half an acre of land for a house lot near "Richard Hollingworths works"; and August 7th next Bryan Grange, Thomas Chadwell, John Harbert and Roger — were granted half an acre of ground each at Butt Point near "where Hollinwood builds." Bryan Grange remained in Salem about a year. Feb. 24, 1637-8, Francis Dent was granted half an acre of land in Winter Harbor. He probably removed to Lynn, where he died the next winter. Nov. 26, 1638, Henry Harwood was granted a half-acre lot near Winter Island, and, the twenty-seventh of the next month, a half-acre lot upon or near Winter Harbor. July 25, 1639, the town granted to Thomas Pickton a house lot of half an acre upon the Neck near Cat Cove; to Samuel Edson half an acre of ground near Cat Cove; and to Henry Sillsby, Mr. Sharp's man, half an acre near Cat Cove for a house lot. Aug. 19, 1639, the town granted to Mathew Nixon a house lot at Cat Cove and a quarter of an acre for a garden plot.

John Holgrave was a fisherman and had a grant from the town, April 12, 1636, of three quarters of an acre of land on Winter Island for fish flakes and half an acre without the island for a house lot. The latter lot included the site of the Juniper house. He erected his fishing stage on the northeast corner of the island at the entrance to Winter Harbor. Jan. 1, 1637-8, the town granted to Robert Gutch one-half acre of ground "lying by his father Holgrave near Winter Harbor."

"For further incuragement of men to set vpon fishing," the general court ordered, May 22, 1639, "that such ships, & vessells, & other stock, as shalbee properly imployed & adventured in taking, makeing & transporting of fish, according to the course of fishing voyages, & the fish it selfe, shalbee exempt for 7 yeares from hencefourth from all countrey charges"; and all men were forbidden "to imploy any codd or basse fish for manuring of ground," except the heads and offal of such fish for corn. All fishermen, while they were abroad during fishing seasons, were exempted from training.

At first, Winter Island was approached by a ford; and the town, April 7, 1645, appointed Captain Trask, Peter Palfrey and Jeffry Massey "to sett out the way neere Mr Holgraues howse into winter Iland." A causeway was built, and later a bridge.

May 6, 1667, the town "voated that the paffage: or place that was cutt vppon the neck to goe over to Winter Iland is to be stopped, and a suffishent waye to be made over to the Iland: and Capt: Corwin Wa: Price: and m<sup>r</sup> Henry Barklemew: are Chosen and apoynted to determine the place: wheare it shall be stopped and the breadth of ye s<sup>d</sup> waye: and of such other conveniencis whearby a suffishent waye to the Iland be ffinished".

March 19, 1683-4, the selectmen granted liberty to build wharves at Winter Island to Bartholomew Gedney, Esq., S. Gardner, sr., Captain Price, Mr. John Hathorne, Captain Higginson, William Hirst, Thomas Gardner, Philip English, John Pilgrim and S. Gardner, jr.

The commoners voted, Nov. 22, 1714, "That Winter Isleand be wholly Reserued and Granted for the Vse of the Fishery and shuch Shoremen as Dry ffish there who Live in said Town shall pay . . . five shillings p annum for a Room to dry ffish for a ffishing vefsell and such as liue in other Towns that come and dry ffish there shall pay . . . Twenty Shillings p annum for a ffish Room for each vefsell." It was, also, then voted that the Neck be granted to the town, to be let to the inhabitants for a pasture for milk cows and riding horses.

"The general fear of want of foreign commodities, now our money was gone and that things were like to go well in England," wrote Governor Winthrop, "set us to work to provide shipping of our own, for which end Mr. Peter, being a man of a very public spirit and singular activity for all occasions, procured some to join for building a ship at Salem of 300 tons, and the inhabitants of Boston, stirred up by his example, set upon the building another at Boston of 150 tons. The work was hard to accomplish for want of money, &c. but our shipwrights were content to take such pay as the country could make."<sup>1</sup> These vessels were built in 1641.

On the southeast side of the Neck at its narrowest part, ship building was carried on as early as June, 1637, and probably in the spring of 1636, by Richard Hollingsworth.

Another shipbuilder located adjoining Hollingsworth's yard in August, 1637. This was William Stephens,<sup>2</sup> who came to New England in or before 1632, and lived in Boston until 1636, when he removed to Salem and the next year had a grant of land for a shipyard at Cat Cove. He was famous in England for the honesty of his work and his integrity. The following letter contains so much about him that it is inserted in full:—

Right ho<sup>b1e</sup>

Being last night at the Exchandge, I enquired what ship carpenters Mr. Winthrop the Governor had with him in New England. When I was enformed by Mr. Aldersy, the lord keepers brother in law and Mr. Cradock, that the Governor hath with him one William

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 24.

<sup>2</sup>William Stephens, with his wife Philippa, lived in Marblehead until 1642, when he removed to Gloucester, where he lived during the remainder of his life, being well-known for his mechanical skill, public services and inflexible honesty; children: 1. James; lived in Gloucester; representative; married Susanna Eveleth Dec. 31, 1656; died March 25, 1697; 2. Isaac, baptized in Salem Jan. —, 1639-40; living in 1681; 3. Mary, baptized in Salem



Stephens a shipwright, soe able a man, as they beleive there is hardly such an other to be found in this kingdome, there be 2 or 3 others, but for want of theire names, I could not be satisfied of them. this Stephens hath built here manie ships of great burthen, he made the Royal Merchant, a ship of 600 tonns. this man as they informed me had more regard to his substantiall performance, then the wages he was to receive, and soe grew to poverty, whereupon he was preparing to goe for Spayne, where he knew he should have wages answerable to his paynes, had not some friends perswaded him to N. England, where now he lives with great content; had the State of Spayne obtayned him, he should have bin as a pretious Jewell to them; I was further enformed that the plantation having warning this yeare, to accommodate themselves accordingle, will be able next yeare to build a shipp of any burthen; I have here inclosed sent yo'r hono'r the copie of the lords order, I pray God assist yo'r hono'r for the defence and mayntenance of this ho'ble work, and that those lewd and scandalous persons may receive their condigne punishm't, and the plantation proceed with incouragement. as yt doth observe, soe humbly craving pardon for this boldness, dayly praying for yo'r honors health and happines to Gods glorie and the good of his church I rest

yo'r honors humble servant

3<sup>o</sup> Ja. 1632

EM. DOWNINGE.

[Addressed:]

To the right hono'ble Sr. John  
Coke knt. principall Secretary  
to his Ma'tie and one of his  
highnes most hono'ble privie  
councill. these dr.  
at Court.<sup>1</sup>

Aug. 7, 1637, the town granted to Mr. Stephens ground by the water side, in the narrow of the Neck, eighteen rods long and twelve rods wide, for the building of ships, provided that he so uses it. He worked at building vessels there for about two years, and then conveyed it to Richard Hollingworth, who continued the business at the same place. Mr. Hollingworth died in the winter of 1653-4. At that time, he was actively engaged in the business, having upon the stocks a great ketch, a lesser ketch and a lighter, and a large amount of ship timber and lumber on hand.

The town voted, Oct. 11, 1640, that the shipbuilders have the right to take all timber trees within two miles of the town of Salem and one mile of Marblehead, that are fit for ship construction. If the trees have been felled, the labor of felling or if sawn the labor of sawing must be paid for.

The ship of three hundred tons, the building of which was accomplished by the efforts of Mr. Peter, was constructed in the

Jan. —, 1639-40; married John Coit; 4. Ruth, baptized in Salem March 7, 1641-2; married Stephen Glover.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, volume 28, page 324.

yard of Mr. Hollingworth. Six or seven of the workmen were engaged in lifting a piece of timber when the rope broke and the timber fell upon them. One of the men was killed. This was Robert Baker, who, "going forth in the morning very well, after he had prayed, told his wife he should see her no more, though he could not foresee any danger towards him." The general court decided that Mr. Hollingworth was negligent by not taking proper care of his tackle, and fined him ten pounds to be paid to the wife and children of the deceased, March 2, 1640-1.<sup>1</sup>

At his house at Juniper, John Holgrave conducted the first public house in the town. The record of the meeting of the town held Aug. 14, 1637, states that Mr. Holgrave "at y<sup>e</sup> earnest request of the towne hath undertaken to keepe an ordinary for the entertainment of strangers." At the town meeting, Dec. 11, 1639, "he laid it down," and John Gedney was "called by the town to keep an inn." But the next month Mr. Holgrave was chosen again to keep an ordinary and continue the drawing of wine until the next meeting. The reason for this latter vote was probably the fact that Mr. Gedney opened his tavern in his house on Essex Street, near the center of the town, and a great demand for a public house existed at the center of the fishing activities on the Neck. Mr. Holgrave continued the business but a few months, however, at that time. In January, 1639-40, the town chose him again to keep the ordinary and the drawing of wine till Mr. Holgrave and Mr. Gott had conferred about it. Deacon Gott had been selling wine and strong water under license from the general court. Gilbert Tapley, who was a fisherman, bought Mr. Holgrave's house and land Oct. 15, 1677,<sup>2</sup> and was licensed by the court July 24, 1678, to sell one-penny beer. Nov. 25, 1679, Serg. John Clifford was licensed to keep a victualing house at Winter Island in the time of weighing fish. These facts indicate that the fishing business in that neighborhood was then flourishing. Mr. Tapley continued to be an innholder for many years.

Samuel Aborn<sup>3</sup> (Eaborne) came to Salem in 1636, at the age of twenty-five. William Plasse of St. Buttolph, England, gun-

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume II, page 24; Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 314.

<sup>2</sup>Essex Registry of Deeds, book 5, leaf 17.

<sup>3</sup>SAMUEL ABORNE<sup>1</sup> (Eaborne), born about 1611, was an early settler at Salem Village; married Catherine Smith of Marblehead; died in the winter of 1699-1700; she survived him; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1639; 2. Joseph;<sup>2</sup> husbandman; living in 1708; 3. *Moses*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1645-6; 4. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 6, 1648; married Dr. George Jackson of Marblehead; 5. Rebecca,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 23, 1651; married Thomas Bell; 6. Hannah;<sup>2</sup> married Joseph Houlton; 7. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 15, 1656; married Benjamin Horne.

SAMUEL ABORN;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Susanna Trask Feb. 19, 1663-4; died in the spring of 1721; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born July 1, 1664; husbandman;



smith, came to Salem in 1636 with his wife Phebe.<sup>1</sup> She was widow of James Waters of St. Buttolph, with-out Aldgate, London, an iron monger, who had died in the winter of 1617-8; and she had married, secondly, Mr. Plasse (published Feb. 18, 1618-9).

*Richard Waters*

They brought with them her young son Richard Waters,<sup>2</sup> who was born in London and was under age in 1617. He

living in 1728; 2. *William*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 19, 1666-7; 3. *Susanna*,<sup>3</sup> born first week in April, 1669; died Aug. —, 1669; 4. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> married William Coffin; 5. *Susanna*,<sup>3</sup> married John Baker. MOSES ABORN;<sup>2</sup> husbandman; lived in Marblehead in 1666-7, and in Salem until about 1678, when he removed to Lynn, where he afterwards lived; married, first, Sarah Haines Sept. 9, 1671; she died Nov. 1, 1676; married, second, Abigail Gilbert of Ipswich, who was living in 1723; died in the winter of 1735-6; children: 1. *Moses*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 14, 1672-3; yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Mary Tarbox of Lynn (published March 7, 1752); died in 1756; she married, secondly, Robert Howard of Reading; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born April 24, 1674; husbandman; lived first in Lynn, and subsequently in Marblehead; married Elizabeth — (perhaps widow of Thomas Roades of Marblehead); died in 1711; 3. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 26, 1676; married George Flint April 11, 1718; 4. *Abigail*,<sup>3</sup> born May 7, 1680, in Lynn; 5. *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 26, 1682, in Lynn; 6. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 26, 1684, in Lynn; married Edward Twiss of Salem; 7. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born April 19, 1686, in Lynn; married Daniel Twiss of Salem; 8. *James*,<sup>3</sup> born April 21, 1688, in Lynn; cooper; lived in Salem, Marblehead and Lynn; 9. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born April 17, 1690, in Lynn; 10. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born March 19, 1692, in Lynn; 11. *Ebenezer*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 31, 1694, in Lynn.

WILLIAM ABORN;<sup>3</sup> married Sarah —; child: 1. *Samuel*.<sup>4</sup> JOHN ABORN;<sup>3</sup> ship carpenter and miller at the South mills in Salem; lived in Salem except for a short time in Marblehead and Charlestown; married Union —; he and his wife died of small pox in 1722; children: 1. *Union*,<sup>4</sup> married John Welman of Lynn (published Jan. 3, 1730-1); 2. *Abigail*,<sup>4</sup> living in 1723; 3. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> published to Eliphalet Manning of Tewksbury Dec. 28, 1740. SAMUEL ABORN;<sup>3</sup> husbandman and shepherd; married, first, Martha Bancroft of Lynn Oct. 29, 1720; second, Sarah Needham (published Sept. 25, 1731); children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1722, in Lynnfield; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 4, 1727, in Salem; 3. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 8, 1733, in Salem; 4. *Jane*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 17, 1734, in Salem; 5. *Susanna*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 19, 1736, in Salem; 6. *William*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 13, 1739, in Salem.

SAMUEL ABORN;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; lived in Salem, in that part which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married, first, Jane Pickering July 17, 1723; second, Margaret Massey Sept. 30, 1742; died in the spring of 1772; his wife Margaret survived him, being alive in 1800; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born April 10, 1726; cordwainer and farmer; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Sarah Derby of Danvers Dec. —, 1753; died in Danvers Sept. 5, 1800; she died there, his widow, Aug. 2, 1804; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 23, 1728; husbandman; died, probably unmarried, in 1800; 3. *Susanna*,<sup>5</sup> married — Troffatter before 1771; 4. *Jane*,<sup>5</sup> married William Dowst; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>5</sup> married Robert Stone.

<sup>1</sup>Mr. Plasse died here April 15, 1646.

<sup>2</sup>RICHARD WATERS<sup>1</sup> married Rejoice —, probably in England; died in the summer of 1677; she was his widow in 1687; children: 1. *Sarah*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1630; married Joshua Rea; 2. *Phebe*,<sup>2</sup> born in 163—; married Thomas

settled in Salem, and followed the trade of his stepfather. John

West; 3. William;<sup>2</sup> living in 1676; to be maintained by his brother under his father's will; 4. Martha;<sup>2</sup> unmarried in 1676; 5. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Nov. 27, 1640; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized Feb. 26, 1642-3; died, unmarried, Feb. 4, 1661-2; 7. Mary;<sup>2</sup> married Clement English; 8. Abigail,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 18, 1645; married William Punchard; 9. James;<sup>2</sup> lived in Topsfield; married, first, Mary Stalworthie March 24, 1668-9; second, Rachel Hart of Ipswich May 22, 1695; died Sept. 11, 1704; 10. Ezekiel,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 4, 1647; 11. Susanna,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 1, 1649; married Benedict Pulsiver of Ipswich Feb. —, 1673-4; 12. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 30, 1652-3; married Joseph Striker.

JOHN WATERS;<sup>2</sup> planter and husbandman; married Sarah Tompkins Aug. 1, 1663; she was his wife in 1707; he died in the winter of 1707-8; children: 1. John<sup>3</sup> (twin), born June 30, 1664; died July —, 1664; 2. Richard<sup>3</sup> (twin), born June 30, 1664; died July —, 1664; 3. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born July 4, 1665; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 30, 1667; married John Symonds; 5. *Richard*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 13, 1669; 6. *Nathaniel*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 6, 1670-1; 7. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born March 29, 1674; died about May 1, 1674; 8. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born May 6, 1675; married, first, Bethiah Archer Jan. 1, 1694-5; second, Hannah —; she survived him; he died in 1729, without issue; 9. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 10, 1677; died, unmarried, in 1734; 10. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 6, 1683; married John Jacobs. EZEKIEL WATERS;<sup>2</sup> shoreman; was living in 1721; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 3, 1673; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born April 19, 1676; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 4, 1678; married — McMarr; 4. Ezekiel,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 1, 1680; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 9, 1682; 6. Rejoice,<sup>3</sup> born March 9, 1684; married, first, Robert Lee in Boston May 13, 1709; second, Trustrum Bullock of Boston Nov. 7, 1716; 7. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 1, 1685-6; 8. Elias,<sup>3</sup> born May 11, 1688; died June 30, 1688; 9. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 26, 1690; 10. Martha,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. —, 1692; married — Coats; 11. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. —, 1693-4; of Boston, unmarried, in 1742; 12. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 9, 1695-6.

JOHN WATERS;<sup>3</sup> husbandman and housewright; married Mary —; died in the winter of 1741-2; children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 19, 1702; 2. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 19, 1702; married John Felton; 3. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 19, 1702; unmarried in 1741; 4. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 12, 1703-4; married John Proctor; 5. Eunice,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 18, 1706; married Thomas Gardner; 6. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 12, 1709; married Eleazer Porter. RICHARD WATERS;<sup>3</sup> husbandman and cooper; removed to Sutton in 1721; married Martha Read March 3, 1697; she was his widow, of Sutton, in 1725-6; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born March 4, 1699; 2. Richard,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 22, 1700; married Anne Holman June 12, 1732; died in Sutton May 7, 1787; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 1, 1702; married Samuel Dudley Feb. 17, 1728-9; 4. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 1, 1703; captain; mariner; lived in Sutton and Salem; married Rachel Holman of Newbury Nov. 13, 1729; died in 1785; she died in 1807 (?); 5. Mercy,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 24, 1707; married Solomon Holman Aug. 28, 1729; 6. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 10, 1709; 7. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 30, 1711; 8. Lois,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 16, 1714; 9. Amos,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 9, 1717. NATHANIEL WATERS;<sup>3</sup> fisherman; married Elizabeth King Dec. 12, 1699; died in the winter of 1717-8; she was his widow in 1744; children: 1. Elizabeth;<sup>4</sup> married Isaac Cook; 2. Hannah;<sup>4</sup> died, unmarried, before 1736; 3. Mehitabel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1704; died young; 4. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1704; married Benjamin Marsh of Sutton; 5. Mehitabel,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 13, 1707; married Samuel Foster; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 22, 1708; husbandman and mariner; married Mary Gardner Nov. 29, 1737; living in 1740; 7. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 20, 1712; died before 1736; 8. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 31, 1715; married Mehitabel Gyles Aug. 10, 1738. SAMUEL WATERS;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Mary Hawkins Aug. 2, 1698; died Aug. 4, 1715; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born May 29, 1700; married Henry Williams; 2. Barbara,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 2, 1703; 3. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 2, 1707; probably married, first, Silence Rogers



Burton<sup>1</sup> came to Salem in or before 1636, and lived in the North field. John Moore was here as early as 1636 and as late as 1643, his family apparently consisting of his wife and three children. Thomas

*John Burton*

Jan. 9, 1726-7; second, Sarah Purchase Sept. 21, 1733; third, Mary Ropes May 1, 1760; 4. Mercy,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 20, 1712.

JOHN WATERS;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married, first, Elizabeth Gardner Nov. 30, 1721; she was his wife in 1744; married, second, Abigail (Hutchinson), widow of Benjamin Putman May —, 1760; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 30, 1722; yeoman; lived in what is now Danvers; married Rachel, widow of Nathaniel Tarbell April 6, 1763; died at Carlisle in 1812, aged ninety; 2. Israel,<sup>5</sup> baptized in 1724-5; died young; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 26, 1727; married Henry Jacobs April 23, 1748; 4. Abel,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 4, 1729; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Hannah Proctor July 9, 1751; 5. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 13, 1731; died young; 6. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1732; probably married Benjamin Felt; 7. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 4, 1735; married William Shillaber; 8. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 29, 1737; married Aaron Putnam; 9. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 28, 1739; died young; 10. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 26, 1741; 11. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 28, 1744.

<sup>1</sup>CAPT. JOHN BURTON<sup>1</sup> was a planter and tanner; died in the autumn of 1684; children: 1. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 1641; living in 1684; 2. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> living in 1684; 3. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> born about 164—; married William Osborn; 4. Isaac.<sup>2</sup>

ISAAC BURTON;<sup>2</sup> lived in Topsfield; husbandman; married Hannah —; died May 3, 1706; she probably married, secondly, John Kimball of Boxford Oct. 29, 1707; children, born in Topsfield: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 23, 1702; 2. Isaac,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 23, 1702; 3. Jacob,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 23, 1702; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 12, 1692; 5. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born May 4, 1694; was living in 1705; 6. Henry,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 23, 1702; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born March 13, 1699.

JOHN BURTON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; lived in Topsfield, Salem and Middleton; married Sarah Herney of Salem Feb. 7, 1704-5; died in the winter of 1750-1; children, born in Topsfield: 1. Isaac,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 10, 1706; 2. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 22, 1708; tailor; lived in Salem; married Abial Messervey April 6, 1733; apparently died before 1751; she probably married, secondly, Samuel Cook Aug. 22, 1751; 3. John,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 11, 1711; 4. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born June 15, 1716; 5. David,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 12, 1721. ISAAC BURTON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; removed to Preston, Conn., in 1735; married Susanna Putnam Nov. —, 1709; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 10, 1710; spinster in 1734; 2. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 24, 1712; spinster in 1734; 3. Henry,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 3, 1718; 4. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 22, 1720; 5. Susanna,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 29, 1721; 6. Stephen,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 28, 1724; 7. Nathan,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 23, 1726; 8. Amos,<sup>4</sup> baptized Dec. 17, 1727; 9. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 26, 1730. HENRY BURTON;<sup>3</sup> mason; married Sarah Clark (published Aug. 2—, 1715); died Feb. —, 1717-8; she was his widow in 1721; child: 1. Rebecca,<sup>4</sup> born about 1717; probably married Isaac Reed Feb. 24, 1736-7.

JOHN BURTON;<sup>4</sup> lived in Middleton and Salem; married, first, Abigail Pain of Salem May 14, 1734; second, Rebecca Gage, at Topsfield, Oct. 7, 1756; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> born March 16, 1735, in Middleton; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 4, 1738, in Salem; 3. John,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 13, 1739, in Salem; 4. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 18, 1741, in Salem; 5. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 22, 1744, in Salem; 6. Stephen,<sup>5</sup> born July 15, 1745, in Salem; 7. David,<sup>5</sup> born May 23, 1747, in Middleton; 8. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 8, 1749, in Middleton; 9. Abraham,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 31, 1752, in Middleton; 10. David,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 25, 1761,

Browning<sup>1</sup> was living in Salem in 1636, when he was about forty-nine years of age; and Nathaniel Porter<sup>2</sup> was also here that year. Joseph Pope<sup>3</sup> is said to have been a son of Robert Pope of Yorkshire, England, and have come to America in the Mary and John, of London, in 1634. He was in Salem as early as 1636. William

*Nathaniel  
Porter*

in Middleton; 11. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 25, 1761, in Middleton; probably married Mary Joseph (published in Salem July 2, 1785).

<sup>1</sup>Thomas Browning, born about 1587; lived in Salem; died Feb. —, 1670-1; children: 1. Mary, baptized Jan. 7, 1637-8; married Edmund Towne; 2. Elizabeth; married James Symonds; 3. Sarah; married Joseph Williams; 4. Deborah, baptized Jan. 31, 1646-7; married Isaac Meachem.

<sup>2</sup>Nathaniel Porter lived in Salem until about 1645, near the meeting house, of which he had the care for several years.

<sup>3</sup>JOSEPH POPE<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; husbandman; married, first, Damaris —; second, Gertrude —; died in the spring of 1667; wife Gertrude was his widow, of Salem, in 1699; children: 1. Damaris,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 23, 1643; married Joshua Buffum; 2. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 20, 1645; died young; 3. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 26, 1648; married Caleb Buffum; 4. George,<sup>2</sup> baptized July 8, 1649; probably died young; 5. Joseph,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 27, 1650; 6. Benjamin,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 17, 1653; 7. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 18, 1656; 8. Enos.<sup>2</sup>

JOSEPH POPE;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Bethshua Folger of Nantucket; died Feb. —, 1711-2; she was his widow in 1726; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born before 1679; died before 1688; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 20, 1679; 3. Bethshua,<sup>3</sup> born April 9, 1683; *non compos* in 1712; 4. Gertrude,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 27, 1685; married Ebenezer Flint; 5. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born June 16, 1688; 6. Enos,<sup>3</sup> born June 6, 1690; 7. Eliezer,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 4, 1693; 8. Jerusha<sup>3</sup> (twin), born April 1, 1695; married George Flint of Reading July 9, 1713; 9. —<sup>3</sup> (son—twin), stillborn April 1, 1695. BENJAMIN POPE;<sup>2</sup> farmer; married Damaris Shattock; died in the spring of 1702; she was his widow in 1724; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> 2. Samuel;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; died in 1753; 3. Jerome;<sup>3</sup> in 1718, he had been absent a long time at sea, and was supposed to have been lost; 4. Ebenezer;<sup>3</sup> died in the winter of 1717-8, without issue. SAMUEL POPE;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married, first, Exercise Smith Jan. 28, 1685-6; she was his wife in 1705; married, second, Martha (Robinson), widow of William Beans Dec. 8, 1709; died about 1735; she was his widow in 1743; children: 1. Damaris,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. —, 1686-7; died about 1688; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born June 11, 1689; 3. Margaret,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 21, 1691; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born May 5, 1693; 5. Enos,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 1, 1694-5; 6. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 17, 1696-7; married Isaac Hacker; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born May 23, 1698; 8. Eunice,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 12, 1700; married Joseph Cook; 9. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born March 11, 1705; died July 6, 1705; 10. Martha,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 20, 1711; 11. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 30, 1713; probably married John Williams Aug. 19, 1732; 12. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 30, 1717.

NATHANIEL POPE;<sup>3</sup> blacksmith; married Priscilla Chatwell Dec. 17, 1703; died Aug. 30, 1708; she married, secondly, John Meachem; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 27, 1704-5; married Nathaniel Parsons of Enfield; 2. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born March 29, 1707; married Nathaniel Meachem of Enfield. JOSEPH POPE;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Mehitable Putnam Jan. 19, 1715-6; died in 1755; she survived him; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 1, 1717; lived in Mortlake, Conn.; married Hannah Shaw Oct. 26, 1743; 2. Mehitable,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 3, 1719; married Joseph Gardner; 3. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept.



James was of Salem in 1636 and 1647, and his wife was named

3, 1721; married Gen. Israel Putnam; 4. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born March 24, 1724; 5. *Eunice*,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 30, 1727; married Col. John Baker of Ipswich Nov. 4, 1745; and died Jan. 10, 1821, aged ninety-four; 6. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 31, 1730; married Samuel Williams of Pomfret Jan. 5, 1748-9; 7. *Ebenezer*,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 9, 1734; 8. *Eleazer*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 14, 1736; 9. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 14, 1739. ENOS POPE;<sup>3</sup> clothier and worsted comber; married Margaret Smith March 17, 1714-5; died Feb. 24, 1765; she was his wife in 1756; children: 1. *Enos*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 10, 1721; 2. *Margaret*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 7, 1723; died Aug. 25, 1723; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born May 29, 1724; died Feb. 23, 1724-5; 4. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 3, 1725; died Jan. 2, 1725-6; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born June 5, 1728; died Aug. 14, 1728; 6. *Seth*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 23, 1730-1; died Oct. 5, 1731; 7. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 17, 1732; died July 18, 1733; 8. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> born June 19, 1734; died July 27, 1734. ELEAZER POPE;<sup>3</sup> cordwainer; married Hannah Buffington April 3, 1718; died July 2, 1734; she married, secondly, Joshua Buffum; child: 1. *Stephen*.<sup>4</sup> BENJAMIN POPE;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; married Sarah Smith June 24, 1710; died in 1747; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 17, 1711-2; died Sept. 8, 1712; 2. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born March 16, 1713-4; yeoman; lived in Danvers; married Mary Eaton of Lynn April 22, 1736; died in 1756; she married, secondly, Jacob Sawyer of Reading. SAMUEL POPE;<sup>3</sup> blacksmith; lived in Salem, except in 1725 and 1726, when he resided in Lynn, and from 1740 to 1748, when he lived in Boston; married Sarah Estes of Lynn Dec. 16, 1714; died Nov. 21, 1769; she died Oct. 1, 1773; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> born June 16, 1716; died July 5, 1716; 2. *Robert*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 9, 1717; lived in Boston; married Phebe Brown of Hampton, N. H., Dec. 20, 1739; died April 22, 1776; 3. *Ebenezer*,<sup>4</sup> born March 23, 1719-20; tailor; lived in Boston; married Elizabeth Buffum Oct. 18, 1744; 4. *Estes*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 18, 1721-2; died Jan. 16, 1725-6; 5. *Philadelphia*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 26, 1723-4; died Oct. 3, 1750; 6. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born July 2, 1726; died June 4, 1768; 7. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> born March 6, 1728-9; died Jan. 1, 1764; 8. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 27, 1731; 9. *Henry*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 14, 1733; died the same night; 10. *Hannah*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 20, 1734.

NATHANIEL POPE;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married, first, Mary Swinerton March 25, 1746; she died Dec. 20, 1778; married, second, Sarah Clark of Danvers Dec. 23, 1784; died Nov. 18, 1800; she died Feb. 12, 1802; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 12, 1748; married Aaron Gilbert June 4, 1777; 2. *Eunice*,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 21, 1751; married James Putnam Sept. 16, 1773; 3. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> born March 22, 1753; 4. *Rebecca*,<sup>5</sup> born April 16, 1755; 5. *Hannah*,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 21, 1757; 6. *Jasper*,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 10, 1759; 7. *Ruth*,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 7, 1761; 8. *Zephaniah*,<sup>5</sup> born May 6, 1764; 9. *Elijah*,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 28, 1766; 10. *Mehitable*,<sup>5</sup> born April 3, 1768; 11. *Amos*,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 20, 1772; almanac compiler. EBENEZER POPE;<sup>4</sup> lived in Danvers; married Sarah Pope (published Sept. 7, 1754); died Nov. 4, 1802; she died in South Reading Oct. 12, 1832, aged ninety-four; children: 1. *Lucretia*,<sup>5</sup> married — Poole of South Reading; 2. *John*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1757; 3. *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> born July 7, 1759, in Danvers; 4. *Lucy*,<sup>5</sup> 5. *Oliver*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1765; 6. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> married Ananiah Parker of South Reading; 7. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> married Thomas Swan of South Reading; 8. *Jane*,<sup>5</sup> 9. *Abraham Gould*,<sup>5</sup> removed to Maine, where he married and died. ELEAZER POPE;<sup>6</sup> lived in Danvers; married Nancy Putnam July 7, 1757; children: 1. *Eleazer*,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 4, 1758; 2. *Rebecca*,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 31, 1759; 3. *Molly*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 16, 1762; 4. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born June 28, 1764; 5. *Mehitable*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 8, 1767; 6. *Nancy*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 24, 1769; 7. *Allen*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 12, 1772; 8. *Huldah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 5, 1773; 9. *Perley Putnam*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 9, 1775; 10. *Betsey*,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 13, 1777; 11. *Jasper*,<sup>5</sup> born

Elizabeth. John Jackson came to Salem as early as 1636. Felt

Jan. 1, 1780, in Danvers; 12. William Walton,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 31, 1784; died, unmarried, at Salem, at the age of twenty-one. DEA. ENOS POPE;<sup>4</sup> clothier; married Lydia Buffum Jan. 19, 1748-9; she died Oct. 15, 1781; he died March 12, 1813; children: 1. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born March 28, 1750; married — Peaslee of Epping; 2. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born 6:5:1752; 3. Eunice,<sup>5</sup> born 5:2:1755; died, unmarried, June 19, 1819; 4. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born 4:2:1757; died, unmarried, Sept. 19, 1836; 5. Enos,<sup>5</sup> born June 27, 1759; clothier and dyer; died, unmarried, Nov. 24, 1838; 6. Damaris,<sup>5</sup> born 8:11:1761; 7. Phebe,<sup>5</sup> married David Peirce June 20, 1809; 8. Mehitable,<sup>5</sup> married John Beede of Poplin, N. H., Oct. 16, 1794. STEPHEN POPE;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer; married Mary Buffum March 27, 1746; died Oct. 9, 1765; she died July —, 1788; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born May 31, 1746; married Thomas Nichols of Somersworth, N. H., Oct. 18, 1768; died May 20, 1840, aged ninety-three; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born March 24, 1748; died young; 3. Eleazer,<sup>5</sup> born March 21, 1751; 4. Gertrude,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 19, 1753; died, unmarried, March 24, 1833; 5. Folger,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 14, 1756; 6. Stephen,<sup>5</sup> born June 6, 1759; died young; 7. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 20, 1761; married David Nichols of Berwick, Me., Nov. 12, 1787; 8. Joshua,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 24, 1763; 9. James,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 16, 1765.

JOHN POPE,<sup>5</sup> baker; soldier of the Revolution; married, first, Ruth Newhall Nov. 18, 1779; she died Dec. —, 1810; married, second, Lydia M. Tunison; he died Dec. 21, 1820; children: 1. Sally,<sup>6</sup> born about 1780; died March —, 1808; 2. Ruth,<sup>6</sup> married Archelaus Fuller; 3. John,<sup>6</sup> died abroad; 4. George,<sup>6</sup> died Aug. 31, 1832; 5. Sophia,<sup>6</sup> married Oliver Parker Jan. 25, 1824; 6. Eben,<sup>6</sup> died Sept. —, 1811, aged eighteen; 7. Thomas S.,<sup>6</sup> born about 1804; 8. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> married — Daland; 9. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> married Tunis Tunison; 10. Joseph N.,<sup>6</sup> living in 1821. EBENEZER POPE;<sup>5</sup> baker; married, first, Mehitable Carrol (published Aug. 7, 1779); second, Lydia Hay Jan. 31, 1790; she died Feb. 16, 1816; he died Jan. 9, 1821; child: 1. Samuel Carroll,<sup>6</sup> born Nev. 25, 1783. OLIVER POPE;<sup>5</sup> lived in South Reading as late as 1819, and subsequently in Salem; married, first, — —; second, widow Mary (Fabens) Holman Jan. 25, 1819; died Oct. 25, 1825; she died Jan. 26, 1854; children: 1. Oliver,<sup>6</sup> lived in the West; 2. Lois,<sup>6</sup> 3. Lucretia,<sup>6</sup> 4. Samuel A.,<sup>6</sup> 5. John,<sup>6</sup> married Harriet Holman Sept. 11, 1820; lived in South Reading. JASPER POPE;<sup>5</sup> lived in Danvers and Salem; tailor; married Abigail Lander Dec. 20, 1804; she died Jan. 12, 1837; he died March 2, 1850; children, born in Salem: 1. Abigail Lander,<sup>6</sup> born June 14, 1805; died in Worcester July 10, 1861; 2. William Allen,<sup>6</sup> born April 30, 1808; died in 1817; 3. Ann Putnam,<sup>6</sup> born March 29, 1810; died at Danvers April 12, 1837; 4. Caroline,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 3, 1811; died in Danvers July 22, 1845; 5. Matilda,<sup>6</sup> born July 18, 1814; 6. Horatio Gates,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 7, 1815; lived in Malden. ELEAZER POPE;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; married, Esther Buxton May 28, 1787; died Feb. 5, 1818; she died, his widow, Oct. 17, 1818; children: 1. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born July 16, 1788; married Joshua Buxton of Danvers May 18, 1815; 2. Esther,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 27, 1790; married Henry Grant; 3. Eleazer,<sup>6</sup> born March 14, 1793; 4. Stephen,<sup>6</sup> born March 11, 1796; 5. Gertrude,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 14, 1799; married Jonathan Barrett Dec. 26, 1822. FOLGER POPE;<sup>5</sup> sadler and chaisemaker; married Theodate Holder of Nantucket June 18, 1781; they were living in 1802; he died before 1833; children: 1. Folger,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 18, 1782; 2. Stephen,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 11, 1784; 3. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 31, 1785; married Capt. Tunis Tunison; 4. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 11, 1787; 5. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 28, 1789. JOSHUA POPE;<sup>5</sup> tanner; married, first, Bethiah Dean Aug. 18, 1791; she died Feb. 14, 1817; married, second, Lucretia (Collins), widow of I. Johnson Dec. 21, 1823; he died Feb. 25, 1842; she died, his widow, July 21, 1856; children: 1. Jonathan Dean,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 8, 1792; merchant; died, probably unmarried, June —, 1846; 2. Gertrude,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 6, 1792; died



says that he came from London in the *Blessing* in 1635, with his wife Margaret, aged thirty-six, and son John, aged two. His wife was Margaret in 1643, and Mary in 1655. He was a mariner, and died in the winter of 1655-6, leaving his family in a needy condition. Jan. 16, 1656-7, the town "agreed that ther shalbe three shillings p weeke: untill the towne take further order: alowed vnto the widow Jackson." This was for her maintenance, and a portion of the

*R. Thad Walbur*

Oct. —, 1796; 3. James,<sup>6</sup> born March 12, 1797; tanner; married Lucy M. Lord of Ipswich Nov. 6, 1821; she died Nov. 30, 1823; he died June 6, 1852; 4. Peter,<sup>6</sup> born June 25, 1799; died July 5, 1803; 5. *Lot*,<sup>6</sup> born April 27, 1803. JAMES POPE;<sup>6</sup> sadler and chaisemaker; married Lydia Newhall of Lynn March 19, 1794; died Aug. 7, 1830; she died Dec. 8, 1830; children: 1. James,<sup>6</sup> born March 6, 1795; died March 11, 1796; 2. Hannah N.,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 15, 1797; died, unmarried, Jan. 18, 1843; 3. James,<sup>6</sup> born July 21, 1799; died Dec. 24, 1800; 4. Daniel,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 30, 1801; died in Milwaukee Aug. 10, 1852; 5. Mary Ann,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 13, 1806; died, unmarried, May 13, 1851; 6. Lydia C.,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 27, 1808; died, unmarried, May 25, 1885; 7. James,<sup>6</sup> born July 25, 1810; died at Tobasco, Mexico, unmarried, July 7, 1834; 8. Elizabeth Hacker,<sup>6</sup> born March 17, 1813; married Benjamin E. Valentine of Philadelphia, Pa., July 27, 1844; 9. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 22, 1816; died Sept. 22, 1820; 10. Sarah Nichols,<sup>6</sup> born June 2, 1821; living in 1831.

THOMAS S. POPE;<sup>6</sup> laborer; married Rebecca H. Spencer of Beverly March 13, 1825; died Nov. 29, 1844; she became a nurse, and died Nov. 23, 1884; children: 1. Rebecca L.,<sup>7</sup> married Henry W. Morgan; 2. John T.,<sup>7</sup> born in 1833; died May 31, 1862; 3. *Thomas S.*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1839; 4. Benjamin C.,<sup>7</sup> born June 30, 1842; teamster; married Martha Jane Nute Nov. 30, 1870; died Feb. 8, 1877; she died March 6, 1889. SAMUEL CARROLL POPE;<sup>6</sup> baker; married Frances Dinsmore of Londonderry, N. H., Dec. 23, 1806; died Jan. 5, 1821; she died in South Danvers March 25, 1858; children: 1. Ann Hall,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 13, 1807; died, unmarried, Nov. 3, 1831; 2. Samuel Lysander,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 20, 1809; died at sea, off the coast of Timor, in the ship *Zephyr* July 29, 1829; 3. Orlando Ebenezer,<sup>7</sup> born March 17, 1810; lived in Danvers; married Rebecca S. Fairfield June —, 1832; 4. Frances Dinsmore,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 25, 1811; married Stephen Palmer of Lynn Aug. 22, 1833; returned to Salem; 5. Mehitabel Carroll,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 2, 1815. SAMUEL A. POPE;<sup>6</sup> married Betsey Newhall Nov. 2, 1823; child: 1. Horace,<sup>7</sup> born in 1825; died Sept. 20, 1826. ELEAZER POPE;<sup>6</sup> tanner; married, first, Mary Nimblet May 24, 1818; she died May 14, 1822; married, second, Esther Keith April 27, 1823; he died Dec. 16, 1874; she died, his widow, Sept. 20, 1893, aged ninety-four; children: 1. *Henry E.*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 16, 1819; 2. *William A.*,<sup>7</sup> born April 18, 1820; 3. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born April —, 1822; married Lorenzo D. Warner of Danvers Sept. —, 1848; 4. *John R.*,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 4, 1824; 5. Esther R.,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 28, 1826; married Andrew Mace of Lynn Jan. 2, 1854; 6. Stephen,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 28, 1828; teamster; living in 1851; 7. James,<sup>7</sup> born in 1830; died in 1831; 8. *James*,<sup>7</sup> born March 29, 1839; 9. Frank,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 18, 1841; captain in Civil war; gas-fitter; married Sarah A. Morrison of South Danvers Nov. 30, 1865; died Dec. 28, 1866. STEPHEN POPE;<sup>6</sup> married Abigail W. Shehane March 13, 1821; died in Liverpool, England, Jan. 25, 1837; she died Aug. 6, 1844; child: 1. Stephen,<sup>7</sup> born in 1825; died Sept. 24, 1826. STEPHEN POPE;<sup>6</sup> married Sally —; children: 1. Daniel,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 4, 1808; 2. Sarah,<sup>7</sup> born March 11, 1811; 3. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born July 21, 1813; 4. Seba,<sup>7</sup> born March 9, 1816; 5. Abel H.,<sup>7</sup> born April

allowance was paid in corn and other commodities. His son John

13, 1825; 6. George F.<sup>7</sup>, born March 23, 1827; died Feb. 8, 1828. LOT POPE;<sup>6</sup> tanner; married Maria Mansfield; she died June 9, 1842; he died April 8, 1859; children: 1. Caroline E.<sup>7</sup>, born Nov. 7, 1830, in Utica, N. Y.; married William W. Goldthwait; 2. Laura C.<sup>7</sup>; married David Odell June 13, 1850; 3. George W.<sup>7</sup>, born in 1837; died, accidentally, Jan. 27, 1855; 4. Maria M.<sup>7</sup>; unmarried in 1859; 5. Lucy A.<sup>7</sup>, born about 1841; died, unmarried, June 12, 1873.

THOMAS S. POPE;<sup>7</sup> mariner and teamster; married, first, Christiana R. Arrington April 25, 1852; she died Jan. 16, 1873; married, second, Amanda —; he died June 12, 1879; children: 1. Catharine R.<sup>8</sup>; married John T. Miller; 2. —<sup>8</sup> (son), born Dec. 20, 1855; died Dec. 22, 1855; 3. Thomas S.<sup>8</sup>, born March 24, 1857; 4. Mary Ann,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 14, 1859; died Sept. 13, 1860; 5. Mary L.<sup>8</sup>, born Sept. 29, 1860; 6. Christiana R.<sup>8</sup>, born April 19, 1863; married Frederick J. Dennett; 7. Harriet A.<sup>8</sup>, born June 19, 1864; married George F. Pousland; 8. George W.<sup>8</sup>, born Feb. 12, 1866; died Sept. 17, 1866; 9. —<sup>8</sup> (daughter), born June 19, 1867; 10. —<sup>8</sup> (son), born Jan. 6, 1869; 11. Georgia,<sup>8</sup> born June 25, 1870; died June 26, 1870. DR. HENRY E. POPE;<sup>7</sup> physician; assistant-surgeon in the Sixth Indiana regiment in the Civil War; married, first, Catherine M. Lee of Madison, Ind., May 18, 1856; she died April 24, 1866; married, second, Harriet N. Gardner Jan. 1, 1874; died March 7, 1890; children: 1. William H.<sup>8</sup>, born Feb. 22, 1857; 2. Charles S.<sup>8</sup>, born Sept. 1, 1858, in Madison; 3. Mary Ida,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 25, 1874. WILLIAM A. POPE;<sup>7</sup> tanner and currier; married, first, Elizabeth McCloy Oct. 31, 1844; she died June 6, 1847; married, second, Mary D. Symonds Sept. 25, 1852; she died June 28, 1869; married, third, Abby Haskell Sanderson June 4, 1872; he died Feb. 20, 1902; she died June 8, 1902; children: 1. William H.<sup>8</sup>, born May 26, 1845; died Aug. 8, 1845; 2. William H.<sup>8</sup>, born April 14, 1847; 3. Mary Elizabeth,<sup>8</sup> born March 7, 1853; married James William Symonds; 4. George,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 7, 1855; tanner; married Lizzie Hinckley Aug. 12, 1879; died March 25, 1900; she married, secondly, Charles J. Buckley of Worcester April 2, 1903; 5. Frank A.<sup>8</sup>, born March 27, 1859; died Jan. 2, 1861; 6. Carrie,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 28, 1866; married Harry W. Smith of Waltham March 30, 1892. JOHN R. POPE;<sup>7</sup> tanner and currier; lived at first in Danvers, and about 1853 removed to Salem; married Mary Jane Brown (published March 11, 1849); died Nov. 22, 1861; children: 1. Esther,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 11, 1849; married John A. Foster; 2. John H.<sup>8</sup>, born Jan. 30, 1852; 3. Mary Jane,<sup>8</sup> born July 22, 1854; married James W. Larabee; 4. Stephen F.<sup>8</sup>, born Feb. 14, 1859; currier; married Emma Ward of St. John, N. B., July 19, 1880. CAPT. JAMES POPE;<sup>7</sup> captain in the Civil war; clerk in Boston; married Elizabeth T. Symonds June 24, 1869; child: 1. James Franklin,<sup>8</sup> born July 3, 1871.

THOMAS S. POPE;<sup>8</sup> currier, box-maker, sawyer and fireman; married, first, Carrie G. Bartlett Feb. 11, 1878; she died Nov. 30, 1886; married, second, Maria A. Tidey Feb. 17, 1887; he died at Newbury, N. H., Oct. 16, 1921; children: 1. George Swaine,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 15, 1879; died March 7, 1879; 2. Mabel Rose,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 12, 1882; married Walter E. Moulton of Newburyport June 24, 1905; 3. Thomas Swain,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 29, 1887; 4. George Henry,<sup>9</sup> born July 6, 1889, in Danvers; died Oct. 15, 1889; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>9</sup> born June 27, 1890; died Aug. 22, 1890; 6. —<sup>9</sup> (son—twin), stillborn July 28, 1891; 7. Harrison<sup>9</sup> (twin), born July 28, 1891; 8. Joseph Wilton,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 2, 1891; child: 1. Henry W.<sup>9</sup>, born Dec. 17, 1899. JOHN H. POPE;<sup>8</sup> soap maker and morocco dresser; married Mary T. Toomey June 27, 1889; died May 15, 1905; children: 1. John L.<sup>9</sup>, born April 24, 1890; morocco dresser; married Annie V. Gannon of Beverly June 10, 1914; 2. Ellen Rebecca,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 20, 1891.



settled in Gloucester; and "Widow Jackson" was living in 1664. Richard Walker<sup>1</sup> was here in 1636, and Francis Skerry,<sup>2</sup> about twenty-eight years of age, came here in the same year, probably from Yarmouth, Norfolk County, England. Michael Shafflin<sup>3</sup> and Thomas Antrum<sup>4</sup> came from New Sarum (Salisbury), Wiltshire, England. Mr. Shafflin was a tailor and Mr. Antrum a

*Michael Shafflin*

*Francis Skerry*

1635, arrived at Boston June 3, 1635, and settled in Salem

*George Emery*

weaver. The latter's servant, Thomas Browne, came with them. They sailed from Southampton in the James, in April, immediately. George Emery,<sup>5</sup> a chirurgeon, was in Salem as early as 1636. William Goose,<sup>6</sup> William Jeggles,<sup>7</sup> Robert

<sup>1</sup>Richard Walker lived in Salem only six or seven years. He married Percis —; children: Abraham and Sarah baptized in Salem Dec. 6, 1639.

<sup>2</sup>Francis Skerry was born about 1608; husbandman and maltster; married Bridget —; died in the summer of 1684; she died, his widow, Aug. 10, 1692; no children.

<sup>3</sup>Michael Shafflin was a tailor; married, first, Elizabeth —; second, Alice (Temple?), widow of George Booth; died Dec. 12, 1686; she died in 1714; children: 1. Katherine; married William King; 2. Sarah; married Robert Stone.

<sup>4</sup>Thomas Antrum was a weaver; wife Jane was probably a sister of Edmond Batter; died in the spring of 1663; children: 1. Hannah; married Isaac Burnap Nov. 8, 1658; 2. Obadiah, baptized June 7, 1640; mariner; married Martha Baker of Ipswich; was lost at sea on a voyage to Nevis or some other West India island in 1664; his widow married, secondly, Thomas Andrews of Rowley Village (incorporated as Boxford in 1685) June 22, 1670; 3. Mary, baptized July 16, 1643; probably died before 1663; 4. John, baptized March 29, 1646; probably died before 1663.

<sup>5</sup>George Emery was born in 1609; lived on the corner of Washington and Norman streets; wife Mary died in 1673; probably had no children. Five years later, he conveyed his property, for his life support, to his niece Elizabeth, wife of John Tawley, who lived in his house.

<sup>6</sup>William Goose lived on the westerly side of what is now English Street and just south of what is now Derby Street; died about 1656; his widow became distracted and was taken care of by the town from 1656 to 1663; children: 1. Mary; married Thomas Woodward March 7, 1660; 2. John, baptized April 14, 1644; married Mary Robinson June 18, 1665; she died Nov. 9, 1665.

<sup>7</sup>WILLIAM JEGGLES<sup>1</sup> was a shipwright; married Elizabeth —; died May —, 1659; she survived him, and died in the summer of 1667; children: 1. William;<sup>2</sup> "William Jeggles, who came from Virginia," died May 12, 1674; 2. Thomas;<sup>2</sup> 3. Elizabeth;<sup>2</sup> married — Greene of Malden before 1675, when she was his widow; 4. —;<sup>2</sup> 5. —.<sup>2</sup>

CAPT. THOMAS JEGGLES;<sup>2</sup> master-mariner; married Abigail Sharp in 1647; both living in 1686; children: 1. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born July 21, 1648; mar-

Lemon,<sup>1</sup> Thomas Watson, John Luff<sup>2</sup> and Edward Gaskell<sup>3</sup> were living in Salem in 1636. The memory of Mr. Lemon is perpetuated by the name of Lemon Street. Mr. Watson was a tailor; his wife was probably named

*Wm. Goofer*

ried Isaac Foot; 2. *Thomas*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 14, 1650; 3. William,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1652; died March 17, 1652; 4. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 4, 1653-4; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 15, 1656; 6. William,<sup>3</sup> born May 30, 1659; mariner and shoreman; died in the spring of 1728; 7. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 9, 1661; 8. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born March 9, 1664; 9. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 14, 1666; 10. John,<sup>3</sup> born March 25, 1669; 11. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> born March 9, 1671; spinster in 1704; 12. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born May 25, 1674.

THOMAS JEGGLES,<sup>3</sup> married Mary Weston March —, 1683; died Aug. 19, 1687; she was his widow in 1699; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 5, 1684; 2. William,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 25, 1699; lived in Boston, leather-dresser, in 1708; 3. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 25, 1699; lived in Boston, leather-dresser, in 1708.

<sup>1</sup>Robert Lemon married Mary —; died in the spring of 1667; she married, secondly, Philip Cromwell Nov. 19, 1674; children: 1. Grace, baptized April —, 1639; married Robert Sollas; 2. Mary, baptized April —, 1639; married Alexander Seers; 3. Martha, baptized March 22, 1640-1; married Bartholomew Gale; 4. John, baptized March 27, 1643; died young; 5. Elizabeth, baptized Dec. 17, 1643; died Dec. 14, 1662; 6. John, baptized Oct. 12, 1645; 7. Sarah; married Charles Knight; 8. Hannah, baptized July 7, 1650; married Samuel Beadle.

<sup>2</sup>John Luff was a weaver and lived in Salem as late as 1667. He had a wife in 1648-9, when they lived apart; he also had a wife in 1663; and he was helped by the town in 1666. Robert Hibburd was called his son in 1667. In 1650, Mr. Luff was freed from training on account of his age and disability.

<sup>3</sup>EDWARD GASKELL<sup>1</sup> (also Gascoyne and Gaskin), born about 1603; was a ship carpenter; married Sarah —; probably died in the summer of 1690, when he was very sick and weak; she was then living; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 7, 1639; 2. *Preserved*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 7, 1639; married John Lambert; 3. Daniel,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 10, 1640; 4. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 14, 1643; married Peter Joy; 5. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 1, 1646; 6. Edward,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 30, 1648.

SAMUEL GASKELL,<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Provided Southwick Dec. 30, 1662; died about 1723; she was his widow in 1725; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 23, 1663-4; 2. Edward,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 23, 1667; married Hannah Endecott April 10, 1693; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 2, 1669-70; 4. Provided,<sup>3</sup> born April 22, 1672; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 6, 1674; died Aug. 3, 1689; 6. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 1, 1676; married Caleb Buffum; 7. Josiah,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 11, 1678.

SAMUEL GASKELL,<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Bethiah —; died in the autumn of 1725; she survived him; children: 1. Bethiah,<sup>4</sup> born May 8, 1686; died young; 2. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 28, 1687; ship carpenter and husbandman; married Sarah —; they were living in 1725; 3. Patience,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 9, 1689; married Jonathan Boyce; 4. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 23, 1691; 5. Bethiah,<sup>4</sup> born June 20, 1694; married Caleb Callam April 26, 1716; 6. Nathan,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 26, 1696-7; husbandman; removed to Mendon in 1723; married Mary Boyce March 26, 1719; 7. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 26, 1698-9; died Nov. 21, 1703; 8. Provided,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 26, 1700-1; 9. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born April 26, 1703; 10. Content;<sup>4</sup> married Nathaniel Varney of Dover, N. H., Aug. 21, 1727; 11. Jonathan;<sup>4</sup> yeoman and fisherman; married Alice Pickering Sept. 29, 1726; they were living in 1733; 12. Sarah;<sup>4</sup> unmarried in 1725.



Joan; and he died March 1, 1672-3. Mr. Gaskell was then about thirty-three years old. Henry

*Thomas*  
*Wentham*

Bartholomew,<sup>1</sup> aged about twenty-nine, arrived in New England Nov. 7, 1635; and settled in Salem.

John Pease,<sup>2</sup> aged twenty-seven, sailed from Ipswich, England, for

*Henry Bartholomew*

America, in April, 1634, in the Francis, and landed at Boston. He lived in Salem as early as 1636. John

Bourne<sup>3</sup> was also here in 1636.

John Symonds,<sup>4</sup> the ancestor of most of the inhabitants of North Salem years ago, came to Salem in 1636. He was a joiner, and lived at first on the western

*John Bourne*

<sup>1</sup>Henry Bartholomew was brother of William Bartholomew of Ipswich, and was born about 1607; merchant; lived in Salem, except from 1679 to 1681, when he dwelt in Boston; representative for nineteen years; married Elizabeth Scudder; she died Sept. 1, 1682; he died Nov. 22, 1692; children: 1. Elizabeth, baptized May 8, 1641; probably died young; 2. Hannah, baptized Feb. 12, 1642-3; married, first, James Browne; second, Dr. John Swinerton; 3. John, baptized Nov. 10, 1644; 4. Abraham, baptized Nov. 22, 1646; living in 1664; 5. Eleazer, baptized July 29, 1649; 6. Abigail, baptized Oct. 6, 1650; married Nehemiah Willoughby; 7. William, baptized Oct. 2, 1652; 8. Elizabeth, baptized July 2, 1654; married John Pilgrim; 9. Henry, baptized May 10, 1657; merchant; member of the First Church in Boston; married Katherine —; died in 1698; probably had no children, but adopted a daughter Katherine, who married — Walker before 1694; in his will he mentions "brother Col. Elisha Hutchinson" and "sister [Abigail] Dudson alias Lawthrop"; his widow Katherine married, secondly, — Chamberlain, and was the latter's widow, of Salem, in 1717; 10. Sarah, born Jan. 29, 1658-9; married Ebenezer Gardner.

<sup>2</sup>Savage says that John Pease was a brother of Robert Pease. Francis Weston's wife is called John Pease's sister. John Pease left Salem about 1645.

<sup>3</sup>John Bourne removed to Gloucester in 1649; married Mary —.

<sup>4</sup>JOHN SYMONDS married Elizabeth —; died in the summer of 1671; children: 1. James,<sup>2</sup> born in 1633; 2. Catherine,<sup>2</sup> married Jacob Towne; 3. Ruth,<sup>2</sup> married Job Swinerton; 4. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born Jan. —, 1638; settled in Rowley Village (Boxford) in 1663; married Elizabeth Andrews of Rowley Village April 14, 1662; died Aug. 14, 1722; she died, his widow, March 17, 1725; had children.

JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>2</sup> joiner; married Elizabeth Browning Nov. 20, 1661; died in the spring of 1714; she died about the same time; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 1, 1662; married, first, Edward Norris Dec. 3, 1685; second, — Starr; 2. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 19, 1663-4; married Josiah Southwick; 3. John,<sup>3</sup> born July 8, 1666; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. —, 1668; died Dec. —, 1668; 5. James,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 14, 1670; died about June, 1673; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born March 6, 1672-3; died young; 7. James,<sup>3</sup> born April 15, 1674; 8. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 7, 1674; died, probably unmarried, in the summer of 1722; 9. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born April 1, 1677; 10. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 29, 1679; died,

corner of St. Peter and Bridge streets; and before 1652, settled where the Upham schoolhouse stands on North Street. Symonds was one of the large New England families which has remained almost wholly within a limited section. It has

*Jahn Symonds*

unmarried, March 23, 1757; 11. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born March 20, 1681-2; yeoman; died about 1756; 12. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 21, 1687-8; married Samuel Stone.

JOHN SYMONDS;<sup>3</sup> husbandman and joiner; married, first, Sarah Waters March 3, 1689-90; second, Sarah Foster March 15, 1710-1; died in the winter of 1728-9; she died before 1743; children: 1. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born May 22, 1692; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born June 3, 1699; 3. *Jonathan*,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 6, 1711; 4. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 12, 1713; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born March —, 1714-5; married Joseph Pickering; 6. *James*,<sup>4</sup> born April 2, 1717; 7. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 28, 1718; 8. *Anna*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. 18, 1720; married Francis Skerry. JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>3</sup> married Mary Robinson March 25, 1697; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> married Jonathan Very; 2. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> living, unmarried, in 1724. THOMAS SYMONDS;<sup>3</sup> husbandman and joiner; married Elizabeth Stone; died about May 1, 1758; she was his widow in 1766; children: 1. *James*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 17, 1710; died before 1752; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 9, 1712; 3. *Thomas*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 25, 1714; blacksmith; lived in Reading; married, first, Hannah Skerry Oct. 15, 1735; second, Hannah Parker of Reading Nov. 29, 1739; living in Reading in 1760; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 20, 1716; married — Trask before 1752; 5. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> born May 14, 1719; 6. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 12, 1721; 7. *Nathaniel*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 1, 1723; 8. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 19, 1725; married Benjamin Osgood; 9. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> born June 17, 1728; married William Osgood.

JOHN SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> husbandman and fisherman; married Priscilla Smith Nov. 22, 1722; she was his wife in 1761; he died in the winter of 1791-2; children: 1. *John*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 31, 1727; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 31, 1727; died, probably unmarried, before 1800; 3. *Priscilla*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 21, 1728; married Capt. James Barr; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 26, 1731; spinster; died, unmarried, Oct. —, 1814. SAMUEL SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer; married, first, Mary Roach Nov. 16, 1722; second, Susannah Herbert Dec. 31, 1724; died in the winter of 1776-7; she survived him and died before 1792; children: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 23, 1723; died young; 2. *John*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 10, 1725; mariner; married Sarah —; living in 1784; 3. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 25, 1727; 4. *William*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 30, 1729; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 6, 1731; 6. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 2, 1733; 7. *Benjamin*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 7, 1735; 8. *James*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 1, 1737-8; 8. *Ebenezer*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 19, 1741. BENJAMIN SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> husbandman and chair-maker; married Hannah Battin Dec. 14, 1738; they were living in 1783; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 3, 1741-2; yeoman; married Abigail Trask Nov. 25, 1769; died before Feb. 1, 1779, leaving children; she was his widow in 1781; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 19, 1742; 3. *Hannah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 26, 1749; married Daniel Bancroft of Reading Aug. 14, 1770; 4. *Sarah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 10, 1750; 5. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 14, 1755; married William Dowst; 6. *Rachel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 18, 1757; married Brackley Rose. JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> cooper; married Mary Cloutman Nov. 24, 1741; both were living in 1767; he was deceased in 1813; children: 1. *John*,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 10, 1747; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 23, 1753; married Joseph Swan Nov. 19, 1772; 3. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 16, 1755; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 3, 1756; 5. *Hannah*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 1, 1758; 6. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 13, 1759. SAMUEL SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> shoreman; married Mary Hooper July 27, 1733; she died July 7, 1789; he died in the summer of 1799; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized



assisted in a great degress in the life and development of the

Nov. 15, 1741; married Samuel Cook Dec. 8, 1754; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 15, 1741; died young; 3. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 31, 1741-2; fisherman; married Elizabeth Cook Aug. 22, 1789; died before 1797; she survived him, and died Feb. 9, 1809; 4. *Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> 5. *James*,<sup>5</sup> 6. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 23, 1751; 7. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 14, 1754. BENJAMIN SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> husbandman, chair-maker and turner; married Margaret Skerry Feb. 6, 1744-5; died between 1764 and 1780; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 25, 1746-7; 2. *James*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 23, 1749; 3. *Margaret*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 17, 1750-1; married Benjamin Ropes; 4. *Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 22, 1753; 5. *Elizabeth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 19, 1755; married John Woodbury; 6. *Ephraim*,<sup>5</sup> 7. *John*,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 25, 1759. JOSEPH SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> joiner and cabinet-maker; married Mary Very Nov. 15, 1743; died in the summer of 1769; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> housewright; married, first, Sarah Gardner Feb. 6, 1766; second, Abigail (Chapman), widow of Abel Gardner Nov. 30, 1781; third, widow Hannah Phelps Oct. 13, 1793; she was his wife in 1803; he died in the summer of 1809; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>5</sup> 3. *James*,<sup>5</sup> 4. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1753; living in 1770; 5. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1755; living in 1771; 6. *Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1758; living in 1770; 7. *Margaret*,<sup>5</sup> born about 1762; unmarried in 1830. NATHANIEL SYMONDS;<sup>4</sup> potter; married, first, Jane Phipps; she died Nov. 30, 1760; married, second, widow Elizabeth Downing Aug. 20, 1761; he died in the winter of 1792-3; she survived him; children: 1. *William*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 14, 1749-50; 2. *Jane*,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 10, 1753; married Francis Skerry; 3. *Nathaniel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 18, 1754; 4. *Mary*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 13, 1763; married Angier MacIntyre; 5. *Thomas*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 11, 1764; 6. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 20, 1766; 7. *Ruth*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 30, 1768; married John Bushby of Danvers April 30, 1794.

JOHN SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; married Elizabeth Cavis of Ipswich Nov. 22, 1750; died between 1794 and 1800; children: 1. *Elizabeth*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1758; married Robert Swan of Marblehead June 21, 1770; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1758; 3. *Susannah*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1758; married Samuel Daland April 24, 1779; 4. *Priscilla*,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 3, 1759; married Nathaniel Lang; 5. *John*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 6, 1761. WILLIAM SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> fisherman and mariner; married Mary Beadle Dec. 19, 1754; died between 1777 and 1792; she was his widow in 1798; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 3, 1756; married Francis Benson of Beverly Aug. 3, 1777; 2. *William*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 3, 1758; mariner; married Elizabeth Raddan Oct. 9, 1792; died in the winter of 1801-2; she died, his widow, June 19, 1844; 3. *Lois*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 24, 1760; married Thomas Barrett April 7, 1785; 4. *Ebenezer*,<sup>6</sup> 5. *Herbert*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1763; 6. *Jonathan*,<sup>6</sup> baptized March 24, 1771; mariner; living in 1792; married Hannah Symonds Dec. 4, 1800; she died, his wife, Jan. 20, 1846. BENJAMIN SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> cordwainer and fisherman; married Lydia Procter April 21, 1763; died before 1793; she died March 18, 1810; children: 1. *Thorndike*,<sup>6</sup> 2. *Charles Worthen*,<sup>6</sup> born March 21, 1775; 3. *Lydia*,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 2, 1777; married Joseph Richards. JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> cooper; married Mehitable Putnam of Danvers Dec. 22, 1763; died in the winter of 1797-8; she was his widow in 1798, and dead in 1826; children: 1. *Jacob*,<sup>6</sup> 2. *James*.<sup>6</sup> JONATHAN SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> married Mary Ramsdell Jan. 8, 1767; died before 1807; she was his widow in 1807; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 2, 1770; died, unmarried, July 23, 1817; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 18, 1772; of Lynn, cordwainer, in 1807; 3. *Hannah*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 19, 1775; married Jonathan Symonds. THOMAS SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> mariner and yeoman; married Mary Chapman April 10, 1769; died June 11, 1808; she was his widow in 1809; children: 1. *Mary*,<sup>6</sup> born about 1769; died, unmarried, March 30, 1842; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 1, 1773; married Amos Lamson; 3. *Sarah*,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 1, 1773; died, unmarried, April 2, 1862; 4. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup>

town and city. Men with professions have been rare among

baptized Sept. 4, 1774; 5. Hannah;<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1809; 6. Lydia,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 15, 1778; married Frederick Coombs; 7. Susanna,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1781; 8. *Thomas*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. —, 1783; 9. Nancy;<sup>6</sup> married Holten J. Breed. JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> mariner, shipwright and caulker; married Hannah Chapman Dec. 5, 1765; died in 1801; she died, his widow, Aug. 23, 1808; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 4, 1768; mariner; living in 1816; 2. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 4, 1771; married Asa Reeves Aug. 21, 1796; 3. James,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 27, 1774; 4. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 29, 1776; 5. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 30, 1780; married Thomas Butman; 6. Abigail,<sup>6</sup> born about 1783; married Asa Reeves March 29, 1812; 7. *George*,<sup>6</sup> born about 1786; baptized Feb. —, 1787. BENJAMIN SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> mariner and yeoman; married Elizabeth Masury April 7, 1773; died in 1779; she died, his widow, in 1804; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> born in 1775; cordwainer; married Sarah Hunt July 28, 1805; died April 25, 1809; she was his widow in 1831; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized June 1, 1777. EPHRAIM SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Downing March 20, 1770; died in the winter of 1777-8; she married, secondly, Samuel Fuller Dec. 19, 1778; child: 1. Ephraim,<sup>6</sup> baptized July 20, 1777. JOHN SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> mariner, fisherman and yeoman; married Susanna Webb July 22, 1786; died in 1811; she died, his widow, Sept. 28, 1844; children: 1. John,<sup>6</sup> baptized May —, 1794; 2. Susanna,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 2, 1794; 3. Margaret,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 2, 1794; 4. Maria,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 2, 1794. JONATHAN SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> housewright; married Ursula Knapp May 1, 1771; died in the summer of 1779; she married, secondly, Joshua Phippen; children: 1. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Dec. 13, 1772; died, unmarried, in 1846; 2. Ursula K.,<sup>6</sup> born about 1775; married Hardy Phippen; 3. Rebecca,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1778; married Isaac Needham Chapman. JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> fisherman; married Elizabeth Bird of Marblehead Jan. 2, 1770; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 18, 1774; 2. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 4, 1778; 3. James,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 2, 1780; 4. James,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 25, 1782. WILLIAM SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> cordwainer and potter; married Eunice Gardner Nov. 15, 1772; died July 26, 1830; she died Sept. 8, 1830; children: 1. *William Phipps*,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 3, 1773; 2. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 13, 1775; lived in Danvers; died, unmarried, Oct. 3, 1850; 3. *Ephraim*,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 17, 1777; 4. *Nathaniel*,<sup>6</sup> born May 3, 1780; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> born March 17, 1783; 6. Lois,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 10, 1785; died May —, 1793; 7. Lucy,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 30, 1789; married Jonathan Shove of Danvers Dec. 10, 1819; 8. *Thomas*,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 12, 1792; 9. Lois,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 30, 1796; married Joseph W. Carey of Danvers Sept. 24, 1818. NATHANIEL SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> potter; married Elizabeth Gardner Nov. 17, 1779; died in the winter of 1803-4; she survived him; children: 1. Nathaniel Gardner,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 1, 1780; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> baptized in 1781; 3. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. —, 1784; lived in Danvers; died, unmarried, Jan. 16, 1842; 4. ———<sup>6</sup> (son), baptized March —, 1791; 5. *Ephraim*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1796; 6. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 23, 1798; living in 1809. SAMUEL SYMONDS;<sup>5</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Cook Dec. 20, 1789; died in the winter of 1808-9; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 1, 1790; died, unmarried, March 16, 1877; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 26, 1793; 3. Benjamin,<sup>6</sup> born about 1796; living in 1809; 4. *Thomas*,<sup>6</sup> born about 1798; died in the West Indies in 1818. JOHN SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> mariner and fisherman and trader; married Elizabeth Pickering March 5, 1793; died Dec. 8, 1839; she died, his widow, April 7, 1841; children: 1. Samuel;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer and grocer; died, unmarried, Oct. 22, 1888, aged ninety-four; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1796; married Rev. James A. Boswell of Danvers July 11, 1819; 3. John Pickering,<sup>7</sup> baptized Oct. 28, 1798. EBENEZER SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Mary Danforth May 2, 1784; she was his wife in 1806; he died June 22, 1828; children: 1. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born in 1784; died, unmarried, Nov. 27, 1855; 2. *Ebenezer*,<sup>7</sup> born



them, and the larger number of its men have been city and

Aug. 27, 1786; 3. Stephen,<sup>7</sup> born about 1790; shoe manufacturer; died, unmarried, July 6, 1864; 4. *John D.*,<sup>7</sup> born March 11, 1793; 5. *Nathaniel Danforth*,<sup>7</sup> born May 28, 1799. HERBERT SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Abigail Cook Nov. 14, 1786; living in 1805; children: 1. Herbert,<sup>7</sup> born about 1787; lived in Marblehead and Charlestown; married Elizabeth Bolton of Salem Sept. 2, 1810; living in 1827; 2. Abigail,<sup>7</sup> born about 1790; living in 1804; 3. Lois,<sup>7</sup> born about 1793; living in 1804; 4. Fanny,<sup>7</sup> born about 1795; living in 1804. THORNDIKE SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Girdler Dec. 20, 1789; died in 1815; she died, his widow, Aug. 13, 1848; children: 1. *Edward*,<sup>7</sup> born May 31, 1799; 2. Charles W.,<sup>7</sup> born in 1803; dyer; lived in North Chelsea; married Lavinia Dearborn; died Sept. 8, 1853; 3. *Fenton*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1806; 4. Lavinia,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 17, 1807; married, first, Samuel Chapple March —, 1831; and, second, Capt. John D. Symonds; 5. Elizabeth;<sup>7</sup> married — Allyn before 1848; 6. Sophia;<sup>7</sup> married Samuel J. Glover Aug. —, 1831. CHARLES WORTHEN SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> victualer; lived in Danvers and Salem; married Content Purington March 3, 1799; children: 1. Mary Purington,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 18, 1799; 2. Lydia,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 19, 1801; 3. Anna,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 12, 1804; 4. Abigail,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 7, 1806; died, unmarried, May 12, 1870; 5. Paulina,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 8, 1807; unmarried, in 1876; 6. Eliza Breed,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 1, 1809; died, unmarried, Jan. 17, 1876; 7. Nathan Breed,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 28, 1812; lived in New York State in 1876; 8. Susan,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 9, 1817. JACOB SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> mariner; married Rhoda Berry June 15, 1800; died April 20, 1813; she died Feb. —, 1827; children: 1. Lucy,<sup>7</sup> born in 1802; died Oct. 17, 1818; 2. Phebe;<sup>7</sup> married Daniel Holt Southwick of Cambridge April 29, 1824; 3. Jacob Putnam;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer in 1828; 4. Stillman Lothrop;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer in 1831; 5. Nathaniel Gerry;<sup>7</sup> living in 1827. JAMES SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> was dead in 1824; child: 1. James;<sup>7</sup> housewright; lived in Gloucester; married Mary — before 1824. THOMAS SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> chaise-body maker and yeoman; married, first, Elizabeth Coombs July 10, 1806; and second, Hannah M. (Coombs), widow of Simon Stodder April 7, 1836; died July 31, 1838; his wife Hannah died, his widow, Dec. 7, 1878; children: 1. Nancy,<sup>7</sup> born June 7, 1807; married Solomon Stevens; 2. *Thomas*,<sup>7</sup> born April 30, 1810; 3. Edward,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 28, 1812; grocer; died, unmarried, May 31, 1886; 4. *Dean C.*,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 11, 1815; 5. Hannah D.,<sup>7</sup> born about 1834; married Thorndike D. Symonds (published Oct. 8, 1843); 6. Caroline M.,<sup>7</sup> born in 1837; married Orin Thompson; 7. *George H.*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1837. GEORGE SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> tailor and mariner; married Sally M. Clarke Jan. 22, 1819; mate of schooner Romp; she died Aug. 26, 1825; he died at sea in 1827; child: 1. George Dean,<sup>7</sup> born about 1819; living in 1834. WILLIAM PHIPPS SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> merchant; married Margaret Ropes April 28, 1798; died Sept. 18, 1824; she died, his widow, Sept. 19, 1848; children: 1. *William Phipps*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1799; 2. *Benjamin R.*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1801; 3. George W.,<sup>7</sup> born about 1805; drowned June 18, 1846; 4. Margaret,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 31, 1807; died in Newton, unmarried, Nov. 22, 1884; 5. *Ephraim G.*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 1, 1809; 6. Calvin,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 22, 1811; clerk; died, unmarried, Aug. 2, 1871; 7. Joseph;<sup>7</sup> lived in Boston (West Newton?) in 1889; 8. James Monroe,<sup>7</sup> born about 1817; clergyman; died Oct. 17, 1849; 9. —<sup>7</sup> (daughter), born about 1820; died Sept. 8, 1821; 10. Timothy,<sup>7</sup> born April 18, 1803; shoemaker; died, unmarried, Feb. 11, 1887. CAPT. EPHRAIM SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> mariner and cordwainer; married Mary Sanderson of Salem Nov. 24, 1805; died in 1808: she died, his widow, Oct. 10, 1871; children: 1. Ephraim Mulliken,<sup>7</sup> born about 1806; living in 1811; 2. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born in 1784. NATHANIEL SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> trader; married Elizabeth Baker of Ipswich Nov. 17, 1805; she was his wife in 1810; died Feb. 6, 1848; children: 1. Rebecca B.,<sup>7</sup> born in 1806; died Oct. 19, 1822; 2. *Nathaniel Gardner*,<sup>7</sup> born May 16, 1808; 2. *William Allen*,<sup>7</sup>

bank officials and mechanics and traders. Although pursuing the

born Feb. 12, 1810; 4. *Joseph Pope*,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 23, 1811; 5. *Jonathan Shove*,<sup>7</sup> born March 26, 1812; 6. *Lutia Maria*,<sup>7</sup> married George F. Brown; 7. *Henry C.*,<sup>7</sup> 8. ———<sup>7</sup> (son), born June 28, 1818; died July 1, 1818; 9. *Charles Edwin*,<sup>7</sup> born June 12, 1819; 10. *Elizabeth*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1824; died Sept. 10, 1824; 11. *Rebecca E.*,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 31, 1825; married Charles E. Brown. JOSEPH SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> cordwainer and trader; married Catharine Brown (born in Canada) (published April 13, 1817); died Feb. 25, 1840; she died, his widow, Feb. 20, 1865; children: 1. *Joseph Warren*,<sup>7</sup> born July 11, 1820; died, unmarried, July 21, 1891; 2. *Edward B.*,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 19, 1818; 3. *Ebenezer*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1824; cordwainer; died Sept. 14, 1846. THOMAS SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> cordwainer and farmer; married Mary Felt Oct. 21, 1821; she died Feb. 16, 1855; he was drowned Oct. 4, 1864; children: 1. *Benjamin F.*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1826; farmer; died, unmarried, May 6, 1851; 2. *Mary E.*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1829; died in Tewksbury, unmarried, April 2, 1864; 3. *Catharine T.*,<sup>7</sup> born about 1833; died, unmarried, July 10, 1855; 4. *Edward A. (F?)*,<sup>7</sup> farmer; died in Danvers, unmarried, March 13, 1859. EPHRAIM SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> painter; married Mary Ann Smith July 26, 1829; died Oct. 19, 1862; she died, his widow, Feb. 3, 1885; children: 1. *Stephen G.*,<sup>7</sup> born April 22, 1832; 2. *Nathaniel A.*,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 20, 1834; carpenter; married Mrs. Hannah L. (Andrews) Pike of Salem Dec. 23, 1880; she died March 30, 1896; he died June 18, 1902; 3. *Lemuel Willis*,<sup>7</sup> born in 1838; died April 29, 1840; 4. *Lemuel Willis*,<sup>7</sup> born June 1, 1841. SAMUEL SYMONDS;<sup>6</sup> grocer; married Sarah Skerry Dec. 31, 1816; died Aug. 27, 1863; she died, his widow, March 21, 1883; children: 1. *Sarah E.*,<sup>7</sup> born July 27, 1817; died, unmarried, Sept. 8, 1892; 2. *Samuel C.*,<sup>7</sup> born June 26, 1819; 3. *William H.*,<sup>7</sup> born July 16, 1821; 4. *Edward A.*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 1, 1824; merchant; died, unmarried, Dec. 14, 1903; 5. *Mary Cook*,<sup>7</sup> born March 18, 1826; died, unmarried, March 23, 1898; 6. *Charles F.*,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 1, 1828; grocer; died, unmarried, Aug. 25, 1852; 7. *Ellen M.*,<sup>7</sup> born Feb. 16, 1831; unmarried in 1901; 8. *Caroline F.*,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 29, 1833; married Emery H. Shepard of Concord, N. H.; 9. *George W.*,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 5, 1835; died, unmarried, Feb. 1, 1901.

EBENEZER SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer, shoe manufacturer and shoe dealer; died Feb. 25, 1872; children: 1. *Lucy A.*,<sup>8</sup> married Lorenzo A. Smith; 2. *William*,<sup>8</sup> living in 1872; 3. *Mary D.*,<sup>8</sup> married William A. Pope. CAPT. JOHN D. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> master-mariner; married, first, Lucy Kilham of Manchester Dec. 16, 1834; she died Oct. 23, 1840; married, second, Lavinia (Symonds), widow of Samuel Chapple Nov. 25, 1841; died March 26, 1877; she died, his widow, Jan. 3, 1886; children: 1. *Lydia A.*,<sup>8</sup> born about 1835; married Joseph Story Littlefield of Manchester May 29, 1872; 2. *Mary P.*,<sup>8</sup> married Nathan Newhall of Malden; 3. *Lucy Jane*,<sup>8</sup> born in 1838; died Sept. 9, 1841; 4. ———<sup>8</sup> born July —, 1840; died Aug. 8, 1840; 5. *Stephen*,<sup>8</sup> born June 19, 1842; 6. *Samuel C.*,<sup>8</sup> born in 1844; 7. *John D.*,<sup>8</sup> born in 1844; died May 20, 1845; 8. *Lavinia E.*,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 18, 1846; unmarried in 1886; 9. *Eben*,<sup>8</sup> lived in Malden in 1877 and 1886; 10. *John D.*,<sup>8</sup> born in 1851; died Aug. 9, 1851. NATHANIEL DANFORTH SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> mariner; married Hannah Kilham of Manchester May 22, 1827; died Jan. 29, 1866; she died, his widow, Dec. 21, 1881; children: 1. *Nathaniel D.*,<sup>8</sup> born in 1830; clerk; died Nov. 14, 1852; 2. *William H.*,<sup>8</sup> born about 1837; died, unmarried, Oct. 24, 1909; 3. *Hannah M.*,<sup>8</sup> born in 1839; died Oct. 5, 1840. EDWARD SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> brick-maker; married, first, Eliza Bateman March 26, 1822; she died Sept. 20, 1867; married, second, Elizabeth Coombs April 20, 1871; his wife Elizabeth died April 30, 1876; he died March 4, 1878; children: 1. *Mary Eliza*,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 15, 1823; married Simon Stodder; 2. *Harriet Elizabeth*,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 30, 1825; married Edward F. Carleton; 3. *Ann Maria*,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 2, 1827; married Augustus E. Price of Gloucester March 29, 1849; 4. *Lucy Dale*,<sup>8</sup> born



ordinary callings, they have always been interested in public affairs.

June 29, 1830; married, first, Charles A. Lord Feb. 4, 1852; second, George E. Lord; 5. Sarah Pew,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 22, 1832; died young; 6. William Edmond,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 2, 1834; died Dec. 8, 1841; 7. Sarah Pew,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 15, 1837; married Solomon Augustus Nelson of Georgetown Sept. 12, 1871; 8. Rebecca Galloup,<sup>8</sup> born July 17, 1839; married Edward Collins. FENTON SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> painter; married, first, Mary E. Symonds Nov. 30, 1826; she died Sept. 25, 1846; married, second, Sarah Dalton Aug. 29, 1847; died Jan. 11, 1859; she died, his widow, Oct. 17, 1861; children: 1. John O.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1832; died Jan. 6, 1845; 2. Hannah Marie,<sup>8</sup> born July 16, 1845; married Thomas Stevens B. Swasey. THOMAS SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer and trader; married Mary Ann Taylor Jan. 22, 1834; died July 19, 1887; she died, his widow, April 2, 1902; children: 1. Mary C.<sup>8</sup>; married Edwin Very; 2. Martha L.<sup>8</sup>; married — Lord; 3. Anna S.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1841; married Joseph E. Waldron; 4. Elizabeth T.<sup>8</sup>, born Oct. 21, 1844; married James Pope; 5. Susan C.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1847; died Sept. 18, 1852; 6. Thomas,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 1, 1850; 7. Alice Stodder,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 6, 1853; married Wilbur E. Lee. DEAN C. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> married, first, Martha Knight June 29, 1841; she died Dec. 25, 1848; married, second, Mrs. Eliza J. (Kellock) Upton July 17, 1851; his wife Eliza died May 6, 1886; he died March 9, 1892; children: 1. Dean A.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1846; died March 20, 1853; 2. Martha A.<sup>8</sup>, born Nov. 30, 1848; married Edward A. Winn. GEORGE H. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> carpenter; married, first, Maria Margaret Arrington of Salem July 7, 1864; she died June 23, 1867; married, second, Emma Marion Punchard Jan. 26, 1871; children: 1. George Edward,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 11, 1866, in Newton; grocer; married Louise M. Knight Nov. 23, 1891; died April 14, 1894; 2. William Henry,<sup>8</sup> born in 1871, in Salem; clerk; married Mabel L. Sanborn Sept. 8, 1896; died Jan. 13, 1909; and she married, secondly, Holton B. Jewett; 3. Orin Clayton,<sup>8</sup> born March 24, 1879, in Salem; bookkeeper; lives in Danvers; married Grace F. Creese of Danvers Nov. 1, 1905. WILLIAM PHIPPS SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer and shoemaker; married Nancy Phelps June 15, 1825; died Nov. 12, 1850; she died, his widow, Jan. 16, 1887; children: 1. —<sup>8</sup> (son), born in 1825; died Sept. 2, 1827; 2. Margaret A.<sup>8</sup>; married — Marsh of Boston; 3. Ellen A.<sup>8</sup>, born Sept. 12, 1830; died, unmarried, July 14, 1865; 4. Lucy S.<sup>8</sup>, born about 1833; died June 6, 1844; 5. William P.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1839; died April 26, 1844. BENJAMIN R. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer and grocer; married, first, Elizabeth R. Shatswell (published April 11, 1829); she died June 2, 1842; married, second, Mrs. Mehitable (Harris) Kettelle Aug. 20, 1843; died Sept. 23, 1862; she died, his widow, March 9, 1888; children: 1. Benjamin R.<sup>8</sup>, born Nov. 22, 1829; 2. Thomas Shatswell,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 3, 1832; 3. Joseph,<sup>8</sup> born in 1835; 4. George C.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1840; died Aug. 19, 1841; 5. Eliza S.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1842; married Henry M. Bixby. EPHRAIM G. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer; married Priscilla Ellen Quiner of Beverly Nov. 28, 1834; died July 30, 1885; she died Aug. 23, 1906, aged ninety-two; children: 1. Ephraim G.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1838; died April 11, 1856; 2. Annie E.<sup>8</sup>, born in 1848; died Dec. 3, 1857. They also had an adopted daughter, Lulu Alberta, born in 1864, who married William J. Watts. NATHANIEL GARDNER SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> shoe manufacturer; married Harriet Fillebrown Jan. 12, 1832; died Jan. 17, 1894; she died, his widow, July 26, 1896; children: 1. Harriet Maria,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 11, 1832; married Nathaniel Augustus Horton; 2. Thomas Putnam,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 30, 1834; 3. Stillman Gardner,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 1, 1837; 4. Stillman Gardner,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 17, 1840; cashier of the Exchange National Bank; married, first, Mary Ellen Humphreys Dec. 3, 1863; she died Sept. 21, 1903; married, second, Mary E. Kinsman; she died June 5, 1907; 5. Louisa Carey,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 15, 1844; died Oct. 19, 1846; 6. George Fillebrown,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 10, 1846; died Aug. 19, 1852; 7. Susan Price,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 19, 1848; married Thomas Dawes Blake

Thomas Tuck, a blacksmith, aged about twenty-five, lived on Cape Ann side in 1636. In 1643, he was living apart from his

of Belmont May 18, 1870; 8. *Eben Baker*,<sup>8</sup> born May 29, 1851; 9. Albert Porter,<sup>8</sup> born April 12, 1854; died Sept. 16, 1854. WILLIAM ALLEN SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> shoe manufacturer; married Mary Jameson (published June 7, 1840); she died July 9, 1879; he died Nov. 7, 1879; children: 1. William A.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1841; died Oct. 21, 1849; 2. Frederick A.,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. —, 1843; died Dec. 24, 1843; 3. Nathaniel Cleaves,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. 6, 1845; never married; went away in 1863, and last heard from in South Pass City, Wyoming; 4. John Jameson,<sup>8</sup> born in 1847; died, unmarried, June 24, 1912; 5. Caroline Jameson,<sup>8</sup> married Lyman A. Smith; 6. Laura Jameson,<sup>8</sup> born March 11, 1852; principal of the Upham school; died, unmarried, in Danvers Oct. 18, 1919. JOSEPH POPE SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer and engineer; married, first, Elizabeth Roberts of Essex March 27, 1842; she died Feb. 19, 1858; married, second, Martha (Melcher), widow of — Clarence June 27, 1860; died March 27, 1875; she died, his widow, April 5, 1886; children: 1. George A.,<sup>8</sup> born Jan. —, 1844; 2. Joseph Pope,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. —, 1844; died Feb. 7, 1845; 3. Samuel T.,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. —, 1845; died March 9, 1846; 4. Joseph Pope,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. —, 1847; lived in Elizabeth, N. J.; died Nov. 10, 1909; 5. John H.,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 1, 1849; died Aug. 17, 1850; 6. George D.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1853; died Aug. 28, 1854. JONATHAN SHOVE SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> city assessor; married Eliza G. Nichols Dec. 24, 1847; she died Oct. 2, 1899; he died June 27, 1903; children: 1. *Shove Shannon*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 19, 1848; 2. *James William*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 27, 1850; 3. Eliza E.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1853; died July 18, 1853; 4. *Charles Henry*,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born Aug. 25, 1857; 5. *George Gardner*,<sup>8</sup> (twin), born Aug. 25, 1857; 6. Frederick A.,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 25, 1860; died June 11, 1861; 7. Ella Frances,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 30, 1871; died Jan. 25, 1872. HENRY C. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> died Nov. 26, 1900; children: 1. Brandreth,<sup>8</sup> lived in New York City; 2. Virginia S.,<sup>8</sup> married — Beck of Philadelphia, Pa.; 3. Eunice S.,<sup>8</sup> married — Poindexter of Indianapolis, Ind.; 4. Nathaniel G.,<sup>8</sup> living in 1910. CHARLES EDWIN SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> cordwainer and treasurer of the Salem Savings Bank; married Mary J. Young (published Jan. 21, 1844); died Dec. 1, 1906; she died, his widow, June 29, 1909; children: 1. Mary J.,<sup>8</sup> born May —, 1844; married William W. Robertson; 2. Sarah Ann,<sup>8</sup> born March —, 1846; died Oct. 17, 1846; 3. *Charles N.*,<sup>8</sup> born Oct. 5, 1848; 4. John H.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1851; clerk; lives in Peabody; married Alice H. Smith Nov. 28, 1881; 5. Henry H.,<sup>8</sup> born April 12, 1852; 6. Arthur,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 26, 1855; bank clerk; died, unmarried, Jan. 1, 1881; 7. Lizzie M.,<sup>8</sup> unmarried; clerk in Salem Savings Bank. EDWARD B. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> married Lucinda B. Felt July 3, 1836; died Dec. 20, 1863; she died, his widow, Sept. 8, 1890; children: 1. Edward A.,<sup>8</sup> living in 1865; 2. Lucinda,<sup>8</sup> married Henry A. Merritt; 3. Charles A.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1845; died Oct. 13, 1845; 4. Lois F.,<sup>8</sup> born March 25, 1849; married Henry A. Merritt of Lynnfield Aug. 1, 1870. STEPHEN G. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> house painter; married Lucy Jane Teague of Salem Sept. 27, 1857; died May 20, 1886; children: 1. Lucy A.,<sup>8</sup> born April 27, 1858; married Frederick M. Adams of Lynn Nov. 25, 1877; 2. William A.,<sup>8</sup> born Aug. 4, 1860; 3. *Albert G.*,<sup>8</sup> born April 21, 1862; 4. *George E.*,<sup>8</sup> born July 31, 1866; 5. Emma G.,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 19, 1868; 6. —<sup>8</sup> (son), born Jan. 11, 1872; 7. Bessie Alice,<sup>8</sup> born July 10, 1873; married Frederick J. Mills; 8. Arthur Frederick,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 12, 1875, in Danversport; died in Salem July 23, 1876; 9. Arthur Frederick,<sup>8</sup> born Feb. 1, 1877; clerk; lived in Lynn; married Gertrude M. Huggup June 13, 1893; 10. —<sup>8</sup> (daughter), stillborn April 2, 1879. LEMUEL WILLIS SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> dyer; married Lydia Frances DaCosta June 11, 1863; died May 11, 1909; children: 1. Lizzie F.,<sup>8</sup> born in 1866; married Charles W. Getchell; 2. Mary Browne,<sup>8</sup> born about 1869; married John Forest Balcomb of Boston Aug. 15, 1906; 3. Rutha P.,<sup>8</sup> born about



wife, and in 1650, he had married the widow of George Harris.

1870; married Edmund W. Lakeman; 4. Amanda Ingalls,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 4, 1879; married Harold A. Edson of Littleton, N. H., Oct. 11, 1906. SAMUEL C. SIMONDS;<sup>7</sup> trader; married, first, Lydia Augusta Griffin May 5, 1844; she died Oct. 25, 1870; married, second, Helen Maria Meek; died Aug. 5, 1883; his wife Helen died at the Old Ladies Home, his widow, March 20, 1903; child: 1. *Nathaniel Griffin*,<sup>8</sup> born April 3, 1846. WILLIAM H. SYMONDS;<sup>7</sup> shoe dealer; married Julia A. Goldsmith Sept. 14, 1843; she died Dec. 27, 1890; he died June 1, 1892; children: 1. *William H.*,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 2, 1843; 2. Nathaniel G.,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. —, 1845, in Saco, Me.; died July 1, 1849; 3. Henry A.,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. —, 1847, in Salem; 4. Julia Rosamond,<sup>8</sup> born July 29, 1849; died, unmarried, March 22, 1913; 5. Laura E.,<sup>8</sup> born Dec. 20, 1851; married Charles P. Foote of Hyde Park June 15, 1881; 6. Horace F.,<sup>8</sup> born April 19, 1854; ticket seller; lived in Woonsocket, R. I.; married Mary F. Story Oct. 20, 1881; and died about 1910.

STEPHEN SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> painter and organ-pipe manufacturer; lived in Malden and Salem; married Mary E. Nash of Malden Nov. 28, 1867; died Dec. 13, 1888; she survived him; child: 1. Walter H.,<sup>9</sup> living in 1888, a minor. SAMUEL C. SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> organ builder; removed to Los Angeles, Cal., about 1884; married Sarah Ella Conrey Oct. 13, 1869; child: 1. Harvey Danforth,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 24, 1875. THOMAS SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> carpenter; married Mrs. Mary Susan (Smethurst) Homan Nov. 22, 1881; died Dec. 25, 1905; she died, his widow, July 11, 1911; child: 1. Clarence Brooks,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 23, 1882; died July 17, 1888. BENJAMIN R. SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> grocer; married Sarah Cox Fillebrown of Salem July 13, 1856; died April 22, 1890; she died, his widow, May 22, 1903; children: 1. *Benjamin R.*,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 5, 1857; 2. James F.,<sup>9</sup> born March 4, 1860; died Sept. 20, 1867; 3. Apphia Chesler,<sup>9</sup> born July 31, 1868; married Arthur L. Pattee of Peabody Oct. 18, 1898; 4. *Ernest F.*,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 3, 1872. THOMAS SHATSWELL SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> grocer; married, first, Eliza R. Jordan of Salem May 6, 1858; she died Nov. 11, 1867; married, second, Sarah F. Cross of Salem Sept. 28, 1869; she died July 26, 1881; he died May 13, 1910; children: 1. Alice N.,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 5, 1858; died Nov. 29, 1874; 2. Annie G.,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 27, 1861; married John S. Ives; 3. William A.,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 13, 1863; living in 1910; 4. Flora L.,<sup>9</sup> born March 16, 1865 (adopted by Charles S. Buffum and name changed to Florence Pierce Symonds Buffum Nov. 11, 1873); 5. Sadie L.,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 14, 1870; married — Alias of New York City; 6. Nellie G.,<sup>9</sup> born June 13, 1872; unmarried; insane; 7. Eva S.,<sup>9</sup> born in 1874; married Herbert A. Stone of Lynn Sept. 10, 1902; 8. Bessie May,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 28, 1877; married George Everett Millett; 9. Walter,<sup>9</sup> born July 4, 1880; died Oct. 30, 1881. JOSEPH SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> grocer; married Nancy L. Kimball Dec. 31, 1863; she died Feb. 24, 1900; he died Aug. 26, 1905; children: 1. *Joseph Clifton*,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 24, 1865; 2. *George Elmer*,<sup>9</sup> born May 31, 1868. THOMAS PUTNAM SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> merchant; married Mary Ann Carlton Sept. 15, 1859; she died Dec. 27, 1900; he died Sept. 5, 1907; children: 1. Franklin Putnam,<sup>9</sup> born March 8, 1861; married Elizabeth Chester Coombs Feb. 21, 1895; 2. Leverett Vasmer,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 14, 1864; lived in Wrentham, Mass., and Reed's Ferry, N. H.; married Mabel Davis Oct. 5, 1891; 3. Harriet Gardner,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 2, 1868; married George Willis Whipple; 4. *George Horton*,<sup>9</sup> born July 21, 1870. EBEN BAKER SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> bank clerk; married, first, Josephine M. Hanson of Haverhill Oct. 5, 1875; second, Mrs. Martha Ervin (Glover) Woodbury Oct. 2, 1890; child: 1. Stillman Morse,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 1, 1877; died Jan. 5, 1877. SHOVE SHANNON SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> house painter; married, first, Abbie Annable April 30, 1872; she died Nov. 7, 1898; married, second, Mary Estella Nute of Ossipee, N. H., March 21, 1900; child: 1. Richard N.,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 2, 1901. JAMES WILLIAM SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> bank clerk; married May Elizabeth Pope Jan.

His wife was Joan in 1679. In 1643, he was complained of for living absent from his wife, but was discharged.

3, 1872; died March 12, 1903; children: 1. James Alfred,<sup>9</sup> born June 10, 1873; lived in Roxbury in 1910; 2. William J.,<sup>9</sup> born March 4, 1875; 3. Lizzie May,<sup>9</sup> born June 11, 1877; 4. Herbert S.,<sup>9</sup> lived in Watertown and Dedham; 5. Edith Florence,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 12, 1883; lived in Bradford and Lynn; unmarried in 1910. HON. CHARLES HENRY SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> lawyer; state senator; married, first, Emma E. Stocker of Lynn Jan. 4, 1881; second, Grace G. W. Smith of Lynn May 28, 1888; died Nov. 7, 1890; his wife was surviving him in 1903; child: 1. Ralph Orrin,<sup>9</sup> born June 22, 1881, in Lynn; died Oct. 5, 1903. GEORGE GARDNER SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> painter and paper hanger; married Catherine F. Goldsmith April 28, 1881; children: 1. George Gardner,<sup>9</sup> born March 11, 1883; chemist; married Louise P. Fogg of Beverly Aug. 2, 1906; 2. Eva May,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 17, 1884; 3. Mary Goldsmith,<sup>9</sup> born Aug. 4, 1886; married Frank E. Wirling; 4. Helen Eliza,<sup>9</sup> born Sept. 24, 1889; 5. Charles Henry,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 18, 1892; 6. Bertram F.,<sup>9</sup> born May 10, 1902; died Jan. 1, 1903. CHARLES N. SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> teller in Salem Savings Bank; married Lavinia Florence Carlton of Peabody Jan. 8, 1872; died Jan. 23, 1910; child: 1. Beatrice E.,<sup>9</sup> born in 1874; married Albert F. Conant. ALBERT G. SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> crossing tender; married Harriet E. Newhall Dec. 8, 1880; children: 1. *Ernest Gardner*,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 23, 1881; 2. *Frank Willis*,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 3, 1888; 3. Ralph,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 28, 1890; 4. Dolly Lawrence,<sup>9</sup> born July 2, 1893. GEORGE E. SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> hair dresser; married Emma F. Reed May 24, 1892; children: 1. Georgie Ednah,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 4, 1892; 2. Lillian May,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 5, 1893; 3. Mabel Florence,<sup>9</sup> born July 8, 1894; married John J. Conway; 4. Clarence Exercise,<sup>9</sup> born Jan. 8, 1896; 5. Chester Starr,<sup>9</sup> born May 22, 1897; 6. Hazel,<sup>9</sup> born April 9, 1898; 7. Edward Franklin,<sup>9</sup> born May 1, 1900; 8. Edith F.,<sup>9</sup> born Feb. 19, 1902; 9. Ethel H.,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 16, 1904. NATHANIEL GRIFFIN SIMONDS;<sup>8</sup> treasurer of the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company; married Mary Alice Burrill Sept. 11, 1873; child: 1. Clara Griffin,<sup>9</sup> born Nov. 18, 1875; married George Henry Wetherbee of Braintree Nov. 18, 1903. WILLIAM H. SYMONDS;<sup>8</sup> treasurer of the Salem Savings Bank; married Susan B. Perkins; died Oct. 29, 1893; she survived him; children: 1. Frederick Pond,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 29, 1871; lived in Boston; 2. Nathaniel Perkins;<sup>9</sup> living in 1913.

DR. BENJAMIN ROPES SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> physician; married Ida E. Shapleigh of Salem Dec. 3, 1885; died Oct. 15, 1912; she survives him; children: 1. Walter Shapleigh,<sup>10</sup> born May 1, 1888; died Jan. 31, 1889; 2. Bertrand Ropes,<sup>10</sup> born Aug. 29, 1891; 3. Helene,<sup>10</sup> born June 30, 1897; 4. Benjamin Shapleigh,<sup>10</sup> born July 8, 1904. ERNEST F. SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> bank clerk; married Jessie M. Hatch June 16, 1897; children: 1. Sarah Cox,<sup>10</sup> born June 2, 1901; 2. Helen,<sup>10</sup> born July 8, 1905; 3. ———<sup>10</sup> (son), stillborn Nov. 4, 1907. JOSEPH CLIFTON SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> clerk; married Annie J. Stanley of Lynn Oct. 2, 1890; child: 1. Margaret Ropes,<sup>10</sup> born Oct. 30, 1891; lived in Swampscott in 1905. GEORGE ELMER SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> messenger; married Edith Danera Gray April 18, 1898; child: 1. Phylis G.,<sup>10</sup> born June 16, 1899; married Wendell B. Ford of Cleveland, Ohio, Sept. 6, 1922. GEORGE HORTON SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> city auditor; married Fannie Augusta Poor of Peabody Oct. 7, 1903; died at Asheville, N. C., March 17, 1916; children: 1. George Putnam,<sup>10</sup> born July 9, 1905; 2. Dorothy P.,<sup>10</sup> born Dec. 25, 1906. ERNEST GARDNER SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> station agent; married Rebecca E. Popper Sept. 25, 1907; died from injuries received in a railroad accident at Castle Hill Feb. 18, 1910; she married, secondly, Frederick O. Conlen; child: 1. Hattie Manella,<sup>10</sup> born June 10, 1908. FRANK WILLIS SYMONDS;<sup>9</sup> machinist; lived in Salem and Marblehead; married Mary Browne Stephenson Oct. 29, 1907; children: 1. Dorothy A.,<sup>10</sup> born July 14, 1908; 2. Florence L.,<sup>10</sup> born Aug. 20, 1911.



William Bennet<sup>1</sup> came here in 1636. John Pickworth<sup>2</sup> came from Plymouth, with his wife Ann and one or two children in or before that year. William Woodbury came from South Petherton, Somersetshire, England, to Salem as early as 1636.

*John Pickworth*

March 2, 1636-7, the town granted to William Woodbury<sup>3</sup> three acres of marsh lying before his ten-acre lot for his two-acre

<sup>1</sup>William Bennett lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Manchester; married Jane —; died Nov. 20, 1682; she died April 27, 1693; children: 1. Moses; living in 1686; 2. Aaron; yeoman; lived in Manchester; married, first, Hannah — before 1665; she was his wife in 1685; married, second, Elizabeth — before 1708; died in 1709; 3. Mary; unmarried in 1682.

<sup>2</sup>John Pickworth was in Plymouth in 1631; married there, and removed to Salem with his wife Ann before 1636; settled at Jeffries Creek (now Manchester); died in the autumn of 1663; she died, his widow, in the spring of 1683; children: 1. Ruth, baptized Oct. 14, 1638; married Nathaniel Masters before 1663; 2. Hannah, baptized Oct. 14, 1638; married John Killam; 3. John, baptized Oct. 14, 1638; was out of the plantation in 1660; died, unmarried, in 1681; 4. Samuel; carpenter; married Sarah Marston Nov. 3, 1667; was killed in King Philip's war Dec. 15, 1675; she survived him, with four young children: 5. Joseph, baptized Feb. 12, 1642-3; living in 1681; married and had a daughter; 6. Rachel, baptized May 3, 1646; married John Sibley; 7. Benjamin, baptized July 2, 1648; married Elizabeth —; died in the autumn of 1681, childless; 8. Sarah, baptized Oct. 6, 1650; married Joseph Mazury; 9. Abigail, baptized Oct. 2, 1652; living in 1663; 10. Jacob, baptized Sept. 3, 1654.

<sup>3</sup>WILLIAM WOODBURY<sup>1</sup> lived at Mackerel Cove, in what is now Beverly; married Elizabeth Patch Jan. 29, 1616; died in 1677; she married, secondly, John Walker March 12, 1678-9; children: 1. *Nicholas*,<sup>2</sup> baptized in 1618; 2. *William*,<sup>2</sup> baptized in 1620; 3. *Andrew*,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 9, 1621-2; 4. *Hugh*,<sup>2</sup> 5. Isaac;<sup>2</sup> lived in Beverly; married Mary Wilkins Oct. 9, 1671; 6. Hannah;<sup>2</sup> married Roger Haskell; 7. Nathaniel,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 11, 1639.

NICHOLAS WOODBURY;<sup>2</sup> lived in Beverly; mariner; married Anna Paulgrave of Great Yarmouth, Norfolk County, England, who was brought over by her father-in-law Mr. John Young; died May 10, 1686; she died, his widow, June 10, 1701; children: 1. Joanna,<sup>3</sup> born March —, 1653; married Samuel Plumer Dec. 5, 1670; 2. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. —, 1655; married Richard Ober Dec. 26, 1671; 3. Nicholas,<sup>3</sup> born last of July, 1657; lived in Beverly; married Mary Elliott June 4, 1684; died Oct. 13, 1691; had children; 4. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 20, 1665; lived in Beverly; married Elizabeth West Dec. 19, 1687; 5. Isaac,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 20, 1665; lived in Beverly; married Mary Wilks Oct. 9, 1671; had children; 6. Andrew,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 20, 1665; lived in Beverly; married; had children; 7. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 26, 1668. WILLIAM WOODBURY;<sup>2</sup> lived in Beverly; married Judith —; died in 1668; children: 1. William,<sup>3</sup> born March 10, 1665; 2. —<sup>3</sup> (daughter); 3. —<sup>3</sup> (daughter). ANDREW WOODBURY;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Mary Cockerell; died in 1685; she survived him; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born May 14, 1657; died Nov. 6, 1658; 2. Susan,<sup>3</sup> born June 9, 1660; probably married William Bartoll of Marblehead; 3. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born April 1, 1664; perhaps married Thomas Cox Aug. 20, 1680. HUGH WOODBURY;<sup>2</sup> lived in Beverly; married Mary Dixey Dec. —, 1650; children: 1. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. —, 1651; 2. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born June 2, 1654; 3. Hugh,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 12, 1655-6;

lot in the town, with a little upland at the other end "to make him leuell w<sup>th</sup> other men."

4. John,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 5, 1658; 5. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 12, 1665; 6. Rebecca,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 22, 1667; 7. Anna,<sup>3</sup> born March 15, 1669; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 12, 1671; 9. Dixie,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 26, 1674; 10. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 6, 1675-6.



## CHAPTER XXI.

### THE FERRIES.



NO bridge had been built across any of the streams in Salem before 1640. The travel by land from the center of the town towards the settlements at Cape Ann, Ipswich, Newbury and Portsmouth had to be through the great pastures, around Norman's rocks, through Peabody Square, North Central Street, Danvers Square and North Beverly and by Wenham Lake. This involved a long and tedious trip. To improve and make more convenient the means of through travel a ferry was established in 1636. This was another event which made that year epochal.

The ferry was instituted to run from Massey's Cove, where the old planters settled, just easterly from the foot of Conant Street, to Bass River. The writer believes, but cannot substantiate what seems to be a fact, that the first landing place on Rial Side was just easterly of the cove at Salt House point, under the high ledges on the northwesterly bank of Bass River. From that place a cart path led up the incline above the river northerly, northwesterly and northerly into Balch Street, at the head of Bass River. This was called the Bass River ferry. It not only shortened the distance, but brought the travel through the center of the town. If this was the original landing place, it was soon changed to the head of Bass River, as the way from the first point mentioned was over high hills and crooked; but from the head of Bass River the path followed what is now Balch Street and the land beyond was level for miles.

John Stone<sup>1</sup> lived at Massey's Cove, and the town agreed with him that he should keep the ferry, and "give dilligent attend-

<sup>1</sup>John Stone probably came from England in the Elizabeth in 1635, when he was forty years old. He was a husbandman; and he had a wife named Ellen. He removed to Beverly, and was one of the founders of the church there. Roger Haskell called him his father-in-law in 1667.

ance thervpon during the space of three years, vnless he shall giue iust occation to the Contrary," beginning Dec. 26, 1636. His fees were two pennies from a stranger and one penny from an inhabitant of the town. He promised to provide a "convenient"



FERRY LANDING AT HEAD OF BASS RIVER.

boat; two years later the general court forbade the use of canoes at ferries because several persons had been drowned from them,<sup>1</sup> probably having in mind, among other similar accidents, "one Noddle,<sup>2</sup> an honest man of Salem," who, in June, 1632, while carrying wood in a canoe in the South River, was overturned and drowned,<sup>3</sup> and also the six men, belonging in Salem, who, Oct. 20, 1634, while on a fowling trip, in a canoe, were upset near Kettle Island, and five of them drowned.<sup>4</sup> No provision was made for the transportation of animals.

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 246.

<sup>2</sup>A William Noddle took the oath of a freeman May 18, 1631. Did he formerly live on Noddle's Island, now East Boston?

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, pages 79 and 80.

<sup>4</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 146.



The agreement with Mr. Stone expired Dec. 25, 1639, and on the eleventh of the month the town voted that William Dixey should keep the ferry for three years. He was to provide a boat large enough to carry domestic animals. The fees for ferriage of persons were the same as Mr. Stone had received. For animals he received six-pence each for mares, horses and other large animals, and two pence each for goats, calves and swine. Ferry-men were allowed to take double ferriage after daylight was gone.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Dixey was conducting the ferry as late as 1645.

The landing place on the Beverly side was probably changed to the head of Bass River about the time Mr. Dixey took charge of the ferry. It was near the bend in Balch Street, from which point, as before, there were three ways, westerly, northerly and easterly, by which the traveler could proceed to Rial Side, Ipswich or Cape Ann. The view of this landing place, which is near the present Winslow schoolhouse, indicates that it was so constructed that a convenient landing could be made at the varying heights of the tide.

Richard Ingersoll carried persons over the North River, probably from North Street, in 1636; and, Jan. 16, 1636-7, the town agreed that he should have a penny for each person he ferried over.<sup>2</sup> Probably this ferry was only temporary.

A ferry from Salem to Marblehead was established in 1637. The occasion of it was probably the similar interests of the fishermen at Salem Neck and Marblehead. It ran, on the Salem side, from Butt point, on the Neck, to a point on Marblehead side of the Salem Harbor just westerly of Naugus head. The road on the Marblehead side which led down to the landing place is still called Ferry road. A view of the landing place on the Salem side is here given. The landing was made where the sea wall is seen at the left hand. July 30, 1637, Nicholas Lisson expressed his desire to become an inhabitant of Salem and to conduct this ferry.<sup>3</sup> The matter was referred to the next town meeting; but his request was not granted. October 9th following, the town allowed him to be an inhabitant at "Marbellhead," and he was granted two acres of planting ground. Sept. 25, 1637, the town granted to George Wright half an acre of land upon the Neck to build on and five acres on the forest side for planting. He was also authorized to keep the ferry to Marblehead. He was the first to conduct it. He

<sup>1</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 341.

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 31 (printed).

<sup>3</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 53 (printed). Mr. Lisson's name was also spelled Leeson, Lesen, Lisen, Lesson, Lison, Lissen and Listen. He removed to Exeter, N. H., about 1650; and was living there in 1672. He had a wife in 1653, and his wife in 1666 was named Alice. Henry Magoon was called his son-in-law in 1661.



FERRY LANDING AT BUTT POINT.

lived at the Butt point on the Neck, and cultivated land on the Marblehead or forest side. He was living in 1643, being then called "old George Wright," and probably conducted the ferry until 1644. In 1647 and several years afterward, he lived in the Norman house near the head of Fairmount Street, in the North field. Dec. 16, 1644, the town of Salem granted the ferry to Thomas Dixey, who lived at the ferry landing on the Marblehead side; he continued the ferry as long as he lived. He died in 1680, and was succeeded by his son Thomas Dixey. When the town of Salem voted, March 12, 1648-9, that Marblehead might become a town, the matter of "the disposing of the ferry and appoynting of the fferry man" was reserved to Salem.

The examination of canoes in Salem was provided for by an order of the quarterly court June 27, 1636. Those on the north side of the town were ordered to be brought, July 4th, to "the cove of the common landing place of the North River by George Harris<sup>1</sup> his house"; and those on the south side were ordered to be brought before "the Storehouse in South river." At those places and on that day they were examined by John Holgrave, Peter Palfrey,

<sup>1</sup>George Harris died in or before 1643, and his widow apparently married, secondly, Thomas Tuck before 1650; children: 1. Joseph, born about 1630; husbandman; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Beverly in 1668; and was living there in 1679; 2. George, born about 1635; living in 1650.



Richard Waterman, Roger Conant and Philip Verrin, the surveyors appointed for that purpose. For neglecting such examination, the fine was ten shillings, and for using a canoe not thus approved the penalty was two pounds. At the next sitting of the court (September 27th), canoes were ordered to be marked on a day to be appointed.

## CHAPTER XXII.

### THE PEQUOT WAR.



AMONG the first English settlers of Salem there existed at first a spirit of helpfulness toward the aborigines. Truly, the missionary idea was prevalent and it was universally wished to christianise these heathen. There was little thought of conditions which subsequently developed and of conflict and dispossession. The growth was gradual, but the irrepressibility of the friction of the unreconcilable circumstances that actually existed from the first, though dormant, must be finally forcible in its manifestation. At first, along the shore disease had opened space for the English to occupy without intruding upon the needed domain of the red men. After a little, as the settlements increased in number and size, the colonists spread out or moved on to new locations beyond the disease-stricken section.

The broad fertile valley of the Connecticut River was very attractive to the Pilgrims and they went thither to possess portions of it as early as 1634. They settled near the mouth of the river, in the heart of the lands of the Pequot Indians, whom disease had weakened. Gov. William Bradford, in his *History of Plymouth Plantation*, wrote: "Some of their neighbours in y<sup>e</sup> Bay, hereing of y<sup>e</sup> fame of Conightecute River, had a hankering mind after it, . . . and now understanding that y<sup>e</sup> Indeans were swepte away with y<sup>e</sup> late great mortalitie, the fear of whom was an obstacle unto them before, which being now taken away, they begane now to prosecute it with great egernes. The greatest differances fell betweene those of Dorchester plantation and them hear."<sup>1</sup> Jonathan Brewster wrote, July 6, 1635: "Y<sup>e</sup> Masschuset men are coming almost dayly, some by water, & some by land, who are not yet determined wher to setle, though some have a great mind

<sup>1</sup>History of Plymouth Plantation, by William Bradford, page 402.



to y<sup>e</sup> place we are upon.”<sup>1</sup> The Pilgrims divided the lands with the Puritans of Dorchester and Newtown.

Several vessels, sent by Massachusetts Bay people, in 1636, with goods for the settlers at the Connecticut River were cast away. Governor Bradford of the Pilgrims wrote: “Such crosses they mette with in their beginings, which some imputed as a correction from God for their intrution (to y<sup>e</sup> wrong of others) into y<sup>t</sup> place. But I dare not be bould with Gods judgments in this kind.”<sup>2</sup>

In the spring of 1636, John Oldham, a prominent planter in New England, was murdered by Indians near Block Island. It was understood that the murder was planned by sachems of the Narragansett tribe, because Oldham went to make peace and to trade with the Pequots, with whom the Narragansetts were unfriendly, and the Indians at Block Island were under the authority of the Narragansetts. In the summer, the governor and council of Massachusetts Bay assembled the magistrates and ministers to advise with them about avenging the death of Oldham. It was agreed that a military force should be immediately sent against the Block Island Indians. August 25th, men for this expedition were secured, and the ninety volunteers were placed under the command of John Endecott, as general. One of the four commanders under him was Ens. Richard Davenport, also of Salem. The next March, Ensign Davenport was promoted to lieutenant.

The expedition sailed in three pinnaces and their commission was to take possession of Block Island and put to death the men there, but to spare the women and children, whom they were to bring away. They were then to proceed to the Pequot country and demand the murderers of some other English, a thousand fathom of wampum as damages therefor and some of the children as hostages. If the demand was refused, force was to be used.

The party landed on Block Island amid the arrows of forty bowmen, but only two of the English were wounded and those only slightly. The Indians fled. There were two native settlements, three miles apart, containing about sixty wigwams and about two hundred acres of corn which had been partly harvested and gathered into heaps. The Indians were not seen again. The invaders burned the wigwams and mats and some of the corn, and stove seven canoes. A party of twenty men in two of the shallops they had taken with them then went to the Pequot harbor.

An Indian paddled out in a canoe to meet them, and demanded to know who they were and what they wanted. Cutshamakin, who

<sup>1</sup>History of Plymouth Plantation, page 403.

<sup>2</sup>History of Plymouth Plantation, page 415.

went with them as interpreter, informed the Indian that he came from the governor of Massachusetts to speak with their sachems. The Indian replied that Samains had gone to Long Island. Endecott then told him to tell the other sachems that he wished to speak with them. The Indian departed; and the soldiers landed on the high and rocky shore. When the messenger returned, he brought with him about three hundred Indians who gathered around the soldiers. For four hours the messenger went to and fro between the English and the sachems, repeatedly bringing from the latter excuses for their tardiness. At length, tired out with their delays, the messenger and the Indians near him were told of the purpose of the expedition, with the ultimatum that if the sachems would not come they would be fought. The messenger said the sachems would meet the soldiers if they would lay down their arms, as their men would their arrows. This was refused, and the Indians withdrew. The soldiers marched after them, and were shot at by the Indians from thickets and rocks, but without effect. Two of the Indians were killed and others were wounded. The soldiers marched to the town of the Indians and burned all the wigwams and mats. At night, the soldiers returned to their vessels, and the next day went on shore on the west side of the river and burned all the wigwams and spoiled the canoes.<sup>1</sup>

The troops then set sail and when they came to the Narragansett country, landed temporarily, finally arriving in Boston September 14th, without loss of life or limb. The Narragansett Indians had one killed at Block Island, and thirteen of the Pequots were killed and forty wounded.

The Pequots soon became conscious of what the increasing settlements by the English in their region meant to them, and opposition to it became positive. Desultorily, the Indians assaulted the settlers while the latter were hunting or passing in boats; and later at their cabins. Early in 1637, the Pequots fell openly upon the English in the Connecticut valley and slew numbers of them as they were at work in the field, both men and women, to the terror of the rest, and went away in great pride and triumph with many high threats. A messenger was sent to Boston, seeking aid of their friends in the Bay of Massachusetts in the protection of themselves and their property. He brought sorrowful tidings "of the great infolency, and cruell murthers committed by a barbarous and bloody people called *Peaquods*, upon the bodies of their in-deared friends. . . . fwo llan with pride at this time; facing the *English* Fort built on the mouth of the River in their large *Cannowes*, with their bowes and long Shafts."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, pages 189-196.

<sup>2</sup>Wonder-Working Providence, part 2, chapter 1.



Thursday, Jan. 19, 1636-7, was appointed a fast day by the general court.

When spring came, April 18th, the court appointed Capt. William Trask and Richard Davenport, both of Salem, to the command of another expedition against the Pequots. The captain was to be paid six pounds and the lieutenant four pounds per month for their services.

May 17th, the general court appointed Captain Trask and three others a committee to secure men, munitions and provisions for the expedition. Under this authority six men more were secured for this service within two days.<sup>1</sup> It was also ordered that no man should repair the gun of any Indian, nor sell to the red men any gun or gunpowder, shot, lead, shot mold, military weapon or arms; and that no one should trade with Indians outside the colony.

Governor Vane wrote to the governor of Plymouth to join in the war against the Pequots, and the Pilgrims provided a vessel and fifty soldiers. The Bay soldiers marched to Plymouth, where they were joined by the Pilgrims, and all proceeded together to the country of the Narragansetts, who had agreed to support the Puritans in this war against the Pequots.<sup>2</sup>

Forty soldiers were sent out before the end of May, and one hundred and sixty more were provided for. Of the latter number, eighteen were from Salem and three from Marblehead.

In May, the Indians assaulted the English fort at Saybrook, at the mouth of the Connecticut; and June 15th was kept in all the churches as a day of Thanksgiving for the victory of the soldiers over the Pequots.

The small number of soldiers, with scanty provision, was unable to manage the war against so numerous an enemy, being one to more than thirty. They shot at some Indians, forcing them to hurry away. Trusting in their great numbers, the Pequots feasted, and afterwards assaulted the soldiers. Some of the Indians were armed with guns they had purchased from the Dutch at New York.<sup>3</sup>

A party of the soldiers came to a small river, where they noticed that a large company had been dressing fish; and it was discovered that the Indians were feasting at their fort nearby. It was decided to storm the fort a little before dawn the next morning, when, presumably, the Indians, being up late at the feast, would be in their deepest sleep.

The fort was made of trunks of trees set fast on end in the

<sup>1</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 49 (printed).

<sup>2</sup>New-England's Memorial, by Nathaniel Morton, (1826 ed.), page 116.

<sup>3</sup>Wonder-Working Providence, part 2, chapter I.

ground, about twelve feet high, and so large that wigwams were built within it. There was an entrance on two sides, "with intricate Meanders to enter." An Indian bowman guarded each passage. At the hour appointed, the soldiers approached, and when they were observed by the guards, the latter fired arrows at them, wounding the foremost soldier in the shoulder. Dispatching the guards at the openings, the soldiers entered and took positions about the several wigwams, into which they fired, killing some of the Indians. With fire-brands in their hands, the soldiers entered the wigwams and set the structures on fire. The women and children made "a terrible outcry"; the men were struck down and slain as they came out with "a great slaughter," but the women were saved.<sup>1</sup>

Governor Bradford, of the Pilgrims, wrote<sup>2</sup> that more of the Indians "were burnt to death then was otherwise slain; it burnt their bowstrings, and made them unservisable. Those y<sup>t</sup> scaped y<sup>e</sup> fire were slaine with y<sup>e</sup> sword; some hewed to peeces, others rune throw with their rapiers, so as they were quickly dispatchte, and very few escaped. It was conceived they thus destroyed about 400. at this time. It was a fearfull sight to see them thus frying in y<sup>e</sup> fyer, and y<sup>e</sup> streams of blood quenching y<sup>e</sup> same, and horrible was y<sup>e</sup> stinck & sente therof; but y<sup>e</sup> victory seemed a sweete sacrifice, and they gave the prays therof to God, who had wrought so wonderfully for them, thus to inclose their enimise in their hands, and give them so speedy a victory over so proud & insulting an enimie. The Narigansett Indians all this while, stood round aboute, but aloofe from all danger, and left y<sup>e</sup> whole execution to y<sup>e</sup> English."<sup>3</sup>

The next month, about eighty of the soldiers passed along the shore toward the Dutch plantation, part of the way by water and part by land, and met here and there some Pequots, whom the soldiers slew or took prisoners. July 13th, they came upon eighty strong men and two hundred women and children in a small Indian settlement, by the side of a miry swamp, which was about a third of a mile across, into which the Indians disappeared before the soldiers could get to them. Hearing the discharge of fire arms, Captain Trask came with fifty men, and ordered the swamp to be surrounded. Lieutenant Davenport and some twelve soldiers, not having heard the command, went into the swamp<sup>4</sup> among the Indians. The place was so thick with shrubs and

<sup>1</sup>Wonder-Working Providence, chapter VI.

<sup>2</sup>History of Plymouth Plantation, page 425.

<sup>3</sup>New-England's Memorial, page 116.

<sup>4</sup>Letter from Governor Winthrop to Governor Bradford, dated July 28, 1637, in New-England's Memorial.



boggy that some of the soldiers stuck fast and were repeatedly shot at by the Indians. Lieutenant Davenport and two others were dangerously wounded.<sup>1</sup> Lieutenant Davenport was shot about the shoulder, and another soldier in the head. They fainted and were in great danger of being taken captive by the Indians, but were rescued. The Indians then desired a conference, and were told by the interpreter of the English that if they would come out and yield themselves, those who had not shed English blood would have their lives saved. Whereupon the sachem of the place came forth with an old man or two and their wives and children, and parleyed for two hours, until it was night, and then retired. The interpreter was later sent to call the Indians, and the Indians shot at him so fast that he came near being killed. The soldiers then trimmed the shrubs in a part of the swamp with their swords, and concentrated the Indians so they could more easily dispatch them in the thickets. The soldiers continued all night, standing about twelve feet apart, and the Indians came close to them and shot their arrows. The hat brims and sleeves and stockings and other parts of the clothing of the soldiers were pierced, but none of them was wounded that night. When it was nearly daybreak the darkness became intense, and many of the Indians escaped, though the soldiers were so near each other. Some were discerned and killed. The swamp was searched next morning and the bodies of nine Indians were found and others had been buried in the mire. Probably less than twenty of the Indians escaped; the bodies of some of them were found in the course of their flight, having died of wounds.<sup>2</sup>

The prisoners taken at this time were divided between the settlers at the river and the people in the Bay colony. The boys were sent to Bermuda by Capt. William Pierce, and the women and girls were scattered in the settlements.<sup>1</sup> Winthrop says that fifteen boys and two women were taken by Captain Peirse to Bermuda in the summer of 1637.<sup>3</sup> He commanded the *Desire*, which had been built at Marblehead the previous summer. These Indians were apparently sold or exchanged for negroes. Hugh Peter, at that time, wrote to John Winthrop as follows: "Wee haue heard of a diuidence of women and children in the bay and would bee glad of a share viz: a young woman or girle and a boy if you thinke good. I wrote to you for some boys for Bermudas which I thinke is considerable. Besides wee are bold to impart our thoughts about the corne at Pequoit which wee wish were all

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 233.

<sup>2</sup>Letter of Governor Winthrop to Governor Bradford, dated July 28, 1637, in *New-England's Memorial*.

<sup>3</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, pages 233 and 234.

cut down, or left to the Naragansicks rather than for vs to take it, for wee feare it will proue a snare thus to hunt after their goods whilst wee come forth pretending only the doing of justice, and we beleeeve it would strike more terror into the Indeans so to do: It will quit cost to vs to keepe it."

The general court, Aug. 1, 1637, solicited "the magistrates to treat w<sup>th</sup> the elders about a day of thanksgiving vpon the returne of the souldiers, & the souldiers to bee feasted by their townes." The court agreed that the soldiers be called home from this expedition against the Pequots; and they arrived August 26th, having killed seven hundred of the Indians and dispersed the rest. By appointment of the general court, October 8th was "kept a day of publike thanksgiveing to God for his great mcies in subdewing the Pecoits, bringing the soldiers in safety, the successe of the conference, & good news from Germany." The day of thanksgiving was kept in all the churches. After the sermon, the magistrates and elders accompanied the captains and soldiers who had been in the service to the door of the house where a feast was prepared for them.<sup>1</sup>

A treaty was made with the Narragansetts November 1st. The Indians in all sections were terrified.<sup>2</sup> The Pequots were wholly subdued and their country taken from them. The Pequot survivors whom the English had taken were apportioned among the Narragansetts and the Mohegans. The Narragansetts were dissatisfied, however, because they believed that they ought to have had all the captives; and they became very cool toward the English.<sup>3</sup>

Several of the military company under Ensign Davenport in the expedition against the Pequots went to view Quinepiack (New Haven,—also called Quilipiack) in August, 1637, with the intention of beginning a plantation there. They had many offers of locations in both Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth colonies, and they viewed several places, but none were satisfactory to them.

This is the story of the tragedy from the standpoint of the Englishmen; what it might have appeared from the other side, had the aborigines possessed a written language it is easy to imagine. They had their home in the same locality as had their ancestors for untold generations, an agricultural people, planting their fields, hunting in their own forests, fishing in their own waters, contented and happy in their simple lives. They had a

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, volume I, page 243.

<sup>2</sup>Letter of Governor Winthrop to Governor Bradford, dated July 28, 1637, in *New-England's Memorial*, by Nathaniel Morton, page 121.

<sup>3</sup>*New-England's Memorial*.



good government and laws, an excellent religion and were exceptionally hospitable and possessed of sentiment and taste.

The English desired, nay coveted, the fertile lands, the great forests, the beautiful furs and the excellent fish within the domains of the red men. In attempting to obtain possession of these things, naturally they were opposed. The greater the attempt, the stronger was the opposition. At length, it seemed that only force would stop the incursions of the white settlers. The Indians burned some of the cabins of the planters and killed a few of the men who carried guns to enforce their unwarranted occupation. The ancient race had to fight for their lands, their safety, for life itself. They were as human as their oppressors, and as spirited and tenacious as to their rights. The hopelessness of the conditions became more and more apparent and impressive as the red men were driven farther and farther into the forest and forced to yield to the guns of the planters.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### THE NOTORIOUS VENNER.



FOR the furtherance of fishing and trading and to avoid the inconveniences found in granting land for fishermen to plant, the town, at its meeting Jan. 2, 1636-7, voted "That none Inhabiting at Marble Head shall haue any other accomodation of land, other than such as is vsuallie giuen by the Towne to fishermen viz. a howse lott & a garden lott or grownd for the placing of their flakes: according to the company belonging to their families, to the greatest family not aboue 2 acres: & the comon of the woods neere adioyning for their goates & their cattle." Mr. Hewlett, Mr. Vincent and two others of Saugus requested accommodations of land at Marblehead, at this meeting, but under this order were refused.

William Knight<sup>1</sup> was received for an inhabitant at this meeting, and a ten-acre lot appropriated to him and common for grass and hay for his cattle. John Abbie<sup>2</sup> was also received as an inhabitant and given a "one acre lott for a house next beyond the Gun smiths, and 3 acres of planting ground where the Towne hath appointed beyond Castle hill." The latter was among the "maids lotts" and was on condition that the maids "shall giue way beyond Castle hill." Lots had been granted to unmarried women, and were found to

*John Abbie*

<sup>1</sup>William Knight removed to Lynn in 1638; married, first, — —; second, Elizabeth — —; died March 5, 1656; children: 1. John; 2. Ann; 3. Francis; 4. Hannah; 5. Jacob; 6. Daniel; 7. Elizabeth; 8. Mary.

<sup>2</sup>John Abbe lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Wenham in 1643; married, first, Mary — —, who died in Wenham Sept. 9, 1672; he married, second, Mary Goldsmith (probably widow of Richard Goldsmith) Nov. 25, 1674; died in Wenham about 1689; children: 1. John;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; lived in Wenham until 1696, when he settled in Windham, Conn.; married, first, — —; second, Hannah — —; died Dec. 11, 1700; she married, secondly, Jonathan Jennings of Windham; 2. Samuel;<sup>2</sup> 3. Sarah;<sup>2</sup> 4. Marah;<sup>2</sup> 5. Rebecca;<sup>2</sup> married Richard Kimball May 13, 1667; 6. Oba-



be "evil" in effect.<sup>1</sup> An attempt was now made to remedy the "evil." This was the reason, probably, that an order was made refusing to grant land to Deborah Pennington. A few days later, Deborah Holmes was refused a grant of land, "being a maid," as it "would be a bad president to keep hous alone." Instead, Mr. Endecott, Mr. Stileman, John Woodbury and Mr. Verrin gave her a bushel of corn apiece.

Ralph Fogg was granted five acres of land of the eight long before "appointed"; and for his "pains" for several years five of his ten acres "beyond Castle hill neere the South riuer."

Jan. 16, 1636-7, the town instructed Jacob Barney to go to Mr. Francis Johnson and notify him not to build at Brooksbee or any other place in the town's liberties without its consent.

Edward Beauchamp<sup>2</sup> was received as an inhabitant, and was given four acres of land. He is said to have been a French

*Edward Beauchamp*

Huguenot. Robert Wheaton (Wheadon) was refused as an inhabitant at this meeting, and yet was

granted ten acres of land Nov. 26, 1638, and twenty acres near the marsh at Mr. Bishop's farm April 1, 1644, upon condition

diah;<sup>2</sup> lived in Enfield, Conn.; married Sarah (Tibbals), widow of Joseph Warriner; died in 1732; 7. Thomas;<sup>2</sup> lived in Enfield; married Sarah Fairfield of Wenham Dec. 17, 1683; died in 1728.

SAMUEL ABBE;<sup>2</sup> lived in Wenham until 1682, when he removed to Salem Village, but returned to Wenham in 1697; husbandman; married Mary Knowlton Oct. 12, 1672; died in 1698; she married, secondly, Abraham Mitchell; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born about 1673; probably died unmarried; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born about 1675; probably married Hannah Silsbee of Lynn March 15, 1710; 3. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born about 1678; married Sarah —; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born about 1680; married William Slate; 5. *Ebenezer*,<sup>3</sup> born July 31, 1683; 6. Mercy,<sup>3</sup> born March 1, 1684-5; married Jonathan Ormsby of Windham; 7. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born July 4, 1686; married John Fowler of Lebanon; 8. Hephzibah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 14, 1688-9; married Samuel Palmer; 9. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 19, 1690; probably married Joseph Ormsby; 10. John,<sup>3</sup> born June 4, 1692; died in 1790; 11. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born June 4, 1694; lived in Glastenbury; married Mary Tryon Jan. 4, 1716; 12. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born about 1696; lived in Willington; died in 1760.

EBENEZER ABBE;<sup>3</sup> lived in Norwich and Mansfield, Conn.; married Mary Allen; child: 1. Ebenezer;<sup>4</sup> lived in Mansfield; married Abigail Goodale Feb. 7, 1729-30.

<sup>1</sup>In the language of Governor Endecott. Salem Town Records, volume I, page 28 (printed).

<sup>2</sup>Edward Beauchamp (Beachem and Burcham) lived in Salem, except 1645-1661, when he lived in Lynn; married, first, Mary —; she died March —, 1667-8; married, second, Elizabeth Metcalf Nov. 8, 1670; died about 1682; she died Jan. 16, 1686; children: 1. Samuel, baptized Oct. 31, 1641; died Nov. 20, 1661; 2. Mary, baptized Sept. 10, 1643; died young; 3. Mary, baptized June 27, 1646; died March —, 1667-8; 4. Elizabeth, baptized July 9, 1648; married Zachariah Goodale.

that if he leave the town before he should improve it he would forfeit it to the town.<sup>1</sup>

Jan. 23, 1636-7, Matthew Waller<sup>2</sup> was received for an inhabitant, a certificate being received from Mr. Atherton Haugh. February 20th following, the town granted to him five acres of land upon the North neck.

John Leech,<sup>3</sup> brother of Lawrence Leech, William Hackford and Richard Lambert, a joiner, were admitted inhabitants, but were not granted land.

At this meeting, Elder Samuel Sharp was given a farm of three hundred acres southward<sup>4</sup> of Mr. Skelton's farm and adjoining the head of North River. This grant is shown on the plan on page 289. Mr. Francis Johnson relinquished his farm at Brooksbie, upon the town's request, and was given six acres of meadow land and fourteen acres of other ground at Brooksby, at his cow house, and one hundred and eighty acres more near Cedar Pond, upwards of a mile from the other.

Mr. Gervas Garford built a cow house upon the town common near his dwelling house and impaled a portion of the land under and adjoining it, and as it was a fit place for a dwelling house and might hinder it from being used for that purpose, and it was an act done against the town's order and warning, it was agreed that he pay twenty shillings fine and an annual rent of ten shillings, so long as the cow house and impaling remained.<sup>6</sup>

Jan. 27, 1636-7, the town "ordered That John woodbury & Capt. Trask & John Balch shall lay out 200 acres of land for M<sup>r</sup> Endecott next adioyning to the land w<sup>ch</sup> was formerly granted him."<sup>7</sup> This tract of land was subsequently known as the "Governor's plain," and is shown on the plan on page 289.

<sup>1</sup>Governor Endecott added to this record, in shorthand, "we have made a show of receiving him for an inhabitant."

<sup>2</sup>Matthew Waller was living in Salem in 1636 and in Providence, R. I., in 1655 and 1674. Savage says that he had two daughters, Rebecca and Sarah, who were probably born after 1637.

<sup>3</sup>The wife of John Leech never came over from England; and when he died, in the spring of 1659, he gave his property to his grandnephew John Leach.

<sup>4</sup>Richard Lambert had a wife in 1647, and they had a daughter Sarah, who was a town charge from 1657 to 1679. He was convicted of drunkenness and theft several times, and died in the spring of 1659. Sarah had a child, which was supported by the town from 1667 to 1679.

<sup>5</sup>Northward.

<sup>6</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 34 (printed).

<sup>7</sup>With the record of this grant is recorded, as a "president," a copy of the "surveiors warrant," as follows:—

"Whereas The towne hath granted to m<sup>r</sup> Endicott twoe hundred acres of Land to lye next adioyneing to the 300 acres formerly granted vnto him & confirmed by a generall Court.



Feb. 6, 1636-7, Thomas Tayler was received for an inhabitant and permitted to have planting ground and to purchase his accommodation.

*John Pickering*

On the next day, John Pickering,<sup>1</sup> aged twenty-two, a carpenter, who, as Savage says, had come from Ipswich, was admitted an inhabitant. He became the ancestor

"It is now ordered by vs whose names are hearvnder written That Capt. Trask John woodbury Roger Connant Jeffery Massie & John Balch or any three of them shall Lay out and bound the said 200 acres granted aforesaid. And this is for their sufficient warrant.

"p me Raph ffogg"

<sup>1</sup>JOHN PICKERING<sup>1</sup> was born about 1615; married Elizabeth — about 1636; died about 1657; she married, secondly, — —, and died Aug. 30, 1662; children: 1. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1637; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>2</sup> born Feb. 10, 1642-3; 3. *Elizabeth*,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 3, 1643-4; died in infancy; 4. *Elizabeth*,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 17, 1645.

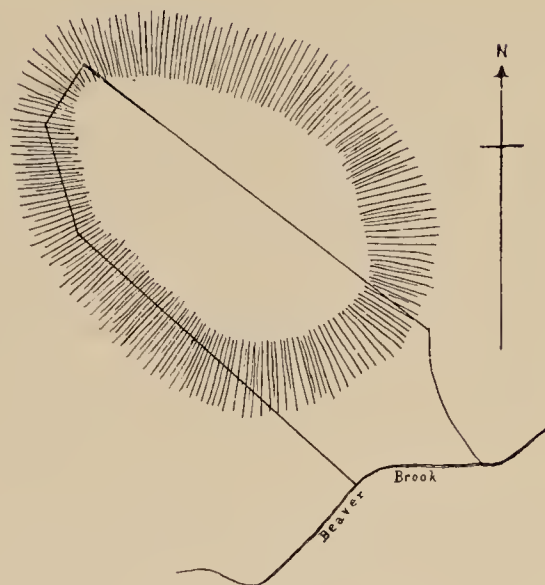
LT. JOHN PICKERING;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Alice (Flint), widow of Henry Bullock in 1657; died May 5, 1694; she died in 1713; children: 1. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 10, 1658; 2. *Jonathan*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 27, 1660; probably died young; 3. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 9, 1663; probably died young; 4. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 15, 1665-6; 5. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 7, 1668; married John Buttolph; 6. *William*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 11, 1670-1; 7. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 7, 1674; married, first, Samuel Nichols; second, James Brown; 8. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> born July 2, 1677; married, first, Daniel King March 29, 1695; second, Nathaniel Beadle; third, Richard Palmer. JONATHAN PICKERING;<sup>2</sup> shipwright; married Jane Cromwell March 14, 1665; died in 1729; she died in the winter of 1750-1; children: 1. *Jane*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 27, 1667; 2. *Elizabeth*,<sup>3</sup> born June 2, 1669; married Nathaniel Silsby; 3. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 1, 1670; died young; 4. *Ann*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 25, 1672; 5. *Jonathan*,<sup>3</sup> born May 11, 1674; lived in Boston; married Elizabeth Snow of Boston (published March 8, 1711-2); 6. *Sarah*,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 25, 1675-6; unmarried in 1715; 7. *John*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 19, 1678; 8. *Hannah*,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 28, 1682; married Nathaniel Silsbee; 9. *Samuel*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 3, 1684; 10. *Mary*,<sup>3</sup> born about 1687; married Benjamin Smith April 22, 1713.

JOHN PICKERING;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Sarah Burrill of Lynn June 14, 1683; died June 9, 1722; she was his widow in 1739; children: 1. *Lois*,<sup>4</sup> born May 1, 1684; married Timothy Orne; 2. *Sarah*,<sup>4</sup> born July 25, 1686; married Joseph Hardy; 3. *John*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 28, 1688; shipmaster; died Sept. 10, 1712; 4. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> born May 11, 1691; died July 8, 1702; 5. *Ruth*,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 10, 1693; died July 27, 1702; 6. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 29, 1695; died July 22, 1702; 7. *Lydia*,<sup>4</sup> born March 17, 1697-8; drowned in a well Oct. 14, 1702; 8. *Theophilus*,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 28, 1700; H. C., 1719; clergyman in Chebacco parish (Essex), Ipswich; died Sept. 19, 1747; 9. *Timothy*,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 10, 1702-3; 10. *Eunice*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. —, 1705; married, first, Joseph Neal; second, William Pickering. BENJAMIN PICKERING;<sup>3</sup> shipwright and mariner; married Jane Hobby April 27, 1693; died in 1718; she died in 1750; children: 1. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> born April 10, 1699; died before 1725; 2. *Edward*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 18, 1701; 3. *Alice*,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 19, 1703; married Jonathan Gaskill; 4. *Jane*,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 10, 1704; married Samuel Aborne; 5. *William*,<sup>4</sup> 6. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born in 1711; 7. *Mary*,<sup>4</sup> married William Reeves. CAPT. WILLIAM PICKERING;<sup>3</sup> shipmaster; married Hannah Browne June 19, 1695:

of a numerous family, distinguished for the public services and prominence of many of its members.

Feb. 17, 1636-7, the town agreed "That m<sup>r</sup> Hathorne may haue 200 Acres Land wher he hath built w<sup>th</sup> condicon y<sup>t</sup> he be dismist from th<sup>r</sup> Church to o<sup>rs</sup> att Salem." William Hathorne had come from Dorchester three years before, but his church membership had not been transferred. This order probably brought it about.

On the same day, Christopher Yong, from Great Yarmouth, Norfolk County, England, was received for an in-



HATHORNE GRANT.

died in 1723; she died in 1735; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 26, 1697-8; died Feb. —, 1697-8; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born July 6, 1699; died Sept. —, 1699; 3. William,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 3, 1700; 4. James,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 24, 1701-2; married Thankful Moor of Lynn Jan. 6, 1727-8; she married, second, Rev. Joseph Champney of Beverly; 5. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 23, 1703-4; died May 3, 1711; 6. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born July 8, 1708; married Adoniram Collins; 7. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born June 4, 1711; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 5, 1712-3; married Abraham Watson; 9. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 18, 1715; married, first, Thomas Ellis of Beverly Aug. —, 1740; second, Warwick Palfrey; third, Jonathan Gardner.

DEA. TIMOTHY PICKERING;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Mary Wingate of Hampton Nov. 21, 1728; died June 7, 1778; she died Dec. 12, 1784; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 28, 1729-30; married John Clark; he died Jan. 7, 1801; she died Nov. 23, 1826, aged ninety-six; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born March 29, 1733; married, first, Rev. Dudley Leavitt Oct. 17, 1751; he died Feb. 7, 1762; married, second, Hon. Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent; he died Oct. —, 1791; she died Jan. 30, 1805; 3. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 27, 1735-6; married George Williams; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 12, 1737; married John Gardner; 5. John,<sup>5</sup> born March 2, 1739-40; H. C., 1759; representative, speaker of the house; register of deeds; judge of court of common pleas; died, unmarried, Aug. 20, 1811; 6. Lois<sup>5</sup> (twin), born April 19, 1742; married John Gooll; 7. Eunice<sup>5</sup> (twin), born April 19, 1742; married Rev. Paine Wingate of Hampton Falls, N. H., May 23, 1765; he died March 7, 1838; she died in Stratham, N. H., Jan. 14, 1843, at the age of one hundred; 8. Timothy,<sup>5</sup> born July 6, 1745; 9. Lucy,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 12, 1747; married Capt. Israel Dodge. EDWARD PICKERING;<sup>4</sup> husbandman; removed to Mendon in 1736; married Hannah Gowing of Lynn March 12, 1724; died about 1794; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 28, 1725; 2. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 14, 1727; 3. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 21, 1729; 4. Edward,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 20, 1732; 5. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 6, 1735. WILLIAM PICKERING;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer and shoreman; married Eunice (Pickering), widow of Joseph Neal April 6, 1738; died Feb. 17, 1765; she was his widow in 1782; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> born March 31, 1738; 2. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 8, 1740-1; married, first, Joseph Foster; second, Joseph Lakeman; third, Capt. David Masury; 3. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 12, 1743; married, first, James Scollay; second,



habitant and was permitted to have half an acre of land with

William Baldwin; 4. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 12, 1743; 5. William;<sup>5</sup> cordwainer; removed to Richmond, N. H., in 1780. JOSEPH PICKERING;<sup>4</sup> fisherman; married, first, Sarah Symonds June 14, 1733; second, Mary, widow of John Proctor of Danvers Feb. 3, 1758; she was dead in 1790; he died March 8, 1790; children: 1. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 14, 1737; fisherman; married Elizabeth Gray (published May 18, 1780); died in the summer of 1802; she died March 15, 1830; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 14, 1737; 3. Jane,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 14, 1737; died young; 4. *James*,<sup>5</sup> 5. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 4, 1740-1; married Stephen Archer; 6. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 27, 1742-3; probably died before 1748; 7. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 11, 1746-7; married James Arrington Aug. 2, 1769; 8. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 11, 1748-9; probably died before 1790; 9. Jane,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 30, 1753; married Gilbert Tapley; 10. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Oct. 26, 1755; married Adam Ravell.

HON. TIMOTHY PICKERING;<sup>5</sup> removed to Philadelphia, Pa., in 1778, Newburg, N. Y., Erie, Pa., Wilkesbarre, Pa., and Salem again and Wenham, Mass.; secretary of state under Washington and Adams, secretary of war, postmaster general, and member of congress; married Rebecca White of Bradford April 8, 1776; she died Aug. 15, 1828; he died in Salem Jan. 29, 1829; children: 1. *John*,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 7, 1777, in Salem; 2. Timothy,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 1, 1779, in Philadelphia; H. C., 1799; lived in Williamsburgh and Starucca, Pa.; married Lurana Cole of Farmington, Conn.; died at Starucca May 14, 1807; 3. Henry,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 8, 1781, at Newburg; merchant; died, unmarried, in New York May 8, 1838; 4. Charles,<sup>6</sup> born May 25, 1784, in Erie; died May 12, 1796, at Germantown; 5. William,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 16, 1786, in Philadelphia; died there June 16, 1814; 6. Edward,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 12, 1787, in Wilkesbarre; died Oct. 10, 1793; 7. George,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 7, 1789, in Wilkesbarre; lived in Salem; insane; died, unmarried, at Charlestown April 23, 1826; 8. Octavius,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 2, 1791, in Wilkesbarre; H. C., 1810; lawyer; lived in Boston; married Jane Pratt; died in Boston Oct. 29, 1868; 9. Mary<sup>6</sup> (twin), born Nov. 21, 1793, in Philadelphia; married Benjamin Ropes Nichols; 10. Elizabeth<sup>6</sup> (twin), born Nov. 21, 1793, in Philadelphia; married Hammond Dorsey of Baltimore, Md. JOHN PICKERING;<sup>5</sup> yeoman and housewright; removed to Richmond, N. H., in 1781; married Hannah Ingersoll Aug. 6, 1763; she died Jan. 5, 1795; he died in Richmond Oct. 27, 1823; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born May 25, 1764; married Samuel Wellington Jan. 15, 1785; 2. Nathaniel,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 9, 1765; lived in Richmond, N. H., and subsequently in Vermont; married Olive, widow of Jedediah Buffum; died; she married, thirdly, — Wilcox; 3. William,<sup>6</sup> born April 6, 1767; probably died at sea; 4. John,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 17, 1769; died Dec. 16, 1776; 5. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> born Dec. 1, 1772; married Ebenezer Brooks Gale of Barre, Vt.; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born March 5, 1774; married John Ballou of Wallingford, Vt., in 1792; she died in Wallingford Oct. 22, 1831; he died May 24, 1842; 7. Theophilus,<sup>6</sup> born April 5, 1776; carpenter; lived in Richmond, N. H., and Barre, Vt.; married Sarah Bullock of Richmond Feb. 12, 1797; died Jan. 30, 1813; she died July 2, 1841; 8. Lois,<sup>6</sup> born June 22, 1778; married Abner Thurber of Cooperstown, N. Y.; 9. Timothy,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 27, 1780; carpenter and builder; lived in Richmond; married, first, Martha Kelton, who died Aug. 26, 1811; married, second, Nellie Kelton in 1812; died May 25, 1844; she died Nov. 22, 1862; 10. Jonathan Ingersoll,<sup>6</sup> born June 27, 1782; 11. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 21, 1783, in Richmond; married, first, Rev. Nathaniel Marshall of Barre, Vt.; second, Sampson Gale; 12. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 28, 1785, in Richmond; housewright; lived in Winchester, N. H.; married Olive Buffum; died April 26, 1853; 13. David,<sup>6</sup> born May 28, 1788, in Richmond; clergyman; married, first, Louisa Rice;

William Browne. Three days later, the town granted to him<sup>1</sup> ten acres more on Derby Fort Side. A warrant was also issued for laying out to Lawrence Leech one hundred acres of upland and six acres of marsh over against Mrs. Daniels and to Jacob Barney fifty acres with the marsh before the ground.

*Christopher Yonge*

A warrant was issued by the town Feb. 20, 1636-7, to lay out lands at Jeffrey's Creek to Samuel Archer sixty acres, William Allen fifty acres, John Sibley fifty acres, George Williams forty acres, John More forty acres, John Black thirty acres, Sargent

second, Sally B. Jennison; third, Angeline Greene; and, fourth, Lucena Perry; died in Ypsilanti, Mich., Jan. 4, 1859. JOSEPH PICKERING;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; married Rachel Henderson Dec. 4, 1759; was dead in 1790; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> born in 1760; 2. Benjamin;<sup>6</sup> baker in 1793; 3. Rachel;<sup>6</sup> married Joseph Newhall of Marblehead Sept. 2, 1787; 4. Elizabeth;<sup>6</sup> married John Symonds; 5. Mary;<sup>6</sup> unmarried in 1793; 6. Hannah;<sup>6</sup> married Daniel Bickford; 7. Sarah;<sup>6</sup> spinster in 1793. JAMES PICKERING;<sup>5</sup> mariner; married Sarah Kettle Feb. 5, 1771; children: 1. Mary,<sup>6</sup> baptized Sept. 27, 1772; 2. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 29, 1774; 3. James,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 28, 1776; 4. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 3, 1778; 5. William,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. —, 1780; 6. William,<sup>6</sup> baptized in 1781.

HON. JOHN PICKERING;<sup>6</sup> H. C., 1797; LL. D., 1835; removed to Boston in 1827, and became city solicitor; representative and state senator; president of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences from 1839; a member of the American Philosophical Society; member of the governor's council; compiler of a Greek lexicon; married Sarah White March 3, 1805; died in Boston May 5, 1846; she died in Salem Dec. 14, 1846; children: 1. Mary Orne,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 7, 1805; died, unmarried, Oct. 10, 1886, in Salem; 2. *John*,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 8, 1808; 3. Henry White, baptized June 9, 1811; lived in Boston, merchant. JOSEPH PICKERING;<sup>6</sup> fisherman; married Hannah Morse (published Nov. 7, 1782); she died Nov. 15, 1822; he died March 20, 1830; children: 1. John,<sup>7</sup> baptized June —, 1787; died at sea on board ship *Adeline* in 1822; 2. S. Osborne,<sup>7</sup> baptized Dec. 1, 1789; 3. Rachel,<sup>7</sup> baptized April 1, 1792; 4. —,<sup>7</sup> baptized Nov. —, 1794; 5. Hannah,<sup>7</sup> baptized Sept. 23, 1798; died July 30, 1825; 6. Benjamin,<sup>7</sup> baptized Feb. 19, 1799; died Sept. 13, 1849; 7. William,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 28, 1801; 8. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 19, 1804; married Nancy Farmer June 16, 1829.

JOHN PICKERING;<sup>7</sup> esquire; counselor at law and broker; married Mehitabel S. Cox Oct. 2, 1850; she died May 21, 1879; he died Jan. 20, 1882; children: 1. Sarah W.,<sup>8</sup> born June 2, 1852; unmarried; 2. Mary O.,<sup>8</sup> born June 28, 1854; unmarried; 3. *John*,<sup>8</sup> born May 24, 1857.

JOHN PICKERING;<sup>8</sup> broker; married Anna Dane Varney Oct. 18, 1888; died Jan. 1, 1919; children: 1. Rebecca,<sup>9</sup> born Dec. 4, 1893; 2. John,<sup>9</sup> born Oct. 10, 1897.

<sup>1</sup>Christopher Yonge first appeared in Salem in 1636; settled in that part of the town which was incorporated as Wenham in 1643; had mother-in-law Mrs. Elvin and two sisters Mrs. Joseph Yonge and Mrs. Thomas Moore, both of Salem; wife Prisca; died about July 1, 1647; children: 1. Sarah, born latter end of February, 1639-40; married John Marsh; 2. Mary, born about Feb. 8, 1640-1; living in 1647; 3. Judith, born about the middle of September, 1642; died in the beginning of January, 1644-5; 4. Christopher, born Feb. 2, 1643-4; living in 1647.



Wolfe fifty acres, Sargent Dixie fifty acres and to Widow More ten acres. Another warrant authorized the laying out to Roger Morie fifty acres, Edward Giles sixty acres, Richard Davenport eighty acres, Robert Moulton one hundred acres, Thomas Gardner one hundred acres, Francis Weston one hundred and twenty acres and to Mrs. Higginson one hundred and fifty acres. These last seven allotments were of lands in what is now the City of Peabody. Another warrant was issued to lay out at Mackerell Cove seventy-five acres each to Jeffrey Massey and Richard Brackenbury. John Woodbury, Captain Trask, Roger Conant and John Balch were lot layers at this time.

Thomas Venner was a wine cooper, and received as an inhabitant of the town July 12, 1637, when ten acres of land was granted to him; he was admitted to the church here Feb. 25, 1637; and made a freeman the next month. He was subsequently a juryman and constable, and the fact that he was called "Mr." indicates that he was above mediocrity. He was religious and an extremist in his interpretation of duty. He was apparently sincere, and easily became a fanatic. He endeavored to persuade others to leave the colony for Providence, in the Bahama Islands, for the support of the churches there.

He removed to Boston in 1643, and became a leader among the coopers there. He sailed from Boston for England in October, 1651; and was a cooper in London.

In 1657, he had become the leader of a band of religionists in London, who called themselves and were known as the "Fifth Monarchy Men," because they claimed to believe that the four great kingdoms, Assyria, Persia, Macedon and Rome, had passed and the new Kingdom of Christ upon earth, or the Millenium, was to be inaugurated by them. By his fiery preaching, Venner wrought his followers into a frenzy. He denounced Cromwell, who had him arrested as a conspirator against the peace of the Commonwealth. He was given a friendly warning by the Protector, and was quieted for three years. The general unrest of the people during the years which followed the transition of the government from the administration of Richard Cromwell to the reinstitution of the monarchy afforded an opportunity for the development of doctrines of all kinds. The conventiclors again became prominent, and Venner proclaimed that the restoration of the throne was the establishment of an Anti-Christ. Unrestrained, he prayed and fasted and preached and he and his small band of followers became armed. This was in January, 1661. They were so energetic and made so much commotion they seemed to be everywhere. Their war cry was, "Live King Jesus"; and they carried a banner inscribed, "For the Lord God and Gideon."







Thomas vonnen

They went from street to street, crying "Their heads upon the gates." The city was taken by surprise, and the fanatics killed half a dozen innocent citizens in their mad rush. When the military sallied forth to meet them, Venner and his men retreated to Caen wood, a dense forest near Hampstead. The Lord Mayor, at the head of forty thousand troops and others vainly pursued them. The conventiclers again entered the city, and renewed their bloody work through the streets. They found refuge in a house, and Venner fought like a fiend, killing many persons before he fell. He received nineteen wounds. His company numbered only thirty-one, several of whom were killed. In Old Bailey, they were tried and convicted of treason and murder immediately, and on Saturday, Jan. 19, 1661, Venner was drawn on a sledge from Newgate through Cheapside and suffered the horrible execution of one guilty of treason. His body was quartered and set upon the posts of the four gates of the city.

The accompanying portrait, alleged to be of Thomas Venner, was published by Caulfield & Herbert in 1794. Another portrait is "From an Unique Print in the Collection of Alexander Hendros Sutherland Esq<sup>r</sup> F. S. A." The latter is inscribed "Thomas Venner, Preacher at the Conventicles of the Fifth Monarchy Men, & Seducers of Libertines, Captain of the seditious Anabaptists & Quakers in the City of London—Beheaded & Quartered 19 Jan<sup>y</sup> anno 1661." That portrait resembles the one given here, although the expression of the face is much more quiet and gentle. Under the original print of the portrait shown here appears the following lines:—

This Helmet was a Crown by Revelation  
This Halpert was a Sceptor for the Nation  
So the Fifth-Monarchy anew is grac'd  
King Venner next to John a Leydon plac'd.

Thomas Venner married Alice —, probably in England; had three children at least: Mary, baptized in Salem May 16, 1641; Hannah, born in Boston Jan. 16, 1644; and Samuel, born in Boston Jan. 23, 1649. Mrs. Venner went to England, and the parish register of St. Dionis, Backchurch, London, states: "Alice Venner, widow, carried away to be buried to Tindell's ground, 24 February 169½."

The variety of duties which devolved upon, or were assumed by, the town in the early days is manifested in the decision it made in the matter of William Walker, in the latter part of the winter of 1636-7. After considering it in the town meeting, March 2d, the town concluded, that, for the present, Walker had better be kept with Mr. Bishop for his own preservation and also for satisfying Mr. Bishop's part of his debt, if he can earn anything.



At the same meeting, Thomas Tracy, a ship carpenter, from Watertown, was received for an inhabitant, "vpon a Certificate from diuers of watter Towne," and was granted five acres of

*Thomas Chadwell*

land.<sup>1</sup> Thomas Chadwell<sup>2</sup> was received for an inhabitant, and was allowed a ten-acre lot upon Cape Ann Side, near Cedar stand.

*James Standish* The surveyors permitted James Standish<sup>3</sup> to enclose part of the common next to the pen upon the condition that if the town should require it he should allow so much out of his house lot "on the other end." Probably the town never required it.

March 20, 1636-7, John Tompkins,<sup>4</sup> Sergeant Lockwood and Anthony Pearce were promised to be received as inhabitants of

<sup>1</sup>Thomas Tracy removed to Saybrook, on the Connecticut River, about 1638, and a few years later went up the river to Wethersfield or Hartford, finally settling at Norwich, Conn., where he was lieutenant in the militia; children: John; Jonathan; Thomas; Solomon; Daniel, born about 1653; Samuel; Miriam; married Thomas Waterman in 1668.

<sup>2</sup>Thomas Chadwell removed to Lynn soon afterward, and died there Feb. 27, 1683.

<sup>3</sup>James Standish lived in Salem in 1636, and removed to Manchester in 1653. He died in 1679. His wife Sarah survived him, and married, secondly, Richard Hutchinson.

<sup>4</sup>RALPH TOMPKINS,<sup>1</sup> born about 1585; came to America in the autumn of 1635; lived first in Dorchester, then in Bridgewater and settled in Salem, planter, as early as 1642; married Katherine Foster Nov. 6, 1608, in Buckinghamshire, England. She was probably a widow, eight years older than Mr. Tompkins, with a son, John Foster, who came with her to Salem. He married, second, Hannah Aborne. Samuel Aborn called her "sister." She died just previous to Mr. Tompkins. He was called "ould Tompkins" in 1665, and died in 1666. His children were: 1. *John*;<sup>2</sup> 2. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born about 1613; lived in Bridgewater; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> born about 1617; 4. Marie,<sup>2</sup> born about 1619; 5. Martha;<sup>2</sup> married John Foster in 1646.

JOHN TOMPKINS;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married, first, Margaret Goodman Aug. 27, 1632, in Edlesborough, Bucks, England; she died in Salem July 18, 1672; married, second, Mary Read Sept. —, 1673; died June 23, 1681; his wife Mary survived him; children; 1. Nathaniel;<sup>3</sup> living in 1682; 2. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 10, 1638-9; died young; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 19, 1639; died young; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 21, 1640-1; married Hugh Joanes; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. 1, 1642-3; married John Waters; 6. *John*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 16, 1644-5; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 29, 1646; 8. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 29, 1649; married John Felton; 9. Deborah,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 8, 1651; married Nathaniel Silsby; 10. Priscilla;<sup>3</sup> married Samuel Marsh.

JOHN TOMPKINS;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married, first, Rebecca Knights June 26, 1672; she died Jan. 8, 1688; married, second, Mary Reed Nov. 20, 1693;

the town if they "pcure free dismissal."<sup>1</sup> Richard Graves<sup>2</sup> was refused as an inhabitant;<sup>3</sup> but, April 10, 1637, he was received and given permission to have the two or three acres of land "next beyond Raph ffoggs 5 Acre Lott," which was again measured by Roger Conant.<sup>4</sup>

John Pride<sup>4</sup> was granted half an acre of land on Winter Harbor by "their" house and five acres on Darby Fort side March 20, 1636-7.<sup>5</sup> On the same day, Edward Beauchamp was permitted to have his four or five acres of land formerly granted, on Darby Fort side.<sup>6</sup>

April 3, 1637, Thomas Read was acknowledged an inhabitant;<sup>4</sup> and the name of Abraham Whitheare<sup>7</sup> first appears here. The latter was about thirty years of age, and a fisherman. The town allowed to Mr. Scruggs ten acres of "medow ground in the north syde of the water y<sup>t</sup> runns out of the great Ponnd." Mr. Batter was allowed ten acres of marsh, where it may conveniently be laid out to him, "in lieu of Twenty Acres w<sup>ch</sup> he should surrender out of

died Jan. —, 1705-6; children: 1. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> born March 8, 1702-3; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 3, 1674; 3. Rebecca,<sup>4</sup> born June 19, 1676; married Nathaniel Massey; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 20, 1678; husbandman, boatman and innholder; married Mary Pasco July 8, 1703; died between July 15 and Aug. 14, 1732; she died in 1740; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born March 14, 1680-1; married Samuel Rix May 16, 1717; 6. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born May 28, 1686; married Joseph Flagg of Concord April 29, 1713; 7. Deborah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 8, 1688; married Eleazer Flagg of Concord before 1732.

<sup>1</sup>Sergeant Lockwood was in Salem only a short time, being known to live here in 1637 only, when his "father Norman" is mentioned. Anthony Pearce probably belonged in Watertown and never came to Salem to live.

<sup>2</sup>Richard Graves, pewterer, born about 1612, came from London, England, in the Abigail in 1635; ferryman a short time; was living in 1655, and dead in 1669, when his widow was Dorothy Graves; children: 1. —, baptized March 14, 1641; 2. —, baptized March 14, 1641; 3. John, born in 1640; 4. Joseph, baptized Oct. 16, 1642; 5. Benjamin, baptized Aug. 6, 1645; 6. Elizabeth, baptized Aug. 6, 1645; 7. Mary, baptized April 16, 1648; married George Thomas; 8. Richard, baptized Oct. 6, 1650; 9. Hannah, baptized Aug. 15, 1652; 10. Deliverance, baptized July 16, 1654.

<sup>3</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 41 (printed).

<sup>4</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 44 (printed).

<sup>5</sup>John Pride was a potter and brickmaker; died in 1647; his wife survived him; children: 1. John (?); 2. Elizabeth; married John Tapley; 3. Mary; married — Bessol, a Dutch governor (Tapley Genealogy, page 2).

<sup>6</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 42 (printed).

<sup>7</sup>Abraham Whitheare lived in Marblehead until 1653, when he removed to Manchester. He married, first, — —; second, Mary —; died Aug. —, 1674; she married, secondly, John Knight; children: 1. Edward; seaman; living in Beverly in 1674, but went out of the country before 1681, when he was reported to be dead; 2. John; apprenticed to Robert Gray, who left him in Virginia in 1656; 3. Elizabeth; unmarried in 1669; 4. John, born in 165—; died, unmarried, Dec. 29, 1681; 5. William; lived in Brookhaven, L. I., in 1712; 6. Isaac, born in 166—; lived in Manchester; married Elizabeth —; 7. Abraham, born in 166—.



his farne for his brother Antram. Richard Hutchinson was allowed twenty acres besides his sixty acres, to be laid out next to "Rich: waterman D. R. & R. ff." together with Mr. Thorndike who is to have his hundred acres there (which was formerly next to Mr. Johnson's, and was disliked by him). Warrants were made for laying out one hundred and sixty acres to Daniel Ray, eighty each to Richard Waterman and Ralph Fogg, seventy to Hugh Laskin, sixty each to William Dodge and John Hardy, forty to William Woodbury and ten to Mr. Scruggs, as above.<sup>1</sup>

April 10, 1637, the town ordered that all marsh ground about the town which had been laid out be measured by the lot layers, Captain Trask, Mr. Conant, John Woodbury, John Balch and Jeffrey Massey. At the same time, Richard Ingersoll and Pasco Foot were assigned their portions by Frost Fish brook next to Goodman Barney, "if their be so much or else pasca ffoot to be left out." "m<sup>r</sup> Moses Maverik request to Towne granted if he bring his dismissal."<sup>2</sup>

April 17, 1637, Mr. Francis Weston had thirty acres added to his one hundred and twenty; twenty acres of it to be laid out up Wooliston's river.<sup>3</sup> It was also "agreed that in case Ric<sup>d</sup> Huchenson shall sett vp plowing within 2 years he may haue 20 acres more to bee added to his pportion." Mr. Verrin was given liberty to cut three loads of "hay grass" near Lawrence Leach's, provided he burn all the marshes thereabout. Mr. Smith was assigned his proportion of one hundred and fifty acres beyond "the ould planters farmes." Mr. William Browne was granted ten acres to be added to his twenty instead of a ten-acre lot. "Sarg. Lockwood refused the hous Lott beyond his father Normans." Robert Baker<sup>4</sup> was rejected as an inhabitant here; but John Shepley<sup>5</sup> and his wife were accepted.<sup>3</sup> At this meeting of the representatives of the town it was ordered that "m<sup>r</sup> Scrugs & o<sup>r</sup> bro: Ray" be "fined 6<sup>d</sup> a ps to be distrained for disorderlie standing & neglecting to spek to T. busines."

May 17, 1637, the general court ordered that no stranger shall be received or entertained more than three weeks without due permission; and September 6th of the next year, the court ordered

<sup>1</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 43 (printed).

<sup>2</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 45 (printed).

<sup>3</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 47 (printed).

<sup>4</sup>Robert Baker was killed in a casualty in 1640. See pages 380 and 381.

<sup>5</sup>John Shipley lived here until 1643, when Wenham became a town, and then removed thither, subsequently settling in Chelmsford, being one of the group of Wenham people who, with their pastor, Rev. John Fiske, settled that town in 1654. His wife was probably named Ane; he died in Chelmsford Sept. 10, 1678; children: 1. John, born about 1637; 2. Nathaniel, born about 1639; 3. Lydia, born about 1641; married John Perham Dec. 15, 1664; died June 21, 1710.

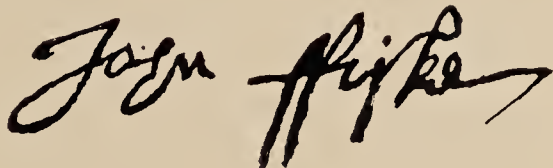
constables to report to the court of assistants the presence of newcomers who came without due license.

June 19, 1637, the town granted to Mr. Thorndike one hundred and eighty-five acres of land in the place where the town appointed him one hundred acres. It was also agreed that Mr. Clark shall have two hundred acres by the Cedar Pond, not exceeding twenty acres of meadow. This grant is shown on the plan on page 302. Mr. Johnson was granted "that Smale quantety of meadow ground before his house on the oth<sup>r</sup> side the Riuer betwixt 2 & 3 acres." At a meeting of the twelve men, the next day, it was voted that Richard Johnson<sup>1</sup> be received an inhabitant and appointed half an acre of land for a houselot "nere vnto Richard Hollingworths works": and that Richard Roots<sup>2</sup> shall have half an acre for his houselot "next vnto our brother Marshall, saving the highway."

There were two or three interesting matters before the Salem quarterly court June 27, 1637. Peter Palfrey's servant, Jane Wheat, was whipped for killing his neighbor's poultry, for lying and loitering and running away from her master; and Nicholas Cary<sup>3</sup> was reprov'd for extreme correction of his maid servant.

At a meeting of the town, July 4, 1637, George Harris was ordered to have his lot made up at the Great Cove; and William Plaise was granted a ten-acre lot.

At a town meeting held July 12, 1637, a number of men were received as inhabitants. One of them was Mr. John Fisk,<sup>4</sup> and another was John Browne. Mr. Browne was a mariner and merchant, trading with Maryland



<sup>1</sup>Richard Johnson came to Charlestown or Watertown, Savage says, in the employ of Sir Richard Saltonstall, in 1630, removed to Salem, where he remained but a short time, and then went to Lynn in 1637 or 1638. He died Aug. 26, 1666, and his wife survived him; children, probably born in Lynn: 1. Samuel; living in 1666; 2. Elizabeth; married Thomas Tolman Nov. 4, 1664; 3. Abigail; married John Collins; 4. Daniel, born about 1650.

<sup>2</sup>Richard Roots lived here until 1640. Apparently, he had a wife and two children.

<sup>3</sup>Nicholas Cary remained in Salem only a short time, and perhaps removed to Pemaquid.

<sup>4</sup>JOHN FISKE,<sup>1</sup> son of William and Anne (Austye) Fiske, lived in England. His father, William Fiske, died in Dutchingland, Norfolk County, England, in 1623. John Fiske married Anne, daughter of Robert Lanterce; was of St. James Church, in South Elmham, and died in 1633. About three years later his widow and some or all of his children sailed for America. The widow died on the passage. Their children were as follows: 1. *John*;<sup>2</sup> Martha;<sup>2</sup> married and lived in Salem; 3. *William*.<sup>2</sup>

REV. JOHN FISKE;<sup>2</sup> schoolmaster, physician and clergyman; first pastor of the church in Wenham; removed, with most of the members of his



and Virginia.<sup>1</sup> He became the progenitor of a prominent and large family, which have now spread into distant sections of the country. Many of them succeeded him as merchants, engaged

church, to Chelmsford, where he died in 1677; married Anne Gipps in England; children: 1. Moses;<sup>3</sup> pastor of the church in Braintree; one of his children was Samuel,<sup>4</sup> who was pastor of the church in Salem; 2. John,<sup>3</sup> baptized in Salem Sept. 2, 1638; lived in Wenham; married Rebecca —; died in 1683; left children; 3. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> baptized in Salem July 26, 1640. WILLIAM FISKE;<sup>2</sup> lived in Wenham; was the first town clerk and representative; married Bridget Muskett in Pelham, England; died in 1654; she married, secondly, Thomas Rix; children: 1. Samuel;<sup>3</sup> 2. Joseph;<sup>3</sup> 3. Benjamin;<sup>3</sup> 4. Martha;<sup>3</sup> married Benjamin Smale; 5. William,<sup>3</sup> born in Salem Feb. 22, 1642-3; lived in Wenham; weaver; deacon; representative; married Sarah Killim Jan. 15, 1662-3; died Feb. 4, 1727-8.

*John Browne*

<sup>1</sup>ELDER JOHN BROWNE;<sup>1</sup> lived in Salem; ruling elder of the church; was shipwrecked in 1660; his wife was living in 1667; he died in 1685; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> married Abiel Burrell June 28,

1664; died, childless in 1667; she married, secondly, — Shrimpton of Hingham Aug. —, 1668; 2. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized Sept. 16, 1638; died young; 3. James,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 7, 1640; 4. Jacob,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 13, 1642; 5. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 13, 1642; 6. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 1, 1642; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 10, 1643; died young; 8. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 14, 1644; married, first, Joseph Grafton; he died at Barbadoes Feb. —, 1670; married, second, Lt. Samuel Gardner.

JAMES BROWNE;<sup>2</sup> merchant; had land in the Narragansett country and a plantation and trading establishment in Maryland; married Hannah Bartholmew Sept. 5, 1664; murdered by a negro at Farly Creek, Cecil County, Maryland, Nov. 12, 1675; she married, secondly, Dr. John Swinerton; children: 1. James,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 3, 1665; died Dec. —, 1670; 2. Bartholmew,<sup>3</sup> born March 31, 1669; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 26, 1670; married Joseph Stevens of Andover Nov. 13, 1700; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born March 9, 1672-3; married Capt. William Pickering; 5. James,<sup>3</sup> born May 23, 1675. CAPT. JOHN BROWNE;<sup>2</sup> master-mariner, and traded at Maryland, Virginia and Barbadoes; married, first, Hannah Hubbard (daughter of Rev. Peter Hobart of Hingham) June 2, 1658; taken prisoner by the Dutch on a voyage home from Virginia in 1667; married, second, Hannah Collins Jan. 27, 1668; died in 1677; she was his widow in 1702; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born April 4, 1659; died May 21, 1659; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born March 14, 1662; died Dec. 10, 1663; 3. Peter,<sup>3</sup> born March —, 1664-5; died when about three months old; 4. Margaret,<sup>3</sup> baptized April 8, 1666; died young; 5. John,<sup>3</sup> born before Feb. 21, 1666; 6. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 3, 1669; 7. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> born June 1, 1669; 8. Margaret,<sup>3</sup> born April 23, 1671; married Samuel Lambert; 9. Abiel,<sup>3</sup> born March 21, 1672-3; she was living in 1683; 10. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 11, 1673; mariner; died, unmarried, in 1756; 11. Hannah Collins,<sup>3</sup> born July 22, 1675; married Daniel Bray; 12. William,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 1, 1677.

DR. BARTHOLMEW BROWNE;<sup>3</sup> studied medicine with his step-father and was a chemist and physician; married Susanna Maule May 1, 1693; died July 22, 1717; she married, secondly, William Mulhuish (McEhrich) of Marblehead June 19, 1718; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born April 13, 1694; died Jan. 11, 1701-2; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born June 1, 1696; 3. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. —, 1699; died March —, 1699-1700; 4. James,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 23, 1700-1; died at the age of seven weeks; 5. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born May 11, 1702; 6. Bartholomew,<sup>4</sup> born

in coastwise trade. Others have been in the professions, while a

Nov. 30, 1703; soldier at the capture of Louisburg in 1745; lived in Beverly and Ipswich; joiner; married, first, widow Lydia Very of Beverly (published April 19, 1730); she died in Beverly in 1741; married, second, Hannah Wood of Ipswich (published June 25, 1749); he died in Ipswich Dec. 20, 1755; his wife Hannah survived him; had children; 7. Susanna,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 2, 1707; married James Gifford of Boston. JAMES BROWNE;<sup>3</sup> lived in that part of Salem which is now South Peabody; mariner and husbandman; married Elizabeth (Pickering), widow of Samuel Nichols, Feb. 22, 1698-9; family tradition says that he was taken captive by Robert Kidd, the pirate, but made his escape by swimming; both died between 1728 and 1739; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 19, 1699; probably died young; 2. John,<sup>4</sup> born in 1704 (2?); 3. James,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 9, 1704; husbandman in 1728; married Martha Parnel July 22, 1725; 4. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 3, 1706; 5. William;<sup>4</sup> 6. Mary;<sup>4</sup> married Samuel King Aug. 20, 1724. JOHN BROWNE;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Rachel Gardner Aug. 31, 1686; children: 1. Rachel,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 16, 1687; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born April 6, 1689; baptized at age Feb. 24, 1711-12; 3. Eliza,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 4, 1690. CAPT. WILLIAM BROWNE;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Mary English before 1730; died before 1753; she died in 1766; children: 1. Mary;<sup>4</sup> married John Cranch of Boston Jan. 16, 1739; 2. William.<sup>4</sup> JOHN BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem as late as 1747, and at Castle William, in Boston, in 1753; merchant; married Lydia Gerrish Dec. 8, 1725; child: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 11, 1727. JOHN BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem, in that part of the town which is now Danvers; husbandman; married Susanna Masury April 2, 1728; died, suddenly, Dec. —, 1771; she survived him; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> born about 1730; lived in Danvers; cordwainer and yeoman; married, first, Dorcas Walden Oct. 9, 1755; second, Mary Nurse of Lynnfield Oct. 15, 1767; died in Danvers June 19, 1800; she died, his widow, in 1839; had children: 2. Isabella;<sup>5</sup> married John Silver; 3. James,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 25, 1736; lived in Danvers; yeoman; married Ruth Buxton of Danvers May 23, 1759; died in Danvers Aug. 14, 1793; she died there, his widow, May 3, 1812; had children; 4. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> born in 1738; lived in Marblehead; yeoman; married Mary Gatchell Nov. 26, 1767; she died in Marblehead Nov. 11, 1816; he died at the Farms, in Marblehead, Dec. —, 1819; had children; 5. William;<sup>5</sup> settled in Antrim, N. H., before 1773; 6. Margaret;<sup>5</sup> married Isaac Very; 7. Judith;<sup>5</sup> married Cornelius Thompson of Mount Desert, Me. (published July 4, 1778); she was his wife in 1785; 8. Susanna;<sup>5</sup> married Andrew Newhall before 1773; 9. Hannah;<sup>5</sup> married — Potter; and was his widow, of Lynn, in 1773; 10. Sarah;<sup>5</sup> married Chantrel Collins; 11. Joseph;<sup>5</sup> died young; 12. Elizabeth;<sup>5</sup> married Edmund Rhoads of Danvers Dec. 14, 1769; they were living in Danvers in 1785; 13. Mary;<sup>5</sup> married, first, Eleazer Austin; second, Juduthan Upton. SAMUEL BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> lived in that part of Salem which was set off to Beverly in 1753; husbandman, mariner and fisherman; married Mary Porter Jan. 7, 1728-9; died in 1764; she died in Beverly, his widow, in 1768; children, baptized in the North parish of Beverly; 1. Edith,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 2, 1730; married William Batchelder; 2. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Nov. 15, 1730; married Benjamin Baker of Haverhill Aug. 28, 1748 (9?); 3. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 25, 1732-3; lived in Beverly; cordwainer; married Anna —; they lived in Beverly in 1780; had children; 4. Anna,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 2, 1734-5; married John Herrick of Wenham Dec. 30, 1755; 5. Huldah,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 25, 1738; married Joshua Herrick Aug. 24, 1758; 6. Apphia,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 18, 1740; married Amos Hilton Nov. 6, 1762; 7. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 26, 1742; 8. William,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 16, 1744; 9. Asa,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 18, 1746-7; lived in Beverly; yeoman; married, first, Salome Smith March 26, 1776; second, Mrs. Sarah



still larger number were tillers of the soil. It includes a con-

Trask July 26, 1796; died in Beverly Nov. 8, 1812; she died, his widow, in Beverly, April 16, 1841; had children; 10. Amos,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 14, 1749; lived in Beverly; yeoman; probably died, unmarried, in 1773; 11. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 15, 1751; living in 1769; 12. Ezra,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 8, 1754; probably died young; 13. Nathan,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 28, 1757; living in 1769. WILLIAM BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer and mariner; married Mary Frost of Salem (published Nov. 9, 1733); was killed by a shark in attempting to escape, by swimming, from a vessel in which he was held against his will in the old French war; she survived her husband and all her children but William, at whose house she died April 11, 1794; children: 1. *William*,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 27, 1734; 2. *Benjamin*,<sup>5</sup> 3. James,<sup>5</sup> probably died young; 4. *Joseph*.<sup>5</sup> CAPT. WILLIAM BROWNE;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married, first, Lydia Hart Dec. 5, 1727; second, Abigail (Archer), widow of John Elkins Jan. 25, 1743-4; died in 1752; she died, his widow, in 1781; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> mariner; married Sarah Cox June 5, 1753; died in 1763; she was his widow in 1767; 2. Lydia,<sup>5</sup> unmarried in 1762; 3. Mary,<sup>5</sup> unmarried in 1762; 4. William,<sup>5</sup> lived in Danvers; yeoman; married Lydia Mackintire of Lynnfield Aug. 25, 1793; died in Danvers Oct. 12, 1815; had children; 5. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> married Capt. William Williams; 6. Philip,<sup>5</sup> living in 1774; 7. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> married John Becket.

DEA. WILLIAM BROWNE,<sup>5</sup> deacon of the East church; tailor and tanner; married, first, Mercy White March 16, 1755; she died July 11, 1785; married, second, widow Phebe (Ganson) Carlton of Andover June 13, 1786; she died April 14, 1805; married, third, widow Mary (Collins) Orne; died Sept. 3, 1812; she died, his widow, Feb. 13, 1818; children: 1. James,<sup>6</sup> born May 12, 1759; deacon of the East church and treasurer of the society; ship-chandler, and subsequently weigher and gauger in the revenue service; married, first, Sarah Masury Dec. 5, 1784; she died Aug. 28, 1797; married, second, Lydia Vincent; died May 12, 1827; his wife Lydia survived him and died June 27, 1853; 2. Mary,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 6, 1761; married William Ropes; 3. *Benjamin*,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 10, 1763; 4. Mercy,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 28, 1765; married Capt. Francis Roach; died May 21, 1830; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> born Nov. 2, 1767; married John Hill; 6. Anna (Nancy),<sup>6</sup> born June 22, 1770; married Samuel Masury; 7. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born Feb. 26, 1772; married Joseph Vincent; 8. Sarah,<sup>6</sup> born Jan. 15, 1774; married Capt. Timothy Wellman; 9. Eunice,<sup>6</sup> born Oct. 6, 1778; married John Kehew, shipmaster; died Feb. 8, 1824. BENJAMIN BROWNE,<sup>5</sup> married Margaret Osborne (published Jan. 3, 1761); died in 176—; she married, secondly, Lemuel Holt; child: 1. Mary,<sup>6</sup> married, first, — Bowder; second, Peter Crosby. CAPT. JOSEPH BROWNE;<sup>5</sup> fisherman; married Mary Bullock May 4, 1763; died May —, 1790; she survived him; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>6</sup> born about 1763; mariner; married Sarah Nick of Marblehead Oct. 17, 1790; died Dec. —, 1822; 2. William,<sup>6</sup> died in his youth.

BENJAMIN BROWNE,<sup>6</sup> in early life was a mariner, and confined in Mill prison, Plymouth, England, in the Revolution; later was a partner with his father in the tanning business; married Elizabeth Andrew Oct. 23, 1787; died Feb. 16, 1838; she died Jan. 21, 1843; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 22, 1788; died young; 2. Benjamin F.,<sup>7</sup> baptized March 14, 1790; died young; 3. Hannah Gardner,<sup>7</sup> baptized June 12, 1791; married Benjamin Horton Oct. 21, 1810; 4. Benjamin,<sup>7</sup> baptized July 14, 1793; died on board brig Henry bound to New Orleans in 1824, aged thirty-two; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>7</sup> baptized July 12, 1795; 6. Mary,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 13, 1797; 7. Mercy,<sup>7</sup> baptized Aug. 4, 1799; 8. Timothy Welman,<sup>7</sup> baptized March 28, 1802; 9. Sara,<sup>7</sup> baptized Feb. 19, 1804; 10. Anna,<sup>7</sup> baptized Nov. 11, 1805.

siderable number of interesting and adventurous persons and a large number of seamen, several of whom became master-mariners. Others were James Hynds,<sup>1</sup>

Thomas Spooner,<sup>2</sup> John Tompkins,<sup>3</sup> Thomas Edwards,<sup>3</sup> Henry Skerry,<sup>4</sup> and

*Henry Skerry*

Robert Codnam.

*Thomas Spooner*

All of them desired to have land granted to them; and John Tomp-

<sup>1</sup>JAMES HAINES<sup>1</sup> (Hynds); lived in Salem; cooper; Mrs. Anne Scarlet called him "brother" in 1639; his wife was probably daughter of Mrs. Anne Knight, wife of John Knight of Newbury, as Mr. Hynds' son is called a grandson of Mrs. Knight; children: 1. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 28, 1639; 2. James,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1641; died young; 3. Benjamin,<sup>2</sup> baptized Aug. 27, 1643; 4. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 19, 1646; 5. James,<sup>2</sup> baptized Feb. 27, 1647-8; 6. Jonathan,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 11, 1648; 7. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 11, 1648; married Moses Ebborne; 8. Thomas,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 4, 1651.

THOMAS HAINES;<sup>2</sup> lived in Salem Village in 1697; maltster; married Sarah Ray Dec. 15, 1676; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born April 14, 1678; 2. William,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 25, 1680; 3. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 31, 1681; 4. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 16, 1683; 5. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 21, 1685; 6. Daniel,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 25, 1687; died June 28, 1689; 7. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 25, 1689; 8. Thomas,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 17, 1690.

<sup>2</sup>Thomas Spooner; lived in Salem; linen weaver; married Elizabeth — (she called Margaret Ruck of Boston and Thomas Cleark of Cambridge "cousins"); died in 1664; she died, his widow, Dec. 31, 1676; children: 1. — (daughter); married — Osborne; 2. Hannah; married John Ruck.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas Edwards, shoemaker, lived in that part of Salem which became Marblehead; there were six in his family about 1637; had brother Nathaniel Edwards in 1651; married Elizabeth —; children: 1. John, baptized June 6, 1639; 2. Joseph, baptized May 22, 1642; 3. Joshua, baptized June 18, 1643.

<sup>4</sup>HENRY SKERRY<sup>1</sup> (brother of Francis Skerry), born about 1613; cordwainer; marshall, 1666-1675; came from Yarmouth, Norfolk, England, in April, 1637 (Savage); wife Elizabeth and probably three children came with him; died Dec. 30, 1691; she died, his widow, March 6, 1692-3; children: 1. Henry,<sup>2</sup> 2. Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> baptized in Salem March 4, 1638; married Benjamin Fitch of Reading or John Williams; 3. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized in Salem Sept. 8, 1640; married — Nelson; 4. Ephraim,<sup>2</sup> baptized in Salem March 26, 1643; 5. John,<sup>2</sup> baptized in Salem June 3, 1649.

HENRY SKERRY;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Priscilla Lunt Nov. 9, 1665; died April 12, 1697; she was his widow in 1736; children: 1. Francis,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 25, 1666; husbandman; probably married Mary Hodges; died in 1736; 2. Ann,<sup>3</sup> born June 14, 1669; married John Smith; 3. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> born July 13, 1671; died, unmarried, in the spring of 1753; 4. Mary,<sup>3</sup> of Salem, spinster, in 1756; 5. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> baptized March 12, 1675-6; 6. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 19, 1678; died, unmarried, July —, 1695; 7. Henry,<sup>3</sup> 8. Sarah;<sup>3</sup> married Philemon Sanders of Marblehead; 9. John,<sup>3</sup> shipwright; lived in Chatham, Kent, England, in 1718; was dead, leaving children, in 1745; 10. Ephraim,<sup>3</sup> baptized April —, 1685-6. EPHRAIM SKERRY;<sup>2</sup> cordwinder; married Martha Mellard Sept. —, 1671; died Oct. 11, 1676; she married, secondly, Richard Wells Jan. 1, 1678; lived in Boston; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born July 11, 1672; of Boston, singlewoman, in 1694; 2. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born July 13, 1674; married John Neale; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born "March —, 1677" (baptized "March 19, 1675-6"); of Boston, singlewoman, in 1694.



kins had five acres of land granted to him; Thomas Edwards and Henry Skerry had ten acres of planting ground granted to each of them; and Robert Codnam<sup>1</sup> was granted five acres for himself and five acres for his mother, provided she be received for an inhabitant. At the same meeting Mr. Philip Verine requested hay grounds to his farm; William Vinson<sup>2</sup> requested

*William Vinson*

HENRY SKERRY;<sup>3</sup> was dead in 1745; child: *Henry*.<sup>4</sup> EPHRAIM SKERRY;<sup>3</sup> yeoman, mariner and fisherman; married Margaret Silsby March 29, 1711; died in the spring of 1741; she was his widow in 1765; children: 1. Henry,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 17, 1712; cordwainer in 1765; 2. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 28, 1714; married Thomas Symonds; 3. Ephraim,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 1, 1716; died in the winter of 1746-7; 4. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 30, 1717; married Benjamin Symonds; 5. *Francis*,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 15, 1719; 6. Deborah;<sup>4</sup> married John Felt; 7. John;<sup>4</sup> died, unmarried, in 1765.

HENRY SKERRY;<sup>4</sup> yeoman; married Hannah Sollas of Beverly Feb. 5, 1744; died in 1781; children: 1. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 29, 1745; died Nov. 24, 1749; 2. *Samuel*,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 7, 1747; 3. Margaret,<sup>5</sup> born March 22, 1749; married Thomas Brown; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 20, 1753; died Jan. 27, 1755; 5. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born March 17, 1755; married John Peters; 6. Henry,<sup>5</sup> born in 1761; probably published to Elizabeth Lander April 13, 1781. FRANCIS SKERRY;<sup>4</sup> cordwainer and husbandman; married Anna Symonds Nov. 11, 1741; died in 1792; she survived him; children: 1. Ephraim,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 5, 1742; mariner; married Mary Cook of Danvers Dec. 14, 1769; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> married Benjamin Bullock; 3. Anna;<sup>5</sup> spinster, in 1795; 4. —;<sup>5</sup> died Nov. 14, 1760; 5. Nathaniel;<sup>5</sup> laborer in 1795; married Hannah Ramsdel of Lynn Dec. 24, 1778; 6. Henry;<sup>5</sup> chairmaker in 1795; 7. John;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; married Abigail Wallace (published March 1, 1783); they were living in 1795; 8. *Francis*,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 3, 1763; 9. Margaret;<sup>5</sup> married James Gardner.

SAMUEL SKERRY;<sup>5</sup> yeoman; married, first, Lydia Cheever Jan. 11, 1770; she died Feb. 28, 1809; married, second, Bethiah Archer Sept. 3, 1809; died Nov. 21, 1829; she died, his widow, March 31, 1842; child: 1. —;<sup>6</sup> living in 1830. FRANCIS SKERRY;<sup>5</sup> housewright; married Jane Symonds July 4, 1778; died Jan. 18, 1805; she died, his widow, Oct. 31, 1828; children: 1. —;<sup>6</sup> (daughter); buried Dec. 31, 1806; 2. Francis,<sup>6</sup> born in 17—; minor, aged upward of fourteen years April 21, 1807.

<sup>1</sup>Robert Codnam had four in his family in 1637; coaster; lived in Salem until 1641, when he removed to Salisbury, to Hartford in 1650, to Saybrook in 1654, and to Edgartown, where he died in 1678; John Stephens called him "brother" in 1646; children: 1. Benjamin, baptized in Salem Nov. 14, 1641; 2. James, born in Salisbury April 15, 1644; 3. Joseph; died in 1678; 4. Stephen.

<sup>2</sup>William Vincent, a potter, was born about 1610, came to Salem about 1636, and removed to Gloucester in 1643; had a wife, mother and cousin Anthony Buxton in 1636; married, first, Sarah —; she died Feb. 4, 1660; married, second, widow Rachel Cooke June 10, 1661; he died Oct. 17, 1690; his wife Rachel died, his widow, Feb. 15, 1707; children: 1. Sarah; married Jeffrey Parsons Nov. 11, 1657; 2. Hannah; married William Ellery Oct. 8, 1664; 3. Elizabeth, born May 16, 1644; married James Gardner June 16, 1661; 4. John, born May 15, 1648; was probably dead in 1682, not having been heard from; 5. William, born in 1651; died Dec. 9, 1675; 6. Jacob,

accommodation; Mr. Edmund Batter requested a farm with twenty acres of meadow next to Mr. Sharp; and Joseph Grafton<sup>1</sup> was promised planting ground. The family of Grafton was

*Joseph Grafton*

baptized April 11, 1658; 7. Richard, born March —, 1660 (?); died April —, 1670(?); 8. Thomas, born April 1, 1661; died Dec. 31, 1675; 9. Abigail, born in 1668; died Sept. 17, 1690.

<sup>1</sup>JOSEPH GRAFTON<sup>1</sup> was a mariner; had a "mother-in-law" here in 1638; Anne Scarlet called him "brother" in her will in 1639 and John Sanders called him "father" in his will in 1643; married, first, Mary —; she died Nov. —, 1674; married, second, Bethiah (Rea), widow of Capt. Thomas Lathrop; died in 1681; his widow Bethiah married, third, — Goodhugh in 1681; children: 1. Priscilla;<sup>2</sup> married John Gardner; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Jan. 24, 1636-7; 3. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 28, 1639; 4. *Nathaniel*,<sup>2</sup> baptized April 24, 1642.

JOSEPH GRAFTON;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married, first, Hasina Hubbard Oct. 29, 1657, at Hingham; second, Elizabeth Browne June 30, 1664; died at Barbadoes Feb. —, 1670; his widow Elizabeth married, secondly, Capt. Samuel Gardner; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 17, 1658 (?); 2. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 7, 1658 (?); 3. *Joshua*,<sup>3</sup> born April 9, 1660; 4. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 29, 1668; 5. *William*,<sup>3</sup> born March 3, 1670. JOHN GRAFTON;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married, first, Seeth (Gardner), widow of Joshua Conant Dec. 1, 1659; she died April 17, 1707; married, second, Judith Clark Aug. 9, 1708, in Boston; she was his wife in 1711; he died Nov. 24, 1716; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 7, 1660; married Joseph Hardy; 2. Seeth,<sup>3</sup> born April 28, 1665; 3. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 12, 1667; 4. Jehoaden,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 1, 1669; 5. Margaret,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 24, 1671; married John Swinerton; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> born July 14, 1674. NATHANIEL GRAFTON;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Maverick April 6, 1665; died at Barbadoes Feb. 11, 1670-1; she married, secondly, — Skinner; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 18, 1667; married Dr. William Hewes of Boston; 2. Remember,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 29, 1669; living in 1681; 3. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> born March 12, 1670-1; married Thomas Jackson of Boston before 1695.

JOSEPH GRAFTON;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Mary —; she was his wife in 1694; he died July 11, 1709; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1682; 2. Nathaniel;<sup>4</sup> died on board Her Majesty's ship Jersey at Island of Antigua in 1707; 3. *Joshua*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1694. JOSHUA GRAFTON;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Hannah Gedney Aug. 2, 1686; died in 1699; she was his widow in 1700; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born May 27, 1691; married Nathaniel Emmes of Boston Sept. 15, 1714; 2. *Joshua*,<sup>4</sup> (twin), born Jan. 16, 1693; 3. Samuel<sup>4</sup> (twin), born Jan. 16, 1693; lived in Boston; married Ann Briggs Nov. 5, 1724; 4. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born April 13, 1697; 5. Priscilla,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 8, 1698; married Joseph Robie of Boston April 14, 1719. WILLIAM GRAFTON;<sup>3</sup> sailmaker; removed to Newport, R. I., in 1740; married Jane Britton Oct. 12, 1721; they were living in 1749; children: 1. Nathaniel,<sup>4</sup> born July 21, 1723; lived in Newport in 1791; married Elizabeth —; 2. William,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 2, 1725; sailmaker; lived in Providence, R. I., 1747-1791; married Sarah —, who was his wife in 1791; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 1, 1727; 4. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born April 10, 1730; captain; mariner; living in 1749; 5. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 20, 1733.

CAPT. JOSEPH GRAFTON;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married, first, Elizabeth Palfrey June 15, 1715; she died Oct. 28, 1717; married, second, Mary Orne Feb. 13, 1718-9; died in 1766; his wife Mary survived him, and died before 1784;



prominent as being connected with commerce upon the water, many of its men being seamen, several of whom became master-mariners.

children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 8, 1717; died Feb. —, 1718-9; 2. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 14, 1721; died Oct. 4, 1721; 3. Susannah,<sup>5</sup> born July 29, 1722; unmarried in 1767; probably died, unmarried, in 1795; 4. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Jan. 15, 1724-5; unmarried in 1795; 5. *Joseph*,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 26, 1726; 6. Anne,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 24, 1727; died, unmarried, in the spring of 1803; 7. Esther,<sup>5</sup> born June 6, 1729; 8. *Joshua*,<sup>5</sup> baptized Aug. 5, 1733.

JOSEPH GRAFTON;<sup>5</sup> living in 1766; married Elizabeth Woodbridge Dec. 20, 1752; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 3, 1754; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 20, 1758; 3. Woodbridge,<sup>6</sup> baptized April 17, 1763; 4. Gilman,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 16, 1767. JOSHUA GRAFTON;<sup>5</sup> living in 1759; married Mary —; died before 1786; she survived him, and married, secondly, — Chapman before 1786; children: 1. *Joshua*,<sup>6</sup> baptized Aug. 7, 1757; 2. Esther,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 11, 1759; living in 1766.

JOSEPH GRAFTON;<sup>6</sup> merchant; married Martha Pyncheon March 22, 1788; died in 1793; she lived in Wenham, his widow, in 1804; child: 1. Joseph,<sup>7</sup> born in 1789; living in 1803. CAPT. WOODBRIDGE GRAFTON;<sup>6</sup> mariner and merchant; married Patience Woodbridge Dec. 17, 1789; they were living in 1803; children: 1. George;<sup>7</sup> living in 1803; 2. Anne;<sup>7</sup> living in 1803; 3. Eliza;<sup>7</sup> living in 1803. JOSHUA GRAFTON;<sup>6</sup> married Lydia Masury April 18, 1777; she was his wife in 1786; he died in 1787; children: 1. Joseph;<sup>7</sup> living in 1803; 2. Joshua;<sup>7</sup> living in 1803; 3. Susanna;<sup>7</sup> living in 1803; 4. Mary;<sup>7</sup> married George Washington Prescott of Portsmouth, N. H., before 1807; 5. Anna;<sup>7</sup> died, unmarried, in 1803.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### HERESY



JULY 18, 1637, the town received Robert Baker and William Williams for inhabitants, and granted to the former five acres of planting ground and to the latter one acre of ground for a house lot "by our Brother Barney" and ten acres for a great lot. Mr. Veren requested the alteration of his farm.

Mr. Williams came from Great Yarmouth, England, to Salem in 1637, aged forty, with his wife Alice, aged thirty-eight, and two children. Mr. Williams lived where the "Witch house" stands, on the corner of Essex and North streets, and removed, probably to Watertown, in 1641.

John Stratton appeared at this meeting, and requested a farm "beyond Ipswich pond." He was son of John Stratton of Shotley, Suffolkshire, and of Ardleigh, in Essex, England, and was a minor in 1621. His mother Anne was daughter of Mrs. Mary Dearbaugh of Barrington, Suffolk, and was born about 1590. His father died at Ardleigh May 2, 1627, having devised to John the manor of Thurculton. His widow and John came to America about 1632, and John was at Scarborough in 1633. They were in Salem in 1637. Her daughter Dorothy, who was under eighteen in 1627, was of Salem, unmarried, in 1641; and daughter Elizabeth, born about 1616, emigrated to America, on the Increase, April 15, 1635, and married John Thorndike of Salem. The son John Stratton had a daughter Ann, who married William Lake of Salem. Mr. Stratton removed to Easthampton, L. I., in 1643.

At the same town meeting (July 18, 1637), William Wake<sup>1</sup> was granted five acres of planting ground, and Richard Lambert

<sup>1</sup>William Wake came to this country without his family and he was repeatedly ordered to bring his wife here or to go to her, who was living in England. He stated that they were married without the consent of her friends, who successfully urged her not to go to him. Death, however, ended



had granted to him five acres of land "for a great lot on Derbys fort side. It was also ordered that William Lord shall have 70 acres of ground lying by Mr. Garfords," and butting on Richard Waterman's and Daniel Ray's lands, and seven acres of meadow; and that Thomas Gardner, jr., shall have five acres of land for a great lot.

July 30, 1637, Mr. Batter was granted a farm "next to o' brother Ray Northward & it is to runn vp to the great meadow

*Job Swinnerton*

Westwards and not more than twenty acres of meadow." Job Swinnerton<sup>1</sup> was admitted for an inhabitant that day and was granted half an acre of land

"neere o' brother Marshall" for a house lot.

At the same time, Mr. Stephen Winthrop requested the grant of a farm; and January 15th following two hundred acres of land towards Ipswich was granted to him. He was son of Governor Winthrop and was born at Groton, Suffolkshire, England, March 24, 1618. He came to Salem on the Arbella, with his father, in 1630, when twelve years old. He was in Connecticut, with his brother John in 1636, and in Salem in 1637 and 1638. He went to England in February, 1638; and soon returned. He was appointed recorder in Boston Sept. 9, 1639. In 1645, he went to England and entered the army as captain of a troop of horse, was promoted to major and subsequently to colonel under General Monk, in Cromwell's army. He served in Scotland and Wales.

Roger Williams wrote that Colonel Winthrop was "a great man for soule libertie." He married, in Boston, about 1643,

his troubles in court, in the spring of 1654. He left a daughter in England, named Katherine Wake, and a brother John Wake. He may have made salt here as he died possessed of six bushels of it. He probably lived alone in a small house which he owned and which with his orchard and land was valued at only ten pounds. He had a bedstead and its furnishings, four chairs, a gun, sword and belt, a lamp, three candlesticks, two dozen buttons, some books, a Bible, three pewter dishes, two pairs of blankets, a green rug, three shirts, inkhorn, towels, napkins, etc. Apparently, he was an intellectual man and a man of character and undisclosed history.

<sup>1</sup>JOB SWINNERTON,<sup>1</sup> born about 1601; probably married Elizabeth —, perhaps in Eccleshall, Staffordshire, England, and lived in Salem Village. A private record in the possession of the family states that when he and his wife were aged and infirm their house "took fire on the roof, in the absence of their family, and before they discovered it, all retreat from the door was cut off. Mr. Swinnerton escaped from the window, holding his wife's hand, but did not succeed in rescuing her from the flames. When the son returned he found his father sitting on a rock, viewing the smoking coals, and on inquiring for his mother, his father replied, she has gone to heaven in a chariot of fire." Mr. Swinnerton died April 11, 1689. Children: 1. *Job*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1630; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born about 1633.







Stephen Bimthrop



Judith, sister of Col. William Rainborow of the Parliamentary army; and had several children. She joined him in England in the winter of 1647. In 1652, he had purchased a house and part of Maribone park, and lived there. Because of exposure in the service, his health was poor in 1653; and in 1656 he represented Banff and Aberdeen in parliament, and lived in James Street, Westminster. In 1657, he was very sick, and he died at London in the summer of the next year. His wife survived him.

At a town meeting, July 30, 1637, Mr. Endecott was granted twenty acres of meadow "in y<sup>t</sup> great meadow northward of m<sup>r</sup>

JOB SWINNERTON;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem Village; married, first, Ruth Symonds July 19, 1658; she died May 22, 1670; married, second, Hester Baker Sept. 2, 1673; died April 7, 1700; his widow Hester (Esther) died in the winter of 1719-20; children: 1. *Jasper*,<sup>3</sup> born June 4, 1659; 2. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 3, 1660; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 26, 1662-3; married Joseph Hutchinson; 4. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born March 22, 1664; died, unmarried, Oct. 27, 1694; 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born May 17, 1670; married Anthony Needham; 6. Joshua,<sup>3</sup> under age in 1700; died, probably unmarried, in or before 1713; 7. *Benjamin*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 8, 1682; 8. Esther,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. 8, 1682; married John Giles; 9. *James*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 6, 1687; 10. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 7, 1690; married Elias Trask; 11. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Oct. —, 1692; married Jonathan Flint. DR. JOHN SWINERTON;<sup>2</sup> physician; married Hannah (Bartholomew), widow of Elder John Browne March 8, 1679-80; died Jan. 6, 1690-1; she died, his widow, Dec. 23, 1713; children: 1. Mercy,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. 24, 1681; died, unmarried, Nov. 3, 1727; 2. *John*,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 17, 1683; 3. Antipas,<sup>3</sup> born Dec. —, 1685.

JASPER SWINERTON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; married Mary Taylor Feb. 2, 1720; died in the winter of 1733-4; she married, secondly, William Ellenwood of Beverly May 14, 1735; child: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 8, 1729; married Nathaniel Pope. JOSEPH SWINERTON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem Village; married Mary Sumner of Milton; died in the winter of 1731-2; she survived him; children: 1. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born March 22, 1692-3; married Thomas Dismore; 2. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. 1, 1694; 3. Joanna<sup>4</sup> (twin), born Nov. 22, 1696; married, at Roxbury, Benjamin West June 4, 1718; 4. Ruth<sup>4</sup> (twin), born Nov. 22, 1696; married Hazadiah Smith May 24, 1723; 5. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born Jan. 17, 1698-9; married Joseph Whipple; 6. Job,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 30, 1701; probably died before 1726; 7. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born in 1706. BENJAMIN SWINERTON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem Village; married Ruth —; died in the spring of 1742; children: 1. *Joshua*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 5, 1718; 2. Jasper,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 1, 1721; lived in Danvers; died Dec. —, 1753; had a daughter Ruth who was under fourteen in 1759; lived in South Brimfield in 1769; 3. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 3, 1725; married Jacob How of Marlboro Dec. 8, 1742. JAMES SWINERTON;<sup>3</sup> married Sarah Dier June 9, 1715; died in the spring of 1732; she survived him, and died Dec. —, 1768; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 21, 1715; unmarried in 1769; 2. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> born April 18, 1717; published to Benjamin Upton Nov. 9, 1736; 3. Hester,<sup>4</sup> born July 2, 1719; probably died before 1768; 4. Ruth,<sup>4</sup> born June 28, 1721; married John Putnam Feb. 4, 1741-2; 5. *Job*,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 13, 1723; 6. James,<sup>4</sup> born June 6, 1728; yeoman; lived in Danvers; soldier in the Revolution; married Emma Putnam July 20, 1748; had children. JOHN SWINERTON;<sup>3</sup> cooper and schoolmaster; removed to Boston about 1734; married Margaret Grafton Sept. 19, 1711, and probably, secondly, in Boston, Elizabeth Pope of Salem July 2, 1744; child: 1. Mercy,<sup>4</sup> born April 30, 1713.



Sharpes meadow"; and William Huson<sup>1</sup> requested a house lot in the neck.

Aug. 7, 1637, Augustin Kellham,<sup>2</sup> Marmaduke Percie,<sup>3</sup> James Moulton,<sup>4</sup> John Gedney, John Harbert, John Cook and Ezekiel Knights were admitted as inhabitants. Augustin Kell-

*John Gedney*

JOSEPH SWINERTON;<sup>4</sup> married Hannah Fuller July 26, 1722; died in the winter of 1739-40; she married, secondly, Joseph Fowle; children: John,<sup>5</sup> born July 19, 1722; lived in Danvers; soldier in the Revolution; married Ede Putnam (published Nov. 8, 1755); died in the winter of 1784; she died Dec. —, 1807; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 18, 1724; married Jasper Swinerton; 3. Job,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 6, 1727; died in the winter of 1752; 4. Ebenezer,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 30, 1730; potter; lived in Lynnfield; married Lucy Hopkins of Monson Dec. 22, 1757; died in Lynnfield Nov. 12, 1795. JOSHUA SWINERTON;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem Village (Danvers); married, first, Elizabeth Giles Feb. 8, 1737-8; she died Dec. —, 1753; married, second, Mary Buxton Dec. 12, 1754; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 2, 1739; 2. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 19, 1741; 3. Asa,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 15, 1744; married Eliza Dempsey Oct. 24, 1769; 4. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 15, 1746; lived in Danvers; married Elizabeth Phippen Dec. 20, 1770; died April 19, 1825; she survived him; had children: 5. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized July 10, 1748; died young; 6. Samuel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 29, 1751; lived in New Braintree; soldier in the Revolution; married Phebe Peirce June 7, 1778; 7. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> lived in New Braintree; 8. Esther,<sup>5</sup> of New Braintree, unmarried, in 1782; 9. James;<sup>5</sup> of Richmond in 1782. JOB SWINERTON;<sup>4</sup> lived in Salem Village (Danvers); married Sarah Hutchinson of Middleton Sept. 1, 1748; died in 1767; she died in 1769; children: 1. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born April 9, 1750; married Eleazer Goodale; 2. Job,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 22, 1752; died, under age, soon after his father; 3. Elisha,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 17, 1754; 4. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born April 22, 1757; 5. Esther,<sup>5</sup> born May 13, 1760; 6. Betty,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 8, 1762; 7. Josiah,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 13, 1764.

<sup>1</sup>William Huson was in Salem only about a year.

<sup>2</sup>Austin Killam was born about 1595, and came to America in the Mary Anne, of Yarmouth, England, being examined May 11, 1637, as "desirous to goe to Salem in the New E." He removed to Dedham in the spring of 1640, and to Wenham in 1648 or the spring of 1649; married Alice — in England about 1618; died in Wenham June 5, 1667; she died, his widow, July 18, 1667; children: 1. Daniel, born about 1620; husbandman; lived in Wenham and Ipswich; married, first, Mary Safford of Ipswich Oct. —, 1648; second, Elizabeth, widow of Henry Kimball; she was his wife in 1686; married, third, Mary, widow of Alexander Maxcy; he died in Wenham March 21, 1699-1700; she died, his widow, in Wenham in 1726; 2. Elizabeth; married Richard Hutten of Wenham; 3. Mary; probably died young; 4. John; lived in Wenham; married Hannah Pickworth of Manchester; 5. Ruth; probably died young; 6. Lot, born Sept. 11, 1640, in Dedham; husbandman; lived in Salem Village; married Hannah Goodale May 22, 1666; 7. Sarah, born Jan. 14, 1641-2, in Dedham; married Dea. William Fiske of Wenham.

See Henry F. Waters' Gleanings in English Records for Killam ancestry.

<sup>3</sup>Marmaduke Percy was a tailor, and came to Salem from Sandwich, Kentshire, England, with his wife Mary, apparently without children. He remained in Salem only a year or two.

<sup>4</sup>James Moulton lived in that part of Salem which became Wenham in 1643; had five in his family in 1637; his wife was living in 1678; he died

ham was granted a quarter of an acre of land "before Easties house," and William Vincent and John Cooke had five acres granted to each of them. Mr. Blackleach and Mr. Holgrave requested some meadow; and Nicholas Cary desired accommodation similar to his neighbors. Mr. Gedney<sup>1</sup> and

*John: Herbert*

in the winter of 1679-80; children: 1. Mary; married James Friend; 2. James, baptized in Salem Jan. 7, 1637-8; lived in Wenham; married Elizabeth Adams Feb. 10, 1662; died Oct. —, 1696; she died, his widow, Feb. 14, 1703-4; 3. Samuel, baptized in Salem Dec. 25, 1642; lived in Salem; married Sarah Phele June 20, 1678.

<sup>1</sup>JOHN GEDNEY,<sup>1</sup> born about 1603, came to Salem from Norwich, County of Norfolk, England, in the summer of 1637, having been examined for that purpose May 11, 1637. He came with his wife "Sarah," aged twenty-five years, and their three children, Lydia, Hannah and John, in the Mary Ann of Yarmouth. He was an innkeeper and vintner; married, first, Mary —; second, Catherine, probably widow of William Clarke about 1650; died Aug. 5, 1688; children: 1. Lydia;<sup>2</sup> 2. Hannah;<sup>2</sup> 3. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 1636; 4. Mary;<sup>2</sup> married Nicholas Potter; 5. Bartholomew,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 14, 1640; 6. Eleazer,<sup>2</sup> baptized May 15, 1642; 7. Sarah,<sup>2</sup> baptized June 23, 1644.

JOHN GEDNEY;<sup>2</sup> mariner; married Susanna Clarke May 4, 1659; died in 1684; she married, secondly, Deliverance Parkman, and died in 1727; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born March 5, 1659-60; died young; 2. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born July 6, 1662; died July 19, 1662; 3. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born March 4, 1663; married George Corwin; 4. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born April 12, 1666; died young; 5. William,<sup>3</sup> born May 25, 1668; 6. Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 5, 1670. BARTHOLOMEW GEDNEY;<sup>2</sup> ship carpenter; judge of probate, member of the court of assistants and commander-in-chief of the military forces in the county; married, first, Hannah Clarke Dec. 22, 1662; she died Jan. 6, 1695-6; married, second, Anne, widow of William Stewart of Ipswich; died Feb. 28, 1697-8; children: 1. Bartholomew,<sup>3</sup> born April 4, 1664; died Aug. 12, 1664; 2. Jonathan,<sup>3</sup> born June 14, 1665; died Aug. 14, 1665; 3. Bartholomew,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 2, 1666; died Sept. 22, 1666; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 19, 1667; married Joshua Grafton; 5. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born March 9, 1669; married Capt. George Corwin; 6. Bethiah,<sup>3</sup> born May 27, 1672; married Francis Willoughby; 7. Deborah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 3, 1673; died Dec. 9, 1674; 8. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 2, 1675; 9. Deborah<sup>3</sup> (twin), baptized Nov. 25, 1677; married Francis Clarke; 10. Martha<sup>3</sup> (twin), baptized Nov. 25, 1677; died young; 11. Priscilla,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 1, 1681; died young. ELEAZER GEDNEY;<sup>2</sup> shipbuilder; married, first, Elizabeth Turner June 9, 1665; second, Mary Pateshall June 2, 1678; died April 29, 1683; she died, his widow, Sept. 4, 1716; children: 1. Eleazer,<sup>3</sup> born March 18, 1665-6; married Anna —; and removed to Momorinock, N. Y.; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born June 2, 1669; perhaps removed with her brother; 3. Ruth,<sup>3</sup> born May 24, 1672; married Habakkuk Gardner; 4. William,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 2, 1674; probably died in infancy; 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Nov. 25, 1677; probably removed with her brother; 6. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> born May 25, 1679; died in or before 1699; 7. Edmund,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 15, 1680; died in or before 1706; 8. Martha,<sup>3</sup> born April 29, 1682; married James Ruck.

WILLIAM GEDNEY;<sup>3</sup> merchant; sheriff of the county; married, first, Hannah Gardner May 7, 1690; she died Jan. 4, 1703-4; married, second, Elizabeth Andrew of Cambridge May 25, 1704; died Jan. 24, 1729-30; she died in Boston in 1737; children: 1. Susanna,<sup>4</sup> born April 29, 1691; 2. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> born June 8 (9?), 1694; married Humphrey Davie of Boston April



Mr. Herbert<sup>1</sup> became permanent settlers; but Cook<sup>2</sup> and Knights<sup>3</sup> soon removed. Mr. Cook was apparently newly wedded. He lived in the North field, and was repeatedly requesting grants of land. Mr. Knights had land in the forest on Marblehead territory, and probably lived there.

At a town meeting, Aug. 14, 1637, "M<sup>r</sup> Blaklech apointed the pice of meadow y<sup>t</sup> was appointed o<sup>r</sup> broth. Gott y<sup>t</sup> lyeth nere

22, 1714; 3. William,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 11 (12?), 1696; died Nov. 28, 1696; 4. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 11 (12?), 1696; died Nov. 12, 1696; 5. Bartholomew,<sup>4</sup> born March 22, 1697-8; lived in Boston; married, first, Abigail Mason Sept. 15, 1720; she died in Boston Nov. 17, 1721; married, second, Mary Webber July 25, 1723; she died June 17, 1728-9; married, third, Hannah Danforth Oct. 23, 1729; she died Sept. 21, 1730; married, fourth, Sarah Johnson Oct. 28, 1731; he died in 1762; she died soon after; had children; 6. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> born June 12, 1701; married James Grant; 7. William,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 12, 1707; died Jan. 8, 1707-8. NATHANIEL GEDNEY;<sup>3</sup> mariner; married Mary Lindall; died in 1701; she married, secondly, Thomas Phippen, and died in 1732; child: 1. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 23, 1697; married Robert Williams. DR. SAMUEL GEDNEY;<sup>3</sup> surgeon; married Mary Gookin of Cambridge May 2, 1701; died in 1705; child: 1. Samuel,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 5, 1702; died young.

<sup>1</sup>JOHN HERBERT,<sup>1</sup> shoemaker, came from Northampton, England, to Salem, in the Abigail, in 1635, at the age of twenty-three, probably unmarried; children: 1. Mary,<sup>2</sup> baptized March 29, 1640; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> baptized Oct. 15, 1643.

JOHN HERBERT;<sup>2</sup> mariner, being mate on the Return of Salem in 1672; married Mary Follett April 15, 1672; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 7, 1674; 2. *Robert*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 14, 1687; 3. *William*,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 14, 1687; 4. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1687; 5. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1687; married John Doliber Jan. 17, 1714-5; 6. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1687; 7. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. —, 16— (baptized May —, 1689); of Salem in 1732; 8. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. —, 1691; 9. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> baptized Dec. —, 1694; 10. Susanna,<sup>3</sup> born July 9, 1699; married Samuel Symonds.

ROBERT HERBERT;<sup>3</sup> married Hannah Phippen Oct. 19, 1704; child: 1. Robert,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 11, 1707. WILLIAM HERBERT;<sup>3</sup> mariner, shoreman and husbandman; married Elizabeth Nicholson Nov. 2, 1704; died in or before 1719; she married, secondly, Daniel Safford of Ipswich Nov. 22, 1753; children: 1. William,<sup>4</sup> born March 25, 1705; mariner; married Elizabeth Lull of Ipswich Nov. 23, 1732; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 3, 1707; published to Daniel Foster Nov. 18, 1732; 3. *Benjamin*,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 21, 1709; 4. Ebenezer,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 7, 1711.

CAPT. BENJAMIN HERBERT;<sup>4</sup> mariner; married Elizabeth Fowler of Ipswich (published Jan. 17, 1735-6); died in the winter of 1760-1; she married, secondly, Capt. John Gardner; she died before 1773; children: 1. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 11, 1749-50; died young; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 29, 1751; died, unmarried, in 1772; 3. Susannah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 7, 1754; married John Hathorne; 4. Judith,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 28, 1755; married Dr. Edward Barnard; 5. Mary,<sup>5</sup> baptized Jan. 22, 1758; married John Norris; 6. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 25, 1759; died young; 7. Abigail,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 9, 1760; married Ellis Mansfield.

<sup>2</sup>John Cook left Salem about 1645; children, baptized in Salem: 1. Elizabeth, May 16, 1641; 2. Mary, Oct. 22, 1643.

<sup>3</sup>Ezekiel Knights had five in his family in 1637; probably removed to Braintree in 1640; had son Ezekiel born Feb. 1, 1641, and died at the age of seven months; and wife Elizabeth was buried April 28, 1642.

to m<sup>r</sup> blaklechs farme." Mr. John Youngs,<sup>1</sup> Thomas Oliver,<sup>2</sup> Samuel Greenfield,<sup>3</sup> John Borows,<sup>4</sup> Francis Felmingham and

*Thomas Oliver*

Mathew Smith were received as inhabitants. Samuel Greenfield was a weaver, and came to Salem from Norwich, Norfolk County, England,

in the Mary Ann, from Yarmouth, in this year, aged twenty-seven, with his wife Barbara, aged thirty-five, and two children, Mary and Barbara. He was allowed at this meeting ten acres of land. John Burroughs was a cooper, and came from Yarmouth, England, in the Mary Ann, at the same time, aged twenty-eight, with his wife Ann, aged forty. He was allowed five acres of land. Thomas Oliver was given ten acres, and Matthew Smith a quarter of an acre. Mr. Felmingham<sup>5</sup> came from Brampton, Suffolk County, England, this year, at the age of thirty-two, sailing from Yarmouth, in the Mary Ann, with Benjamin Cooper, his father-in-law. Mr. Smith was a cordwinder, and came from Sandwich, Kentshire, England, this year, with his wife Jane and four children. He lived here only a few months, and probably removed to Charlestown. Mr. Youngs was appointed Ben Felton's ten acres in Bass River, Felton to have another lot on the south side of Darby's fort. Roger Mory requested a spot of ground by Estyes for "lenedg" to his —; to be viewed by Mr. Hathorne and Robert Moulton. Robert Cottie was appointed a spot of ground for a shop and Henry Skerry a quarter of an acre of land near to Estyes. In 1642, he bought of the town an acre of land that was Nicholas Draper's.

<sup>1</sup>John Young was living in Salem in 1640; and he probably removed to Exeter soon afterward.

<sup>2</sup>Thomas Oliver, a calender, came from Norwich, England, in 1637, aged thirty-six, in the Mary Ann of Yarmouth, with his wife Mary, aged thirty-four, and two children, Thomas and John. His wife was living in 1646. He returned to England in 1648 or 1649, and was living in his old home in Norwich in 1652, when he returned to Salem. He married, secondly, widow Bridget Wasselbe July 26, 1666; and died in 1679. She survived him. Children: 1. Thomas, born in England before 1637; probably settled in Fairfield before 1685; 2. John, born in England before 1637; living in 1679; probably had a daughter Ellinor who married — Jones, and lived in Nevis in 1693; 3. Christian, born May 8, 1667; married Elias (?) Mason before 1693; 4. Mary; married Job Hilliard.

<sup>3</sup>Samuel Greenfield removed to Hampton in 1638, and was of Exeter in 1644. He married, second, Susan, widow of Humphrey Wise of Ipswich in 1638.

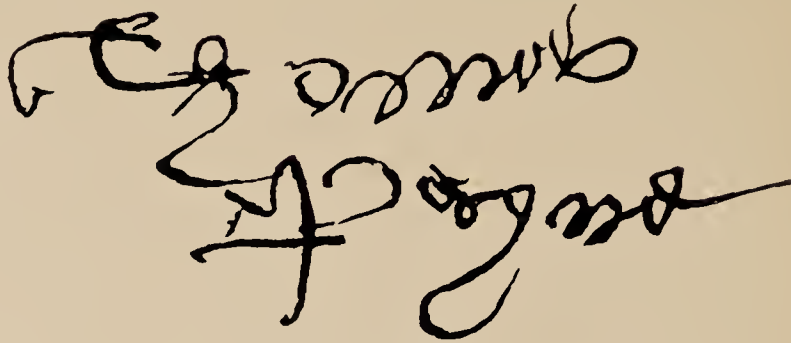
<sup>4</sup>John Burroughs then had no children here. He probably removed to Lynn soon after 1644.

<sup>5</sup>Francis Felmingham lived on Elm street; children, baptized in Salem July 7, 1650: Francis, John, Mary and Rebecca. Mary Felmingham married Richard Tidmarsh June 20, 1659.

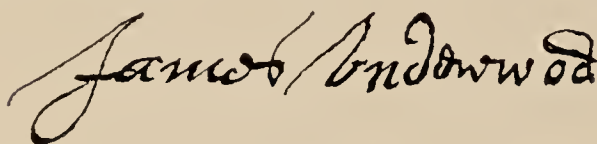


At a town meeting, Aug. 21, 1637, Thomas Payne,<sup>1</sup> James Underwood, Thomas Dixy and Abram Temple were received as inhabitants of the town.

Mr. Paine was a weaver, and son of Thomas and Catharine Paine of Cooklie, near Hales-



worth, Suffolk County, England, being at this time about fifty-one years of age. He lived in Wrentham, in that county, and came to Salem this year in the *Mray Ann* of Yarmouth, with his wife,



aged fifty-three, and six children. Mr. Underwood<sup>2</sup> was a baker, and about twenty-seven years old at this time. Mr.

Dixey<sup>3</sup> settled in the Marblehead part of Salem, and Mr. Temple<sup>4</sup> remained here only a year or two.

At the same meeting, John Gatchell,<sup>5</sup> who lived at Marblehead, was fined ten shillings for building upon the town ground without leave, to be paid into the town meeting within two months from this time, and to go on building in the meantime. It was, also, voted that five shillings of his fine be abated "in case he

<sup>1</sup>Thomas Paine was born Dec. 11, 1586; married Elizabeth — Nov. 22, 1610; died in 1640; called Henry Blomfield "kinsman" in 1638; children: 1. Mary, born Oct. 12, 1611; married Philemon Dickinson; 2. Thomas, born Jan. 18, 1613; living in 1652; 3. Elizabeth, born Jan. 20, 1615; 4. Peter, born March 14, 1617; probably living in 1638; 5. Dorothy, born Dec. 6, 1618; 6. John, born Aug. 26, 1620; 7. Sarah, born March 7, 1622; 8. Nathaniel, born July 21, 1626; died under ten years of age. The autograph of Thomas Payne above is taken from his will, which was signed when he was sick and weak.

<sup>2</sup>James Underwood was born about 1611. He lived here as late as 1662. In 1652, his wife was living in England, and he was ordered to go to her, but she was obstinate and would not cross the ocean.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas Dixey lived in Marblehead; ferryman; and died in 1680; children: 1. Mary, baptized Jan. 12, 1644-5; 2. Abigail, baptized Oct. 1, 1648; 3. Thomas, baptized Jan. 29, 1653-4; ferryman; lived in Marblehead; married Elizabeth —; died in 1691; she married, secondly, John Harwood Oct. 29, 1695; 4. Margaret, baptized March 16, 1656-7; 5. John, baptized April 26, 1657; living in 1686; 6. Samuel, baptized March 20, 1663; living in 1686.

<sup>4</sup>Abraham Temple was in Salem as late as 1639. He apparently had a wife.

<sup>5</sup>John Gatchell, born about 1615; planter; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Marblehead in 1648; wife Wibera (Wayborow), 1651-1681; he lived in Marblehead in 1693; children: 1. Jeremiah; lived in Marblehead; married Elizabeth —; they were living in 1695; 2. John, born about 1645.

shall cutt of his lonng har of his head in to a seuill frame in the mean time."

At the same meeting, John Deverex made request for a houselot. It was, also, "ordered y<sup>t</sup> m<sup>r</sup> Connonts house, ground, and half acre of corne standing on the same Joyning next vnto m<sup>r</sup> Jn<sup>o</sup> ffisk, shalbe bought by the Towne for ould m<sup>r</sup> William Plase" and "his wife y<sup>t</sup> now is, . . . for the time of ther life," and the town to make payment therefor; "& what costs the said w<sup>m</sup> Plase shalbe att for his use & behowfe the Towne at the end of ther life shalbe willing to allow his eyers executors or Asigns the value that the same shalbe worth mor than it shall stand the towne for." Anthony Dike made request for meadow for two or three cows.

August 28, 1637, John Hall,<sup>1</sup> Joshua Tidd<sup>2</sup> and Joseph Bachelor<sup>3</sup> were admitted inhabitants of the town, the first two

<sup>1</sup>John Hall perhaps settled in Saugus in 1637.

<sup>2</sup>Joshua Tidd perhaps settled in Charlestown in 1637.

<sup>3</sup>JOSEPH BATCHELDER<sup>1</sup> married Elizabeth — in England; settled in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Wenham in 1643; first representative from Wenham; died about 1647; she was his widow about 1657; children, born in England: 1. Henry;<sup>2</sup> lived in Ipswich; married Martha — before 1653; he died Feb. 3, 1678-9; she died April 4, 1686; no issue; 2. Joseph;<sup>2</sup> mariner; lived in Wenham; died before 1657; 3. John,<sup>2</sup> born about 1612.

JOHN BATCHELDER;<sup>2</sup> tailor and yeoman; lived on Bass River Side in Salem, after having been in Dorchester awhile; married Elizabeth —; she died Nov. 10, 1675; he died three days later; children: 1. John,<sup>3</sup> baptized Jan. 20, 1638-9; died in 1646; 2. Mary,<sup>3</sup> baptized Sept. 19, 1640; married Mighill Cressey in 1658; 3. Abigail,<sup>3</sup> baptized Feb. 12, 1642-3; died young; 4. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 23, 1644; died young; 5. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 25, 1645; married Samuel Corning of Beverly before 1675; 6. John,<sup>3</sup> baptized June 23, 1650; 7. Joseph,<sup>3</sup> baptized May 8, 1653.

JOHN BATCHELDER;<sup>3</sup> cooper and husbandman; married Mary Herrick Aug. 14, 1673; he died Aug. 6, 1684; she died thirteen days later; children: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> born April 26, 1675; 2. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> born March 29, 1678; 3. Josiah,<sup>4</sup> born March 6, 1679-80; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1685; married John Mascoll; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized Nov. 29, 1685. JOSEPH BATCHELDER;<sup>3</sup> seaman; married Miriam Moulton Oct. 8, 1677; died about 1681; she married, secondly, Freeborn Balch in or before 1683; children: 1. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born July 18, 1678; mariner; died, probably unmarried, in 1709; 2. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 17, 1685, in Beverly; married Capt. John Knowlton of Manchester Dec. 20, 1697.

JOHN BATCHELDER;<sup>4</sup> cooper; married, first, Bethiah Woodbury April 22, 1696; she died about 1708; married, second, Sarah Rea July 9, 1709; he died in 1748; she survived him; children: 1. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized in Beverly June 13, 1697; cooper; lived in Beverly; married Jemima Conant of Beverly Sept. 6, 1720; died in 1753; 2. Zachariah,<sup>5</sup> born April 17, 1699; died Dec. 29, 1700; 3. Zachariah,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 5, 1701-2; 4. Nathaniel,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 9, 1703-4; cooper; lived in Beverly; married Anna Meacham Aug. 29, 1729; died before 1761; 5. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized March 16, 1706-7; coast mariner; lived in Beverly; married, first, Abigail Butman of Beverly in 1729; second, Hannah Butman Nov. 29, 1750; died Aug. 18, 1751; 6. Sarah;<sup>5</sup> married



upon condition that they were approved by the magistrates as having a right to be in this jurisdiction. Mr. Bachelder was a tailor when he left England, but became a planter here. He came from Canterbury, Kentshire, England, with his wife Elizabeth, sailing from Sandwich in 1636.

At this time, John Pickworth, William Bennet and John Gally requested the grant of a parcel of land at Jeffries Creek to each; John Norman asked for some land next to that of Jeffrey Massie; Goodwife Graftin requested a parcel of land for her mother at the end of her husband's lot, which was granted; Thomas Payne asked for the grant of a little parcel of land next his house; and Mr. Conant requested a garden plot at the corner of his lot.

The Congregational system of religious worship was so free and liberal that many opinions which were deemed by the clergy generally to be erroneous were soon promulgated. The leading ministers agreed to hold an assembly at Newtown (now Cambridge) Aug. 30, 1637, to endeavor to correct these tenets, and at the time and place "were all the teaching elders through the

James Chappleman of Beverly July 1, 1731; 7. Bethiah,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 24, 1727, at Beverly; married Job Cressy; 8. Joshua,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 24, 1727; cooper; lived in Beverly; married Mary Dissamore April 3, 1740; died in 1763; she died, his widow, before 1794; 9. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 24, 1727; yeoman and cooper; lived in Beverly and Andover; married, first, Judith Rea of Killingly in 1742; she died in Andover Sept. 24, 1775; married, second, Judith Holt June 11, 1777. JONATHAN BATCHELDER;<sup>4</sup> house carpenter and yeoman; married Ruth Rayment Feb. 25, 1702; died in 1740; she was his widow in 1747; children: 1. Ruth,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 27, 1703; married Benjamin Kimball of Wenham Nov. 18, 1747; 2. Jonathan;<sup>5</sup> lived in Beverly; married Hephzibah Conant of Beverly March 21, 1744-5; died in 1777; 3. Lydia;<sup>5</sup> married William Porter. JOSIAH BATCHELDER;<sup>4</sup> tailor and yeoman; removed to Beverly in 1706; married Mary Raymond Dec. 18, 1700; died Oct. 17, 1749; she survived him; children: 1. Mary,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 5, 1701; married John Kettle; 2. William,<sup>5</sup> born Oct. 20, 1703; died April 30, 1704; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born April 26, 1705; probably died young; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born April 26, 1707, in Beverly; 5. Josiah,<sup>5</sup> born Dec. 16, 1709, in Beverly; 6. William,<sup>5</sup> born June 1, 1713, in Beverly; 7. George,<sup>5</sup> born Sept. 25, 1715, in Beverly; 8. Anna,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 9, 1717, in Beverly; 9. Benjamin,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 12, 1720, in Beverly; lived in Beverly; married Sarah Whipple April 11, 1752.

JOSIAH BATCHELDER;<sup>5</sup> weaver and yeoman; removed to Beverly about 1751; married Mary Leach Oct. 26, 1732; she died March 1, 1792; he died in Beverly March 14, 1798; children: 1. Hannah,<sup>6</sup> born Aug. 25, 1733; 2. William,<sup>6</sup> born June 6, 1735; 3. Josiah,<sup>6</sup> born Sept. 25, 1737; mariner; justice of the peace; lived in Beverly; married Hannah Dodge Feb. 17, 1760; she died April 7, 1797; he died in Beverly Dec. 10, 1809; 4. Anna,<sup>6</sup> baptized March 9, 1740, in Beverly; 5. Amos,<sup>6</sup> baptized Nov. 2, 1742; 6. Anne,<sup>6</sup> baptized Feb. 3, 1745; 7. Samuel,<sup>6</sup> baptized May 10, 1747; 8. Betty,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 29, 1749; 9. Hephzibah,<sup>6</sup> baptized Jan. 19, 1752; married Daniel Adams; 10. Abner,<sup>6</sup> baptized Oct. 16, 1757.

country, and some come out of England" recently, but not settled.<sup>1</sup> About eighty such opinions were considered and condemned. Reading them in the light of modern times it seems foolish to even discuss many of them; and, doubtless, the difference in the use and interpretation of various words was the cause of much of the contentions, which were generally theological and little understood by laymen. The assembly settled the questions perfunctorily, but unsatisfactorily to some of the ministers and people. Generally, peace and unity were thereby secured.

Among the heresies, the most prominent were those entertained by Rev. John Wheelwright, a silenced preacher in England, who had come to Boston, and his wife's brother William Hutchinson's wife, Mrs. Ann Hutchinson, a member of the church in Boston. Mrs. Hutchinson and Mr. Wheelwright had brought with them from England some so called Antinomian doctrines, or faith without works under the moral law. The ministers of the Bay were much disturbed by the talk concerning the promulgation of these doctrines in the colony. These heresies had support among some of the ministers as well as laymen. Some feeling was engendered by speeches of various persons, and eventually there were conflicts between the ministers and magistrates as to jurisdiction in matters of conscience and religion. Mr. Wheelwright preached a sermon, which the general court declared to be seditious, and ordered his banishment, Nov. 1, 1637, to take place within fourteen days thereafter. Mrs. Hutchinson was also banished at the same time, but as it was in the winter they were allowed to remain a short time. Mr. Wheelwright went to Exeter and Mrs. Hutchinson to Providence. Several prominent persons were disfranchised and others were disarmed for being in sympathy with them. Disarmament meant the giving up of "such guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot, & match as they shalbee owners of, or have in their custody," and they remained unarmed. This was thought to be wise as a prevention, as some in Germany had made a sudden "irruption" upon those that differed from them in their religious opinions.<sup>2</sup> There were seven of her followers in Salem who were disarmed for their faith in her doctrines. These were Mr. Scruggs, Mr. Alfoot, Mr. Commins, Robert Moulton and Goodman King; and they were ordered to deliver their arms to Lieutenant Damfort. If they acknowledged their evil way they were to be allowed to keep their arms; but none in Salem is known to have retracted. Nov. 15, 1637, the general court ordered "that such as are disarmed should bee freed from carriing arms w<sup>th</sup> them, & from trainings & watches."

<sup>1</sup>Journal of John Winthrop, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 237.

<sup>2</sup>Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 211.



In September, 1637, two men were serving sentences in jail (probably in Boston). One was John Williams, a ship carpenter, who had come into the country only a short time before and was convicted of theft; and the other was John Hoddy. They broke out of the prison, and tramped through Salem on the way toward Ipswich. When near the little valley on the western side of the road from Beverly to Wenham, near the town line, Williams murdered Hoddy, stripped him of his clothes and what else he had, put on the garments, and went in them to Ipswich, from whence he had been sent to prison. About a week afterward, the body was discovered by some cows, which, smelling the blood, made such an uproar that the cow keeper sought to learn its cause. He found the body covered with a heap of stones. Williams was known to have been the last person seen with the dead man and he was apprehended. Though the latter's clothing was bloody, he would confess nothing until after the body was found and identified. He was indicted for the crime, and, confessing his guilt, was convicted by the general court, with a jury, Sept. 19th, Col. John Endecott being present. John Holgrave, Daniel Ray and Richard Adams were on the grand jury which indicted Williams.<sup>1</sup>

Sept. 11, 1637, William Allen and Richard Singletary<sup>2</sup> were admitted inhabitants.<sup>3</sup> At the same time, Mr. Verrin was allowed a farm of one hundred acres,<sup>4</sup> next to Mr. Clark on the north side, laying down his former. Lieutenant Davenport was allowed to have his farm of one hundred and twenty acres where Mr. Verrin's was first granted and five acres of meadow by Mr. Hathorne's. John Marsh was granted, for his great lot, twenty acres of land adjoining to Lieutenant Davenport's.

Sept. 25, 1637, John Friend,<sup>5</sup> Isabel Babson<sup>6</sup> and Mr. Browne, a soapmaker, desired to become inhabitants of the town, but only

<sup>1</sup>Winthrop's Journal, Boston, 1825, volume I, page 241. The record of the court is as follows: "John Williams, being indited about the death of John Hobbe, confessed that hee killed the said Hobbe; so the jury found him guilty of murther."—*Massachusetts Bay Colony Records, volume I, page 202.*

<sup>2</sup>Richard Singletary removed to Newbury in 1638, and subsequently lived in Salisbury and Haverhill. He died Oct. 25, 1687, aged one hundred and one.

<sup>3</sup>Salem Town Records, volume I, page 57 (printed).

<sup>4</sup>This farm is in Peabody near the almshouse.

<sup>5</sup>John Friend lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Manchester in 1645; died there in 1655; children: 1. Samuel; of Manchester in 1660; 2. Elizabeth; married — Pecker before 1655; 3. Bethiah; 4. Hester; 5. James, born about 1633; lived in Wenham; married Mary Moulton Dec. 12, 1662.

<sup>6</sup>Widow Isabell Babson, born about 1577, a midwife, removed to Gloucester, where she died April 6, 1661; child: James; cooper; lived in Gloucester; married Elinor Hill in 1647; died Dec. 21, 1683.

Mr. Browne was then accepted. Mr. Friend was allowed to be an inhabitant two weeks later. Richard Adams asked for some house land. Captain Trask requested a grant of "5 akers meado at Brooksby and 100 akers on the east side of Sagus path by the pond"; and was allowed five acres of meadow "ner to M<sup>r</sup> Johnsons farme." Francis Filmingham desired accommodation for a farm lot; and was allowed "200 Acres of lande for a farm."

At a town meeting in Salem Oct. 9, 1637, Mr. Batter was allowed one hundred acres of upland and twelve acres of meadow at Brooksbe provided the town confirmed the grant at its next meeting, and, also, if he should remove from town the title to the

*Erasmus - James*

land should revert to the town. Erasmus James,<sup>1</sup> Richard Greenaway and Philip Bere<sup>2</sup> were allowed to be inhabitants at Mar-

blehead and each was allowed two acres of planting ground. Mr. Friend was allowed ten acres for planting ground.

At the general court Nov. 2, 1637, "M<sup>r</sup> John Endecot hath 40 or 50 acres of meadowe grannted him, wheare it may not preiudice a plantation."

At a town meeting Nov. 8, 1637, Francis Laws<sup>3</sup> and Joseph Pope made request for a "ferder" portion of land. Thomas Tuke's request for eleven acres of land, one-quarter of it to be in the town, was granted.

*Francis*

*Lawes*

John Hart's<sup>4</sup> and William Charles' request for five acres each was granted, and it was voted to make up their house lot that is between them half an acre at Marble-

*William*

*Charles*

<sup>1</sup>Erasmus James, born about 1605; lived in Marblehead in 1648; died in the spring of 1660; wife Jane (born about 1602) was his widow in 1669; children: 1. Erasmus, born about 1635; ship carpenter; lived in Marblehead; married Mary —; they were living in Marblehead in 1673; 2. Hester; married Richard Read of Marblehead.

<sup>2</sup>Philip Beare, born about 1623, lived in Marblehead, and probably removed to Ipswich about 1665, being a seaman.

<sup>3</sup>Francis Lawes, born in Norwich, England, was a weaver, embarked at Ipswich, England, April 8, 1637, and arrived at Boston June 20th following. With his wife Lydia, then aged forty-nine, and daughter Mary, he immediately settled in Salem, on Broad Street. He died in the spring of 1666. His daughter Mary married John Neal.

<sup>4</sup>John Hart was born about 1595, and came in the William and Francis, says Savage, having embarked at London in March, 1632; returned to England, and again came to America in the James, sailing from London in 1635; lived in that part of Salem which was known as Marblehead; shipwright and innkeeper; wife Mary, then aged thirty-one, came with him; he died in 1655; his then wife Florence survived him.



head.<sup>1</sup> John Deverikxe was granted half an acre of land for a house lot. William Beman requested the grant of a lot of land, and was promised to have one in due time. Alexander Higgins and Anthony Buxton<sup>2</sup> were received as inhabitants and each allowed five acres of land. It was agreed that the constable shall

levy a rate for  
town occasions to  
the amount of  
eighteen pounds

*Anthony Buxton*

and ten shillings. Thomas Gardner was also granted five acres of land in addition to the five already granted, and to his brother George Gardner ten acres. Margaret Bright was allowed three or four acres of land next to her brother John Holgrave's. John Borowes was granted five acres of land in addition to the five

<sup>1</sup>William Charles was born in 1595; lived in that part of Salem which became Marblehead in 1648; died Jan. —, 1672-3; had a nephew Robert Charles, who, in 1677, had two daughters, and a niece Mary, wife of James Dennis of Marblehead, who was born about 1643. William Charles' wife was named Sarah; she died his widow in 1676. She had a sister Mrs. Triphena Geere in 1676.

<sup>2</sup>ANTHONY BUXTON<sup>1</sup> came from England to Salem in 1637 or earlier. His brother Thomas Buxton also lived here, having been received as an inhabitant in Salem Nov. 20, 1639. Thomas Buxton was a husbandman and lived in North Salem. He died in the spring of 1654, leaving three children in England. Anthony Buxton died in the early summer of 1684; his wife Elizabeth survived him; children: 1. Elizabeth;<sup>2</sup> married Isaac Cook; 2. *John*,<sup>2</sup> born in 1643 or 1644; 3. Rachel;<sup>2</sup> died Feb. 24, 1675-6; 4. Lydia;<sup>2</sup> married Joseph Small; 5. Mary;<sup>2</sup> married John Cooke; 6. Sarah;<sup>2</sup> living in 1684; 7. Anthony,<sup>2</sup> born Sept. 6, 1653; died May —, 1676; 8. Samuel,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 14, 1655; died Feb. 24, 1675-6; 9. James,<sup>2</sup> born Aug. 8, 1659; died Oct. 15, 1662; 10. Thomas,<sup>2</sup> born Feb. 24, 1661; died Oct. 20, 1662; 11. *Joseph*,<sup>2</sup> born July 17, 1663; 12. Hannah,<sup>2</sup> born Jan. 27, 1665-6; married David Foster.

JOHN BUXTON;<sup>2</sup> farmer; lived in Salem Village; married, first, Mary Small March 30, 1668; she died Jan. 27, 1675-6; married, second, Elizabeth Holton Oct. 7, 1677; died May 16, 1715; she died, his widow, in 17—; children: 1. Mary,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 3, 1669; married Samuel Goodale; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Aug. 13, 1672; married — Fuller before 1715; 3. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 29, 1675; 4. *Joseph*,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 24, 1678; 5. Sarah,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 9, 1680-1; married Thomas Darling; 6. *Anthony*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 24, 1682-3; 7. Hannah,<sup>3</sup> born Jan. 20, 1685; married — Perkins before 1715; 8. Rachel,<sup>3</sup> born May 6, 1688; married John Putnam March 26, 1717; 9. Ebenezer,<sup>3</sup> born June 20, 1690; husbandman and cooper; died, probably unmarried, in 1738; 10. Lydia,<sup>3</sup> born Oct. 16, 1692; living in 1715; 11. Benjamin,<sup>3</sup> born March 10, 1694-5; cooper; lived in Salem Village; married Elizabeth Hutchinson May 5, 1724; died in 1770; she died, his widow, in the winter of 1779; no children; 12. James,<sup>3</sup> born Sept. 28, 1698; husbandman; living in 1732; 13. *Amos*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 12, 1700-1; 14. *Jonathan*,<sup>3</sup> born July 25, 1706. JOSEPH BUXTON;<sup>2</sup> yeoman; married Esther —; died in 1752; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>3</sup> born Nov. 17, 1689; married Benjamin Buffum; 2. Samuel,<sup>3</sup> born May 2, 1691; husbandman; published to Elizabeth Hanson of Dover Jan. 7, 1715-6; living in 1746; 3. James,<sup>3</sup> born March 2, 1692-3; husband-

acres already granted to him. Richard Chusmor and Joshua Holgrave were each allowed a ten-acre lot. Mr. Petter, John Holgrave, Richard Rayment and Samuel Mor were ordered to record their farms laid out by John Woodbury, Jefery Masye, Mr. Connott and the rest. John Pickwood, John Gally, John Norman and William Bennett were each allowed twenty-five acres of land at Jeffrey's Creek. Mrs. Alice Daniel was allowed fifty acres of land; and Jeames Hynes had five acres added to his former grant.

At the general court, Nov. 15, 1637, "It was ordered, that no man shall have leave to buy venison in any towne but by leave of the towne."

At the same court, "It was ordered, that M<sup>r</sup> Endecott should give power [to] seize the goods of the Indians neare M<sup>r</sup> Hawthorns farm vntill they discover who shot his cowe, and pcure satisfaction or deliver the partie." At the same meeting, "It was ordered, that every towne should have power to keepe away all strange Indians, & to restraine Indians by them from pphaning the Lords day."

At the general court, Nov. 20, 1637, "Capt. Turner, Goo: Rich<sup>d</sup> Right, M<sup>r</sup> Conant, & Goo: Woodberry are appointed to certify w<sup>ch</sup> bee the bounds between Salem & Saugust [Lynn], w<sup>ch</sup> they formerly did agree vpon."

man; lived in Danvers as late as 1754; 4. *John*,<sup>3</sup> born Feb. 25, 1695-6; 5. Jonathan;<sup>3</sup> husbandman and shoreman; lived in Danvers as late as 1754; 6. Lydia;<sup>3</sup> married Roger Derby.

JOHN BUXTON;<sup>3</sup> yeoman; lived in Salem Village until after 1730 and removed to Middleton; married, first, Priscilla Lynn Nov. 26, 1700; and, second, Margaret Chick Jan. 1, 1706-7; she was his wife in 1729; he died in 1749; children: 1. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized April 26, 1702; husbandman; lived in Salem in 1734; probably miller and of Middleton in 1745; 2. Stephen,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 25, 1704; tailor; lived in Middleton; married Mary —; 3. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 6, 1703-4; married Joseph Buxton; 4. Priscilla,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 26, 1706; 5. Mary,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 6, 1708; 6. Bartholomew,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 30, 1709; married Keziah Pudney of Reading March 28, 1732; 7. Margaret,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 28, 1713; married David Mackintire of Reading Nov. 13, 1734; 8. Timothy,<sup>4</sup> baptized Oct. 3, 1714; lived in Middleton; married Deborah —. JOSEPH BUXTON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman, weaver and cooper; lived in Salem Village; married Abigail —; died in the summer of 1750; she survived him; children: 1. *Joseph*,<sup>4</sup> born May 28, 1709; 2. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born July 27, 1712; married Solomon Richardson of Middleton May 7, 1741; 3. Rachel,<sup>4</sup> born May 1, 1714; married — Averill before 1750; 4. Hannah,<sup>4</sup> baptized March 16, 1717-8; married Ebenezer Peck Sept. 10, 1738; 5. Sarah,<sup>4</sup> baptized June 21, 1719; not mentioned in his father's will in 1750; 6. John,<sup>4</sup> baptized May 21, 1721; not mentioned in his father's will in 1750; 7. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> baptized Aug. 9, 1724; had daughter Ruth baptized July 21, 1745. ANTHONY BUXTON;<sup>3</sup> cooper; married Dorcas Gould June 1, 1711; died in 1724; she married, secondly, Edmund Faulkner of Andover (published Aug. 17, 1730); children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born April 4, 1713; 2. Enos,<sup>4</sup> born March 10, 1715-6; husbandman; living in 1756; married Hannah Grinslate Jan. 24,



At a town meeting held Dec. 25, 1637, John Cooke had five acres of land added to the five acres he already had. Lieutenant Davenport was granted a portion of meadow "lying of the south side of Brooksby riuer," being about five or six acres; and also "all that meadow that is left remayning of that w<sup>ch</sup> was mowen by M<sup>r</sup> ffreeman, except 12 acres to M<sup>r</sup> Thorndike, 8 acres to Richard Hutchinson & 6 acres betweene ffrancis Weston & M<sup>r</sup> Stileman & M<sup>r</sup> Hathorne his 4 acres already laid out. As also a slip of land betweene M<sup>r</sup> Coles & that land w<sup>ch</sup> was granted formerly to the said Liuetennt. cont. about 20 acres." Some meadow at Brooksby had been granted to Mr. Thorndike, and subsequently to Edmund Batter. The lot layers refused to deliver it to Mr. Batter until Mr. Thorndike consented, which being complied with, the town confirmed it to Mr. Batter. At this meeting, the town also granted to Mr. Batter thirty acres of land adjoining his farm. Richard Graves requested five acres of land to plant in. John Hardy requested a ten-acre lot for his eldest son, and it was granted at Bass River. Ralph Fogg was granted eight acres of meadow in the great marsh; which "may be layed out w<sup>th</sup> the rest of the land granted vnto him." Goodman Gedney and the widow Greene desired accommodation of land. Richard Bartholomew wished a house plot or ten-acre lot. Richard Thurston, a carpenter, desired a ten-acre lot; and Mr. Holgrave moved for meadow, etc.

1738-9; she was his wife in 1756; 3. Daniel,<sup>4</sup> born May 8, 1718; died before 1738. AMOS BUXTON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman; lived in Salem Village; married Elizabeth Porter March 25, 1724-5; they were living in Salem Village in 1739; children: 1. Anna,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 22, 1726; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Oct. 4, 1728; married John Tapley; 3. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born May 23, 1730; married Joshua Swinerton. JONATHAN BUXTON;<sup>3</sup> cooper, shoreman and husbandman; married Jane Hutchinson Sept. 8, 1726; died in 1745; she survived him; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>4</sup> baptized July 20, 1729; shoreman and yeoman; living in 1772; 2. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> married Ezekiel Fowler; 3. Daniel,<sup>4</sup> shoreman and husbandman; lived in Danvers in 1772; 4. Benjamin,<sup>4</sup> born April 2, 1736; lived in Smithfield, R. I.; married Charity Maule. JOHN BUXTON;<sup>3</sup> husbandman, joiner and maltster; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Elizabeth Buffum Nov. 12, 1723; died in 1759; she was his widow in 1763; children: 1. Elizabeth,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 27, 1724; married Enoch Goodell; 2. Thomas,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 15, 1725-6; 3. Abigail,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 18, 1727; married Abner Jones of Amesbury Jan. 11, 1749-50; 4. John,<sup>4</sup> born Sept. 2, 1730; living in 1763; 5. Joseph,<sup>4</sup> born March 21, 1731-2; cordwainer; lived in Danvers; married Abigail Bray (published Sept. 15, 1758); died in the winter of 1759-60; she survived him; 6. Mary,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 30, 1733; married John Osborn; 7. Joshua,<sup>4</sup> born March 12, 1734-5; died in Danvers May 10, 1815; 8. James,<sup>4</sup> born March 25, 1736-7; living in 1763; 9. Esther,<sup>4</sup> born Nov. 24, 1738; died Sept. 4, 1740; 10. Henry,<sup>4</sup> born Aug. 23, 1740; lived in Danvers; Quaker; married Eleanor Osborn; she died June 27, 1817; he died Oct. 5, 1827; 11. Amos,<sup>4</sup> born Feb. 22, 1742-3; living in 1763; 12. Lydia,<sup>4</sup> born in 1748; married William Huntington of

The more desirable of the lands were thus taken up and improved, and the settlement of the town went on apace.

Amesbury Dec. 17, 1769; 13. Esther,<sup>4</sup> born Dec. —, 1750; died in Danvers, unmarried, Sept. 19, 1838.

JOSEPH BUXTON;<sup>4</sup> married Elizabeth Buxton Dec. 19, 1730; children: 1. Anthony,<sup>5</sup> baptized Feb. 10, 1733-4; 2. Dorcas,<sup>5</sup> baptized April 20, 1735; 3. Rachel,<sup>5</sup> baptized May 14, 1738; 4. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> baptized June 23, 1745; 5. Daniel,<sup>5</sup> baptized Sept. 29, 1746; 6. John,<sup>5</sup> baptized Dec. 18, 1748;. THOMAS BUXTON;<sup>4</sup> maltster; lived in that part of Salem which was incorporated as Danvers in 1752; married Sarah Purinton June 19, 1748-9; died Nov. —, 1775; she died in Danvers, his widow, April —, 1811; children: 1. Jonathan,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 1, 1749; died in Danvers Dec. 17, 1828; 2. Sarah,<sup>5</sup> born Nov. 18, 1751; died in Danvers April 11, 1828; 3. Hannah,<sup>5</sup> born Aug. 18, 1753; died, unmarried, Feb. —, 1825; 4. Elizabeth,<sup>5</sup> born Feb. 18, 1758; 5. Joseph,<sup>5</sup> born July 21, 1761; 6. Anna,<sup>5</sup> born June 5, 1767; 7. Thomas, born March 11, 1771; cordwainer and shoemaker; married Hannah —; died Feb. 13, 1832; probably had no children.



## APPENDIX.

### LAND GRANTS. A.



IN the book of grants of land in Salem there is a list of names of persons to whom grants had been made, together with the number of acres granted, bearing date of 1636. The letter "f" following some of the names probably means that they are freemen. The list follows:—

Mr. Roger Conant	f <sup>1</sup>	200
John Woodbury		200
Peter Palfrey	f	200
John Balch	f <sup>2</sup>	200
Jn <sup>o</sup> Sweet	<sup>3</sup>	
Capt. Endicott	f <sup>4</sup>	200
Mr. Reade	f <sup>5</sup>	300
Mr. S. Sharp	f <sup>6</sup>	300
Robt. Leech	<sup>7</sup>	
Lieutenant Johnson	f <sup>8</sup>	200

<sup>1</sup>Following Mr. Conant's name was written and then cancelled: "Pasca ffoote f. Jn<sup>o</sup> Woodbury f. Humphrey Woodbury."

<sup>2</sup>Following Mr. Balch's name was written and then cancelled: "Cp. W<sup>m</sup> Traske f. Ric<sup>d</sup> Norman & son Jn<sup>o</sup> Norman."

<sup>3</sup>Following Mr. Sweet's name was written and then cancelled: "Jn<sup>o</sup> Hardy f. 50 W<sup>m</sup> Allen f. 40 Jn<sup>o</sup> Gally."

<sup>4</sup>Following Captain Endecott's name was written and then cancelled: "W<sup>m</sup> Walcot f. 40."

<sup>5</sup>Following Mr. Reade's name was written and then cancelled: "M<sup>r</sup> Gott f. 75. Geo: Wm<sup>s</sup> f. 40. Peter Woolf f. 50. Ric Raym<sup>d</sup> f. 180. Sam: Archer f. 40. Ric<sup>d</sup> Brakenbury f. 75."

<sup>6</sup>Following the name of Mr. Sharp was written and then cancelled: "Jn<sup>o</sup> Horne f. 75. Law: Leech f. 100."

<sup>7</sup>Following the name of Mr. Leech was written and then cancelled: "Samuell More f. 50. Robt. Molton f. 100 James Standish Hugh Laskin f. 60. Stuckley Wescott Geo: Harris M<sup>r</sup> El: Stilman f. 100 Elias Stilman Ric<sup>d</sup> Waterman f. 80 Lieut Davenport f. 80 Tho: Laythrop f. 30."

<sup>8</sup>Following the name of Lieutenant Johnson was written and then cancelled: "W<sup>m</sup> Ager f. 40. John Blak f. 40. Jn<sup>o</sup> More f. 40. Sarg<sup>t</sup>: Dixie f.

M <sup>r</sup> Robt Coles	300
M <sup>r</sup> Blackleech f	300
M <sup>r</sup> Towhsend Bishop f	300
M <sup>r</sup> Thomas Scruggs f. <sup>1</sup>	200
M <sup>r</sup> Philip Verrin f.	160
M <sup>r</sup> E. Batter. f. <sup>2</sup>	200
Mr. Moses Maverik f. <sup>3</sup>	
Nath: Porter f. <sup>4</sup>	
widdow Turner	
aboue m <sup>r</sup> Cole M <sup>r</sup> Jn <sup>o</sup> Alderman	50 acres
Thos: Antram	30 acres
M <sup>r</sup> Alford <sup>5</sup>	200 acres
Jn <sup>o</sup> Abbie	
Robt Allen <sup>6</sup>	
Edw: Beaucham	
Jn <sup>o</sup> Bourne	
W <sup>m</sup> Bennet	
Richard Bishop	20 acres
John Barber	30
John Bushnell	
Jn <sup>o</sup> Bratley	
John Burton	
Hugh Browne	20
Tho: Browning <sup>7</sup>	40
m <sup>r</sup> W <sup>m</sup> Browne	20
Henry Bartholomew	
Thomas Chubb	20 acres
Wm. Comins	x acres.
Nicholas Cary	xx acres.

60. Jeff: Massie f. 75. Daniel Ray f. 160. Tho. Eaborne f. 20. Raph ffogg f. 80. ffrancis weston f. 120. Roger Morie f. 40. Jn<sup>o</sup> Sanders f. 40. Tho: Gardener f. 100. Ric<sup>d</sup> Inkersoll Mrs. Al: Daniell f. W<sup>m</sup> Bound f. 40. Henry Herik f. 40. Geo. Norton f. 40. Ed<sup>w</sup> Giles f. 60. Ric<sup>d</sup> Roots 20. Jacob Barney f. 60. M<sup>r</sup> Jn<sup>o</sup> Holgraue f. 80."

<sup>1</sup>Following Mr. Scruggs' name was written and then cancelled: "Antho: Dike. f. 20. M<sup>r</sup> Thorndik."

<sup>2</sup>Following Mr. Batter's name was written and then cancelled: "M<sup>rs</sup> Daniell. Tho: Olney f. 40. Jn<sup>o</sup> Sibley f. 50. M<sup>r</sup> Gerv. Garford W<sup>m</sup> King f. 40. Robt. Cotta f. 30."

<sup>3</sup>Following the name of Mr. Maverick was written and then cancelled: "Ric<sup>d</sup> Huchenson Tho: Gouldthait Jn<sup>o</sup> Talbie f. 30. w<sup>m</sup> Jeggles. w<sup>m</sup> Lord."

<sup>4</sup>Following the name of Mr. Porter was written and then cancelled: "M<sup>r</sup> w<sup>m</sup> Comins M<sup>r</sup> S. Sharp Jn<sup>o</sup> Bourne Jo: Grafton f. 40. Tho: Browning widd ffelton widd Skarlet 30. M<sup>rs</sup> Higenson if shee come 150 acres m<sup>rs</sup> ffelton 20 acrs. Ed<sup>mond</sup> Marshall. m 20 acrs Tho: Mores widdow 10 acrs."

<sup>5</sup>After Mr. Alford's name it says: "where it is allotted to him pvided that In case he dep<sup>r</sup>t to Leaue it desiring noe aduantag by it,"

<sup>6</sup>Following Mr. Allen's name was written and then cancelled: "W<sup>m</sup> Allen."

<sup>7</sup>Following the name of Mr. Browning was written and then cancelled: "m<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Browne 20 m<sup>r</sup> Bartholomew 20 Robt Cotta."



John Cook <sup>1</sup>	20 acres
Nicholas Draper	
Isaac Davis	
Samuel Eaborne	20 acres
John Elford	25 acres
George Emery	40 acres
Jeffry Estie	xx acres <sup>2</sup>
Pasco Foote	40 acres
Benjamin Felton <sup>3</sup>	20 acres
Mr. Gervas Garford	30 acres
Edward Gaskell	20 acres
Edm: Grover	20 acres
Robert Goodell	20 acres <sup>4</sup>
John Galley	20 acres
William Goose	50 acres
Tho: Goldthwait if an inhabitant	10 acres
George Harris	20 acres
Roger Haskell	20 acres
John Hart	10 acres
Richard Hutchinson	60 acres
Richard Hollinworth	20 acres
Joshua Holgrave	
Richard Ingersoll	80 acres
William James	25 acres
Mr. Jackson	50 acres
William Jeggles	50 acres
Robert Isbell	
Robert Leach	20 acres
John Luff	
Richard Lambert	
John Leech	10 acres
Robert Lemon	10 acres
William Lord	20 acres
Edm: Mar [John Leach Jun	30 acres]
William Marston	30 acres
Thomas Marston	
John Marsh	20 acres <sup>5</sup>
Widow Mason	20 acres
Robert Morgan	20 acres
Thomas More	20 acres
John Norman	20 acres
Richard Norman	20 acres
Robert Pease	10 acres

<sup>1</sup>Following the name of John Cook was written and then cancelled: "Anth: Dike."

<sup>2</sup>Jeffrey Eastie had ten acres added to this grant Jan. 21, 1638-9.

<sup>3</sup>Following the name of Benjamin Felton was written and then cancelled: "m<sup>rs</sup> ffelton vidua." This was followed by "hir sonn Nath ffelton," which was not cancelled.

<sup>4</sup>Robert Goodale had twenty acres added to this grant Jan. 21, 1638-9.

<sup>5</sup>John Marsh had ten acres added to this grant Jan. 21, 1638-9.

John Pease	20 acres
Francis Perry	20 acres
Joseph Pope	
Mr. William Pester.	
Jonathan Porter,	20 acres
John Pickworth,	20 acres.
John Pride.	[20] acres.
George Ropes.	
Thomas Reade,	10 acres.
Thomas Roots,	20 acres.
Joshua Roots,	20 acres
Thomas Ringe.	
James Standish,	20 acres
James Smith,	20 acres
John Stone,	10 acres <sup>1</sup>
John Shepley,	20 acres.
Michael Shaflin,	20 acres.
Elias Stilman	30 acres.
Widow Smith.	
John Symonds,	20 acres.
Francis Skerry	20 acres
Michael Sallowes	20
Mr. Smith,	150 acres
Mr. John Thorndike	100 acres <sup>2</sup>
Abraham Temple	
Philip Virrin	
William Vincent	
Richard Waters	10 acres
Mr. Richard Walker	40 acres
Stukley Wescott	
Abram Warren	20 acres
Thomas Watson	10 acres <sup>3</sup>
Humphrey Woodbury	40 acres
Mr. Webb's house	200 acres
Mr. John Wood	50 acres
Mr. Freeman	200 acres
Mr. Hathorne	200 acres <sup>4</sup>
Thomas Tuck	10 acres
John Devorixe	10 acres
William Woodbury	40 acres
Mr. Peeters	
Thomas Mores widow	10 acres <sup>5</sup>
Thomas Eaborne	30 acres <sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup>John Stone had thirty acres added to this grant Jan. 21, 1638-9.

<sup>2</sup>This was "next m<sup>r</sup> Johnsons."—*Salem Town Records*.

<sup>3</sup>Thomas Watson had ten acres added to this grant Feb. 4, 1638-9.

<sup>4</sup>Memorandum: "where hee hath built, w<sup>th</sup> condition that hee be dismist from their Church to ours of Salem." This was interlined by Governor Endecott.

<sup>5</sup>"At Jeffrys creek."

<sup>6</sup>"next to Ensign Davenports 10 acre lott." "30" interlined.



Richard Roots	20 <sup>1</sup>
Anthony Dik	40 <sup>2</sup>
Mrs. Felton	20
Edmund Marshall	20 <sup>1</sup>
Samuel Archer	60 <sup>3</sup>
William Allen	50 <sup>3</sup>
John Sibley	50 <sup>3</sup>
George Williams	40 <sup>3</sup>
John Moor	40 <sup>3</sup>
John Black	30 <sup>3</sup>
Sergeant Wolfe	50 <sup>3</sup>
Sergeant Dixy	50 <sup>3</sup>
Thomas Laythrop	30
Robert Cotta	30 <sup>1</sup>
John Talbie	30 <sup>1</sup>
Widow Skarlet	30
William Allen	50
William Walcott	30.
George Williams	40
Samuel Archer	60 <sup>4</sup>
William Ager	30 <sup>4</sup>
John Blak	30 <sup>4</sup>
John More	40
Roger Morie	50 <sup>1 4</sup>
John Sanders	40 <sup>1</sup>
William Bownd	40 <sup>1</sup>
Henry Herik	40 <sup>1</sup>
George Norton	40 <sup>1</sup>
Thomas Olney	40 <sup>1</sup>
William King	30 <sup>1 4</sup>
Joseph Grafton	30 <sup>4</sup>
John Hardy	60 <sup>6 7</sup>
Seargeant Woolf	50
Samuel More	40 <sup>8</sup>
John Sibley	50
Hugh Laskin	70 <sup>7 9</sup>
Seargeant Dixie	50 <sup>3 9</sup>
Edward Giles	60 <sup>5</sup>
Jacob Barney	50 <sup>9 10</sup>

<sup>1</sup>"aboue mr Cole."

<sup>2</sup>"next mr Humfre."

<sup>3</sup>"at Jeffryes Creeke."

<sup>4</sup>"40" interlined.

<sup>5</sup>"next to m<sup>r</sup> Cole."

<sup>6</sup>"50" interlined.

<sup>7</sup>"next to John Woodbury."

<sup>8</sup>"Darby fort side after mr Peters lott is layd out." This was in what is now Marblehead.

<sup>9</sup>"60" interlined.

<sup>10</sup>"next to Goodman Leech."

William Dodge	60 <sup>1</sup>
Mr. Gott	75 <sup>2</sup>
Richard Brakenbury	75 <sup>3</sup>
John Horne	75 <sup>4</sup>
Jeffrey Massie	75 <sup>3</sup>
Richard Waterman	80 <sup>5</sup>
Lieut. Davenport	80 <sup>19</sup>
Raph Fogg	80 <sup>7</sup>
John Holgrave	60 <sup>8 9</sup>
Richard Rayment	60 <sup>10 11</sup>
Lawrence Leach <sup>6</sup>	100 <sup>6 12</sup>
Robert Molton	100 <sup>19</sup>
Mr. Stilman	100 <sup>14 16</sup>
Mr. Gardener	100 <sup>19</sup>
Captain Trask	100 <sup>15</sup>
Francis Weston	120 <sup>13 19</sup>
Mrs. Higinson	150 <sup>19</sup>
Daniel Ray	160 <sup>17</sup>
Mr. Peters	300 <sup>18</sup>

<sup>1</sup>"next to John Woodbury."

<sup>2</sup>"next to Goodman Rayes ffarme."

<sup>3</sup>"at Mackrell Coue."

<sup>11</sup>"layd out by mr. Blackleeche."

<sup>5</sup>"next to Daniell Ray."

<sup>6</sup>The following words are added in short-hand: "John Woodbery did view it and it lyeth along in divers marshes and coves."

<sup>7</sup>"at y<sup>e</sup> [fforest riuer head with. 3 acres of meadow] 3 birch trees neere [Goodman Rays his ffarme as well] adioyning to Rich: Watermans his ffarme."

<sup>8</sup>"at Derbys fort side after mr. Pet."

<sup>9</sup>"80" interlined.

<sup>10</sup>"at [Marble] Darbies fort side after mr. Peters farme is sett out."

<sup>11</sup>"100" interlined.

<sup>12</sup>"ouer against mrs Daniels farme with ye marsh neere adioyning vpon survey."

<sup>13</sup>"30" interlined.

<sup>14</sup>"next to mr Skeltons adioyning to mr Sharpes." "besides y<sup>t</sup> on Castle Hill."

<sup>15</sup>"next to the Long Pond."

<sup>16</sup>"betwixt mr. Bishops farme & mr. Sharpes voted The 2d of first mo: 1636."

<sup>17</sup>"next to Rich Watermans."

<sup>18</sup>"next to m<sup>r</sup> Humfries."

<sup>19</sup>"next mr. Coles."



## LAND GRANTS. B.

The following list, in the handwriting of Roger Conant, occupies two leaves of the town records. It is apparently a record of the division of the marsh and meadow ordered to be assigned and laid out to the families at a town meeting, Dec. 25, 1637. The figure before each name gives the number of persons in the family. The figure after each name gives the amount of land to which each one was entitled, as one acre, three-quarters, one-half. Families consisting of three persons or less apparently had at first three quarters and afterward only two quarters; of four or five persons three quarters of an acre; and of six or more persons an acre. The figure "1" means one acre, "1-2" or "2" one-half and "1-3" or "3" three-fourths. Where three-quarters of an acre was first granted and was afterward reduced to one-half the "3" in brackets was crossed out and "2" written after it.

1.	Jo: Sibly	1-2
—6.	George W <sup>ms</sup>	1 acre
5.	mr Batter	1-3
5.	Hen: Herricke	1-3
3.	widd: Scarlet [3]	2
2.	Tho: Watson	1-2
1.	ffr: Skery	2
—4.	Edw: Gaskill	3
5.	Jo: Porter	3
2.	Tho: Chub	2
7.	Dan: Rey	1 acre
—7.	Ric: Waterman	1
2.	mr Comins	2
1.	Jo: Bourne	2
1.	Nic: Draper	2
3.	Jo: March [3]	2
5.	Jo: Elford	3
3.	Tho: Read [3]	2
—1.	Robt Allen	2
3.	Jo: Norman [3]	2
1.	Jo: Brittell	2
5.	mr Emry	3
2.	Ed: Grouer	2
—10.	Will. Woodbery	1
3.	Hom Woodbery [3]	2
3.	Jeffr: Massy [3]	2

4.	Rich: Blackenbury	3
4.	James Smith	3
—7.	Michell Salloes	1
2.	Sam: Eburne	2
3.	Will: Bennet [3]	2
1.	Jo: Luffe	2
1.	Jo: Burton	2
7.	Jo: Stone	1
2.	Raph Elwood	2
1.	Roger Haskell	2
123		
1.	Tho: Tracy	2
2.	Math: Waller	2
3.	Jo: Hart [3]	2
8.	mr Yong	1
—3.	mr Gaffort [3]	2
2.	Wm Vincent	2
1.	Vincents mother	2
1.	Vincets Coin	
	Antho: Bucstone	2
1.	Tho: Lothrope	2
7.	Robt. Goodell	1
4.	Pet: wolfe	3
3.	Ben: Parmister [3]	2
—2.	Jo: Cooke	2
5.	Geo: Norton	3
[4] 3.	Rich: Lambt [3]	2
4.	Jeffery Esty	3
6.	Nicho: Cary	1
—6.	Jacob Barna	1
5.	mr Thorndicke	3
2.	Will: James	2
3.	Jo: Gally [3]	2
5.	Jo: Pickworth	3
—2.	Ja: Standish	2
8.	Richard Hutchinson	1
7.	mr Goose	1
—7.	Rich: Holingsworth	1
2.	Widd: mason	2
1.	Tho: Rootes	2
1.	Jos: Rootes	2
[2] 5	Robt. Morgan	3
[2] 4	Jo: Pride	3
1.	Jo: Lech	2
5.	Hugh Browne	3
116		
4.	Robt: Lemon	3
4.	Jo: Jackson	3
—5.	Will: Dixie	3
4.	Jo: Blacke	3
5.	Wid: more	3



4.	Tho: more	3
—7.	Jos: Graften	1
5.	Jo: more	3
5.	Tho: Browning	3
6.	mr Smith	1
—6.	mr Scrugs	1
2.	Abr: Temple	2
5.	mr Holgraue	3
6.	Rich Raymond	1
1.	Jos: Holgraue	2
4.	Ben: ffelton	3
—6.	Jo: Hardy	1
1.	Jo: Hardy Jun.	2
8.	Will Jeggels	1
—6.	mr Gott	1
1.	Nath: ffelton	2
2.	Widdo: ffelton	2
5.	Sam: Archer	3
5	Will: Allen	3
1.	Henry Bartholomew	2
1.	Will: ffiske	2
—5.	Jo: Horne	3
4.	mr Johnson	3
	mr webb	2
6.	Anth: Dike	1
2.	Christo: Yong	2
1.	will: Hackford	2
2	Rich: Johnson	2
4.	Robt Codman	3
—2	widdo Greene	2
6	Tho: Edwards	1
1.	John Harbert	2
6.	Robt Page	1
5.	Henry Skerry	3
2.	Jo: Burroes	2
2.	John Deuericks	2
—6.	Tho: Paine	1
[4.	mr Steuens <sup>1</sup> ]	
2.	Tho: Dixey	2
3.	John Browne [3]	2
2.	Edm: Tomson	2
2.	James Hines	2
3.	Tho: Venner [3]	2
1.	Roger Airmedowne	2
—5.	Jam: moulton	3
7.	Jo: Gidney	1
—11.	mr ffrend	1
1.	Rich Barthelmew	2
4.	mr Bachelor	3

<sup>1</sup>Crossed out in the original record.

	goodm. Thurston	3
1.	mr Higgins	2
1.	Sam: Colburne	2
1.	Geo: Ropes	2
1.	Rob: Baker	2.
4.	[Tho] Will: Williams	3
[3] 4.	Leeds, plaisterer	3.
—6.	Jo: Balch	1.
9.	mr Endicot	1.
3.	Tho: Reed [3]	2.
—9.	Roger Conant	1.
2.	Edw: Beacham	2
8.	mr Cole	1
—6.	mr ffogg	1.
9.	will King	1.
—10.	mr Bisshop	1.
—5.	Tho: Olney	3.
4.	mich: Shafin	3.
4.	Rob: Cotty	3.
4.	Edm: Marshall	3.
2.	Jo: Shepley	2.
<sup>144</sup>		
[10?]	Will: Hathorne	1.
5.	mr waters	3.
2.	Will Plais	2.
4.	Rich: Norman	3.
4.	Ro: Moulton	3.
2.	mr Alderman	2.
—5.	Will: Dodge	3.
5.	Will: marston	3.
1.	Tho: marston	2.
4.	Robt Pease	3.
2.	Jo: Pease	2
5.	Ro: mawry	3
—4.	will: walcot	3.
6.	fran Perry	1.
	Jo: Pope	2.
5.	Tho: Anthom	3.
7.	Tho: Gardner	1.
6.	Rich: Bishop	1.
5.	Rich: walker	3.
—7.	Io: Barber	1.
5.	Will: Bound	3.
3.	Jo: Sanders [3]	2.
7.	Leiftenant Dauenport	1.
3.	Tho: Goldthwait [3]	2.
—2.	Mris Kenniston	2.
5.	Jo: Talby	3.
3.	Jo: Abby [3]	2.
5.	Lawr: Leech	3.
1.	Robt Leech	2.



—9.	Rich: Ingersall	1.
3.	Hugh Laskin [3]	2.
4.	Rich: Rootes	3.
[5] 6.	Edw: Giles	1.
1.	mr. Daniell	
2.	John Tomkins	2.
151		
[5.	Mr Stillman <sup>1</sup>	
1.	Elias Stillman	2.
[6.]	Mr Weston	1.
—10.	Mr Alford	1.
6.	John Woodbury	1.
2.	Mr Pestor	
—9.	Mr Blackleach	1.
6.	Mr. Verine	1.
1.	Phillip Verine	2.
7.	Captaine Trask	1.
—8.	Stukly Wesket	1.
7.	Mr Sharpe	1.
1.	John Bushnell	2.
1.	Abraham warain	2.
6.	George Harris	1.
7.	Jo: Symons	1.
1.	Robt Isbell	2.
—6.	Peter Palfry	1.
5.	Will: [Auger]	3.
7.	Sam: more	1.
—6.	Wm Lord	1.
2.	Will: Browne	2.
2.	mr. Stratton	2.
9.	mr Clarke	1.
[2.	goodm: Skudder <sup>1</sup>	2.]
—5.	mr ffiske	3.
4.	ffrancis Laws	3.
4.	ffranc: ffilmingam	3.
3.	marmad: Peircey [3]	2.
2.	Jo: Pickring	2.
3.	Rich: Graues [3]	2.
—8.	Tho: Smith	1.
4.	Tho: Spooner	3.
5.	Ezekiell Knight	3.
3.	Tho: fflatman [3]	2.
1.	Tho. Gardner	2.
—1.	George Gardner	2.
3.	Geo: wright [3]	2.
4.	widdo Sweet	3.
4.	William Robison	3.
6.	mr. Amies	1.
2.	mr. Robison	2.

<sup>1</sup>Crossed out in the original record.

	(goodman Holiman	2.
	(	
	(goodwife Scarlet	2.
[half]	(	
	(L Dauenport	2
	(	
[178] 181		

---

### ADDENDA.

On page 68 add to the children of Thomas Gardner, sr.:—

7. Sarah;<sup>2</sup> married Benjamin Balch; 8. Miriam;<sup>2</sup> married John Hill;  
9. Seeth;<sup>2</sup> baptized Dec. 25, 1636; married, first, Joshua Conant; second, John Grafton.

On page 73, sixth line from bottom, add to children of Richard Gardner:—

4. Thomas Barnard West,<sup>8</sup> born July 3, 1842, in Gloucester; H. C., 1816; master of the Williams Street school for boys in Salem and of the Town grammar school at Gloucester; died in Salem, unmarried, Nov. 6, 1860.

On page 215, at beginning of first paragraph of the footnote add the following:—

SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>5</sup> tailor; married Bethiah Dod Sept. 4, 1761; living in 1787; child: 1. *Samuel*,<sup>6</sup> born April 8, 1768.

COL. SAMUEL ARCHER;<sup>6</sup> barber and merchant in Mediterranean trade; importer of French cosmetics, perfumery, etc.; commanded the Salem artillery regiment; married, first, Susannah Babbidge June 21, 1789; she died Nov. 24, 1807; removed to Boston; married, second, Deborah McNutt of Liverpool, N. S., April 15, 1808; died in Boston May 17, 1813; she died in Salem July 27, 1860; children: 1. Rebecca,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 27, 1789; 2. Samuel,<sup>7</sup> born June 12, 1790; 3. Lydia,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 14, 1791; 4. William,<sup>7</sup> born June 5, 1793; 5. Eliza Cotton,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 9, 1795; 6. Mary,<sup>7</sup> born Sept. 20, 1797; 7. Harriet,<sup>7</sup> baptized April 2, 1799; 8. William,<sup>7</sup> born Dec. 9, 1801; 9. Adeline,<sup>7</sup> born Aug. 16, 1802; 10. Agnes Deborah Taylor,<sup>7</sup> born Jan. 28, 1809; married Eben Preble of Gorham, Me.; 11. *Augustus Joseph*,<sup>7</sup> born July 14, 1810; 12. Caroline Rebecca,<sup>7</sup> born Nov. 29, 1811; died Feb. 14, 1817; 13. Mary Collins,<sup>7</sup> born Oct. 25, 1813; died June 12, 1815.

AUGUSTUS JOSEPH ARCHER;<sup>7</sup> dealer in dry goods and carpets; married Mary Jane Waldo of Charlestown May 11, 1841; she died Aug. 11, 1894; he died May 11, 1898; children: 1. Caroline Emily,<sup>8</sup> born March 7, 1842; married Matthias Denman Ross of Jamaica Plain June 7, 1883; 2. Emily Waldo,<sup>8</sup> born April 6, 1844; died, unmarried, Feb. 23, 1923; 3. Agnes Deborah,<sup>8</sup> born July 1, 1846; died Nov. 30, 1852; 4. Mary Waldo,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 18, 1848; married Charles Henry Doe of Worcester June 1, 1870;



5. *Charles Frederic Waldo*,<sup>8</sup> born March 6, 1851; 6. *Ada Louise*,<sup>8</sup> born Sept. 5, 1856; died, unmarried, Jan. 13, 1876; 7. *George Augustus*,<sup>8</sup> born Nov. 1, 1859; train despatcher in Boston; lived in Medford and Somerville; married Alice Maud Clarke of Exeter, N. H., Dec. 12, 1893; died April 26, 1920; his widow lives in Duluth, Minn.; had children.

CHARLES FREDERIC WALDO ARCHER;<sup>8</sup> journalist; married Annie Laurie Moore Aug. 29, 1875; she died Feb. 21, 1916; children: 1. *Charles Augustus*,<sup>7</sup> born April 24, 1876; 2. *Helen Louise*,<sup>7</sup> born May 28, 1878; married George F. Ashton June 27, 1905; 3. *Elizabeth Waldo*,<sup>9</sup> born March 23, 1883; married Ezekiel Kinsman Banks.

CHARLES AUGUSTUS ARCHER;<sup>9</sup> lawyer; married Sarah Locke Dec. 6, 1899; died Oct. 6, 1911; children: 1. *Phebe Waldo*,<sup>10</sup> born Nov. 7, 1902; 2. *John Sterling Beardsley*,<sup>10</sup> born Dec. 13, 1908.

## INDEX

---

- ABBE, Abigail, 247, 418.  
     Benjamin, 418.  
     Ebenezer, 247, 418.  
     Elizabeth, 418.  
     Hannah, 417, 418.  
     Hepzibah, 418.  
     John, 417, 418, 455, 463.  
     Jonathan, 418.  
     Marah, 417.  
     Mary, 371, 417, 418.  
     Mercy, 418.  
     Obadiah, 417.  
     Rebecca, 417.  
     Samuel, 417, 418.  
     Sarah, 417, 418.  
     Thomas, 418.  
 Abbot, Ruthy, 287.  
 Abigail (ship), 94-96, 301, 303, 442.  
 Aborn (Eborne), Abigail, 382.  
     Catherine, 296, 381.  
     Ebenezer, 117, 247, 382.  
     Elizabeth, 382, 441.  
     Hannah, 381, 382, 426.  
     James, 382.  
     Jane, 382, 420.  
     John, 382.  
     Joseph, 381, 382.  
     Margaret, 117, 382.  
     Martha, 382.  
     Mary, 247, 381, 382.  
     Mercy, 282.  
     Moses, 381, 382, 433.  
     Rebecca, 381.  
     Samuel, 95, 296, 315, 381, 382, 420, 426, 456, 461.  
     Sarah, 381, 382, 433.  
     Susanna, 95, 381, 382.  
     Thomas, 197, 282, 382, 455, 457.  
     Union, 382.  
     William, 382.  
 Adams, Anna, 358.  
     Daniel, 446.  
     Frederick M., 399.  
     Hannah, 303.  
     Hephzibah, 446.  
     John, 279, 308.  
     Lucy A., 399.  
     Adams, *continued.*  
         Margaret, 371.  
         Mary, 303.  
         Mehitable, 283.  
         Richard, 198, 292, 303, 316, 356, 448, 449.  
         Robert, 241, 314.  
         Ruth, 303.  
         Samuel, 283.  
         Sarah, 70, 279, 303.  
         Susan, 303.  
         Thomas, 145, 168, 169.  
 Agassiz rock, 11.  
 Agawam Indians, 45, 47.  
 Ager (Agar, Eager), Abigail, 217.  
     Alice, 217.  
     Ann, 217.  
     Benjamin, 217.  
     Daniel, 217.  
     Hannah, 217.  
     Jonathan, 217.  
     Joseph, 217.  
     Mary, 217.  
     Rebecca, 217.  
     Richard, 217.  
     Thomas, 217.  
     William, 197, 217, 316, 454, 458, 464.  
 Airmedowne, Roger, 462.  
 Albemarle County, Carolina, 270.  
 Alderman, Jane, 368.  
     John, 198, 241, 315, 316, 318, 368, 455, 463.  
 Alewife brook, 21.  
 Alford, Ann, 365.  
     Bethiah, 365.  
     Charity, 206.  
     Elisha, 365.  
     John, 206, 296, 365, 455, 456, 463.  
     Elizabeth, 365.  
     Mary, 365.  
     Nathaniel, 365.  
     Samuel, 365.  
     William, 365, 447.  
 Allen (Allyn), Abigail, 214, 249.  
     Alice, 87, 154.  
     Amelia R., 358.



*Allen, continued.*

- Ann T., 154.
  - Bethiah, 87.
  - Deborah, 87, 365.
  - Edward, 70.
  - Elizabeth, 68, 87, 90, 295, 365, 396.
  - Hannah, 87, 365.
  - James, 90.
  - John, 71, 365.
  - Jonathan, 88.
  - Joseph, 249.
  - Martha, 87.
  - Mary, 365, 418.
  - Onesiphorus, 87.
  - Persis, 87.
  - Rebecca, 71.
  - Robert, 365, 455, 460.
  - Ruth, 70.
  - Samuel, 58, 87.
  - Sarah, 87, 365.
  - William, 87, 174, 197, 290, 295, 314, 316, 353, 366, 423, 448, 454, 455, 458, 462.
- Allerton, Bartholomew, 232, 233.*
- Elizabeth, 233.
  - Fear, 232.
  - Isaac, 102, 103, 177, 191, 207, 232-234, 236, 297.
  - Joanna, 233.
  - Mary, 232, 233.
  - Remember, 232, 233.
  - Sarah, 232, 233, 236.
- Alley, Annie P., 77.*
- Mary, 215.
  - Sally Lang, 348.
- Allias, Sadie L., 400.*
- Alligator (ketch), 377.*
- Almanacs, 386.*
- Ambrose (ship), 190, 192.*
- America (privateer), 346.*
- American Academy of Arts and Sciences, 423.*
- Ames, Burpee, 74.*
- Hannah, 74.
- Amesbury, Mass., 355, 452, 453.*
- Amherst, N. H., 242, 250, 251, 354.*
- Amies, Mrs., 464.*
- Ammunition, Overseer of, 174.*
- Ammunition house, 174.*
- Amusements, 332, 333.*
- Andover, Mass., 74, 214, 247, 251, 252, 280, 295, 369, 430, 432, 446, 451.*
- Andrews (Andrew), Ann, 91, 282.*
- Damaris, 234.
  - Elizabeth, 392, 432, 441.
  - Eunice, 91.

*Andrews, continued.*

- Ginger, 251.
  - Hannah L., 397.
  - John H., 338.
  - Jonathan, 70.
  - Martha, 390.
  - Mary, 70, 158, 354.
  - Nathaniel, 158.
  - Richard, 232.
  - Thomas, 91, 234, 390.
- Animals, Domestic, 14, 15, 18, 136, 184, 202, 208-212, 231, 257, 291, 325, 326, 368, 377, 379.*
- Wild, 17, 24, 206-209.*
- Ann (ship), 232.*
- Annable, Abbie, 400.*
- Antrim, N. H., 431.*
- Antrum, Hannah, 390.*
- Jane, 390.
  - John, 390.
  - Martha, 390.
  - Mary, 390.
  - Obadiah, 390.
  - Thomas, 313, 314, 390, 428, 455, 463.
- Antwerp, Belgium, 298, 299.*
- Apparel, 47, 258, 326, 331.*
- Appleton, John, 337.*
- Arbella (ship), 190-192, 194, 199, 285, 438.*
- Archer, Abigail, 214, 215, 217, 270 432.*
- Ada Louise, 466
  - Adeline, 465.
  - Agnes Deborah, 465.
  - Agnes Deborah Taylor, 465.
  - Alice Maud, 466.
  - Andrew, 215.
  - Anna, 215.
  - Anna Gertrude, 216.
  - Annie Laurie, 466.
  - Augustus Joseph, 465.
  - Benjamin, 214-217.
  - Benjamin M., 216.
  - Bethiah, 213-215, 434, 465.
  - Caroline, 216.
  - Caroline Emily, 465.
  - Caroline Rebecca, 465.
  - Charles Asa, 216, 217.
  - Charles Augustus, 466.
  - Charles E., 216.
  - Charles Frederic Waldo, 466.
  - Daniel, 215.
  - Deborah H., 216, 465.
  - Dorothy, 214, 342.
  - Ebenezer, 214.
  - Edward, 215, 216.
  - Eliza, 216.

*Archer, continued.*

Eliza Cotton, 465.  
 Elizabeth, 214-216.  
 Elizabeth S., 216.  
 Elizabeth Sarah, 216.  
 Elizabeth Waldo, 466.  
 Ella B., 217.  
 Ellen E., 216.  
 Emeline P., 216.  
 Emily Waldo, 465.  
 Fidelia W., 216.  
 George, 214-216, 285.  
 George Augustus, 466.  
 Hannah, 213-216, 383.  
 Harriet, 465.  
 Helen Louise, 466.  
 Henry, 215.  
 James, 215, 216, 344.  
 John, 213-216, 314.  
 John Sterling Beardsley, 466.  
 John Woodwell, 215, 216.  
 Jonathan, 214, 215, 217, 279.  
 Joseph, 214, 215.  
 Josiah, 214, 215.  
 Judith, 216, 285.  
 Laura, 75.  
 Laura A., 216.  
 Lizzie D., 216.  
 Lucy C., 216.  
 Lydia, 215, 216, 465.  
 Margaret, 215.  
 Martha, 215.  
 Mary, 214, 215, 349, 465.  
 Mary A., 216.  
 Mary Collins, 465.  
 Mary E., 216.  
 Mary Elizabeth, 216.  
 Mary J., 216.  
 Mary Jane, 216, 465.  
 Mary M., 215.  
 Mary O., 216.  
 Mary Waldo, 465.  
 Mehitable, 215.  
 Nathaniel, 214, 215.  
 Nellie Maud, 216.  
 Phebe Waldo, 466.  
 Priscilla, 344.  
 Rachel, 215, 348.  
 Rebecca, 214, 465.  
 Rufus P., 216.  
 Rufus Phippen, 216.  
 Russell H., 217.  
 S. E., 216.  
 Sally, 215.  
 Samuel, 174, 197, 213-216, 249,  
     314, 316, 318, 319, 342, 366, 423,  
     454, 458, 462, 465.  
 Samuel A., 216.

*Archer, continued.*

Samuel H., 216.  
 Sarah, 214-217, 422, 466.  
 Sarah Elizabeth, 216.  
 Sarah S., 216.  
 Stephen, 214, 215, 422.  
 Susanna, 213, 249, 465.  
 Thomas, 214.  
 William, 215, 216, 465.  
 William A., 216.  
 William Henry, 216.  
 Zervia Fidelia, 216.  
 Ardfinan, Ireland, 196.  
 Ardleigh, England, 437.  
 Arlington, Mass., 76.  
 Armor, 173.  
 Arms, Royal, 351.  
 Arnold, England, 249.  
 Arnold, Ann, 368.  
     Benedict, 271.  
     Damaris, 271.  
     William, 269, 273.  
 Arrington, Christian R., 389.  
     James, 422.  
     Maria Margaret, 398.  
     Mary, 422.  
 Arthur, John, 69.  
     Priscilla, 69.  
 Ashby, Abigail, 249.  
     Anthony, 249.  
     Elizabeth, 371.  
 Ashton, George F., 466.  
     Helen Louise, 466.  
     Jacob, 337, 342.  
     Mary, 342.  
 Ashwood, Susanna Bartlett, 92.  
 Aspinwall, Peter, 84.  
     Remember, 84.  
 Atkins, Elizabeth, 350.  
     Lydia A., 350.  
     Philip, 350.  
 Atkinson, Polly, 372.  
 Atlas, Sunday, 349.  
 Atwater, Joshua, 157.  
     Mary, 157.  
 Atwood, Lydia, 282.  
 Auckland, N. Z., 281.  
 Augur, Martha, 217.  
 Aukpaque, N. S., 70.  
 Austin, Eleazer, 431.  
     Mary, 68, 431.  
 Austye, Anne, 429.  
 Averill, Rachel, 451.  
 Avery, John, 296, 297.  
     Mary, 70.  
 Avolan, Fiji Islands, 281.  
 BABBIDGE, Amelia P., 358.



- Babbidge, *continued*.  
   Elizabeth, 348.  
   Francis, 358.  
   Susannah, 465.  
 Babson, Elinor, 448.  
   Isabell, 448.  
   James, 448.  
 Bacon, Agnes, 286.  
   Anne, 153.  
   Elizabeth, 344.  
   Jacob, 70.  
   Samuel, 153.  
   Sarah, 70.  
   William, 241, 313, 315.  
 Bailey, Adams, 285.  
   Ellen, 285.  
   Henry, 374.  
   Rebecca, 366.  
   Sarah S., 347.  
 Baker, —, 68.  
   Abigail, 119.  
   Benjamin, 431.  
   Cornelius, 83.  
   Elizabeth, 117, 396.  
   Eunice, 386.  
   Hannah, 83.  
   Hester, 439.  
   John, 382, 386.  
   Martha, 390.  
   Mary, 431.  
   Robert, 381, 428, 437, 463.  
   Susanna, 382.  
 Baker's Island, 9, 36, 191.  
 Balch, Abigail, 84.  
   Agnes, 83, 339.  
   Annis, 83.  
   Benjamin, 83, 84, 254, 339, 465.  
   Caleb, 242.  
   David, 84.  
   Deborah, 84.  
   Francis, 339.  
   Franklin, 339.  
   Franklin G., 339.  
   Freeborn, 83, 84, 278, 294, 445.  
   Grace, 84.  
   John, 83, 84, 117, 197, 254, 292, 317, 318, 326, 337, 339, 352, 353, 419, 420, 424, 428, 454, 463.  
   Jonathan, 84.  
   Joseph, 84, 339.  
   Lydia, 84.  
   Margaret, 83.  
   Mary, 84, 117, 242.  
   Mercy, 339.  
   Miriam, 445.  
   Ruth, 84.  
   Samuel, 84.  
   Sarah, 84, 465.  
 Balcomb, John Forest, 399.  
   Mary Browne, 399.  
 Bald Hill, Beverly, 2.  
 Bald Hill, Peabody, 4.  
 Baldwin, Abigail, 358, 422.  
   George, 358.  
   William, 422.  
 Ballou, Elizabeth, 422.  
   John, 422.  
 Balston, Eunice, 367.  
   Nathaniel, 367.  
 Baltimore, Md., 348, 422.  
 Bance, Rachel, 250.  
 Bancroft, Daniel, 393.  
   Hannah, 393.  
   Martha, 382.  
 Banks, Elizabeth Waldo, 466.  
   Ezekiel Kinsman, 466.  
 Barbadoes, 158, 372.  
 Barbant, John, 340.  
 Barbary, 269.  
 Barber, John, 365, 455, 463.  
 Barker, Elizabeth, 300.  
   Elizabeth G., 72.  
   Hannah, 214.  
   Mary Anne, 349.  
 Barnard, Edward, 442.  
   Judith, 442.  
   Lois, 71.  
   Thomas, 71.  
 Barnet, Susanna, 344.  
 Barney, Abigail, 283.  
   Ann, 283.  
   Constance, 283.  
   Dorcas, 283.  
   Elizabeth, 283.  
   Hannah, 283.  
   Israel, 283.  
   Jacob, 197, 198, 240, 241, 266, 283, 284, 318, 418, 423, 428, 437, 455, 458, 461.  
   John, 283.  
   Jonathan, 283.  
   Joseph, 283.  
   Josiah, 283.  
   Mary, 283.  
   Ruth, 283.  
   Samuel, 283.  
   Sarah, 283, 370.  
 Barnstable, England, 286.  
 Barr, James, 343, 393.  
   Mary, 343, 346.  
   N. Augusta, 77.  
   Priscilla, 393.  
   Robert, 346.  
   Robert Putnam, 77.  
   Sarah, 355.  
 Barre, Vt., 422.

- Barrett, Elizabeth, 283.  
     Gertrude, 387.  
     John, 340.  
     Jonathan, 387.  
     Lois, 394.  
     Sarah, 242.  
     Thomas, 394.  
 Barstow, Gideon, 338.  
 Bartholomew, Abigail, 392.  
     Abraham, 392.  
     Eleazer, 392.  
     Elizabeth, 392.  
     Hannah, 392, 430, 439.  
     Henry, 182, 198, 241, 315, 316,  
         318, 319, 378, 392, 455, 462.  
     John, 392.  
     Katherine, 392.  
     Richard, 452, 462.  
     Sarah, 69, 392.  
     William, 392.  
 Bartlett, Abigail, 245, 342.  
     Bethiah, 218.  
     Carrie G., 389.  
     Dorothy, 342.  
     Jane, 343.  
     John, 218.  
     Mary, 298.  
     Montgomery, 245.  
     Richard, 342.  
     Robert, 298.  
 Bartoll, Susan, 402.  
     William, 402.  
 Barton, John, 337.  
     Margaret, 70.  
     Samuel, 70.  
 Barton-in-fobis, England, 159.  
 Bass River, 8, 20, 42, 44, 296, 337,  
     348, 404, 443, 452.  
 Bass River Side, 116, 370, 373, 445.  
 Bastable, 186.  
 Batchelder (Bacheller, etc.), Abi-  
     gail, 83, 445.  
     Abner, 446.  
     Amos, 446.  
     Anna, 445, 446.  
     Anne, 446.  
     Benjamin, 446.  
     Bethiah, 445, 446.  
     Betty, 446.  
     Daniel, 445.  
     Edith, 431.  
     Elizabeth, 445, 446.  
     George, 446.  
     Hannah, 445, 446.  
     Henry, 445.  
     Hephzibah, 446.  
     Jemima, 445.  
     John, 246, 305, 353, 445.  
 Batchelder, *continued*.  
     Jonathan, 445, 446.  
     Joseph, 117, 198, 319, 354, 445,  
         446, 462.  
     Joshua, 446.  
     Josiah, 119, 445, 446.  
     Judith, 354, 446.  
     Lydia, 446.  
     Martha, 445.  
     Mary, 119, 305, 354, 445, 446.  
     Miriam, 117, 445.  
     Nathaniel, 445.  
     Ruth, 446.  
     Samuel, 446.  
     Sarah, 246, 353, 445, 446.  
     William, 431, 446.  
     Zachariah, 445.  
 Bateman, Eliza, 397.  
 Bath, Me., 345.  
 Batter, Barbara, 294.  
     Daniel, 294, 295.  
     Edmond, 158, 198, 293, 294, 304,  
         314, 317, 318, 336, 352, 353, 390,  
         427, 435, 438, 449, 452, 455, 460.  
     Elizabeth, 294.  
     Hannah, 158, 294.  
     John, 294.  
     Martha, 294.  
     Mary, 294, 357.  
     Sarah, 294, 357.  
 Battin, Hannah, 393.  
 Baxter, Daniel, 316.  
 Baylies, John, 314.  
 Beacon on Lobster rocks, Beverly,  
     21.  
 Beadle, Dorothy, 307.  
     Hannah, 96, 391, 420.  
     Margaret, 132.  
     Mary, 394.  
     Nathaniel, 420.  
     Samuel, 391.  
     Susannah, 305.  
     Thomas, 132.  
 Beals, John R., 75.  
     Lucy F., 75.  
 Beans, Martha, 385.  
     William, 385.  
 Beard, Thomas, 117, 138, 311, 330.  
 Beare, Philip, 449.  
 Beauchamp (Beachem, Burcham),  
     Edward, 198, 315, 316, 319, 418,  
         427, 455, 364.  
     Elizabeth, 246, 418.  
     John, 232.  
     Mary, 418.  
     Samuel, 418.  
 Beaver brook, Danvers, 18.  
 Beaver Pond, 9, 18.



- Beck, Virginia S., 399.  
 Beckett, Hannah, 284.  
     John, 314, 315.  
     Sarah, 432.  
 Beckford (Bickford), Daniel, 423.  
     Elizabeth, 252, 294.  
     Eunice, 343.  
     George, 294.  
     Hannah, 423.  
     Mary A., 216.  
     Rebecca, 214.  
     Sally, 215.  
 Bedford, Mass., 251.  
 Beecher, Thomas, 110, 132, 190.  
 Beede, John, 387.  
     Mehitable, 387.  
 Beggary, Mrs., 256.  
     Richard, 256.  
 Belgrave, England, 160.  
 Belknap, Samuel, 313.  
 Bell, Elizabeth, 72.  
     Rebecca, 381.  
     Thomas, 381.  
 Bellflower, Abigail, 117.  
     Benjamin, 117.  
 Bellingham, Mass., 252.  
 Belmont, Mass., 399.  
 Beman, William, 450.  
 Bennett, Aaron, 402.  
     Deborah, 369.  
     Elizabeth, 246, 402.  
     Hannah, 402.  
     Henry, 246.  
     Jane, 402.  
     John, 237, 369.  
     Mary, 402.  
     Moses, 402.  
     Richard, 340.  
     William, 240, 402, 446, 451, 455, 461.  
 Benson, Francis, 394.  
     Mary, 394.  
 Bermuda, 367.  
 Berry, Jonathan, 72.  
     Rhoda, 396.  
     Sarah, 72.  
     Seviah, 252.  
     William, 252.  
 Bertram, John, 345.  
     Martha Ann, 345.  
 Berwick, Me., 367, 387.  
 Bessol, Mary, 427.  
 Betts, Mary, 355.  
 Beverly, Mass., 1, 2, 4, 6, 9, 13, 15, 18-22, 29, 30, 32, 36, 37, 47, 56, 58, 76-79, 81, 83, 87, 91, 94, 107, 116, 117, 119, 132, 158, 216, 242, 250, 278, 281-283, 294, 303-308, 317, 337, 338, 340, 350, 353, 354, 366, 367, 369, 370, 373, 388, 389, 394, 401, 402, 404, 407, 421, 427, 431, 432, 434, 438, 445, 446, 448.  
 Beverly, *continued.*  
     Beverly Farms, 2, 36, 340.  
     Beverly Harbor, Chart of, 113.  
     Bevins, Susan, 252.  
     Billerica, Mass., 154.  
     Bingham, Abel, 117.  
     Abigail, 117.  
     Birch, Elizabeth, 368.  
     George, 368.  
     Birchwood, 289.  
     Bird, Elizabeth, 395.  
     Sarah, 372.  
     Birdless Cove, 302.  
     Birdsall, Henry, 316.  
     Birmingham, England, 93.  
     Bisbe, Lydia Laurelia, 345.  
     Bishop, —, 418, 425.  
     Dulzabella, 340.  
     Elizabeth, 281.  
     John, 340.  
     Lydia, 340.  
     Marie, 279.  
     Mary, 340.  
     Nathaniel, 340.  
     Richard, 313, 315, 319, 340, 455, 463.  
     Thomas, 340.  
     Townsend, 198, 293, 294, 303, 313, 317, 318, 334, 335, 352, 455, 459, 463.  
     Bishopthorpe, England, 159.  
     Bixby, Eliza S., 398.  
     Henry M., 398.  
     Black, Elizabeth, 278.  
     Freeborn, 278, 294.  
     John, 197, 278, 294, 352, 423, 454, 458, 461.  
     Lydia, 278.  
     Persis, 278.  
     Blackleach, Benony, 303.  
     Desire, 303.  
     Elizabeth, 303.  
     Exercise, 303.  
     John, 197, 198, 303, 340, 341, 352, 440, 442, 443, 455, 459, 463.  
     Joseph, 303.  
     Blackman, Mary, 157.  
     Blake, Harriet Adeline, 351.  
     Sarah, 372.  
     Susan Price, 398.  
     Thomas Dawes, 398.  
     Blanchard, Elizabeth, 71.  
     Lucy, 154.

- Blanchard, *continued*.  
     Samuel, 71.  
 Blaney, Abigail, 367.  
     Hannah, 218.  
     Joseph, 337, 367.  
 Blashfield, John, 354.  
     Mercy, 354.  
 Blevin, John, 315.  
 Bloomfield, Henry, 444.  
 Bloomsburg, Pa., 75.  
 Blyth, Abigail, 217.  
     Mary, 132.  
     Samuel, 217.  
     Sarah Rolland, 93.  
 Boardman, Daniel, 249.  
     Hannah, 249.  
     Ruth, 158.  
 Boats, 193, 203.  
 Boggust, John, 204.  
 Boland, Hannah, 215.  
     Thomas, 215.  
 Bolton, Elizabeth, 396.  
 Bond, Anna, 95.  
 Booth, Alice, 253, 390.  
     Elizabeth, 371.  
     George, 390.  
 Boston, Mass., 69, 70, 72, 76, 79, 83, 86, 90-94, 98, 101, 113, 116, 131, 132, 157-159, 174, 181, 182, 203-206, 214, 238, 248, 280-283, 285-288, 294, 298, 301, 307, 339, 340, 345, 347-350, 354-356, 358, 365-367, 369, 373, 376, 379, 383, 386, 389, 391, 392, 396, 398, 399, 420, 422-425, 431, 433, 435, 438, 439, 441, 442, 465.  
 Boston Commercial Gazette, 72.  
 Boswell, Elizabeth, 395.  
     James A., 395.  
 Bosworth, Alice, 249.  
     Joseph Stillman, 75.  
     Mary Ann, 75.  
 Bott, Anna B., 75.  
     Caroline Lovett, 73.  
     James, 285.  
     James B., 75.  
     Ruth, 285.  
     Stacey R., 73.  
 Boulders, 10-12.  
 Bound, Andrew, 373.  
     Ann, 373.  
     James, 373.  
     Mary, 251.  
     Philip, 373.  
     Ruth, 248.  
     William, 198, 373, 455, 458, 463.  
 Bourne, John, 314, 316, 392, 455, 460.  
 Bourne, *continued*.  
     Mary, 392.  
 Bowder, Mary, 432.  
 Bowditch, Habakkuk, 132.  
     Hannah, 132.  
     Joseph, 70, 337.  
     Mary, 69, 132, 154.  
     Sarah, 70, 284.  
     William, 69.  
 Bowlin, Hannah, 215.  
     Thomas, 215.  
 Boxford, England, 182.  
 Boxford, Mass., 74, 76, 91, 215, 243, 247, 253, 354, 384, 390, 392.  
 Boyce, Esther, 356.  
     Eunice, 247.  
     Jonathan, 391.  
     Joseph, 95.  
     Margaret, 96.  
     Mary, 391.  
     Patience, 391.  
     Rebecca, 95.  
     Samuel, 247.  
 Boynton, Hannah, 283.  
     Joshua, 283.  
 Brackenbury, Elizabeth, 94.  
     Ellen, 94.  
     Hannah, 94.  
     Miles, 94.  
     Richard, 47, 98, 197, 237, 283, 353, 424, 454, 459, 461.  
 Bracket, Ann Rebecca, 77.  
     Levi H., 77.  
 Bradford, Mass., 347, 401, 422.  
 Bradford, William, 99, 151, 152, 154, 164.  
 Bradley, Elizabeth, 87.  
 Bradstreet, Ann, 68.  
     John, 28.  
     Simon, 68, 201.  
 Bragg, Lorenzo D., 74.  
     Mary, 118.  
     Sarah Tewksbury, 74.  
 Braintree, Mass., 95, 159, 401, 430, 442.  
 Brampton, England, 443.  
 Brand, Thomas, 128.  
 Bratley, John, 455.  
 Bray, England, 284.  
 Bray, Abigail, 452.  
     Daniel, 430.  
     Elizabeth, 132.  
     Hannah Collins, 430.  
     Jane, 72.  
     Mary E., 281.  
 Brazil, 281.  
 Breed, Catharine, 285, 286.  
     Henry A., 286.



- Breed, *continued*.  
     Holton J., 395.  
     Mary, 286.  
 Brenton, Hannah, 366.  
 Brewer, Anna, 71.  
     Chrispus, 71.  
     Mary, 95.  
 Brewster, Fear, 232.  
     William, 156, 164, 177, 178, 232.  
 Brick Kiln field, 321.  
 Brick Kiln lane, 321.  
 Bricks and Brickmaking, 13, 320, 427.  
 Bridges, Anna, 215.  
     Fidelia, 92.  
     Mary, 116.  
 Bridget, Jemima, 372.  
     Joseph, 372.  
 Bridgewater, England, 83.  
 Bridgewater, Mass., 426.  
 Briggs, Ann, 435.  
 Bright, Francis, 107-110, 121, 140, 147, 151, 152, 162, 166.  
     Margaret, 450.  
 Brimfield, Mass., 117, 118.  
 Briscoe Hill, Beverly, 2.  
 Bristol, Mass., 107, 282, 283.  
 Brittell, John, 460.  
 Britton, Edward, 343.  
     Elizabeth, 369.  
     Hannah, 343.  
     Jane, 435.  
 Brookfield, Mass., 244, 253.  
 Brookhaven, L. I., 427.  
 Brookhouse, Robert, 216.  
     Sarah, 216.  
 Brookline, Mass., 132, 369.  
 Brooklyn, N. Y., 75, 349, 351.  
 Brooks, Asa, 348.  
     Hannah, 95.  
     Isaac, 95.  
     Isaac C., 74.  
     Mary Browne, 348.  
     Sarah, 74.  
 Brooksby, 303, 334, 418, 419, 449, 452.  
 Brown, —, 112, 448, 449.  
     Abiel, 430.  
     Abigail, 214, 215, 366, 367, 432.  
     Albert W., 75, 216.  
     Amos, 432.  
     Ann, 367.  
     Anna, 431, 432.  
     Anne, 367.  
     Apphia, 431.  
     Asa, 431.  
     Bartholomew, 354, 430.  
     Brown, *continued*.  
         Benjamin, 44, 214, 336, 350, 366, 367, 432.  
         Benjamin F., 432.  
         Bethiah, 251.  
         Catharine, 397.  
         Charles E., 397.  
         Daisy M., 78.  
         Daniel S., 350.  
         Dorcas, 431.  
         Edith, 431.  
         Eliza, 431.  
         Elizabeth, 69, 366, 367, 420, 430-432, 435.  
         Eunice, 366, 367, 432.  
         Ezra, 432.  
         Francis, 366, 367.  
         George F., 397.  
         Hannah, 74, 214, 353, 366, 367, 392, 420, 430-432, 439.  
         Hannah Collins, 430.  
         Hannah Gardner, 432.  
         Helen, 358.  
         Henry, 132, 270.  
         Hugh, 47, 365, 376, 455, 461.  
         Huldah, 431.  
         Isabella, 430.  
         Jacob, 430.  
         James, 366, 392, 420, 430-432.  
         John, 68, 69, 107, 121, 130, 145, 147, 166-169, 314, 344, 366, 367, 375, 429-431, 439, 462.  
         Jonathan, 349, 430.  
         Joseph, 251, 336, 366, 367, 371, 430, 431.  
         Judith, 431.  
         Judith Walker, 367.  
         Katharine, 367.  
         Laura, 75.  
         Laura A., 216.  
         Lucy Ann Wilson, 75.  
         Lucy F., 75.  
         Lutia Maria, 397.  
         Lydia, 371, 431, 432.  
         Margaret, 430-432.  
         Martha, 367, 431.  
         Mary, 73, 344, 346, 366, 367, 431, 432.  
         Mary J., 216.  
         Mary Jane, 350, 389.  
         Mehitable, 248.  
         Mercy, 366, 432.  
         Nancy, 432.  
         Nathan, 432.  
         Peter, 430.  
         Phebe, 386, 432.  
         Philip, 367, 432.  
         Priscilla, 430.

*Brown, continued.*

- Priscilla Chever, 349.  
 Rachel, 68, 69, 73, 431.  
 Rebecca, 366.  
 Rebecca E., 397.  
 Ruth, 431.  
 Salome, 431.  
 Samuel, 75, 107, 121, 130, 140,  
 147, 166-169, 337, 366, 367, 430,  
 431.  
 Sarah, 70, 132, 350, 354, 366, 367,  
 430-432.  
 Sarah Evans, 348.  
 Simeon, 339.  
 Susanna, 430, 431.  
 Thomas, 367, 390.  
 Wait, 270.  
 William, 4, 214, 314, 315, 336,  
 337, 366, 367, 423, 428, 430-432,  
 455, 464.  
 William Burnet, 367.  
 Brown's folly, 4.  
 Brown's Pond, 9.  
 Browning, —, 305.  
 Deborah, 385.  
 Elizabeth, 385, 392.  
 Mary, 385.  
 Sarah, 279, 385.  
 Thomas, 198, 292, 314, 316, 384,  
 385, 455, 462.  
 Brude, Thomas, 128.  
 Brundish, England, 366.  
 Bryant, Mary, 73.  
 Nathan, 73.  
 Buckley, Charles J., 389.  
 Lizzie, 389.  
 Budleigh, England, 78.  
 Buenos Ayres, S. A., 347.  
 Buffington, Abigail, 374.  
 Hannah, 252, 386.  
 Mary, 70, 215.  
 Sarah, 253.  
 Buffum, Benjamin, 450.  
 Caleb, 316, 385, 391.  
 Charles S., 400.  
 Damaris, 385.  
 Elizabeth, 386, 450, 452.  
 Eunice, 357.  
 Florence Pierce Symonds, 400.  
 Hannah, 385, 386.  
 Isaac, 357.  
 Jedediah, 422.  
 Joshua, 385, 386.  
 Lydia, 387.  
 Mary, 387, 391.  
 Olive, 422.  
 Robert, 315.  
 Bulfinch, —, 240.  
 Buil, Henry, 206, 223.  
 Bullock, Alice, 420.  
 Barbara, 249.  
 Benjamin, 434.  
 Cyrus, 76.  
 Eliza Ann, 76.  
 Henry, 420.  
 John, 236.  
 Mary, 236, 432.  
 Rejoice, 383.  
 Sarah, 422, 434.  
 Trustrum, 383.  
 Burchmore, Sarah, 346.  
 Burden, Mary, 269.  
 Thomas, 269.  
 Burdett, George, 296, 314.  
 Burding, Abigail E., 351.  
 Burials, 184.  
 Burley's Cove, 302.  
 Burnap, Hannah, 390.  
 Isaac, 390.  
 Burnet, Mary, 367.  
 William, 367.  
 Burns, Charles E., 75.  
 Hannah Wallis, 75.  
 Burrill, Abiel, 430.  
 Mary Alice, 401.  
 Burroughs, Ann, 443.  
 John, 443.  
 Sarah, 367, 420.  
 Burrows, Elizabeth, 132.  
 John, 314, 450, 462.  
 William, 132.  
 Burt, Elizabeth, 357.  
 Burton, Abial, 384.  
 Abigail, 117.  
 Benjamin, 384.  
 Boniface, 354.  
 David, 384.  
 Elizabeth, 384.  
 Hannah, 384.  
 Henry, 384.  
 Isaac, 384.  
 Jacob, 384.  
 John, 117, 316, 383, 384, 455, 461.  
 Lydia, 384.  
 Mary, 385.  
 Samuel, 384.  
 Sarah, 384.  
 Susanna, 384.  
 William, 385.  
 Burying point, 181, 182, 184.  
 Bushby, John, 394.  
 Ruth, 394.  
 Bushnell, Jane, 365.  
 John, 365, 455, 464.  
 William, 54.  
 Buswell, Ruth, 279.



- Buswell, *continued*.  
     William, 279.  
 Butler, Mary, 365.  
     Peter, 365.  
 Butman, Abigail, 445.  
     Hannah, 445.  
     Luther C., 76.  
     Mary, 394.  
     Mary Jane, 76.  
     Thomas, 394.  
 Butt point, 306, 378, 406.  
 Buttolph, Hannah, 68.  
     John, 68, 420.  
     Mehitable, 307.  
     Sarah, 420.  
 Button, Robert, 315, 316, 319.  
 Butts, The, 12, 13.  
 Buxton, Abigail, 451, 452.  
     Amos, 450, 452.  
     Anna, 452, 453.  
     Anthony, 316, 434, 450, 453, 461.  
     Bartholomew, 451.  
     Benjamin, 249, 250, 450, 452.  
     Charity, 452.  
     Daniel, 452, 453.  
     Deborah, 451.  
     Dorcas, 451, 453.  
     Ebenezer, 450.  
     Eleanor, 452.  
     Elizabeth, 248, 249, 254, 450-453.  
     Enos, 451.  
     Esther, 389, 450, 452, 453.  
     Eunice, 251.  
     Hannah, 450, 451, 453.  
     Henry, 452.  
     James, 450, 452.  
     Jane, 250, 452.  
     John, 295, 450-453.  
     Jonathan, 250, 450-453.  
     Joseph, 357, 450-453.  
     Joshua, 387, 452.  
     Keziah, 451.  
     Lydia, 249, 295, 450-452.  
     Margaret, 451.  
     Mary, 247, 295, 387, 440, 450-452.  
     Priscilla, 451.  
     Rachel, 450, 451, 453.  
     Ruth, 431, 451.  
     Samuel, 450.  
     Sarah, 357, 450, 451, 453.  
     Seth S., 76.  
     Stephen, 451.  
     Susan M., 76.  
     Thomas, 450, 452, 453.  
     Timothy, 451.  
 Buxton's Hill, 2.
- CABOT, Anna, 153.  
     Deborah, 158.  
     Elizabeth, 71, 158.  
     Esther, 158.  
     Francis, 71.  
     John, 51, 53, 153, 158.  
     Joseph, 153, 158.  
     Rebecca, 153.  
     Sarah, 158.  
     Stephen, 158.  
 California, 76-78, 348.  
 Callam, Bethiah, 391.  
     Caleb, 391.  
 Calley, John, 6.  
 Cambridge, England, 90, 299.  
 Cambridge, Mass., 73, 75, 157-159, 358, 396, 433, 441, 442.  
 Cameron, Sadie, 78.  
 Campbell, Andrew, 214.  
     Eleanor B., 74.  
     Sarah, 214, 343.  
     William, 343.  
 Canada Expedition, 83.  
 Canoes, 407.  
 Canterbury, England, 446.  
 Canterbury, Ruth, 286.  
 Cantlebury, Ruth, 295.  
     William, 316.  
 Cape Ann, 78-80, 83, 84, 89, 98.  
 Cape Ann Side, 94, 396, 399, 426.  
 Carder, Susanna, 270.  
 Carey, Joseph W., 395.  
     Lois, 395.  
 Carleton, Deborah H., 133.  
     Edward F., 397.  
     Harriet Elizabeth, 397.  
     Lavinia Florence, 401.  
     Mary Ann, 400.  
     Phebe, 432.  
 Carnegie, Mary Crowninshield, 93.  
     William Hartley, 93.  
 Carpenter, William, 269, 273.  
 Carriel, Rebecca, 253.  
 Carrill, Abigail, 95.  
 Carroll, Mehitable, 387.  
 Carter, Judith Walker, 367.  
 Carver, Dorcas, 68.  
     Dorothy, 68.  
     Robert, 68.  
 Cary, Nicholas, 429, 441, 455, 461.  
 Casco Bay, 131.  
 Case, Esther, 356.  
     John, 356.  
 Cassino, John, 76.  
     Martha, 76.  
 Castle Hill, 2, 28, 459.  
 Castle rock, Marblehead, 2, 4.

- Castle William, Boston Harbor,  
     431.  
 Cat brook, Manchester, 19.  
 Cat Cove, 19, 231, 377-379.  
 Cat Island, 9.  
 Cat swamp, Beverly, 19.  
 Cate, Frederick, 349.  
     Mary Theresa, 349.  
 Catholicism, 259.  
 Cavendish, Sarah, 357.  
 Cavis, Elizabeth, 394.  
 Cawood Castle, 158.  
 Cedar Pond, 419, 429.  
 Cedar Stand, 15, 426.  
 Chadbourn, Humphrey, 279.  
     Lucy, 279.  
 Chadwell, Thomas, 378, 426.  
 Chadwick, Elizabeth W., 281.  
     John, 281.  
 Chagford, England, 90.  
 Chalk, 320.  
 Chamberlain, Joseph, 93.  
     Katherine, 392.  
     Mary Crowninshield, 93.  
 Chamnes, Arthur, 241.  
     Hannah, 241.  
 Champney, Joseph, 421.  
     Thankful, 421.  
 Chapman, Abigail, 71, 394.  
     Elizabeth Archer, 349.  
     Hannah, 395.  
     Isaac Needham, 395.  
     John Adams, 280.  
     Mary, 280, 394, 436.  
     Nathaniel, 349.  
     Rebecca, 395.  
 Chapple, Lavinia, 396, 397.  
     Samuel, 396, 397.  
 Chappleman, James, 446.  
     Sarah, 446.  
 Charing Cross, England, 359.  
 Charles (ship), 190, 193.  
 Charles, Robert, 450.  
     Sarah, 450.  
     William, 449, 450.  
 Charleston, S. C., 71, 72, 75.  
 Charlestown, Mass., 72, 73, 75, 117,  
     119, 131, 152, 157, 166, 180, 216,  
     283-285, 303, 336, 356, 366, 376,  
     382, 396, 422, 429, 443, 445,  
     465.  
 Charlestown, N. H., 132.  
 Charter of the Massachusetts Bay  
     Colony, 120, 143.  
 Charter Street burial ground, 181-  
     183.  
 Chase, Franklin, 346.  
     Hannah Browne, 346.  
 Chatfield, Ann, 157.  
     Thomas, 157.  
 Chatham, England, 346, 433.  
 Chatwell, Nicholas, 252.  
     Priscilla, 385.  
     Sarah, 252.  
 Cheever, Alice, 346.  
     Anne, 344.  
     Daniel, 284, 285.  
     Eleanor, 283.  
     Elizabeth, 356.  
     Ellen, 283.  
     Ezekiel, 283.  
     Hannah, 215.  
     Lydia, 434.  
     Samuel, 344.  
     Sarah, 284, 345.  
 Chelmsford, Mass., 428, 430.  
 Chelsea, Mass., 72, 75-77, 396.  
 Cherry Hill, Beverly, 2, 306, 313.  
 Chick, Margaret, 451.  
 Childs, Isaac, 286.  
     Susan Herbert, 286.  
 Chinn, Rebecca, 307.  
 Chipman, Sarah, 119.  
 Christopher Island, 291.  
 Chubb, Avis, 365.  
     Deliverance, 365.  
     Thomas, 365, 455, 460.  
 Chubb's Creek, Beverly, 22, 341.  
 Church, Hannah, 346.  
     Lemuel, 346.  
     Lucy, 347.  
     Samuel, 347.  
 Church, The, 151, 162, 164, 227,  
     244, 256, 257, 287.  
 Church of England, 60, 264, 276.  
 Churchill, Joseph, 173.  
 "Churn," "The," Marblehead, 2.  
 Chusmor, Richard, 451.  
 Cincinnati, O., 348.  
 Civil War, 75, 347, 388, 389.  
 Clarence, Martha, 399.  
 Clark (Clarke), Abigail, 84.  
     Agnes, 78.  
     Alice Maud, 466.  
     Benjamin, 96.  
     Catherine, 441.  
     David, 344.  
     Deborah, 441.  
     Elizabeth, 71, 281.  
     Esther, 153.  
     Francis, 441.  
     Hannah, 96, 441.  
     Hobart, 91.  
     Hugh, 71.  
     John, 153, 421.  
     Judith, 435.



- Clark, *continued*.  
 Lydia, 71, 94.  
 Margaret, 91.  
 Mary, 95, 153, 344, 354.  
 Matthew, 84.  
 Sally M., 396.  
 Sarah, 295, 384, 386, 421.  
 Susanna, 441.  
 Thomas, 433.  
 William, 197, 318, 322, 429, 441, 448, 464.  
 Clay, 13, 321.  
 Claybrook, England, 157.  
 Claydon, Barnabie, 135.  
 Richard, 135.  
 Clearage, James, 369.  
 Mary, 369.  
 Clements, Anna, 353.  
 Timothy, 353.  
 Cleveland, Ohio, 401.  
 Cleveland, Elizabeth, 346.  
 Susannah, 159.  
 Clifford, John, 381.  
 Clifton Heights, 1.  
 Climate, 22, 227, 237, 246, 261, 297.  
 Clinton, Susan, 196.  
 Thomas, 196.  
 Clough, Mary, 303.  
 Peter, 372.  
 Sarah, 372.  
 Cloutman, Mary, 393.  
 Coast Survey Station, 3, 4.  
 Coates, Martha, 253, 383.  
 Cockerell, Mary, 402.  
 William, 314.  
 Codman, Mary Ann, 345.  
 Codnam, Benjamin, 434.  
 James, 434.  
 Joseph, 434.  
 Robert, 433, 434, 462.  
 Codner, Susanna, 306.  
 Coe, Sarah, 131.  
 Coffin, Ann, 69.  
 Edward, 69.  
 Jethro, 69.  
 Mary, 68, 343.  
 Sarah, 382.  
 William, 382.  
 Coggeshall, John, 268.  
 Patience, 268.  
 Coit, John, 380.  
 Mary, 380.  
 Coker, Joseph, 284.  
 Sarah, 284.  
 Colass, Eunice, 354.  
 Stephen, 354.  
 Colburne, Sam, 463.  
 Colby, Susan Maria, 349.  
 Colclough, Elizabeth, 233.  
 George, 233.  
 Cold spring, 8, 247.  
 Cole, Ann, 270.  
 Daniel, 270.  
 Elizabeth, 270.  
 John, 270.  
 Lurana, 422.  
 Mary, 269.  
 Nathaniel, 270.  
 Robert, 269, 270, 273, 303, 340, 452, 455, 458, 463.  
 Sarah, 220.  
 Thomas, 313.  
 Coleman, Leslie C., 350.  
 Phebe, 350.  
 Collins, Abigail, 429.  
 Adoniram, 421.  
 Caroline, 93.  
 Chantrell, 431.  
 Edward, 398.  
 Esther, 247.  
 Francis, 315.  
 Hannah, 131, 343, 421, 430.  
 John, 281, 429.  
 Lucretia, 387.  
 Lucy, 350.  
 Mary, 72, 95, 432.  
 Mehitable, 281.  
 Rebecca Galloup, 398.  
 Samuel, 247.  
 Sarah, 431.  
 Collins Cove, 302.  
 Comet, 39.  
 Comins, William, 366, 447, 455, 460.  
 Commerce, 205-207.  
 Conamsquenoocant River, 8, 289.  
 Conant, Agnes, 78.  
 Albert F., 401.  
 Andrew, 71.  
 Anna, 71.  
 Beatrice E., 401.  
 Caleb, 79.  
 Christian, 79.  
 Elizabeth, 79, 298.  
 Exercise, 58, 79.  
 Hannah, 79.  
 Hephzibah, 446.  
 Jemima, 445.  
 Joanna, 251.  
 John, 79.  
 Jonathan, 338.  
 Joshua, 79, 435, 465.  
 Kezia, 79.  
 Lot, 79, 298, 338.  
 Mary, 84, 117, 304.  
 Richard, 78.  
 Roger, 78-85, 89-91, 93, 96, 97,

- Conant, *continued*.  
 101, 197, 198, 206, 223, 236, 255,  
 292, 315, 317, 318, 335, 337, 338,  
 352, 408, 420, 424, 428, 445, 446,  
 451, 454, 463.  
 Sarah, 79, 118, 465.  
 Seeth, 79, 435.  
 Concord, Mass., 71, 427.  
 Concord, N. H., 397.  
 Congdon, Emma K., 76.  
 Coningsby Parish, England, 156.  
 Conkey, Alexander, 243.  
 Mary, 243.  
 Conlen, Frederick O., 401.  
 Rebecca E., 401.  
 Conley, Mary, 74.  
 Connecticut, 298, 347, 438.  
 Connecticut River valley, 409.  
 Connor, Adelaide, 77.  
 James H., 77.  
 Conrey, Sarah Ella, 400.  
 Constables, 318.  
 Conway, John J., 401.  
 Mabel Florence, 401.  
 Cook, Abial, 384.  
 Abigail, 95, 243, 396.  
 Anna, 95.  
 Benjamin, 95.  
 Dolly Maria, 358.  
 Ebenezer, 95.  
 Elizabeth, 300, 383, 394, 395, 442,  
 450.  
 Eunice, 385.  
 Hannah, 214, 253, 374.  
 Henry, 314, 316.  
 Isaac, 383, 450.  
 John, 222, 223, 440-442, 450, 452,  
 456, 461.  
 Joseph, 385.  
 Mary, 117, 295, 355, 434, 442, 450.  
 Merritt, 358.  
 Patience, 246.  
 Rachel, 434.  
 Samuel, 295, 384, 394.  
 Thomas, 300.  
 Cooklie, England, 444.  
 Coombs, Bathsheba, 355.  
 Elizabeth, 396, 397.  
 Elizabeth Chester, 400.  
 Frederick, 395.  
 Hannah M., 396.  
 Humphrey, 355.  
 Lydia, 395.  
 Mary, 131.  
 Cooper, Benjamin, 443.  
 Cooperstown, N. Y., 422.  
 Corey, Elizabeth, 117.  
 Cork, Ireland, 79.  
 Corn, 238, 245, 253, 257.  
 Corning (Cornish), Eunice, 119.  
 Hannah, 445.  
 Malachi, 119.  
 Samuel, 445.  
 Corwin (Curwen), Abigail, 284.  
 George, 315, 316, 318, 378, 441.  
 Hannah, 366.  
 James Barr, 93.  
 Lydia, 441.  
 Rebecca Hovey, 93.  
 Samuel, 337.  
 Susanna, 441.  
 Cotta, Bethshua, 303.  
 John, 303.  
 Jone, 303.  
 Mary, 303.  
 Obadiah, 303.  
 Peter, 303.  
 Robert, 197, 303, 313, 316, 443,  
 455, 458, 463.  
 Cotton, John, 230.  
 Counts, Edward, 303.  
 Sarah, 303.  
 Court, The Indian, 50.  
 Court, Salem quarterly, 334.  
 Courtney, Sarah M., 74.  
 Coventry, England, 241.  
 Covington, Ky., 348.  
 Cowherds, 231.  
 Cow-house River, 289, 290.  
 Coy Pond, 9.  
 Cox, George, 131.  
 Hannah, 402.  
 Mary, 136.  
 Mehitable S., 423.  
 Sarah, 432.  
 Thomas, 110, 121, 132, 402.  
 Cradock, Damaris, 234.  
 Dorothy, 233.  
 Mary, 234.  
 Matthew, 89, 102, 104, 120, 125,  
 127, 135-137, 144, 145, 168, 169,  
 219, 232-234, 298, 326.  
 Rebecca, 234, 298.  
 Thomas, 234.  
 Cranch, John, 431.  
 Mary, 431.  
 Crane River, 8, 19, 20, 290.  
 Cratney, Andrew, 117.  
 Mary, 117.  
 Craven, S. C., 215.  
 Creamer, George, 71.  
 Hannah, 71.  
 Creese, Grace F., 398.  
 Creesy, Bethiah, 446.  
 Job, 446.  
 Cressy, Daniel, 132.



- Cressy, *continued*.  
   Mary, 445.  
   Mighill, 445.  
   Sarah, 132.  
 Crewkern, England, 365.  
 Crispin, Mehitable, 118.  
   Richard, 118.  
 Cromwell, Ann, 217.  
   Dorothy, 183.  
   Hannah, 283.  
   Jane, 420.  
   John, 184, 283.  
   Mary, 183, 391.  
   Oliver, 64.  
   Philip, 183, 315, 391.  
 Crosby, Mary, 432.  
   Peter, 432.  
 Cross, Mary, 305.  
   Sarah F., 400.  
 Crowell, Joseph Warner, 347.  
   Sarah Nichols, 347.  
 Crowninshield, Anstiss, 280.  
   Benjamin W., 337, 338.  
   George, 337.  
   Jacob, 71, 337.  
   John, 280, 285.  
   Sarah, 71, 285.  
 Cue, Anne, 251.  
   Mary, 305.  
   Robert, 305.  
 Cummings, Ann, 371.  
   Mary, 251.  
   Ruth, 282.  
   Stebbins, 282.  
 Cunney Island, 9.  
 Curtis, Andrew, 295.  
   Elizabeth, 83, 118.  
   Hannah, 295.  
   Samuel, 83.  
   Sarah, 244.  
   William, 197, 254.  
 Curwithen, David, 319.  
 Cushing, Catharine Sewall Pyn-  
   chon, 154.  
   David, 305.  
   Florence A., 78.  
   Mary, 305.  
   Thomas, 154.  
 Cushman, Mary, 233.  
   Robert, 66.  
   Thomas, 233.  
 Cutler, Ebenezer, 252.  
   Eunice, 356.  
   Ezekiel, 253.  
   Martha, 253.  
   Mary, 252, 295.  
 DA COSTA, Lydia Frances, 399.  
 Dagget, Rebecca, 118.  
 Daland, Elizabeth, 281.  
   Samuel, 394.  
   Sarah, 387.  
   Susanna, 394.  
 Dalrymple, John, 72.  
   Rebecca, 72.  
 Dalton, Sarah, 398.  
 Dam, Martha Washington, 76.  
 Dana, Eleazer, 349.  
   Elizabeth, 349.  
 Danbury, Conn., 75.  
 Danforth, Hannah, 442.  
   Mary, 395.  
 Daniel, Mrs., 423.  
   Alice, 256, 451, 455, 459, 464.  
   Elizabeth, 216.  
   Stephen, 69.  
   Susanna, 69.  
 Danvers, Mass., 1-6, 13, 18-21, 29,  
   36, 70-72, 91-93, 96, 118, 119,  
   132, 154, 209, 242, 243, 247-249,  
   251-253, 280, 290, 295, 296, 317,  
   323, 346, 347, 349, 351, 354, 355,  
   357, 358, 371, 372, 382, 384, 386-  
   389, 394-399, 422, 431, 432, 434,  
   439, 440, 451-453.  
 Danvers Plains, 6.  
 Danvers River, 8, 41, 81.  
 Danvers State Hospital, 5.  
 Darby fort, 6, 246, 348, 443.  
 Darby Fort Side, 236, 423, 427, 438,  
   459.  
 Darling, John, 340.  
   Mary, 340.  
   Sarah, 450.  
   Thomas, 450.  
 Davenport, Elizabeth, 94, 284.  
   Nathaniel, 94.  
   Richard, 94, 175, 197, 198, 231,  
   260, 283-285, 296, 352, 353, 374,  
   410, 412, 414, 415, 424, 448, 452,  
   454, 457, 459, 463, 465.  
   Samuel, 94.  
   Sarah, 94.  
   William, 94.  
 Davie, Humphrey, 441.  
   Margaret, 441.  
 Davis, Constance, 283.  
   Isaac, 366, 456.  
   Lydia, 278.  
   Mabel, 400.  
 Davison, Sarah, 206.  
 Day, Daniel, 251.  
   Moses, 247.  
   Sarah, 247.  
   Susanna, 251.

Day, *continued*.

Thomas, 314.

Deacons marsh, 316.

Deadman, Mary, 369.

Dean, Bethiah, 387.

George, 215.

Mary, 343, 344.

Sarah, 215, 250, 366.

Thomas, 366.

Dearbaugh, Mary, 437.

Dearborn, John H., 351.

Lavinia, 396.

Lucy R., 351.

Dedham, Mass., 270, 401, 440.

Deed of parsonage, 180.

Deeds, Indian, 46.

Del Rio, Texas, 350.

Deland, Benjamin, 242.

Elizabeth, 242.

Delano, Mary Jackson, 72.

Dempsey, Eliza, 440.

Denison, Gurdon E., 73.

Mary, 73.

Dennett, Christiana R., 389.

Elizabeth Osgood, 93.

Frederick J., 389.

G. A., 93.

Dennis, —, 305.

Elizabeth, 216, 355.

George, 355.

James, 450.

Joseph, 70.

Mary, 450.

Sarah, 70, 94.

Dent, Francis, 197, 284, 285, 378.

Deptford, England, 300.

Deputies to general court, 198.

Derby, Alice, 83.

Anna, 248.

Elias Hasket, 337.

Ezekiel Hersey, 337.

Hannah, 285.

John, 83, 337.

Lydia, 70, 451.

Rachel, 348.

Richard, 70, 337.

Roger, 451.

Sarah, 71, 382.

Tarrant Putnam, 348.

Desire (ship), 363, 414.

Devereaux, Ann, 218.

Anne, 218.

Bethiah, 218.

Elizabeth, 218.

Emma, 218.

Hannah, 218.

Humphrey, 218, 337.

Devereaux, *continued*.

John, 44, 204, 218, 445, 450, 457, 462.

Mary, 218.

Robert, 218.

Devereux Beach, Marblehead, 7.

Dexter, George, 93.

Sarah Rogers, 93.

Thomas, 201-203.

Diamond, Henry C., 76.

Rebecca, 342.

Susan M., 76.

Diamond bridge, 312.

Dickinson, Mary, 444.

Philemon, 444.

Dier, Sarah, 439.

Dike, Abigail, 280.

Anthony, 197, 206, 208, 223, 280, 314, 353, 375, 445, 455, 456, 458, 462.

Benjamin, 206.

Charity, 206.

Jonathan, 206.

Margery, 206.

Mary, 206.

Nathaniel, 206.

Sarah, 206.

Tabitha, 206, 208.

Diman, Amelia, 347.

James, 153, 347.

Mary, 153.

Dinsmore, Frances, 388.

Dirkwood, Hugh, 298.

Martha, 298.

Thomas, 298, 299.

Disarmament, 447.

Dismore, Mary, 439.

Thomas, 439.

Dissamore, Mary, 446.

Dix, Margaret E., 77.

Sarah E., 77.

Dixie, Abigail, 107, 444.

Anna, 107.

Elizabeth, 107, 370, 444.

Hannah, 107.

John, 6, 107, 444.

Margaret, 444.

Mary, 107, 402, 444.

Samuel, 444.

Sarah, 107.

Thomas, 47, 444, 462.

William, 47, 107, 197, 200, 240, 279, 406, 424, 454, 457, 461.

Dockham, Beulah, 358.

Stephen B., 358.

Doe, Charles Henry, 465.

Mary Waldo, 465.

Dodd, Bethiah, 214, 465.



- Dodd, *continued*.  
 Samuel, 369.  
 Sarah, 369.
- Dodge, Addie F., 339.  
 Anna, 353.  
 Azor, 339.  
 Cornelius, 339.  
 Deborah, 339.  
 Elizabeth, 83, 116, 117, 354, 370.  
 Ezra, 358.  
 George, 337.  
 Hannah, 83, 116, 117, 446.  
 Israel, 421.  
 Joanna, 117.  
 John, 58, 83, 116, 242.  
 Jonathan, 117.  
 Joshua, 117.  
 Joshua F., 339.  
 Larkin, 154.  
 Lucia Pickering, 72.  
 Lucinda, 358.  
 Lucy, 421.  
 Martha, 117, 339.  
 Mary, 79, 84, 117, 305.  
 Mary Alice, 339.  
 Mehitabel, 154.  
 Pickering, 337, 338.  
 Rebecca, 117.  
 Robert, 117.  
 Ruth, 132, 253.  
 Sarah, 83, 117.  
 Tamison, 242.  
 William, 79, 84, 116, 117, 135, 198, 370, 428, 459, 463.
- Dodge's Hill, Danvers, 5.
- Dog Pond rocks, Peabody, 3.
- Dogs, 208, 209, 377.
- Dolbier, Elizabeth, 96.
- Dole, Joseph, 91.  
 Ruth, 91.
- Dolliver, Alma M., 77.  
 Anna, 158.  
 Joseph, 307.  
 Margaret, 307.  
 Peter, 307.  
 William, 158.
- Dorchester, England, 116, 127.
- Dorchester, Mass., 235, 275, 285, 347, 365, 368, 421, 426, 445.
- Dorchester Company, 65, 68, 78, 98.
- Dorrell, John, 130.
- Dorrity, Jennie, 244.
- Dorsetshire, England, 135.
- Dorsey, Elizabeth, 422.  
 Hammond, 422.
- Douglas, Abigail, 116.  
 Alexander, 116.  
 Frances Ellen, 75.
- Douglas, *continued*.  
 George William, 75.  
 Keturah, 353.  
 William, 353.
- Dove, Hannah, 213.  
 Matthew, 213, 314.
- Dover, Mass., 73.
- Dover, N. H., 296, 349, 391, 450.
- Dowbridge, Andrew, 72.  
 Mary Needham, 72.
- Downing, Ann, 68.  
 Catherine, 281.  
 Elizabeth, 394, 395.  
 Emanuel, 198, 260, 318, 380.  
 Lucy, 239, 314.  
 Sarah, 248.  
 Thomas, 281.
- Downs, Mary Augusta, 75.
- Dowst, Jane, 382.  
 Mary, 393.  
 William, 382, 393.
- Drane, Augusta, 92.  
 Robert B., 92.
- Draper, Nicholas, 366, 443, 456, 460.
- Draper's point, 369.
- Drinkwater, Joseph, 119.  
 Mary, 119.
- Duck River, Danvers, 19, 289.
- Dudley, Abigail, 383.  
 Samuel, 383.  
 Thomas, 90, 198, 288.
- Dudson, Abigail, 392.
- Duluth, Minn., 466.
- Dumer, Nathaniel, 377.
- Dunbridge, Mr., 328.
- Dungeons, The, 9.
- Dunkle, Desire, 253.  
 Hezekiah, 253.
- Durgin, Charles, 76.  
 Eliza Ann, 76.
- Durkee, Lois, 117.
- Dutch, George, 355.  
 Mary, 286.  
 Rosamond, 355.  
 Sophia, 286.
- Dutch ship, 291.
- Dwight, Elizabeth, 95.
- Dwinnell, Joseph, 248.  
 Ruth, 248.
- EABORNE. See *Aborn*.
- Eager. See *Ager*.
- Eagle (ship), 190.
- Eagle head, Manchester, 19.
- Eagle Island, 9.
- Early, Abigail, 368.  
 George, 368.

- Earthenware, 13.  
 Earthquake, 23.  
 East Greenwich, R. I., 282.  
 East India trade, 92, 93.  
 Eastham, Mass., 79.  
 Easthampton, L. I., 340, 437.  
 Easthampton, Mass., 75.  
 Eaton, Benjamin, 153.  
     Mary, 386  
     Mercy, 153.  
     Theophilus, 145.  
 Edes, William, 116, 135.  
 Edgartown, Mass., 434.  
 Edgerly, Rebecca, 73.  
     Samuel W., 73.  
 Edson, Amanda Ingalls, 400.  
     Harold A., 400.  
     Samuel, 378.  
 Edwards, Elizabeth, 433.  
     John, 433.  
     Joseph, 433.  
     Joshua, 433.  
     Nathaniel, 433.  
     Sarah, 76.  
     Thomas, 319, 433, 434, 462.  
 Elford, John, 205, 271, 374, 456, 460.  
 Elizabeth, N. J., 347, 399.  
 Elizabeth (ship), 246, 404.  
 Elkins, Abigail, 214, 432.  
     John, 214, 432.  
 Ellenwood, Mary, 439.  
     William, 439.  
 Ellery, Hannah, 434.  
     William, 434.  
 Elliot, Abigail, 247.  
     Mary, 402.  
     Ruth, 250.  
     Stephen, 250.  
 Ellis, Benjamin P., 73.  
     Elizabeth West, 73.  
     Mary, 421.  
     Sarah, 369.  
     Thomas, 421.  
 Elson, Hannah, 345.  
     Hephzibah, 354.  
     Joseph, 354.  
 Elston, Jo., 232.  
 Elvin, Mrs., 423.  
 Elvins, Sarah, 153.  
 Elwell, Alice, 370.  
     Hannah, 75.  
     Robert, 319.  
 Elwood, Ralph, 240, 461.  
 Emerson, John, 294.  
     Mary, 294.  
 Emery, George, 314, 315, 390, 456, 460.  
     Mary, 390.  
     Teresa, 154.  
 Emmes, Hannah, 435.  
     Nathaniel, 435.  
 Endecott (Endicott), Aaron, 91, 92.  
     Abigail, 91.  
     Alice, 90.  
     Alice Thorndike, 93.  
     Ann, 91, 92.  
     Anna, 90, 91, 99, 125, 182.  
     Anne, 91.  
     Augusta, 92.  
     Benjamin, 91, 295.  
     Caroline, 93.  
     Charles, 92.  
     Charles Edward, 93.  
     Charles Moses, 92, 93.  
     Charles Upham, 93.  
     Clarissa, 92.  
     Damaris, 91.  
     Daniel, 91.  
     Edward, 93.  
     Elias, 91.  
     Elizabeth, 90-92, 201.  
     Elizabeth Osgood, 92, 93.  
     Ellen, 93.  
     Eunice, 91.  
     Fidelia, 92.  
     Frederic Gustavus, 93.  
     George, 93.  
     George Frederic, 93.  
     George Washington, 92.  
     Hannah, 91, 92, 241, 295, 391.  
     Harriet, 93.  
     Harriet Story, 93.  
     Helen Maria, 93.  
     Henry Bridges, 92.  
     Henry Collins, 93.  
     Horatio, 92.  
     Ingersoll Bowditch, 93.  
     Isaac Hull, 92.  
     Jacob, 92.  
     James Bridges, 92.  
     Jane, 92.  
     John, 47, 89-94, 97-102, 112, 114, 119, 120, 132, 133, 140, 141, 143-145, 147, 151, 152, 165-169, 173-175, 186, 189, 191, 193, 194, 196, 198, 201-203, 206, 208, 221, 228-230, 236, 237, 259-261, 264, 266, 289, 290, 301, 305, 309-311, 314, 317, 318, 327, 329, 332, 352, 410, 418, 419, 439, 448, 449, 451, 454, 463.  
     Joseph, 91, 92.  
     Julia, 92.



Endecott, *continued*.

- Julia Ann, 92.
- Lewis, 92, 93.
- Lewis Repillet, 92.
- Lydia, 91.
- Margaret, 90, 91.
- Margaret Josephine, 93.
- Margaret Oliver, 93.
- Maria Cecilia, 73, 92.
- Marie Louise, 93.
- Martha, 92.
- Martha Tucker, 92.
- Mary, 90-93, 306.
- Mary Coolidge, 93.
- Mary Crowninshield, 93.
- Mary Fitch Lydia Oliver, 93.
- Mehitable, 91.
- Moses, 92.
- Nancy, 92.
- Nathan, 92, 93.
- Rebecca, 92.
- Rebecca Hovey, 93.
- Robert, 91.
- Robert Edwards, 91.
- Ruth, 91, 92.
- Samuel, 91-93, 241, 337.
- Sarah, 91, 92.
- Sarah Ann, 92.
- Sarah B., 92.
- Sarah Emily, 92.
- Sarah Rogers, 93.
- Sarah Rolland, 93.
- Sarah Susanna, 92.
- Sarah Webb, 92.
- Susanna Bartlett, 92, 93.
- Thomas, 90.
- Timothy, 91.
- William, 91, 92.
- William Crowninshield, 90, 93, 175.
- William Fettyplace, 93.
- William Gardner, 93.
- William Putnam, 92, 93.
- Zerubbabel, 90, 91.
- Enfield, Conn., 371, 385, 418.
- England, 100, 158, 181, 286, 296, 307, 308, 366, 376, 438.
- English, Clement, 383.
- Joseph, 45, 46.
- Mary, 306, 383, 431.
- Philip, 131, 306, 379.
- Samuel, 45.
- Sarah, 131.
- Epes, Daniel, 300.
- Martha, 300.
- Epidemics among the Indians, 39.
- Episcopalians, 151.
- Epping, N. H., 387.
- Erie, Pa., 422.
- Erving, George, 70.
- Mehitable, 70.
- Essex, Mass., 399, 420.
- Essex Guards, 281.
- Essexshire, England, 298, 300.
- Estes, Sarah, 386.
- Estie (Estey), Ann, 368.
- Catherine, 368.
- Christopher, 368.
- Isaac, 225, 368, 441, 443.
- Jeffry, 368, 456, 461.
- Margaret, 368.
- Mary, 368.
- Nathaniel, 247.
- Ruth, 71, 247.
- Samuel, 71.
- Evans, Eliza R., 76.
- Evan, 356.
- Mary, 356.
- Eveleth, Susanna, 379.
- Ewstead, Richard, 117, 128.
- Exchange National Bank, 398.
- Exeter, N. H., 154, 246, 343, 373, 406, 443, 466.
- Explorations, 51.
- FABENS, Elizabeth, 132.
- Mary, 70, 387.
- Mary E., 77.
- Sarah, 74.
- Fairfield, Conn., 349, 443.
- Fairfield, Me., 215, 253.
- Fairfield, —, 373.
- Elizabeth, 84.
- John, 84.
- Rebecca S., 388.
- Sarah, 72, 418.
- Fales, Adaline D., 76.
- Walter, 76.
- Falmouth, Me., 131, 214, 344.
- Fanatic, 424.
- Farley, Louisa King, 350.
- Farley Creek, Md., 430.
- Farmer, Nancy, 423.
- Farmington, Conn., 422.
- Farr, George, 117, 136.
- Fasts, 112, 278, 412.
- Faulkner, Dorcas, 451.
- Edmund, 451.
- Favor, Mary Ann, 74.
- Timothy, 74.
- Fay, Helen Maria, 286.
- Fayette, Me., 250, 251.
- Felmingham, Francis, 443, 449, 464.
- John, 443.
- Mary, 443.
- Rebecca, 443.

- Felt, Benjamin, 343, 384, 456.  
   Charles Wilson, 347.  
   Deborah, 434.  
   Elizabeth, 95, 343, 345.  
   Ephraim, 345.  
   Hannah, 343, 348.  
   John, 344, 434.  
   Lucinda B., 399.  
   Martha Seeth, 347.  
   Mary, 397.  
   Sarah, 384.  
   Susanna, 344.  
 Felton, —, 455, 456, 458, 462.  
   Abigail, 242, 243, 245.  
   Amos, 242, 243.  
   Ann, 152, 241.  
   Anna, 241, 243.  
   Anne, 243.  
   Anthony, 243.  
   Archelaus, 243.  
   Benjamin, 198, 241-244, 304, 348, 362, 443, 462.  
   Betsey, 245.  
   Daniel, 241, 243.  
   David, 242, 243, 245.  
   Desire, 245.  
   Dorcas, 243.  
   Ebenezer, 241-243, 245.  
   Eleanor, 241.  
   Elisha, 242.  
   Elizabeth, 241-243, 368.  
   Esther, 243.  
   Eunice, 242.  
   Exercise, 241.  
   Hannah, 91, 241-243, 245.  
   Hasadiah, 242.  
   Hephzibah, 242-244.  
   Isaac, 242.  
   Isabell, 245.  
   Jacob, 242.  
   James, 245.  
   Jehoadan, 243.  
   Jennie, 244.  
   John, 241-243, 245, 383, 426.  
   Jonathan, 241, 243.  
   Joseph, 95, 243.  
   Judith, 241, 242.  
   Lydia, 242, 243, 245.  
   Malachi, 242, 243.  
   Margaret, 241, 242.  
   Mary, 95, 157, 241-243, 245, 383, 426.  
   Mehitable, 242, 243.  
   Nathan, 242.  
   Nathaniel, 152, 157, 241-243, 316, 368, 456, 462.  
   Rachel, 242.  
   Rebecca, 242, 243.  
 Felton, *continued*.  
   Remember, 241.  
   Ruth, 241, 243, 244.  
   Samuel, 241, 242, 246.  
   Sarah, 241-246.  
   Skelton, 241, 242, 245.  
   Stephen, 242, 243.  
   Susannah, 241.  
   Tamison, 242.  
   Thomas, 242.  
   Timothy, 242.  
   William, 242.  
   Zachariah, 242.  
   Zerviah, 242.  
 Fences, 238-240.  
 Fenner, Arthur, 269, 270.  
   Howlong, 269.  
   Mehitable, 270.  
 Ferguson, Archibald, 236.  
   Mary, 236.  
 Fermaies, Alice, 315.  
   Mark, 315.  
 Ferry lane, 85.  
 Ferry, Bass River, 404-406.  
   Marblehead, 6, 406.  
   North, 406.  
 Fettyplace, Mary Fitch Lynde  
   Oliver, 93.  
 Feveryear, Edmund, 287.  
   Mary, 287.  
 Field, Alexander, 314, 316.  
   Mary, 118.  
   Thomas, 118.  
 Fields, 240.  
 Fifth Monarchy Men, 424, 425.  
 Fillebrown, Harriet, 398.  
   Sarah Cox, 400.  
 Fish and Fisheries, 20, 62, 63, 67, 68, 80, 127, 137, 233, 246, 330, 363, 374, 381.  
 Fiske, Anne, 429, 430.  
   Benjamin, 430.  
   Bridget, 430.  
   Hannah, 88.  
   John, 198, 376, 428-430, 445, 464.  
   Joseph, 430.  
   Martha, 295, 376, 429, 430.  
   Moses, 430.  
   Rebecca, 430.  
   Samuel, 88, 430.  
   Sarah, 430, 440.  
   William, 429, 430, 440, 462.  
 Fitch, Benjamin, 433.  
   Charles Harrison, 154.  
   Elizabeth, 433.  
   Eunice, 367.  
   Susannah, 154.  
   Timothy, 367.



- Fitts, Bethiah, 251.  
     Ebenezer, 251.  
     Jonathan, 251.  
     Mary, 251.  
 Fitz, Nathaniel, 253.  
     Sarah, 253.  
 Flagg, Deborah, 427.  
     Eleazer, 427.  
     Joseph, 427.  
     Mary, 427.  
 Flags, 259, 260.  
 Flatman, Thomas, 464.  
 Flint, Alice, 420.  
     Anna, 118.  
     Ebenezer, 385.  
     Elizabeth, 118, 253.  
     Eunice, 357.  
     George, 68, 382, 385.  
     Gertrude, 385.  
     Hannah, 117, 439.  
     Jerusha, 385.  
     Jonathan, 439.  
     Lucy, 357.  
     Mary, 342.  
     Olive, 348.  
     Sarah, 382.  
     Susannah, 68.  
     Thomas, 117, 198.  
     William, 316.  
 Florence, Mass., 75.  
 "Flower of Essex," 283.  
 Fogg, David, 286.  
     Ezekiel, 286.  
     John, 286.  
     Louise P., 401.  
     Lucinda, 358.  
     Ralph, 197, 241, 255, 285, 286,  
         296, 314, 318, 336, 352, 375, 418,  
         427, 428, 452, 455, 459, 463.  
     Stephen, 358.  
     Susannah, 286.  
 Folger, Bethshua, 385.  
     Eleazer, 68.  
     Patience, 68.  
     Sarah, 68.  
 Follett, Mary, 442.  
     Percis, 278.  
 Folly Hill, 2, 4, 367.  
 Food, 329.  
 Foote, Abigail, 368, 369, 390.  
     Arthur, 369.  
     Caleb, 369.  
     Charles P., 400.  
     Eliza Dwight, 369.  
     Elizabeth, 242, 368, 369.  
     Enoch, 369.  
     Hannah, 369.  
     Henry Wilder, 369.  
 Foote, *continued*.  
     Isaac, 368, 369, 391.  
     John, 368, 369.  
     Jonathan, 369.  
     Kate G., 369.  
     Laura E., 400.  
     Malachi, 368, 369.  
     Margaret, 133, 368.  
     Martha, 368, 369.  
     Martha West, 369.  
     Mary, 368, 369.  
     Mary Wilder, 369.  
     Pasco, 368, 369, 375, 428, 456.  
     Ruth, 369.  
     Samuel, 368, 369.  
     Sarah, 241, 369.  
     Thomas, 368, 369.  
     William O. White, 369.  
 Ford, Phylis G., 401.  
     Wendell B., 401.  
 Forest River, 6, 8, 14, 42, 336.  
 Forest River Park, 30.  
 Forests, 14, 224, 237.  
 Forrester, Charles, 337.  
     Rachel, 285.  
     Simon, 285, 337.  
 Fort, The first, 171.  
 Fort, Indian, 27, 28.  
 Fort Lee, 29.  
 Fort Pickering, 36.  
 Forten Prison, England, 369.  
 Forth, John, 189.  
     Mary, 189.  
 Forts, 29, 36, 94, 171, 291.  
 Foster, Abigail, 96, 250.  
     Amos, 215.  
     Benjamin, 216.  
     Daniel, 96, 442.  
     David, 315, 450.  
     Ebenezer, 243.  
     Elizabeth, 216, 344, 442.  
     Esther, 389.  
     Frances, 253.  
     Gideon, 356.  
     Hannah, 96, 421, 450.  
     John, 315, 316, 344, 426.  
     John A., 389.  
     Joseph, 421.  
     Katherine, 426.  
     Lydia, 246, 353, 356.  
     Margaret, 91.  
     Martha, 426.  
     Mehitable, 383.  
     Richard, 353.  
     Samuel, 383.  
     Sarah, 215, 393.  
 Four Sisters (ship), 130, 134, 136,  
     137, 330.

- Fowey, England, 299.  
 Fowle, Hannah, 440.  
     Joseph, 440.  
     Sophia, 286.  
 Fowler, Ann, 247.  
     Elizabeth, 306, 442, 452.  
     Enoch, 247.  
     Ezekiel, 452.  
     Harriet, 323.  
     Harriet Putnam, 323.  
     John, 418.  
     Mary, 249.  
     Philip, 282, 306.  
     Sarah, 418.  
 Fowles, Mary, 369.  
 Fox, John, 270.  
     Mary, 270, 279.  
 Foxcroft, George, 145.  
 Foxwell, Richard, 206.  
 Frail, Mary, 371.  
     Samuel, 371.  
 Freak, Henry, 353, 354.  
 Freeman, —, 452, 457.  
 Freeman, 196, 197, 278, 301, 303, 317.  
 French, Benjamin F., 77.  
     Deliverance, 253.  
     Elizabeth, 371.  
     Harriet, 93.  
     Helen Maria, 93.  
     Henry, 93.  
     Mary, 367.  
     Susan B., 77.  
     William, 371.  
 French War, 251, 305, 357, 432.  
 Friend, Bethiah, 448.  
     Elizabeth, 448.  
     Hester, 448.  
     James, 441, 448.  
     John, 314, 448, 449, 462.  
     Mary, 441, 448.  
     Samuel, 448.  
 Frost, Mary, 367, 432.  
     Mary E., 216.  
 Frost-fish brook, 428.  
 Frost-fish River, 8, 21, 41, 289.  
 Fruits, 15, 16.  
 Fryar, Margaret, 68.  
     Thomas, 376.  
 Fuller, Archelaus, 387.  
     Elizabeth, 246, 395, 450.  
     Eunice, 248.  
     Hannah, 117, 440.  
     Jonathan, 95.  
     Marion R., 78.  
     Ruth, 387.  
     Samuel, 99, 151, 156, 177, 178, 395.  
 Fuller, *continued*.  
     Stephen, 117.  
     Susanna, 95.  
     Timothy, 248.  
     William, 246.  
 Fur company, 206-208.  
 Furs, 61, 62, 205, 208.  
 GACE, John, 172.  
 Gage, Lavinia, 349.  
     Moses, 117.  
     Rebecca, 384.  
     Sarah, 117.  
 Gager, Deborah, 365.  
     Elizabeth, 365.  
     John, 365.  
     Rebecca, 355.  
     Samuel, 355.  
 Gainford, England, 112.  
 Gale, Abraham, 342.  
     Ambrose, 235.  
     Bartholomew, 391.  
     Ebenezer Brooks, 422.  
     Edmund, 107.  
     Eunice, 422.  
     Lydia, 342.  
     Martha, 391.  
     Mary, 71.  
     Sampson, 422.  
     Sarah, 107, 422.  
 Gale's Point rocks, Manchester, 2.  
 Galley, Elizabeth, 281, 304.  
     Florence, 304.  
     John, 304, 446, 451, 454, 456, 461.  
 Galliopolis, O., 72.  
 Gallison, John, 235.  
     Joseph, 235.  
 Galloup, Daniel P., 347.  
     Mary F., 347.  
 Gallows' Hill, 2, 36.  
 Gannon, Annie V., 389.  
 Ganson, Abigail, 118.  
     Benjamin, 250.  
     Elizabeth, 251.  
     John, 118.  
     Lydia, 250.  
     Phebe, 432.  
 Gardner, Mr., 207.  
     Abbie, 74.  
     Abby Garrison, 76.  
     Abel, 69-72, 74, 76, 394.  
     Abel Henry, 73, 74.  
     Abel Symonds, 71, 72.  
     Abigail, 68, 71, 73, 74.  
     Abigail Phippen, 73.  
     Adaline D., 76.  
     Adelaide, 77.



*Gardner, continued.*

Adelaide Theresa, 75.  
 Agnes, 77.  
 Agnes L., 78.  
 Albert B., 77.  
 Albert G., 76.  
 Albert N., 77.  
 Alden B., 74, 77, 78.  
 Alma M., 77.  
 Andrew, 77.  
 Andrew Dowbridge, 75, 77.  
 Ann, 68, 69.  
 Ann Peal, 72.  
 Ann Rebecca, 77.  
 Anna, 71.  
 Anna B., 74.  
 Anna Rose, 73.  
 Anne P., 77.  
 Annie, 72, 77.  
 Annie L., 76.  
 Annie M., 77.  
 Arthur W., 76, 78.  
 Bartholomew, 69.  
 Benjamin, 69-72, 74.  
 Benjamin Brown, 73, 75, 76.  
 Benjamin Franklin, 75.  
 Benjamin Smithurst, 76.  
 Bethiah, 68, 70, 72, 132.  
 Betsey, 73, 74.  
 Caroline, 76.  
 Caroline Elizabeth, 75.  
 Caroline L., 77, 78.  
 Caroline Lovett, 72.  
 Carrie S., 77.  
 Charles, 73-75.  
 Charles Derby, 72.  
 Charles F., 76, 78.  
 Charles H., 76, 77.  
 Charles Henry, 75.  
 Charles J., 75.  
 Charles W., 73, 76.  
 Charles Warren, 76.  
 Charlotte, 78.  
 Charlotte Wylles, 75.  
 Chester Russell, 78.  
 Christopher, 218-222.  
 Clara Isabella, 77.  
 Clara P., 77.  
 Clarence A., 77.  
 Clarence W., 77.  
 Clinton West, 78.  
 Daisy M., 78.  
 Damaris, 68, 70.  
 Daniel, 69, 71.  
 Daniel B., 74, 77.  
 Daniel Bell, 72, 74.

*Gardner, continued.*

Daniel Peirce, 72.  
 David, 68, 72, 74.  
 David H., 74.  
 Deborah, 68.  
 Dorcas, 68.  
 Dorothy, 68, 78.  
 Eben S., 73.  
 Ebenezer, 68-71, 392.  
 Edson Fabens, 77, 78.  
 Edward Augustus, 73.  
 Edward Currier, 73.  
 Edward Edwards, 76.  
 Edward Warren, 76.  
 Eleanor, 78.  
 Eleanor B., 74.  
 Elinor Putnam, 73.  
 Eliza, 73, 75.  
 Eliza A., 72, 74.  
 Eliza Ann, 76.  
 Eliza C., 76.  
 Eliza I., 75.  
 Eliza Peele, 72.  
 Eliza R., 76.  
 Elizabeth, 68-72, 74, 75, 152, 384, 395, 434, 435, 442.  
 Elizabeth B., 74.  
 Elizabeth Beckford, 72.  
 Elizabeth Bell, 74.  
 Elizabeth E., 77.  
 Elizabeth G., 72.  
 Elizabeth R., 73.  
 Elizabeth West, 73.  
 Ellen, 74.  
 Ellen K., 73.  
 Emeline Augusta, 74.  
 Emily G., 76.  
 Emily Maria, 73.  
 Emma, 71.  
 Emma Estella, 76.  
 Emma K., 76.  
 Emma Martha, 75.  
 Emma S., 75.  
 Esther, 71, 153, 158.  
 Ethel Warren, 78.  
 Etta, 75.  
 Etta Augusta, 77.  
 Eunice, 69, 70, 74, 395.  
 Eunice F., 76.  
 Eunice S., 75.  
 Fanny, 76.  
 Florence A., 78.  
 Florence Ingalls, 77.  
 Frances Ellen, 75.  
 Francis, 73.  
 Francis Alonzo, 75.  
 Frank Augustine, 77, 78.

Gardner, *continued.*

Franklin Augustus, 76.  
 Frederick Mack, 76.  
 George, 68-72, 314, 450, 464.  
 George A., 74, 77.  
 George Endicott, 73.  
 George Thomas, 75.  
 George W., 76, 77.  
 Georgia Willis, 77.  
 Gertrude E., 77.  
 Habakkuk, 69, 441.  
 Hannah, 68-75, 158, 441.  
 Hannah H., 76.  
 Hannah S., 77.  
 Hannah Shale, 75.  
 Hannah Wallis, 75.  
 Hapscot, 69.  
 Harriet, 75.  
 Harriet F., 73.  
 Harriet Kittridge, 72.  
 Harriet L., 76.  
 Harriet N., 389.  
 Harriet Newell, 75.  
 Hattie L., 77.  
 Helen A., 78.  
 Helen J., 77.  
 Henrietta, 75.  
 Henry, 71-73, 76.  
 Henry Allen, 72, 75.  
 Henry Massey, 74.  
 Henry Richard, 73.  
 Henry Wallis, 77.  
 Hope, 69.  
 Horace Bell, 75, 77.  
 Howard, 77.  
 Howard Punchard, 75, 77.  
 Inez P., 77.  
 Israel, 69, 70.  
 James, 68, 69, 434.  
 James William, 74.  
 Jane, 72, 74.  
 Jane G., 76.  
 John, 68-74, 76, 358, 421, 435, 442.  
 John Brown, 76.  
 John Endicott, 73.  
 John H., 76.  
 John Henry, 74.  
 John Wesley, 73.  
 Jonathan, 68-73, 75, 337, 421.  
 Joseph, 68-74, 76, 77, 385.  
 Joseph Dennett, 75, 77.  
 Joseph H., 77.  
 Joseph Henry, 75.  
 Joseph M., 76.  
 Joseph Pitman, 72.  
 Laura, 75.  
 Laurina P., 73.

Gardner, *continued.*

Lillian, 77.  
 Lillian Warner, 77.  
 Lillie J., 77.  
 Lois, 71.  
 Louisa A., 78.  
 Louisa Elizabeth, 75.  
 Louisa G., 75.  
 Love, 69.  
 Lucia Pickering, 72.  
 Lucy A., 77.  
 Lucy Ann Wilson, 75.  
 Lucy F., 75.  
 Lucy Foster, 75.  
 Lucy Marion, 77.  
 Lydia, 70, 71, 73.  
 Lydia N., 76.  
 Mabel Pope, 77.  
 Mabel S., 78.  
 Mahala, 75.  
 Margaret, 68-70, 75, 434.  
 Margaret Ann, 74.  
 Margaret E., 77.  
 Margaret Hilliard, 72.  
 Margaret M., 74.  
 Maria Cecelia, 73.  
 Marion R., 78.  
 Marion Wallace, 77.  
 Martha, 73, 76.  
 Martha Ann, 73.  
 Martha Washington, 76.  
 Mary, 68-74, 158, 253, 383, 421.  
 Mary Abby, 74.  
 Mary Ann, 74, 75.  
 Mary Augusta, 75.  
 Mary C., 72.  
 Mary E., 76-78.  
 Mary Eliza, 72, 77.  
 Mary Elizabeth, 77.  
 Mary Frances, 75.  
 Mary H., 76.  
 Mary J., 77.  
 Mary Jackson, 72.  
 Mary Jane, 76.  
 Mary Lizzie, 78.  
 Mary Manning, 75.  
 Mary Needham, 72.  
 Mary Putnam, 73.  
 Mary S., 78.  
 Mary W., 73.  
 Matilda, 76.  
 Mehitabel, 68-71, 385.  
 Melvina T., 76.  
 Mercy, 69.  
 Mercy Wellman, 74.  
 Miranda Swan, 75.  
 Miriam, 68, 465.



Gardner, *continued.*

Molly, 71.  
 N. Augusta, 77.  
 Nancy, 72-74.  
 Nathaniel, 68-70.  
 Nellie Hull, 77.  
 Patience, 68.  
 Patty, 71.  
 Pauline, 78.  
 Pierce L. Wiggin, 74.  
 Priscilla, 69-72, 435.  
 Rachel, 68, 73, 431.  
 Rebecca, 71-73.  
 Rebecca Knapp, 72.  
 Rebecca M., 76.  
 Richard, 68, 69, 71-73.  
 Ruth, 68-71, 74, 284, 441.  
 Sadie, 78.  
 Samuel, 68-74, 76, 153, 314, 337, 379, 430, 435.  
 Samuel Endicott, 73.  
 Samuel Knapp, 71, 73.  
 Samuel Pickering, 71.  
 Samuel S., 74.  
 Sarah, 68, 69, 71-74, 76, 392, 394, 465.  
 Sarah Derby, 72.  
 Sarah E., 76, 77.  
 Sarah Ellen, 74.  
 Sarah Helen, 76.  
 Sarah M., 74.  
 Sarah Neal, 73.  
 Sarah Tewksbury, 74.  
 Seeth, 79, 435, 465.  
 Simon, 71, 72, 74.  
 Simon Stacey, 70, 71.  
 Simon Warren, 75.  
 Simon Wesley, 75.  
 Simon Winthrop, 75.  
 Stephen Wilson, 75, 77.  
 Stuart Needham, 78.  
 Sukey Stevens, 71.  
 Susan B., 77.  
 Susan Charlotte, 77.  
 Susan L., 74, 358.  
 Susan M., 76.  
 Susannah, 68, 69.  
 Thomas, 68-70, 73, 93, 152, 158, 198, 240, 241, 315, 317, 318, 352, 377, 379, 383, 424, 438, 450, 455, 459, 463, 464.  
 Thomas Barnard West, 465.  
 Thomas F., 73.  
 Thomas H., 76.  
 Thomas Needham, 74, 77.  
 Thomas West, 72, 73.  
 Timothy, 74.

Gardner, *continued.*

Timothy F., 74.  
 Waldo Dennett, 77, 78.  
 Waldo Johnson, 78.  
 Walter Balfour, 75.  
 Warren Henry, 75.  
 Weld, 71.  
 Willard H. W., 78.  
 William, 73, 74, 76.  
 William D., 76, 77.  
 William Fairfield, 72.  
 William Francis, 76.  
 William French, 73, 77.  
 William Frost, 76.  
 William G., 77.  
 William Henry, 75, 76-78.  
 William Luther, 73.  
 William O., 74.  
 Willis, 75.  
 Willis G., 77.  
 Wilson I., 76.  
 Garford, Ann, 302, 314.  
 Garvas, 198, 241, 302, 314, 318, 319, 342, 419, 438, 455, 456, 461.  
 Garney, Margaret D., 358.  
 Gaskell (Gascoyne, Gaskin), Alice, 391, 420.  
 Bethiah, 68, 391.  
 Content, 391.  
 Daniel, 391.  
 Ebenezer, 391.  
 Edward, 91, 315, 391, 392, 456, 460.  
 Hannah, 91, 391.  
 Jonathan, 391, 420.  
 Josiah, 391.  
 Mary, 294, 391.  
 Nathan, 391.  
 Patience, 391.  
 Preserved, 391.  
 Provided, 391.  
 Samuel, 68, 315, 391.  
 Sarah, 391.  
 Gatchell (Getchell), Charles W., 399.  
 Elizabeth, 444.  
 Jeremiah, 444.  
 John, 444.  
 Lizzie F., 399.  
 Mary, 431.  
 Wayborow, 444.  
 Wibera, 444.  
 Gauden, Henry, 94.  
 Geardrick, Lydia, 73.  
 Gedney, Abigail, 442.  
 Anna, 441.  
 Anne, 441.

*Gedney, continued.*

- Bartholomew, 42, 43, 315, 379, 441, 442.  
 Bethiah, 249, 441.  
 Catherine, 441.  
 Deborah, 441.  
 Ebenezer, 441.  
 Edmund, 441.  
 Eleazer, 441.  
 Elizabeth, 441.  
 Hannah, 69, 435, 441, 442.  
 John, 198, 241, 314, 315, 381, 440, 441, 452, 462.  
 Jonathan, 441, 442.  
 Lydia, 441.  
 Margaret, 441.  
 Martha, 441.  
 Mary, 441, 442.  
 Nathaniel, 441, 442.  
 Priscilla, 441.  
 Ruth, 69, 441.  
 Samuel, 441, 442.  
 Sarah, 441, 442.  
 Susanna, 441.  
 William, 69, 441, 442.  
 Geer, George, 365.  
   Sarah, 365.  
 Geere, Triphena, 450.  
 George, Lake, Battle of, 251.  
 George Bonaventure (ship), 104, 110, 114, 116, 120, 121, 128, 129, 132, 134, 143, 149.  
 Georgetown, Mass., 398.  
 Germantown, Pa., 422.  
 Gerrish, Benjamin, 315.  
   Elizabeth, 158.  
   Hannah 158.  
   John, 158.  
   Lydia, 431.  
   Samuel, 337.  
 Gibbons, Edward, 165, 166.  
 Gibbs, John, 110, 133.  
 Gibson, Elizabeth, 90, 201.  
   John F., 76.  
   Sarah Helen, 76.  
 Giddings, John, 305.  
   Sarah, 305.  
 Gifford, James, 431.  
   Susanna, 431.  
 Gift (ketch), 377.  
 Gilbert, Aaron, 386.  
   Abigail, 382.  
   Elizabeth, 91.  
   Mary, 386.  
   Nathaniel, 91.  
 Giles, Abigail, 251, 281, 282.  
   Ann, 282.

*Giles, continued.*

- Bartholomew, 282.  
 Bridget, 281, 282.  
 Edward, 197, 279, 281, 282, 286, 424, 455, 457, 464.  
 Eleazer, 281, 282.  
 Eliezer, 281.  
 Elizabeth, 281, 282, 304, 440.  
 Esther, 282, 439.  
 Hannah, 281, 282.  
 James, 281.  
 John, 281, 282, 304, 439.  
 Lydia, 282.  
 Mary, 282.  
 Mehitable, 281, 383.  
 Mercy, 282.  
 Nathan, 282.  
 Remember, 281.  
 Ruth, 281, 282.  
 Samuel, 281, 282.  
 Sarah, 281, 282.  
 Susanna, 281, 282.  
 Thomas, 282.  
 William, 282.  
 Gilford, Benjamin, 248.  
   Lydia, 248.  
 Gillis, Elizabeth R., 73.  
 Gipps, Anne, 430.  
 Girdler, Anna, 357.  
   Elizabeth, 396.  
   Richard, 357.  
   Sarah, 357.  
 Glacier effects, 9.  
 Glastonbury, Conn., 418.  
 Glidden, Eliza A., 74.  
   Joseph L., 74.  
 Globe Tavern, 342.  
 Gloucester, Mass., 73, 74, 83, 131, 158, 217, 281, 282, 306, 354, 357, 369, 370, 379, 390, 392, 396, 397, 434, 465.  
 Gloucester, R. I., 252.  
 Glover, Lazarus, 303.  
   Martha Ervin, 400.  
   Mary O., 216.  
   Rebecca, 234, 298.  
   Richard, 234, 298.  
   Ruth, 303, 380.  
   Samuel J., 396.  
   Sophia, 396.  
   Stephen, 380.  
 Goat Hill, Beverly, 2.  
 Goatherd, 231.  
 Godsoe, Elizabeth, 307.  
   William, 307.  
 Goffe, Thomas, 89, 125, 145, 168, 169.



Goldsmith, Catherine F., 401.  
   Clara Isabella, 77.  
   Edward B., 77.  
   Julia A., 400.  
   Mary, 417.  
   Richard, 417.  
 Goldthwaite, Aaron, 357-359.  
   Abigail, 357, 358.  
   Amelia P., 358.  
   Amelia R., 358.  
   Ann A., 358.  
   Anna, 357, 358.  
   Annie, 359.  
   Benjamin, 357.  
   Benjamin F., 358.  
   Bessie Florence, 359.  
   Beulah, 358.  
   Caroline E., 389.  
   Charles, 358, 359.  
   Charles Sumner, 359.  
   Christiana Rose, 358.  
   Daniel, 357.  
   David, 294, 356, 357.  
   Dolly, 358.  
   Dolly Maria, 358.  
   Ebenezer, 71, 357.  
   Edward A., 358.  
   Edward Augustus, 359.  
   Elijah, 357.  
   Eliza Ann, 358.  
   Elizabeth, 356, 357, 374.  
   Elizabeth Adams, 358.  
   Elizabeth Barker, 358.  
   Elizabeth Holt, 359.  
   Ellen A., 358.  
   Esther, 356, 357.  
   Eunice, 356, 357.  
   Ezekiel, 356-358.  
   Ezra, 358.  
   Francis, 358.  
   George, 358.  
   George Edward, 358.  
   Georgianna Bagley, 359.  
   Hannah, 96, 356-358.  
   Hannah Augusta, 358.  
   Helen, 358.  
   Ida May, 359.  
   Isa M., 359.  
   Jacob, 357.  
   James, 357, 358.  
   Jane, 356.  
   Jennie Leslie, 359.  
   Joel, 358.  
   John, 356-358.  
   Jonathan, 356, 357.  
   Joseph, 294, 356, 357.  
   Lawrence Winslow, 359.  
   Lizzie, 358.

Goldthwaite, *continued*.  
   Lois, 357.  
   Lucinda, 358.  
   Lucinda Dodge, 358.  
   Lucy, 357.  
   Luther, 358.  
   Luther M., 358.  
   Lydia, 356.  
   Mabel Johnson, 359.  
   Margaret, 358.  
   Margaret D., 358.  
   Mariella, 359.  
   Martha, 358.  
   Mary, 294, 356-359.  
   Mary A., 358.  
   Mary Abby, 359.  
   Mary E., 359.  
   Mehitable, 356, 358.  
   Moses, 358.  
   Nathaniel, 356, 357.  
   Patience, 357.  
   Prudence, 358.  
   Rachel, 356.  
   Rebecca, 71, 356-358.  
   Rosa Foster, 359.  
   Ruth, 356.  
   Samuel, 254, 316, 356, 357.  
   Sarah, 294, 356, 357.  
   Sarah Holt, 359.  
   Sophronia E., 358.  
   Stephen, 357.  
   Susan Ellen, 358.  
   Susan L., 74, 358.  
   Thomas, 197, 225, 313, 315, 356,  
     357, 455, 456, 463.  
   Wilbur, 359.  
   Willard, 358, 359.  
   William, 357.  
   William Johnson, 358.  
   William Summers, 359.  
   William W., 389.  
   Willie, 359.  
 Goodale, Abigail, 246, 247, 250, 418.  
   Abraham, 246-248.  
   Amos, 247.  
   Ann, 247.  
   Anna, 247, 248.  
   Anne, 248.  
   Asa, 248.  
   Barbara, 249.  
   Bartholomew, 247, 248.  
   Benjamin, 246.  
   Catharine, 246.  
   David, 246-248, 250.  
   Deborah, 247.  
   Ebenezer, 246, 247.  
   Ede, 248.

- Goodale, *continued*.  
   Edward, 247.  
   Eleazer, 248, 440.  
   Eliezer, 247.  
   Elizabeth, 246-249, 418, 452.  
   Emma, 248.  
   Enoch, 247, 248, 452.  
   Enos, 247.  
   Esther, 95, 246-248.  
   Eunice, 247, 248.  
   Experience, 248.  
   Ezekiel, 246, 249.  
   Hannah, 246-249, 440.  
   Henry, 247.  
   Hester, 246.  
   Huldah, 248.  
   Isaac, 246, 247.  
   Jacob, 246-248.  
   James, 247, 249.  
   John, 246-248.  
   Jonathan, 246, 247.  
   Joseph, 246-248.  
   Joshua, 247-249.  
   Keturah, 247.  
   Lucy R., 351.  
   Lydia, 247-249.  
   Margaret, 246.  
   Mary, 246-249, 371, 450.  
   Mehitable, 248.  
   Nathan, 248, 249.  
   Nathaniel, 247, 248.  
   Oliver F., 351.  
   Patience, 246.  
   Phebe, 247, 248.  
   Polly, 249.  
   Rachel, 247.  
   Rebecca, 247, 249.  
   Robert, 8, 246, 247, 249, 315, 456, 461.  
   Ruth, 247, 248.  
   Samuel, 246-249, 450.  
   Sarah, 242, 246-249.  
   Thankful, 247-249.  
   Thomas, 246.  
   William, 248.  
   Zachariah, 246-248, 418.  
   Zachary, 247.  
 Goodale's spring, 8.  
 Goode, Abigail, 117.  
 Gooden, Elizabeth, 371.  
 Goodhue, Benjamin, 287, 337.  
   Bethiah, 283, 353, 435.  
   Jonathan, 70.  
   Martha, 287.  
   Mary, 350.  
   Ruth, 70.  
   William, 283, 353.  
 Goodman, Margaret, 426.  
 Goodrich, Caleb, 73.  
   Emeline P., 216.  
   Mary, 73.  
 Goodwin, Hannah, 73.  
   Hannah H., 76.  
   John, 73.  
 Gookin, Daniel, 43, 44.  
   Mary, 442.  
 Gooll, John, 421.  
   Lois, 421.  
 Goose, John, 390.  
   Mary, 390.  
   William, 314, 390, 391, 456, 461.  
 Gorges, Ferdinando, 141, 221.  
 Gorman, Lydia, 298.  
 Gorton, Samuel, 271, 273, 274.  
 Gosnold, Bartholomew, 51.  
 Gosport, England, 284.  
 Gott, Charles, 94, 152, 154, 156, 164, 197, 198, 261, 316, 352, 381, 442, 454, 459, 462.  
   Daniel, 94.  
   Deborah, 94.  
   Lydia, 94.  
   Mary, 94.  
   Sarah, 94, 283.  
 Gould, Bethiah, 250, 353.  
   Daniel, 95.  
   Dorcas, 451.  
   Hannah, 250.  
   Joseph, 252, 353.  
   Mary, 250, 340.  
   Provided, 253.  
   Rebecca, 253.  
   Sarah, 95, 252.  
 Goult, William, 314.  
 Goulworth, John, 204.  
 Gove, Aroline C., 338.  
   Eliza C., 76.  
   William Henry, 338.  
 Government, Seat of, removed, 185.  
 Governor's Plain, 289, 419.  
 Gower, Anna, 90.  
 Gowing, Hannah, 421.  
   Sarah, 357.  
 Grafton, Goodwife, 446.  
   Abigail, 435.  
   Ann, 435.  
   Anna, 436.  
   Anne, 436.  
   Bethiah, 283, 353, 435.  
   Eliza, 436.  
   Elizabeth, 69, 236, 430, 435, 436.  
   Esther, 436.  
   George, 437.  
   Gilman, 436.  
   Hannah, 435, 441.



Grafton, *continued*.

- Hasina, 435.
- Jane, 435.
- Jehoaden, 435.
- John, 79, 435, 465.
- Joseph, 69, 153, 198, 283, 305, 314, 353, 373, 430, 435, 436, 455, 458.
- Joshua, 280, 435, 436, 441, 462.
- Judith, 435.
- Lydia, 436.
- Margaret, 435, 439.
- Martha, 435, 436.
- Mary, 153, 280, 287, 435, 436.
- Nathaniel, 236, 435.
- Priscilla, 69, 435.
- Remember, 435.
- Samuel, 435.
- Sarah, 435.
- Seeth, 79, 435, 465.
- Susannah, 436.
- William, 435.
- Woodbridge, 436.
- Grange, Bryan, 378.
- Grant, Esther, 387.
- Hannah, 38, 442.
- Henry, 387.
- Graves, Benjamin, 427.
- Dorothy, 427.
- Elizabeth, 349, 427.
- John, 427.
- Joseph, 427.
- Mary, 427.
- Richard, 314, 375, 427, 452, 464.
- Susan Charlotte, 77.
- Thomas, 105, 121, 124, 126, 140, 147, 171, 197, 309.
- Graves Island, 2.
- Gravesend, England, 105, 130, 309.
- Gravestones, 183.
- Gray, Abigail, 307.
- Anna, 154.
- Edith Danera, 401.
- Elizabeth, 92, 422.
- James, 92.
- Nancy, 154.
- Ruth, 344.
- Samuel, 154, 307, 344.
- Sarah, 372.
- Thomas, 203, 204.
- William, 337.
- Great Baddow, England, 370.
- Great Cove, 429.
- Great Egg rock, 2.
- Great Yarmouth, England, 402, 421, 437.
- Greek Lexicon, 423.
- Green, —, 452, 462.
- Abigail, 374.

Green, *continued*.

- Alice, 256.
- Angeline, 423.
- Anne, 55, 342.
- Annie, 88.
- Edward, 55.
- Elizabeth, 390.
- John, 88, 256, 269, 273, 303, 342.
- Louisa, 345.
- Martha, 117.
- Mary, 96, 303.
- Nathan, 249.
- Samuel, 345.
- Sarah, 117.
- Susannah, 69.
- Thankful, 249.
- Thomas, 117.
- Greenfield, Barbara, 443.
- Hannah, 218.
- Mary, 443.
- Peter, 218.
- Samuel, 443.
- Susan, 443.
- Greenleaf, Joseph, 73.
- Lydia, 73.
- Greenway, Dorothy, 233.
- Richard, 449.
- Griffin, Lydia, 216.
- Lydia Augusta, 400.
- Nathaniel, 216.
- Sarah, 283.
- Griggs, Rebecca, 353.
- Sarah, 370.
- Grimes, Jane, 251.
- Jonathan, 251.
- Grinslate, Hannah, 451.
- Groce, Lucy, 347.
- Groton, England, 189, 190, 438.
- Grout, John, 243.
- Ruth, 243.
- Grove, Edward, 182, 183, 314.
- Grover, Abigail, 370.
- Deborah, 369.
- Edmund, 368, 369, 456, 460.
- Hannah, 370.
- John, 283, 369, 370.
- Lydia, 369.
- Mary, 369.
- Naomi, 369.
- Nehemiah, 369, 370.
- Ruth, 369.
- Sarah, 283, 370.
- Groves, Hannah, 117.
- Grush, Martha, 76.
- Guilford, Conn., 157.
- Gunnison, Deborah, 131, 215.
- Elisha, 215.
- Gutch, Robert, 174, 314, 378.

- Gwinn, Mary, 344.  
Thaddeus, 344.
- HACKER, Hannah, 385.  
Isaac, 385.
- Hackett, Jude, 247.  
Mary, 247.
- Hackford, William, 375, 419, 462.
- Hadlock, James, 249.  
Rebecca, 249.
- Hadlock's bridge, 290.
- Haines, Benjamin, 433.  
Daniel, 433.  
Francis, 235.  
Hannah, 433.  
James, 198, 433.  
John, 433.  
Jonathan, 433.  
Joseph, 433.  
Mary, 433.  
Sarah, 131, 353, 382, 433.  
Thomas, 353, 433.  
William, 131, 433.
- Hale, Joanna, 117.  
Lydia, 249.  
Mary, 249.  
Thomas, 197, 249.
- Hall, Abigail, 282.  
Ebenezer, 154.  
John, 445.  
Margaret, 75.  
Mary, 154.  
Rebecca Hathorne, 285.  
Susanna, 282.
- Halsey, Jane, 356.  
John, 356.
- Hambleton, Martha, 371.
- Hamilton, Hannah, 243.  
Moses, 243, 244.  
Ruth, 244.
- Hampton, N. H., 370, 386, 421, 443.
- Hampton, Henry, 283.  
Sarah, 283.
- Hampton Falls, N. H., 421.
- Hanet, Robert, 328.
- Hanscom, Carrie S., 77.  
Mary, 348.
- Hanson, Benjamin, 95.  
Elizabeth, 95, 450.  
Josephine M., 400.
- Haraden, Hannah, 346.
- Harback, Abigail, 253.
- Harbors, 9.
- Hardy, Benjamin, 287.  
Elizabeth, 287, 370.  
Hannah, 287.  
James, 252, 287.
- Hardy, *continued*.  
John, 116, 197, 285-287, 318, 352.  
377, 428, 452, 454, 458, 462.  
Joseph, 287, 314, 316, 377, 420,  
435.  
Martha, 287.  
Mary, 287, 435.  
Ruth, 252, 287, 343.  
Sarah, 287, 420.  
Seeth, 287.  
William, 287.
- Harker, Ebenezer, 68.  
Patience, 68.
- Harmon, Hannah, 371.  
Roger, 130, 134.
- Harnet, Edward, 314.  
Eunice, 314.
- Harris, Andrew, 269.  
Elizabeth, 355.  
George, 210, 400, 407, 429, 454,  
456, 464.  
Howlong, 269.  
Job, 248.  
Joseph, 315, 408,  
Mary, 269.  
Mehitable, 398.  
Ruth, 248.  
Susanna, 269.  
Toleration, 269.  
William, 269, 273.
- Hart, Elias, 217.  
Florence, 449.  
Jane, 217.  
John, 449, 456 461.  
Lydia, 432.  
Mary, 283, 449.  
Rachel, 383.  
Samuel, 91, 283.  
Sarah, 91, 283.  
Thomas, 283.
- Hartford, Conn., 68, 157, 244, 371,  
426, 434.
- Hartshorne, Abiah, 253.
- Harvard College, 159, 335-338.
- Harvey, Emeline Augusta, 74.  
Jehoadan, 152.  
John J., 74.  
Richard, 154.
- Harwood, Elizabeth, 118, 444.  
George, 144, 168, 169.  
Hannah, 371.  
Henry, 197, 314, 316, 319, 378.  
John, 371, 444.  
Joseph, 371.  
Ruth, 371.
- Haskell, Elizabeth, 286, 370.  
Hannah, 83, 370, 402.  
Joanne, 370.



Haskell, *continued*.

John, 370.  
 Josiah, 370.  
 Mark, 370.  
 Roger, 286, 370, 402, 404, 456, 461.  
 Ruth, 369.  
 Samuel, 370.  
 Sarah, 83, 370.  
 Thomas, 6.  
 William, 370.  
 Haskett, Sarah, 132.  
 Haskins, Abigail, 250.  
 Hatch, Jessie M., 401.  
 Hatherly, Timothy, 232.  
 Hathorne, Abigail, 284, 285.  
   Agnes, 286.  
   Ann, 284.  
   Anna, 284.  
   Benjamin, 284, 285.  
   Benjamin Herbert, 285, 286.  
   Catharine, 285.  
   Daniel, 284, 285.  
   Ebenezer, 284, 285.  
   Eleazer, 284, 314.  
   Elizabeth, 284, 285.  
   Elizabeth Clarke, 286.  
   Elizabeth Manning, 286.  
   Ellen, 285.  
   Eunice, 285.  
   Ezra Dutch, 286.  
   Fanny, 286.  
   Freestone, 284.  
   George, 284-286.  
   Hannah, 280, 284, 285.  
   Helen Maria, 286.  
   Henry, 285.  
   Henry Gates, 286.  
   John, 44, 68, 284-286, 379, 442.  
   John Touzell, 285.  
   Jonathan, 284.  
   Joseph, 284.  
   Judith, 216, 285.  
   Maria Louisa, 286.  
   Mary, 284-286.  
   Nathaniel, 158, 284-286.  
   Phebe, 284.  
   Philip, 285.  
   Priscilla, 284.  
   Rachel, 285.  
   Rebecca, 285.  
   Robert, 284.  
   Ruth, 68, 284, 285, 344.  
   Ruth Ann, 286.  
   Samuel, 284.  
   Sarah, 91, 158, 284, 285.  
   Sophia, 286.  
   Susan Herbert, 286.

Hathorne, *continued*.

Susannah, 132, 285, 442.  
 William, 5, 197, 241, 284-286, 314, 318, 352, 364, 420, 448, 451, 452, 457, 463.  
 William Jones, 286.  
 Hathorne's Hill, Danvers, 5.  
 Haverhill, Mass., 70, 283, 287, 431, 448.  
   Indian attack on, 252, 253.  
 Haverhill, N. H., 345.  
 Haward, Richard, 135.  
 Hawes, Matthias, 269.  
 Hawkes, Abigail, 344.  
   John, 236.  
   Rebecca, 236.  
   Ruth, 92.  
 Hawkins, Deborah, 247.  
   Mary, 383.  
 Hay, Lydia, 387.  
 Hayden, Sarah, 95.  
 Hayford, Sarah Elizabeth, 216.  
 Haynes, James, 368.  
   John, 174, 198.  
 Hayward, Anna, 107.  
   Elizabeth, 246.  
   Ezekiel, 353.  
   Henry, 376.  
   Nicholas, 107.  
   Priscilla, 252.  
   Ruth, 353.  
   William, 252.  
 Haywood, Hepzibah, 243.  
   Samuel, 243.  
 Hazel, Mary, 73.  
   Peter, 73.  
 Hazelton, Catharine, 271.  
   Hannah S., 77.  
   James, 271.  
 Head, Abby Garrison, 76.  
 Hearse, Abel, 71.  
   Mary, 71.  
 Helwise, —, 284.  
 Henderson, Rachel, 423.  
   Sarah Ellen, 350.  
 Henfield, Gideon, 372.  
   Hannah, 250.  
   Joseph, 69.  
   Mary, 69, 249.  
   Mercy, 372.  
   William, 250.  
 Henningren, Henrietta, 351.  
 Herbert, Abigail, 442.  
   Benjamin, 70, 442.  
   Ebenezer, 442.  
   Elizabeth, 70, 442.  
   Hannah, 442.  
   John, 315, 378, 440-442, 462.

Herbert, *continued*.

- Joseph, 442.
- Judith, 442.
- Mary, 442.
- Robert, 442.
- Susannah, 285, 393, 442.
- William, 442.
- Hercules (ship), 346.
- Heresy, 446.
- Herney, Sarah, 384.
- Herrick, Abigail, 305, 353.
  - Addie F., 339.
  - Ann, 305.
  - Anna, 119, 431.
  - Benjamin, 305, 306.
  - Bethiah, 305.
  - Charles H., 339.
  - Edith, 305, 306.
  - Elizabeth, 305, 306.
  - Ephraim, 305.
  - Hannah, 305.
  - Henry, 197, 305, 306, 324, 337, 455, 458, 460.
  - Huldah, 431.
  - John, 305, 306, 431.
  - Jonathan, 306.
  - Joseph, 117, 118, 305, 306.
  - Joshua, 431.
  - Judith, 305.
  - Lydia, 305.
  - Martha, 305.
  - Martin, 91, 306.
  - Mary, 117, 305, 306, 354, 445.
  - Rufus, 306.
  - Ruth, 91, 306.
  - Samuel, 118, 305, 306.
  - Sarah, 118, 305, 306.
  - Stephen, 305.
  - Susannah, 305.
  - Thomas, 305.
  - Timothy, 305.
  - Tryphosa, 306.
  - Zachariah, 305.
- Hertford, England, 270.
- Hewes, Elizabeth, 435.
  - William, 435.
- Hewlett, Mr., 417.
- Hewson, John, 202, 328.
- Hibburd, Robert, 391.
- Hicks, Dorcas, 304.
  - Margaret Oliver, 93.
  - Mary, 366.
  - Timothy, 304.
- Hide, Barbara, 294.
  - Rebecca, 217.
  - Richard, 316.
- Higgins, Alexander, 450, 462.
- Higginson, Andrew, 158, 159.

Higginson, *continued*.

- Ann, 110, 111, 114, 157, 290, 424, 455, 459.
- Anna, 158.
- Barbara Cooper, 159.
- Charles, 110, 157.
- Deborah, 158.
- Elizabeth, 158, 159.
- Esther, 71, 158.
- Francis, 9, 14-16, 71, 108-112, 114, 115, 121, 129, 140, 142, 147, 151, 152, 155-158, 160-162, 164, 165, 168, 169, 178-180, 182, 185, 190, 225, 228, 314.
- George, 159.
- Hannah, 69, 158, 294.
- Henry, 158, 159.
- James Perkins, 159.
- John, 44, 45, 69, 110, 157-159, 315, 336, 337, 379.
- Louisa, 159.
- Margaret, 158.
- Martha, 159.
- Mary, 69, 110-113, 157, 158.
- Mehitable, 159.
- Nathaniel, 157-159.
- Neophytus, 110, 157.
- Ruth, 158.
- Samuel, 110, 112, 157, 158.
- Sarah, 157-159, 284.
- Stephen, 158, 159.
- Susan Cleveland, 159.
- Susannah, 158, 159.
- Theophilus, 110, 157.
- Thomas, 158.
- Timothy, 110, 157.
- Highland Park, 312.
- Highways, 293, 311, 312.
- Hildersham, Arthur, 108, 151, 159, 161.
- Hill, Abigail, 83.
  - Caroline L., 77.
  - Elizabeth, 432.
  - Florence Ingalls, 77.
  - John, 58, 83, 316, 432, 465.
  - Miriam, 465.
  - Walter H., 77.
- Hillburt, —, 295.
- Hilliard, Edward, 315.
  - Job, 443.
  - Mary, 443.
  - Richard, 314.
- Hills, 2, 3.
- Hilton, Amos, 431.
  - Apphia, 431.
- Hinckley, Lizzie, 389.
- Hines, Abigail, 307.
  - James, 305, 314, 433, 451, 462.



- Hines, *continued*.  
 John, 307, 433.  
 William, 307.
- Hingham, Mass., 298, 305, 430.
- Hirst, William, 379.
- Hitchings, Horatio, 74.  
 Melvina T., 76.  
 Mercy Wellman, 74.
- Hoar, Annie, 374.  
 William, 304.
- Hobart, Peter, 430.
- Hobbs, Mary, 370.
- Hobby, Jane, 420.
- Hoddy, John, 448.
- Hodgdon, Elizabeth, 348.  
 Eunice S., 75.  
 George C., 348.
- Hodges, Benjamin, 337.  
 Elizabeth, 344.  
 Ellen K., 73.  
 Gamaliel, 280.  
 Hannah, 214.  
 Jonathan, 344.  
 Mary, 132, 433.  
 Ruth, 70.  
 Sarah, 214, 280, 343.
- Hodgkinson, Eliza, 75.
- Hog Hill, Peabody, 4.
- Hogreeves, 211.
- Hogsties, 237.
- Holden, Mass., 243.
- Holden, Randall, 273-275.
- Holder, Theodate, 387.
- Holgrave, England, 249.
- Holgrave, Elizabeth, 174.  
 John, 174, 197, 198, 236, 261, 279,  
 292, 302, 314, 317, 318, 352,  
 356, 378, 381, 407, 441, 448,  
 450-452, 455, 456, 459, 462.  
 Joshua, 174, 451, 462.  
 Love, 174.
- Holkham, England, 376.
- Holland, 104, 107, 298, 300.
- Holliman, Ezekiel, 269, 270, 272,  
 273, 465.  
 Mary, 270, 271.  
 Priscilla, 270.  
 Susanna, 270.
- Hollingworth, Abigail, 306.  
 Benjamin, 306.  
 Caleb, 306.  
 Eleanor, 306.  
 Elizabeth, 306.  
 John, 306.  
 Joseph, 306.  
 Mary, 306.  
 Richard, 305, 306, 314, 340, 378-  
 381, 429, 456, 461.
- Hollingworth, *continued*.  
 Susanna, 306.  
 William, 306.
- Holm, Laurina P., 74.
- Holman, Anne, 383.  
 Harriet, 387.  
 Mary, 387.  
 Mercy, 383.  
 Rachel, 383.  
 Solomon, 383.
- Holmes, Deborah, 418.  
 John, 316.  
 Sarah, 345.
- Holt, Hannah, 253.  
 Judith, 446.  
 Lemuel, 432.  
 Lucy Jane, 348.  
 Margaret, 432.  
 Martha Ann, 73.  
 Rachel, 242.  
 Samuel, 73.
- Holyoke, Edward, 337.  
 Edward Augustus, 337.
- Homan, Mary Susan, 400.
- Hood, Joseph, 132.  
 Robin, 181.  
 Sarah, 132.
- Hooper, Mary, 393.
- Hopkins, Lucy, 440.  
 Sarah, 356.
- Hopkinton, Mass., 281, 337.
- Horbling, England, 157.
- Horne. See *Orne*.
- Horton, Benjamin, 432.  
 Hannah Gardner, 432.  
 Harriet Maria, 398.  
 Nathaniel Augustus, 398.  
 Sarah, 79.
- Horton's point, 85.
- Hosmer, Elijah, 71.  
 Sarah, 71.
- Hotchkiss, Etta, 75.
- Houchins, Elizabeth, 90.
- Houghton, Henry, 131, 136, 164,  
 178, 182, 202.
- Houlton (Holton), Benjamin, 118.  
 Elizabeth, 450.  
 Hannah, 381.  
 James, 241.  
 Joseph, 131, 243, 381.  
 Kezia, 353.  
 Lydia, 118.  
 Mary, 353.  
 Rebecca, 243.  
 Ruth, 241, 248.  
 Samuel, 69.  
 Sarah, 131, 245.  
 Timothy, 353.

- Hourglass, 332.  
 House furnishings, 321.  
 House Island, 2, 9.  
 Houses, 4, 85, 86, 98, 101, 169, 180, 181, 185, 203, 233-235, 240, 256, 290, 298, 306, 320, 338.  
 Houston, Texas, 77.  
 How (Howe), Hannah, 242.  
     Hasadiah, 242.  
     Jacob, 439.  
     Margaret Josephine, 93.  
     Moses, 242.  
     Ruth, 439.  
     Samuel B., 93.  
     Zerviah, 242.  
 Howard, Hannah, 250.  
     Jemima, 353.  
     Mary, 287, 382.  
     Nicholas, 353.  
     Richard, 117.  
     Robert, 382.  
     Samuel, 287.  
 Howes, Edward, 221.  
 Howland, Bethiah, 298.  
     Jabez, 298.  
 Hoyt, Hephzibah, 244.  
     Joseph B., 72.  
     Margaret Hilliard, 72.  
     Wyman, 245.  
 Hubbard, Hannah, 430.  
     Hasina, 435.  
     William, 45.  
 Hudson, N. Y., 345.  
 Hudson River, 286.  
 Huff, John T., 75.  
     Mary Frances, 75.  
 Huggup, Gertrude M., 399.  
 Hull, Isaac, 337.  
     Sarah, 337.  
 Humber, Anna Rose, 73.  
 Humphrey, Ann, 196.  
     Dorcas, 197.  
     John, 65, 78, 89, 108, 144, 171, 174, 189, 196, 197, 205, 236, 237, 302, 314, 334-336, 352, 458, 459.  
     Joseph, 197.  
     Lydia, 197.  
     Sarah, 197.  
     Theophilus, 197.  
     Thomas, 197.  
 Humphreys, Mary Ellen, 398.  
 Hunlock, Sarah, 294.  
 Hunt, Lewis, 153.  
     Sarah, 153, 395.  
 Hunter, Elizabeth, 243.  
 Huntington, L. I., 368, 373.  
 Huntington, Lydia, 452.  
     William, 452.  
 Hurlston, Nicholas, 190, 291.  
 Huson, William, 440.  
 Hutchins, Thomas, 145.  
 Hutchinson, Abigail, 247, 249-251, 282, 384.  
     Abner, 250.  
     Alice, 249, 250.  
     Ambrose, 118, 249, 250, 252.  
     Amos, 250, 252.  
     Ann, 250.  
     Anne, 251.  
     Bartholomew, 250, 251.  
     Benjamin, 249-251.  
     Bethiah, 249-251.  
     Betsey, 252.  
     Clark, 252.  
     Daniel, 250.  
     Ebenezer, 249-251.  
     Eda, 252.  
     Effie, 252.  
     Elijah, 251.  
     Elisha, 249, 251, 392.  
     Elizabeth, 249-252, 439, 450.  
     Eunice, 250, 251.  
     George, 250, 252.  
     Ginger, 251.  
     Hannah, 249-252, 422.  
     Israel, 250, 251.  
     James, 250, 252.  
     Jane, 250, 251.  
     Jasper, 249.  
     Jeremy, 251.  
     Joanna, 251.  
     John, 248-251, 282.  
     Jonathan, 250, 251.  
     Joseph, 247, 249-251, 295, 439.  
     Josiah, 250.  
     Keziah, 250.  
     Lot, 251.  
     Lydia, 248-250, 295.  
     Mary, 132, 154, 249-252, 296, 346.  
     Mehitable, 251.  
     Nathan, 251.  
     Nathaniel, 250, 251.  
     Rachel, 250, 251.  
     Rebecca, 249, 251.  
     Richard, 197, 213, 237, 249, 250, 426, 428, 451, 455, 456, 461.  
     Robert, 249-251.  
     Ruth, 118, 250-252.  
     Samuel, 249, 250, 252.  
     Sarah, 249-252, 426, 440.  
     Seviah, 252.  
     Solomon, 250.  
     Stephen, 250.  
     Susan, 252.  
     Susanna, 213, 249, 251, 252.  
     Thomas, 249.



- Hutchinson, *continued*.  
 William, 250-252.  
 Hutchinson Family (singers), 250.  
 Hutten, Elizabeth, 440.  
 Richard, 440.  
 Hyde, Sarah Gertrude, 351.  
 Hyde Park, Mass., 400.
- IDLERS, 288, 331.  
 Immigrants, 213.  
 Increase (ship), 437.  
 Indianapolis, Ind., 399.  
 Indians, 24-50, 57, 58, 68, 83, 84, 98, 101, 116, 117, 125, 126, 131, 140, 160, 187, 191, 193, 201, 205-208, 238, 252, 253, 282, 283, 313, 342, 353, 363, 402, 409-415.  
 Ingalls, Mary H., 76.  
 Ruth, 369.  
 Ingersoll, Abigail, 132.  
 Alice, 131, 373.  
 Agnes, 131.  
 Ann, 131.  
 Bathsheba, 131.  
 Bethiah, 70, 132.  
 Catherine, 131.  
 Charles C., 133.  
 David, 132, 133.  
 Deborah, 131, 133.  
 Deborah H., 133.  
 Ebenezer, 132.  
 Eliza, 132.  
 Elizabeth, 131, 132.  
 Fanny, 132.  
 George, 131.  
 George Hodges, 132.  
 Hannah, 131, 132.  
 Hannah H., 133.  
 Harry, 132.  
 Joanna, 131.  
 John, 131-133, 241, 314.  
 Jonathan, 132.  
 Joseph, 131.  
 Judith, 131, 132, 241.  
 Margaret, 132, 133.  
 Mary, 131-133.  
 Mary U., 133.  
 Nancy, 132.  
 Nathaniel, 70, 131-133, 250.  
 Nathaniel Bowditch, 133.  
 Polly, 132.  
 Richard, 131, 132, 135, 293, 294, 406, 428, 455, 456, 464.  
 Ruth, 131, 132.  
 Sally, 132.  
 Samuel, 131, 132, 285.  
 Sarah, 131, 132, 153, 342.  
 Susanna, 132, 285.
- Ingersoll, *continued*.  
 William S., 133.  
 Ipswich, England, 246, 449.  
 Ipswich, Mass., 70, 113, 131, 206, 249, 280, 282, 283, 296, 298, 305, 307, 308, 338, 382, 383, 390, 394, 396, 431, 440-443, 449.  
 Isbell, Ann, 370.  
 Robert, 370, 456, 464.  
 Islands, 9.  
 Ives, Annie G., 400.  
 Hannah, 214.  
 John S., 400.  
 Samuel, 214.  
 Thomas, 377.
- JACK (privateer), 344.  
 Jackson, George, 381.  
 John, 319, 375, 387, 388, 456, 461.  
 Margaret, 388, 390.  
 Mary, 381, 388.  
 Priscilla, 435.  
 Thomas, 435.  
 Jacobs, Abigail, 95, 243, 383.  
 Anna, 295.  
 Benjamin, 118.  
 Elizabeth, 91, 384.  
 Henry, 384.  
 John, 383.  
 Joseph, 295.  
 Lydia, 295.  
 Sarah, 118.  
 William, 95.  
 Jamaica Plain, 466.  
 Jamaica trade, 157.  
 James (ship), 269, 294, 303, 449.  
 James, Elizabeth, 387.  
 Erasmus, 449.  
 Hester, 449.  
 James, 270.  
 Jane, 449.  
 John, 270.  
 Mary, 449.  
 Sarah, 270.  
 Thomas, 269, 270, 273, 279, 313, 316.  
 William, 197, 272, 385, 386, 456, 461.  
 Jameson, Mary, 399.  
 Jeffords, Hannah, 119.  
 Jeffries, Hannah, 214.  
 Nicholas, 214.  
 William, 130.  
 Jeffries Creek, 87, 113, 237, 374, 402, 423, 446, 451, 457, 458.  
 Jeggles, Abigail, 116, 368, 390.  
 Benjamin, 391.

- Jeggles, *continued*.  
   Daniel, 376, 391.  
   Ebenezer, 391.  
   Elizabeth, 390, 391.  
   John, 391.  
   Mary, 391.  
   Nathaniel, 391.  
   Samuel, 391.  
   Sarah, 391.  
   Thomas, 116, 314, 390, 391.  
   William, 8, 314, 316, 390, 455, 456, 462.  
 Jeggles' spring, 8.  
 Jelly, Sarah E., 76.  
 Jennings, Hannah, 417.  
   Jonathan, 417.  
 Jennison, Mary, 282.  
   Sally B., 423.  
 Jewell (ship), 190, 192.  
 Jewett, Holton B., 398.  
   Mabel L., 398.  
 Johnson, Abigail, 429.  
   Anna, 358.  
   Arbella, 181, 182, 190, 196.  
   Charlotte, 78.  
   Daniel, 429.  
   Dolly, 358.  
   Edward, 98, 157, 169, 179, 256.  
   Elizabeth, 206, 429.  
   Francis, 6, 174, 197, 206, 207, 293, 334, 418, 419, 428, 429, 449, 454, 457, 462.  
   Hannah, 206, 283.  
   Isaac, 89, 108, 125, 144, 145, 167-169, 177, 178, 181, 182, 190.  
   Jane, 74.  
   Joane, 206.  
   Lucretia, 387.  
   Mary, 304.  
   Miriam, 345.  
   Naomy, 206.  
   Richard, 377, 429, 462.  
   Ruth, 206.  
   Samuel, 206, 429.  
   Sarah, 206, 442.  
   William, 338.  
 Johnson's Plain, Peabody, 6.  
 Jones, Abigail, 452.  
   Abner, 452.  
   Benjamin, 91, 119.  
   Eliza I., 75.  
   Elizabeth, 298.  
   Ellinor, 443.  
   Ginger, 119.  
   Hannah, 426.  
   Hugh, 316, 426.  
   Ruth, 369.  
   Sarah, 91.  
 Jordan, Eliza R., 400.  
   Elizabeth, 279.  
   John, 279.  
   Rebecca, 234.  
   Thomas, 234.  
 Joseph, Mary, 385.  
 Joy, Peter, 391.  
   Sarah, 391.  
 Judd, Elizabeth, 252.  
   Experience, 248.  
 Judkins, Anna, 107.  
 Judson, Harriet, 345.  
 Juniper House, 378.  
 Juniper point, 375.  
 Jury, Grand, 356.  
   Trial, 352.  
 KEECH, Abigail, 366.  
 Keely, Eliza, 345.  
 Kehew, Eunice, 432.  
   John, 432.  
   Rachel, 73.  
   William B., 73.  
 Keith, Esther, 388.  
 Kelley, Lewis W., 75.  
   Mary Manning, 75.  
 Kellock, Eliza J., 398.  
 Kelton, Martha, 422.  
   Nellie, 422.  
 Kendall, John A., 75.  
   Louisa G., 75.  
 Keniston, Mrs., 374, 463.  
 Kennedy, Eliza Ann, 76.  
   John, 76.  
 Kennison, Allen, 241, 313.  
 Kent, Benjamin, 243.  
   Mary, 243.  
 Ketelle, Elias Warner, 92.  
   Fidelia, 92.  
   Mehitable, 398.  
 Kettle, Elizabeth, 87.  
   James, 87.  
   John, 446.  
   Mary, 446.  
   Sarah, 423.  
 Kettle Island, 9.  
 Key West, Fla., 74.  
 Keysor, Elizur, 181.  
 Kibben, Abigail, 217.  
   Arthur, 217.  
 Kidd, Robert, 431.  
 Killam (Kilham), Alice, 440.  
   Augustin, 440.  
   Daniel, 440.  
   Elizabeth, 440.  
   Emma S., 75.  
   Hannah, 246, 397, 402, 440.  
   John, 402, 440.



- Killam, *continued*.  
     Lot, 246, 440.  
     Lucy, 397.  
     Mary, 440.  
     Ruth, 440.  
     Sarah, 430, 440.  
 Killingly, Conn., 252, 253, 354, 446.  
 Kimball, Benjamin, 446.  
     Elizabeth, 278, 440.  
     George H., 216.  
     Hannah, 384.  
     Henry, 440.  
     John, 384.  
     Lizzie D., 216.  
     Mehitable, 215.  
     Nancy L., 400.  
     Rebecca, 417.  
     Richard, 417.  
     Ruth, 446.  
     Sarah, 351.  
     Sarah J., 351.  
 King, Abigail, 357, 374.  
     Alice, 374.  
     Anna, 95.  
     Annie, 374.  
     Annis, 374.  
     Daniel, 420.  
     Deliverance, 374.  
     Dorothy, 373.  
     Elizabeth, 153, 252, 356, 374, 383.  
     Hannah, 253, 373, 374, 420.  
     Henry, 374.  
     Isaac, 374.  
     John, 254, 356, 374.  
     Jonathan, 374.  
     Joseph, 95, 374.  
     Katherine, 373, 374, 390.  
     Lydia, 117, 374.  
     Mary, 371, 373, 374, 431.  
     Mehitable, 253, 374.  
     Rebecca, 374.  
     Ruth, 295, 374.  
     Samuel, 252, 374, 431.  
     Sarah, 69, 374.  
     Thomas, 117, 374.  
     William, 373, 374, 390, 447, 455, 458, 463.  
 King Philip's War, 353, 402.  
 King William County, Va., 367.  
 King's Chapel, 369.  
 King's Chapel churchyard, 182.  
 Kingston, R. I., 271.  
 Kinsman, Mary E., 398.  
 Kirkby Stephen, England, 157, 158.  
 Kitchen, Edward, 337.  
     John, 315, 319.  
 Kitcherill, Joseph, 376.  
 Kittery, Me., 131.  
 Knapp, Rebecca, 71.  
     Ursula, 395.  
 Knight, —, 350.  
     Agnes, 131.  
     Ann, 131, 417.  
     Anne, 433.  
     Bathsheba, 131.  
     Benjamin, 214.  
     Charles, 391.  
     Daniel, 71, 417.  
     Elizabeth, 131, 417, 442.  
     Ezekiel, 440, 442, 464.  
     Francis, 417.  
     Hannah, 417.  
     Jacob, 417.  
     John, 131, 417, 427, 433.  
     Lawrence, 131.  
     Louise M., 398.  
     Martha, 398.  
     Mary, 417, 427.  
     Mehitable, 71.  
     Rebecca, 249, 429.  
     Sarah, 214, 391.  
     Walter, 86.  
     William, 417.  
 Knowlton, Abigail, 445.  
     John, 445.  
     Kate G., 369.  
     Mary, 418.  
 LABOR, 199, 331.  
 Ladd, Bridget, 373.  
     Mary, 345.  
 Ladoga (ship), 358.  
 Lady Sarah (ship), 348.  
 Lake, John, 300.  
     Margaret, 300.  
     William, 437.  
 Lakeman, Edmund W., 400.  
     Hannah, 421.  
     Joseph, 421.  
     Rutha P., 400.  
 Lambert, Daniel, 153.  
     John, 391.  
     Joseph, 280, 342.  
     Lydia, 342.  
     Margaret, 153, 430.  
     Mary, 280.  
     Preserved, 391.  
     Priscilla, 344.  
     Richard, 314, 419, 437, 456, 461.  
     Samuel, 430.  
     Sarah, 419.  
 Lamprell, Ann A., 358.  
     William, 358.  
 Lamson, Amos, 394.  
     Elizabeth, 394.

- Lander, Abigail, 387.  
     Elizabeth, 434.  
     William, 183.  
 Lands, Clearing, 224.  
     Division of, 255, 309, 334.  
     Recording of, 255.  
 Lane, Rebecca, 251.  
 Lang, Nathaniel, 394.  
     Priscilla, 394.  
 Langford, John, 357.  
     Sarah, 357.  
 Langley, Agnes, 131.  
     Ann, 131.  
 Langsford, Elias, 217.  
     Mary, 217.  
 Lanterce, Anne, 429.  
     Robert, 429.  
 Larcom, Abigail, 84.  
     Cornelius, 84.  
 Larkin, Joanna, 117.  
 Larrabee, James W., 389.  
     Martha, 96.  
     Mary Jane, 389.  
 Larrimore, Abigail, 95.  
     Thomas, 95.  
 Laskin, Alice, 306.  
     Damaris, 306.  
     Edith, 305, 306.  
     Elizabeth, 306.  
     Hugh, 198, 306, 314, 316, 341,  
         428, 454, 458, 464.  
     John, 306.  
     Susanna, 306.  
     Thomas, 306.  
     Timothy, 306, 314.  
 Lawes, Francis, 315, 449, 464.  
     Lydia, 449.  
     Mary, 449.  
 Lawrence, Mass., 76, 351.  
 Lawrence, Hannah, 372.  
     Hannah Meader, 358.  
     Joseph, 372.  
     Mary, 372.  
     Sarah Susanna, 92.  
 Layout of lands, etc., 313.  
 Lazenby, Margaret, 246.  
 Leach, Abigail, 118, 119.  
     Alice, 370.  
     Anna, 119.  
     Anne, 119.  
     Asa, 119.  
     Biley, 119.  
     Deborah, 118.  
     Eliza, 118.  
     Elizabeth, 118, 119, 353.  
     Eunice, 119.  
     Leach, *continued*.  
         Ezra, 119.  
         George, 119.  
         Ginger, 118, 119.  
         Hannah, 88, 118, 119.  
         Henry, 119.  
         Henry Hale, 119.  
         Hephzibah, 118, 119, 353.  
         Huldah, 119.  
         Isaac, 119.  
         John, 79, 118, 119, 419, 456, 461.  
         Jonathan, 119.  
         Joseph, 119.  
         Josiah, 119.  
         Lawrence, 118, 127, 197, 293, 316,  
             318, 352, 353, 355, 419, 423, 428,  
             454, 458, 459, 463.  
         Lydia, 118.  
         Martha, 119.  
         Mary, 95, 118, 119, 446.  
         Mary S., 78.  
         Nathan, 119.  
         Nathaniel, 119.  
         Rachel, 118, 119, 356.  
         Remember, 118.  
         Richard, 118, 119.  
         Robert, 95, 370, 375, 454, 456, 463.  
         Ruth, 118, 119, 250.  
         Samuel, 88, 118, 119, 353, 370.  
         Sarah, 79, 118, 119, 306.  
         Timothy, 119.  
         William, 119.  
 Leach's Hill, 4.  
 Leavitt, Dudley, 421.  
     Mary, 154, 282, 421.  
     Nathaniel, 282.  
 Lebanon, Conn., 418.  
 Le Craw, Sarah, 246.  
 Lechford, Thomas, 203.  
 Lectures of the Church, 159, 244.  
 Ledge Hill, 2.  
 Ledge Hill Park, 9.  
 Lee, Alice Stodder, 398.  
     Catherine M., 389.  
     Deborah, 158.  
     Joseph, 158.  
     Lois, 153.  
     Rejoice, 383.  
     Robert, 383.  
     Thomas, 153.  
     Wilbur E., 398.  
 Lefavour, Hannah, 216.  
     John, 216.  
 Legg, Daniel, 205.  
     Elizabeth, 205.  
     John, 197, 205, 303, 307.



- Legg, *continued*.  
     Samuel, 205.  
 Legg's Hill, 2, 35, 335.  
 Legro, Ann, 250.  
     Joseph, 250.  
 Leicester, England, 108, 136, 157, 160-162.  
 Leicester, Mass., 243.  
 Lemon, Elizabeth, 391.  
     Grace, 294, 391.  
     Hannah, 391.  
     John, 391.  
     Martha, 391.  
     Mary, 391.  
     Robert, 315, 390, 391, 456, 461.  
     Sarah, 391.  
 Letter carrier, 354.  
 Letters, 99, 102, 106, 120, 154, 167, 178, 193, 201, 207, 221, 222, 228, 229, 262, 267, 271, 272, 286, 301, 379.  
     First general, 120.  
     Second general, 132.  
 Levett, Captain, 191.  
 Lewis, Charles H., 74.  
     Mary Abby, 74.  
 Leyden, Holland, 232.  
 Liberty Hill, 36.  
 Life in the Colony, 320.  
 Lillington, Alexander, 270.  
     Sarah, 270.  
 Lincoln, Earl of, 65, 108, 156, 181, 190, 196.  
 Lindall, James, 69, 158.  
     Mary, 69, 158, 304, 442.  
     Timothy, 304, 377.  
 Lindsey, Hannah, 118.  
 Lion's Whelp (ship), 104, 110, 113, 116, 120, 121, 127-129, 132, 134, 135, 137, 191, 193, 227, 330.  
 Liquor, 49, 238, 258, 288, 363.  
 Listen (Leeson, Lissen, etc.), Alice, 406.  
     Nicholas, 406.  
 Little, Deborah H., 216.  
     Elizabeth, 280.  
     Eunice, 74.  
     Mathew, 74.  
     Moses, 280.  
 Little Carleton, England, 308.  
 Little Harbor, Marblehead, 233, 234, 296, 298.  
 Little Misery Island, 9.  
 Littlefield, Agnes, 77.  
     Joseph Story, 397.  
     Lydia A., 397.  
 Littleton, N. H., 400.  
 Livermore, Joanna, 242.  
     Samuel, 242.  
 Liverpool, England, 215, 349.  
 Liverpool, N. S., 465.  
 Lobster Cove, Manchester, 21.  
 Lobster point, 85.  
 Lobster rocks, 21.  
 Locke, Sarah, 466.  
 Lockwood, Sargeant, 426-428.  
 Lombard, Hannah, 79.  
     Kezia, 79.  
 London, England, 91, 93, 104, 114, 130, 157, 158, 162, 172, 173, 227, 232-234, 280, 284-286, 305, 307, 328, 332, 346, 365, 382, 385, 388, 424, 425, 439.  
 Londonderry, N. H., 388.  
 Long, Rebecca, 355.  
 Long Hill, 4.  
 Long Pond, 9, 459.  
 Loomis, John, 95.  
     Mary, 95.  
 Lord, Abigail, 307.  
     Charles A., 398.  
     Dinah, 307.  
     Dorothy, 307.  
     Elizabeth, 307.  
     George E., 398.  
     Jane, 307.  
     Jeremiah, 307.  
     Joseph, 307.  
     Lucy Dale, 398.  
     Lucy M., 388.  
     Margaret, 307.  
     Martha L., 398.  
     Mary, 117, 307.  
     Mary J., 77.  
     Mehitable, 307.  
     Robert, 307.  
     Rowland, 307.  
     William, 117, 180, 212, 257, 306, 307, 314, 316, 318, 319, 438, 455, 456, 464.  
 Los Angeles, Cal., 400.  
 Lot layers, 255.  
 Lothrop (Lathrop), Abigail, 392.  
     Bethiah, 283, 353, 435.  
     Eleanor, 283.  
     Ellen, 283.  
     Sarah, 283.  
     Thomas, 83, 197, 237, 241, 283, 284, 353, 435, 454, 458, 461.  
 Louisville, Ky., 73, 74.  
 Lovell, Alexander, 280.  
     Margaret, 280.  
     Thomas, 254.

- Lovett, Benjamin Balch, 339.  
     Emma, 353.  
     Mercy, 339.  
     Simon, 353.  
 Low, Alice, 154.  
     Daniel, 154.  
     John, 190, 308.  
     Sarah, 308.  
 Lowell, Mass., 74, 75.  
 Lowell, John, 158.  
     Sarah, 158.  
 Lowell Island, 9.  
 Lowther, Ruth, 281.  
     William, 281.  
 Loyalist, 367.  
 Luff, John, 391, 456, 461.  
 Lull, Elizabeth, 315, 442.  
 Lunenburg, Mass., 71, 92.  
 Lunt, Priscilla, 433.  
 Luscomb, Hannah, 346.  
 Lyford, John, 79, 82.  
 Lyme, Conn., 355.  
 Lynde, Benjamin, 337, 366.  
     Mary, 366.  
 Lyndeboro, N. H., 71, 252.  
 Lynn, Mass., 71, 74, 76, 77, 79, 116-118, 131, 153, 216-218, 236, 247, 252, 283-286, 298, 344, 348, 350, 351, 356, 357, 372, 378, 382, 386, 388, 394, 399, 401, 417, 418, 420, 421, 429, 431, 434, 443, 451.  
 Lynn, Henry, 204, 205.  
     Priscilla, 451.  
 Lynnfield, Mass., 118, 153, 382, 399, 431, 432, 440.  
 Lyon, John, 235.  
  
 MACAO, China, 92.  
 Maccarty, Florence, 181.  
 Mace, Andrew, 388.  
     Esther R., 388.  
 Machias, Me., 70.  
 Mackay, Daniel, 158.  
     Esther, 158.  
 Mackerel Cove, Beverly, 21, 237, 402, 424, 459.  
 Mackintire (MacIntyre), Abigail, 242.  
     Angier, 394.  
     Archelaus, 242.  
     David, 451.  
     Hannah, 247.  
     John, 247.  
     Judith, 118.  
     Lydia, 432.  
     Margaret, 451.  
     Mary, 117, 372, 394.  
     Mehitable, 118.  
  
 Mackintire, *continued*.  
     Thomas, 117.  
 Mackmallin, Rachel, 217.  
 Macy, Bethiah, 68.  
     Deborah, 68.  
     John, 68.  
 Madison, Ind., 389.  
 Magoun, Henry, 406.  
     Mary, 348.  
 Maine, 386.  
 Malden, Mass., 284, 387, 390, 397, 400.  
 Mallet, Grace, 84.  
 Manchester, England, 87.  
 Manchester, Mass., 1-3, 6, 7, 11, 13, 18, 19, 30, 87, 88, 113, 209, 253, 286, 317, 340, 351, 365, 368, 370, 373, 397, 402, 426, 427, 440, 448.  
 Mancy, Abigail, 214.  
 Mannering, Hannah, 355.  
     Oliver, 355.  
 Manning, Eliphalet, 382.  
     Elizabeth B., 74.  
     Elizabeth Clarke, 286.  
     Hannah, 382.  
     Sarah, 280.  
 Mansfield, Conn., 418.  
 Mansfield, Abigail, 369, 442.  
     Andrew, 79, 298.  
     Benjamin, 287.  
     Damaris, 306.  
     Elizabeth, 79, 298.  
     Ellis, 442.  
     Hannah, 369.  
     Joseph, 369.  
     Maria, 389.  
     Martha Tucker, 92.  
     Paul, 306, 314.  
     Sarah, 287.  
     Sarah Webb, 92.  
     Timothy, 369.  
 Marble, Anna, 354.  
     Daniel, 354, 357.  
     Keziah, 250.  
     Mary, 357.  
 Marble Harbor, 13, 142, 203, 210, 232, 233, 236, 291.  
 Marble Neck, 13, 268.  
 Marblehead, Mass., 1, 4-7, 9, 10, 27-29, 31, 35, 36, 42, 44, 46, 71, 72, 74-79, 84, 88, 95, 107, 117, 132, 153, 203, 205, 206, 218, 223, 233-237, 241, 242, 246, 247, 249, 250, 281, 285, 291, 296-298, 302, 306, 312, 317, 319, 336, 342, 345, 349-352, 357, 358, 363, 368, 373, 379-382, 394, 396, 401, 402, 406,



- Marblehead, *continued*.  
 407, 412, 417, 423, 427, 430-433,  
 442, 444, 449, 450.  
 Marblehead Neck, 6, 35, 236, 266,  
 335, 341.  
 March, George, 306.  
 Mary, 306.  
 Market, The, 278.  
 Marlboro, Mass., 117, 242, 243, 247,  
 439.  
 Marsh, Abiah, 253.  
 Abigail, 117, 252, 253.  
 Abner, 253.  
 Alice, 252, 253.  
 Benjamin, 252, 253, 374, 383.  
 Bethiah, 252.  
 Betsey, 73.  
 Caleb, 253.  
 Catherine, 253.  
 Daniel, 253.  
 David, 241, 252.  
 Deliverance, 253.  
 Desire, 253.  
 Ebenezer, 252, 253.  
 Eleazer, 252.  
 Elizabeth, 252, 253, 270, 374.  
 Esther, 253.  
 Ezekiel, 252, 253.  
 Frances, 253.  
 Hannah, 158, 252, 253, 374.  
 Humphrey, 70, 253.  
 Ingraham, 252.  
 Jacob, 252.  
 John, 157, 252, 253, 316, 423, 448,  
 456, 460.  
 Jonathan, 252, 253.  
 Joseph, 253.  
 Lydia, 253.  
 Margaret, 252.  
 Margaret A., 398.  
 Martha, 253.  
 Mary, 70, 73, 252, 253.  
 Mehitable, 253.  
 Priscilla, 252, 426.  
 Provided, 253.  
 Rebecca, 116, 252, 253.  
 Rebecca Knapp, 72.  
 Robert, 72.  
 Ruth, 252, 253, 287, 383.  
 Samuel, 252, 253, 426.  
 Sarah, 241, 252, 253, 423.  
 Stephen, 253.  
 Susannah, 157, 252.  
 William, 253.  
 Zachariah, 117, 252, 253.  
 Zebadiah, 253.  
 Marshall, —, 315, 429, 438.  
 Abigail, 283.  
 Marshall, *continued*.  
 Ann, 373.  
 Benjamin, 373.  
 Edmund, 198, 373, 455, 456, 458,  
 463.  
 Hannah, 287.  
 John, 287, 373.  
 Millicent, 373.  
 Naomi, 373.  
 Nathaniel, 422.  
 Peter, 283.  
 Ruth, 373.  
 Sarah, 373, 422.  
 Marshfield, Mass., 64.  
 Marsters, Elizabeth, 369.  
 Nathaniel, 402.  
 Ruth, 402.  
 Marston, Abigail, 181, 304.  
 Benjamin, 181, 304.  
 Elizabeth, 279.  
 Hannah, 95.  
 Sarah, 402.  
 Thomas, 279, 370, 456, 463.  
 William, 370, 456, 463.  
 Martha's Vineyard, 45.  
 Martin, Ella B., 217.  
 Harriet, 75.  
 John B., 72.  
 Mary, 95, 251.  
 Mary M., 215.  
 Mary Needham, 72.  
 Marvel Harbor, 9.  
 Head, 246.  
 Mary Anne (ship), 440, 441, 443,  
 444.  
 Maryland, 430.  
 Mascoll, Elizabeth, 445.  
 John, 445.  
 Mary, 369.  
 Masconomet, 45, 47, 49, 192.  
 Mason, Lt., 223.  
 Widow, 456, 461.  
 Abigail, 442.  
 Anna, 55.  
 Christian, 443.  
 Elias, 314, 316, 443.  
 Elizabeth, 56, 355.  
 Emma, 373.  
 Isabella, 55.  
 Jane, 56.  
 John, 54-57, 221.  
 John Tufton, 56, 58.  
 Robert, 57, 58.  
 Robert Tufton, 56, 58.  
 Mason claim, 54-59.  
 Massabequash River, 8, 42.  
 Massachusetts Bay Company, 89,  
 141, 143.

- Massey, Aaron, 218.  
   Abigail, 217, 218, 279.  
   Bartholmew, 218.  
   Benjamin, 218.  
   Daniel, 217, 218.  
   Deborah, 218.  
   Elizabeth, 217, 218.  
   Ellen, 217.  
   Jane, 217, 218.  
   Jeffry, 197, 198, 217, 240, 241,  
     255, 283, 292, 313, 317-319, 323,  
     353, 355, 378, 420, 424, 428, 446,  
     451, 455, 459, 460.  
   John, 217, 254, 365.  
   Jonathan, 218.  
   Margaret, 382.  
   Mary, 217, 218, 279.  
   Nathaniel, 217, 218, 427.  
   Rachel, 217.  
   Rebecca, 217, 218, 427.  
   Samuel, 217, 218.  
   Sarah, 215, 217, 218.  
   Thomas, 217, 218, 279.  
 Massey's Cove, 94, 338, 404.  
 Masury, Anna, 432.  
   Benjamin, 214.  
   David, 421.  
   Elizabeth, 395.  
   Experience, 248.  
   Hannah, 421.  
   Joseph, 402.  
   Lydia, 436.  
   Mary, 96.  
   Nancy, 432.  
   Samuel, 432.  
   Sarah, 214, 432.  
   Susanna, 402, 431.  
 Mathewson, Catheran, 112.  
 Maule, Charity, 452.  
   Susanna, 430.  
   Thomas, 98, 377.  
 Maverick, Aaron, 236.  
   Abigail, 236.  
   Elizabeth, 236, 435.  
   Eunice, 236.  
   Mary, 236.  
   Moses, 197, 233, 235, 236, 285,  
     319, 352, 428, 455.  
   Rebecca, 236.  
   Remember, 236.  
   Samuel, 236.  
   Sarah, 233, 236.  
 Maxcy, Alexander, 440.  
   Mary, 440.  
 May pole, 100, 101, 218.  
 Mayflower (ship), 54, 62, 64, 130,  
   134, 137, 138, 190, 192, 232, 233,  
   330, 331.  
 Maynard, Ruth, 279.  
 McClearn, Mabel S., 78.  
 McCloy, Elizabeth, 389.  
 McDermot, Camp, 350.  
 McEhrick, Susanna, 430.  
   William, 430.  
 McLeroy, Benjamin, 70.  
   Priscilla, 70.  
 McMarr, Elizabeth, 383.  
 McNutt, Deborah, 465.  
 Meachem, Anna, 445.  
   Deborah, 385.  
   Isaac, 385.  
   John, 385.  
   Nathaniel, 385.  
   Priscilla, 385.  
   Sarah, 385.  
 Measures, 212, 213.  
 Medford, Mass., 282, 367, 466.  
 Meek, Helen Maria, 400.  
 Meeting house, 176, 257.  
 Melcher, Martha, 399.  
 Mellard, Martha, 433.  
 Melzard, Jane Baker, 350.  
 Mendon, Mass., 95, 252, 391, 421.  
 Mentor, Jane, 371.  
 Merriam, John, 116.  
   Rebecca, 116.  
 Merrick, Lydia, 117.  
 Merrill, Bertha M., 351.  
   Damaris, 70.  
   Malcolm H., 351.  
 Merritt, Henry A., 399.  
   James, 307.  
   John, 307.  
   Lois F., 399.  
   Lucinda, 399.  
   Martha, 307.  
   Mary, 307.  
   Nicholas, 307, 341.  
   Rebecca, 307.  
   Samuel, 307.  
 Merry Mount, 100.  
 Messervey, Abial, 384.  
   Elizabeth, 369.  
 Metcalf, Elizabeth, 418.  
 Middleton, Mass., 1, 5, 13, 41, 71,  
   247, 248, 250, 252, 296, 350, 384,  
   385, 440, 451.  
 Milborne, Peter, 190, 192.  
 Miles, Exercise, 241.  
   Joseph, 241.  
 Milford, N. H., 250, 251.  
 Military defence, 171.  
 Military weapons, 171.  
 Militia, 50, 68, 158, 171, 174, 283,  
   286, 465.



- Mill Prison, England, 432.  
 Millburn, Ill., 74.  
 Miller, Catharine R., 389.  
     Elizabeth, 349.  
     John T., 389.  
     Mary, 347.  
 Millett, Bessie May, 400.  
     George Everett, 400.  
     John, 215.  
     Margaret, 215.  
     Sarah, 215.  
     Sarah A., 350.  
     Seeth, 345.  
     William, 215.  
 Mills, 83, 254, 293.  
 Mills, Bessie Alice, 399.  
     Frederick J., 399.  
 Milton, Mass, 339, 369, 439.  
 Minerals, 1, 13, 106.  
 Minson, John, 307.  
 Misery Island, 9.  
 Mitchell, Abraham, 418.  
     Benjamin, 119.  
     Emma Estella, 76.  
     Mary, 418.  
     Sarah, 119.  
 Mobile, Ala., 93.  
 Momorinock, N. Y., 441.  
 Money, 27, 292.  
 Monmouth, N. J., 268.  
 Monson, Mass., 347, 440.  
 Moore, Mr., 314.  
     Widow, 362, 424, 455, 457, 461.  
     Annie Laurie, 466.  
     Benjamin, 363.  
     Christian, 79.  
     Elizabeth, 363.  
     Hannah, 363.  
     John, 197, 384, 423, 458, 462.  
     Jonathan, 363.  
     Martha, 363.  
     Mary, 348, 363.  
     Nathaniel, 363.  
     Richard, 376.  
     Samuel, 352, 451, 454, 458, 464.  
     Sarah, 281.  
     Thankful, 421.  
     Thomas, 362, 363, 375, 423, 455-457, 462.  
 Morey (Maury, Mowry), Bertha, 231.  
     Hannah, 231.  
     Mary, 231.  
     Mehitable, 231.  
     Roger, 197, 231, 424, 443, 455, 458, 463.  
     Thomas, 231.  
 Morgan, Aaron, 370.  
     Ann, 370.  
     Benjamin, 370.  
     Bethiah, 370.  
     Elizabeth, 107, 370.  
     Henry W., 388.  
     John, 370.  
     Joseph, 370.  
     Luke, 370.  
     Margaret, 370.  
     Rebecca L., 388.  
     Robert, 370, 456, 461.  
     Samuel, 107, 305, 370.  
     Sarah, 305.  
 Morris, Mary, 94.  
 Morrison, Sarah A., 388.  
 Morse (Morss), Elizabeth, 158, 159.  
     Hannah, 423.  
     James, 159.  
     Obadiah, 158.  
 Mortlake, Conn., 385.  
 Morton, Nathaniel, 39, 100, 164.  
     Thomas, 13, 100, 101, 165, 218, 221, 222.  
 Moses, Hannah, 343.  
     Henry, 281.  
     Remember, 281.  
 Mottey, Joseph, 183.  
 Moulton, Abigail, 117, 252.  
     Anna, 118, 358.  
     Bartholmew, 118.  
     Benjamin, 118.  
     Bette, 118.  
     Caleb, 358.  
     Desire, 253.  
     Dorothy, 117.  
     Ebenezer, 117, 118.  
     Eleanor, 320.  
     Elijah, 118.  
     Elizabeth, 117, 118, 441.  
     Freeborn, 118.  
     Hannah, 117, 118.  
     James, 198, 440, 441, 462.  
     John, 117, 118.  
     Jonathan, 118, 253.  
     Joseph, 117, 118.  
     Joshua, 118.  
     Judah, 118.  
     Judith, 118.  
     Lois, 117.  
     Lydia, 117, 118.  
     Mabel Rose, 389.  
     Margaret, 117.  
     Martha, 117.  
     Mary, 117, 118, 307, 441, 448.  
     Mehitable, 118.

Moulton, *continued*.

- Miriam, 117, 118, 445.
- Rebecca, 118.
- Robert, 117, 120, 127, 136, 197, 198, 313, 318, 352, 424, 447, 454, 459, 463.
- Samuel, 117, 118, 441.
- Sarah, 117, 118, 441.
- Susanna, 118.
- Walter E., 389.
- Mount Desert, Me., 75, 431.
- Mount Pleasant, Peabody, 4.
- Mountjoy, Benjamin, 298.
- Martha, 298.
- Mousar, John, 316.
- Muddy Pond, 9.
- Mulhuish, Susanna, 430.
- William, 430.
- Munday, Mary, 372.
- William, 372.
- Munnion, Jemima, 372.
- Music, Vocal, 245, 333.
- Muskett, Bridgett, 430.
- Myles, Ann, 197.
- John, 197.

## NANTUCKET, Mass., 68, 69, 385, 387.

- Nash, Mary E., 400.
- Nashua, N. H., 77.
- Naugus head, Marblehead, 2, 5, 6.
- Naumkeag, 41-190.
- Naumkeag River, 42-44, 55, 57.
- Neal, Dorothy, 307.
- Elizabeth, 295.
- Eunice, 420, 421.
- Hannah, 243.
- Jeremiah, 295, 307.
- John, 314, 316, 433, 449.
- Joseph, 420, 421.
- Lydia, 342.
- Martha, 433.
- Mary, 449.
- Sarah, 72, 214, 346.
- William Henry, 346.
- Neatherd, 231.
- Needham, Abigail, 247.
- Anthony, 117, 439.
- Benjamin, 295.
- Lydia, 295.
- Martha, 215.
- Mary, 117, 439.
- Mehitable, 356.
- Rachel, 295.
- Rebecca, 243.
- Ruth, 286.
- Sarah, 382.

Needham, *continued*.

- Thomas, 286, 356.
- Nelson, Alice, 252.
- Mary, 433.
- Sarah Pew, 398.
- Solomon Augustus, 398.
- Thomas, 252.
- Neptune (ship), 174.
- Nevis, W. I., 443.
- New Bedford, Mass., 76.
- New Braintree, Mass., 440.
- New Brighton, N. Y., 73.
- New Brunswick, N. J., 367.
- New-Englands Plantation, 114, 115.
- New Gloucester, Me., 214.
- New Haven, Conn., 157, 180, 233, 415.
- New London, Conn., 355, 365, 368.
- New Salem, Mass., 96, 118, 243, 245, 247, 295.
- New Sarum, England, 294, 297, 303, 390.
- New York, 75, 154.
- New York, N. Y., 92, 344, 347, 349, 350, 367, 396, 399, 422.
- Newbury, England, 232.
- Newbury, Mass., 131, 159, 249, 283, 284, 297, 298, 301, 342-344, 371, 383, 433, 448.
- Newbury, N. H., 389.
- Newbury, Vt., 345.
- Newburyport, Mass., 158, 159, 389.
- Newcastle, N. H., 279.
- Newcomb, Sarah, 79.
- Newhall, Andrew, 431.
- Betsey, 388.
- Elizabeth, 131.
- Hannah, 72.
- Harriet E., 401.
- Joseph, 423.
- Lydia, 388.
- Martha, 358.
- Mary P., 397.
- Nathan, 397.
- Nathaniel, 131.
- Rachel, 423.
- Ruth, 387.
- Susanna, 431.
- Newman, Antipas, 90.
- Elizabeth, 90.
- Henry, 356.
- Ruth, 356.
- Sarah, 357.
- Newport, R. I., 153, 269, 270, 307, 435.
- Newton, Mass., 154, 396.
- Newton, Lydia, 243.
- Nichols, Anne, 218.



- Nichols, *continued*.  
   Benjamin Ropes, 422.  
   Betsey, 74.  
   David, 387.  
   Edward, 356.  
   Eliza G., 399.  
   Elizabeth, 243, 420, 431, 442.  
   Hannah, 356, 387.  
   Henry, 345.  
   Ichabod, 337, 343.  
   John, 356.  
   Lydia, 343.  
   Mary, 356.  
   Samuel, 420, 431.  
   Sarah, 387.  
   Sarah Hardy, 345.  
   Thomas, 387.  
 Nichols brook, 13.  
 Nicholson, Catherine, 131.  
 Nick, Sarah, 432.  
 Nimblet, Mary, 388.  
 Nixon, Mathew, 315, 378.  
 Noddle, William, 197, 402.  
 Norman, —, 241, 407, 427, 428.  
   Abigail, 88.  
   Annie, 88.  
   Arabella, 88.  
   Hannah, 88.  
   John, 88, 315, 342, 446, 451, 454, 456, 460.  
   Jonathan, 88.  
   Joseph, 88.  
   Lydia, 88.  
   Margaret, 370.  
   Mary, 88, 342.  
   Rebecca, 88.  
   Richard, 88, 454, 456, 463.  
   William, 88.  
 Norris, Edward, 241, 314, 368, 392.  
   Elizabeth, 215.  
   John, 442.  
   Mary, 232, 392, 442.  
 North Andover, Mass., 71.  
 North brook, 303.  
 North Hampton, N. J., 91.  
 North Muskham, England, 249.  
 North River, 8, 20, 81, 84, 85, 192, 193, 240, 407.  
 North Yarmouth, Me., 119.  
 Northampton, England, 303, 442.  
 Northbridge, Mass., 357, 358.  
 North field, 82, 193, 303, 315, 356, 384, 407, 442, 450.  
   Layout of, 315.  
 Norton, Abigail, 283.  
   Elizabeth, 116, 283.  
   Experience, 283.  
   Freegrace, 282.  
 Norton, *continued*.  
   George, 197, 279, 282, 283, 455, 458, 461.  
   Hannah, 283.  
   John, 116, 119, 128, 282, 283.  
   Mary, 119, 282, 283.  
   Mehitable, 283.  
   Nathaniel, 282.  
   Sarah, 283.  
   Thomas, 128.  
 Norwalk, Conn., 355.  
 Norwich, Conn., 355, 365, 418, 426.  
 Norwich, England, 441, 443, 449.  
 Nowell, Increase, 144, 145, 236.  
   Mary, 365.  
   Samuel, 365.  
 Nurse (Nourse), Ebenezer, 354.  
   Edmund, 74.  
   Elizabeth, 354.  
   Francis, 91.  
   George, 249.  
   Hannah, 91, 354.  
   Lydia, 249.  
   Mary, 431.  
   Mercy Wellman, 74.  
 Nute, Martha Jane, 388.  
   Mary Estella, 400.  
 Nutting, John, 69.  
   Ruth, 69.  
 OAKES, John, 246.  
   Mary, 246.  
 Oakham, Mass., 243.  
 Oath of freemen, 196.  
 Oath of governor, 147, 196.  
 Oath of obedience, 195.  
 Ober, Abigail, 214, 402.  
   Ann, 370.  
   Israel, 214.  
   Richard, 402.  
 Odell, David, 389.  
   Laura C., 389.  
 Odlin, Hannah, 116.  
   Peter, 116.  
 Old Planters marsh, 84.  
 Old Planters settlement, 85.  
 Oliver, Bridget, 443.  
   Christian, 443.  
   Ellinor, 443.  
   John, 443.  
   Mary, 443.  
   Sarah, 72.  
   Thomas, 27, 28, 314, 315, 443.  
   William Wait, 72.  
 Olney, Elizabeth, 270.  
   Epenetus, 270.  
   James, 270.  
   Lydia, 269, 270.

*Olney, continued.*

Mary, 270.  
 Nabadiah, 270.  
 Stephen, 270.  
 Thomas, 198, 240, 269-271, 273,  
 353, 455, 458, 463.  
 Orange, N. J., 345.  
 Orchard farm, 91, 289, 290.  
 Ordinaries, 258, 288, 381.  
 Ordway, Hannah, 305.  
 Orford, N. H., 345.  
 Orkhussunt River, 8, 289.  
 Ormes, John, 314.  
 Ormsby, Abigail, 418.  
 Jonathan, 418.  
 Joseph, 418.  
 Mercy, 418.  
 Orne, Abigail, 153, 154.  
 Abigail F., 344.  
 Alice, 154, 280.  
 Ann, 152, 241.  
 Ann T., 154.  
 Anna, 153, 154.  
 Anne, 153.  
 Benjamin, 152, 153, 374, 381.  
 Bethiah, 153.  
 Bridget, 153.  
 Catharine Sewall Pynchon, 154.  
 Charles H., 337.  
 Charles Henry, 154.  
 David, 153.  
 Ebenezer, 153.  
 Edward, 154.  
 Eliza, 154.  
 Elizabeth, 68, 152-154, 374.  
 Elizabeth Ropes, 154.  
 Esther, 71, 153.  
 Eunice, 153, 154.  
 Frances, 152.  
 George, 154.  
 Jehoadan, 152.  
 John, 152, 153, 164, 184, 197, 314,  
 316, 341, 368, 454, 459, 462.  
 Jonathan, 152-154.  
 Joseph, 152-154, 337, 346.  
 Joshua, 153, 235.  
 Josiah, 132, 153, 154.  
 Lois, 153, 420.  
 Lucinda D., 154.  
 Lucy, 154.  
 Margaret, 153, 154.  
 Maria, 154.  
 Mary, 152-154, 432, 435.  
 Mehitable, 153.  
 Mercy, 153.  
 Nancy, 154.  
 Naomi, 153.  
 Rebecca, 153, 353.

*Orne, continued.*

Recompence, 153.  
 Richard Elvins, 154.  
 Ruth, 153.  
 Sally Fiske, 154.  
 Samuel, 153, 154.  
 Sarah, 131, 153, 154, 346, 381.  
 Simon, 152, 153, 353.  
 Susan, 154.  
 Susannah, 154.  
 Teresa, 154.  
 Timothy, 153, 154, 337, 420.  
 William, 154, 337, 344.  
 Orne's Hill, Peabody, 3.  
 Osborn, —, 433.  
 Damaris, 91.  
 Eleanor, 452.  
 Eliza, 216.  
 Esther, 253.  
 Hannah, 95, 384.  
 John, 452.  
 Joseph, 69.  
 Lyman P., 323.  
 Margaret, 432.  
 Mary, 452.  
 Mindwell, 371.  
 Ruth, 286.  
 Sarah, 69.  
 William, 198, 384.  
 Osgood, Benjamin, 393.  
 George, 92.  
 Hannah, 92, 213.  
 J., 85.  
 Mary, 393.  
 Nancy, 92.  
 Ruth, 393.  
 William, 393.  
 Ossipee, N. H., 72, 400.  
 Owens, Martha, 307.  
 Owussumug, John, 43.  
 Oxford, Mass., 117.  
 Oxston, John, 270.  
 Susanna, 270.  
 Oyster Bay, L. I., 269, 270.  
 PAGE, Esther, 95, 246.  
 Hannah, 245.  
 Rebecca, 249.  
 Robert, 462.  
 Paine, Abigail, 384.  
 Catharine, 444.  
 Dorothy, 444.  
 Elizabeth, 69, 444.  
 John, 444.  
 Lois, 153.  
 Mary, 444.  
 Nathaniel, 444.  
 Peter, 444.



- Paine, *continued*.  
   Sarah, 444.  
   Thomas, 444, 446, 462.  
   William, 153.  
 Palfrey, Alice, 84.  
   Edith, 84.  
   Elizabeth, 84, 435.  
   Jehoidan, 84.  
   Jonathan, 84.  
   Mary, 70, 84, 421.  
   Peter, 83, 84, 197, 198, 206, 223, 241, 261, 292, 314, 316, 318, 335, 337, 352, 353, 378, 407, 429, 454, 464.  
   Remember, 84.  
   Susannah, 282.  
   Warwick, 70, 421.  
 Palmer, Frances Dinsmore, 388.  
   Hannah, 420.  
   Hepzibah, 418.  
   Mary, 368.  
   Richard, 420.  
   Samuel, 418.  
   Stephen, 388.  
 Palmer Cove, 316.  
 Palmes, Ann, 196.  
   William, 196.  
 Paris, France, 159.  
 Park, Hannah, 95.  
   Mary, 365.  
   Thomas, 365.  
 Parker, Ananiah, 386.  
   Hannah, 393.  
   Mary, 386.  
   Oliver, 387.  
   Sophia, 387.  
 Parkman, Abigail, 95.  
   Deliverance, 69, 304, 441.  
   Elias, 95.  
   Margaret, 69.  
   Sarah, 95, 304.  
   Susanna, 441.  
 Parmiter, Benjamin, 374, 461.  
   Mary, 374.  
 Parnel, Annis, 374.  
   Benjamin, 374.  
   Martha, 431.  
 Parrot, Elizabeth, 253.  
 Parsonage, 169, 180, 181.  
 Parsons, Emma A., 350.  
   Jeffrey, 434.  
   Mary, 385.  
   Nathaniel, 385.  
   Sarah, 434.  
 Pasco, Hugh, 316.  
   Mary, 427.  
 Pastures, 231.  
 Patch, Elizabeth, 94, 402.
- Patch, *continued*.  
   John, 84, 94.  
   Margaret, 308.  
   Mary, 308.  
   Sarah, 84.  
 Patents, 54, 55.  
 Pateshall, Mary, 441.  
 Pattie, Apphia Chesler, 400.  
   Arthur L., 400.  
 Paulgrave, Anna, 402.  
 Peabody, Mass., 1-4, 6, 10, 12, 13, 36, 37, 68, 70, 71, 73, 76-78, 241, 242, 247, 252, 254, 281, 282, 323, 334, 350, 351, 356, 357, 399-401, 424, 431, 440.  
 Peabody, Christianna Rose, 358.  
   Clarissa, 92.  
   Ellen, 93.  
   Francis, 92.  
   George, 92.  
   Hannah, 354.  
   Harriet, 93.  
   Hepzibah, 353.  
   Joseph, 337, 338.  
   Martha, 92.  
   Sophia, 286.  
 Peach, Alice, 307.  
   Emma, 218.  
   Gertrude E., 77.  
   Harry R., 77.  
   John, 307, 341.  
   Margaret, 307.  
   Thomas, 307.  
   William, 218, 307.  
 Peale (Peele), Catharine, 285.  
   Elizabeth, 344.  
   Lydia N., 76.  
   Mary, 70.  
   Robert, 344.  
 Pearce, Anthony, 426, 427.  
 Pease, Abigail, 371.  
   Abraham, 370, 371.  
   Amos, 372.  
   Ann, 371.  
   Benjamin, 371, 372.  
   Bethiah, 370.  
   Daniel, 371, 372.  
   Deborah, 68.  
   Deliverance, 370.  
   Ebenezer, 371.  
   Edmond, 372.  
   Elizabeth, 370-372.  
   Ephraim, 371.  
   Eunice, 372.  
   Hannah, 371, 372.  
   Isaac, 371.  
   James, 371.  
   Jane, 371.

Pease, *continued.*

- Jemima, 372.
  - John, 246, 316, 370, 371, 374, 392, 457, 463.
  - Jonathan, 371, 372.
  - Joseph, 371.
  - Lydia, 371.
  - Margaret, 370, 371.
  - Marie, 370.
  - Martha, 371.
  - Mary, 246, 370-372, 374.
  - Mercy, 372.
  - Mindwell, 371.
  - Nathaniel, 370-372.
  - Polly, 372.
  - Rachel, 372.
  - Richard, 370.
  - Robert, 254, 370-372, 392, 456, 463.
  - Ruth, 371.
  - Samuel, 371, 372.
  - Sarah, 370-372.
  - Stephen, 68.
  - Susannah, 371.
  - William, 371.
- Peaslee, Lydia, 387.
- Peck, Ebenezer, 451.
- Hannah, 451.
- Pecker, Elizabeth, 448.
- Peckham, Annie L., 76.
- Peirce, David, 387.
- Eliza A., 72.
  - Elizabeth, 369.
  - Jerathmael, 337, 343.
  - Mary W., 73.
  - Phebe, 387, 440.
  - Sarah, 343.
  - Sarah R., 355.
  - William, 68, 130, 134, 137, 138, 191, 227, 363, 414.
- Pembroke, Mass., 348.
- Pen, The, 231.
- Pennington, Deborah, 418.
- Pequot Indians, 237.
- Pequot War, 410.
- Percy, Marmaduke, 440, 463.
- Mary, 440.
- Perham, John, 428.
- Lydia, 428.
- Perkins, —, 159.
- Ann Rebecca, 77.
  - Barbara Cooper, 159.
  - Elisha, 74.
  - George E., 77.
  - Hannah, 347, 450.
  - Joseph, 154.
  - Margaret, 154.
  - Samuel G., 159.

Perkins, *continued.*

- Sarah, 74, 159.
  - Susan B., 401.
- Perry, Doctor, 74.
- Augustus, 92.
  - Benjamin, 372.
  - David, 372.
  - Elisha, 372.
  - Elizabeth, 92.
  - Eunice, 74.
  - Francis, 372, 457, 463.
  - Jane, 372.
  - Lucena, 423.
  - Richard, 145.
  - Samuel, 372.
  - Sarah, 372.
- Pester, Dorothy, 372.
- William, 353, 372, 374, 457, 464.
- Peter (Peters), Elizabeth, 300, 434.
- Hugh, 88, 104, 107, 198, 201, 212, 272, 298-301, 314-316, 336, 375, 379, 380, 414, 451, 457-459.
  - John, 434.
  - Thomas, 299.
- Peterboro, N. H., 347.
- Petersham, Mass., 242, 357.
- Pett, Margaret, 368.
- Pettingell, Joanna, 131.
- Richard, 131.
- Phele, Sarah, 441.
- Phelps, Christopher, 116.
- Eleanor, 320.
  - Elizabeth, 116, 250.
  - Experience, 116.
  - Hannah, 394.
  - Henry, 315.
  - Israel, 371.
  - Mary, 371.
  - Nancy, 398.
  - Rachel, 285.
- Philadelphia, Pa., 159, 280, 388, 399, 422.
- Phillips, Elizabeth, 91.
- George, 182, 197.
  - Jane, 218, 250.
  - Stephen, 338.
- Phippen, Ann, 217.
- Anne, 342.
  - Elizabeth, 216, 440.
  - Hannah, 442.
  - Hardy, 395.
  - Joshua, 395.
  - Mary, 442.
  - Nathaniel, 287.
  - Seeth, 287.
  - Thomas, 442.
  - Ursula, 395.
  - Ursula K., 395.



- Phipps, Jane, 394.  
 Pickard, Elizabeth, 243.  
 Pickering, Abigail, 421.  
   Alice, 391, 420.  
   Angeline, 423.  
   Ann, 420.  
   Anna Dane, 423.  
   Benjamin, 420-423.  
   Charles, 422.  
   David, 422.  
   Edward, 420-422.  
   Elizabeth, 71, 395, 420-423, 431.  
   Eunice, 420-422.  
   George, 422.  
   Hannah, 131, 420-423, 430.  
   Henry, 422.  
   Henry White, 423.  
   James, 421-423.  
   Jane, 382, 420, 422.  
   John, 131, 204, 313, 316, 420-423, 464.  
   Jonathan, 420.  
   Jonathan Ingersoll, 422.  
   Joseph, 393, 420, 422, 423.  
   Lois, 153, 420-422.  
   Louisa, 422.  
   Lucena, 423.  
   Lucy, 421.  
   Luranna, 422.  
   Lydia, 280, 420, 421.  
   Martha, 422.  
   Mary, 70, 420-423.  
   Mary O., 423.  
   Mary Orne, 423.  
   Mehitable S., 423.  
   Nancy, 423.  
   Nathaniel, 422.  
   Nellie, 422.  
   Octavius, 422.  
   Olive, 422.  
   Rachel, 423.  
   Rebecca, 422, 423.  
   Ruth, 420.  
   S. Osborne, 423.  
   Sally B., 423.  
   Samuel, 420-422.  
   Sarah, 215, 287, 393, 420-423.  
   Sarah W., 423.  
   Thankful, 421.  
   Theophilus, 420, 422.  
   Timothy, 420-422.  
   William, 420-423.  
 Pickering's point, 2.  
 Pickman, Abigail, 342.  
   Benjamin, 287, 337, 338.  
   Clark Gayton, 153.  
   Dudley L., 338.  
   Elizabeth, 287.  
 Pickman, *continued*.  
   Hannah, 373.  
   John, 183.  
   Martha, 294.  
   Nathaniel, 206, 208, 316.  
   Samuel, 183.  
   Sarah, 153.  
   Tabitha, 206, 208.  
   William, 338.  
 Pickton, Thomas, 378.  
 Pickworth, Abigail, 402.  
   Ann, 402.  
   Benjamin, 402.  
   Elizabeth, 402.  
   Hannah, 402, 440.  
   Jacob, 402.  
   John, 402, 446, 451, 457, 461.  
   Joseph, 402.  
   Mary, 372.  
   Rachel, 402.  
   Ruth, 402.  
   Samuel, 402.  
   Sarah, 402.  
 Pierce, Mary, 243.  
 Pike, Hannah L., 397.  
 Pikes, 173.  
 Pilgrim (ship), 130, 134, 137, 330.  
 Pilgrim, Elizabeth, 392.  
   John, 379, 392.  
 Pilgrims, 54, 60-65, 80, 86, 99, 101, 110, 151, 164, 177, 232, 409-415.  
 Pine Hill, Peabody, 4.  
 Pinkham, Mary, 68.  
   Richard, 68.  
 Pirates, 54, 206, 223, 431.  
 Pitman, Bethiah, 72.  
   Bethiah C., 349.  
   Mary, 241.  
   Mary A., 358.  
 Place, England, 299.  
 Place, Phebe, 382.  
   William, 315, 381, 382, 429, 445, 463.  
 Plaisted, Eunice, 367.  
   Ichabod, 367.  
   Mary, 367.  
   Roger, 367.  
   Sarah, 367.  
 Planters, The Old, 84, 85, 97, 121, 122, 140, 185, 225.  
 Planters marsh, The, 84, 85.  
 Pleasant Pond, 9.  
 Plumer, Joanna, 402.  
   Samuel, 402.  
 Plymouth, England, 54, 55, 61, 286.  
 Plymouth, Mass., 54, 62-67, 79, 86, 99, 102, 103, 112, 125, 143, 151, 152, 164-166, 177, 178, 228-230,

Plymouth, *continued*.

233, 238, 269, 285, 326, 353, 355,  
402.  
Poindexter, Eunice S., 399.  
Point Shirley, Mass., 357.  
Polin, John, 206.  
Margery, 206.  
Pomeroy, Arad, 346.  
Sally, 346.  
Pomfret, Conn., 386.  
Poole, Lucretia, 386.  
Mary, 132.  
Poor, Fannie Augusta, 401.  
Poor-house Hill, Beverly, 2, 13.  
Pope, Abby Haskell, 389.  
Abel H., 388.  
Abigail, 387.  
Abigail Lander, 387.  
Abigail W., 388.  
Abraham Gould, 386.  
Allen, 386.  
Amanda, 389.  
Amos, 386.  
Ann Hall, 388.  
Ann Putnam, 387.  
Annie V., 389.  
Benjamin, 385, 386.  
Benjamin C., 388.  
Bethiah, 387.  
Bethshua, 385.  
Betsey, 386, 388.  
Caroline, 387.  
Caroline E., 389.  
Carrie, 389.  
Carrie G., 389.  
Catharine R., 389.  
Catherine M., 389.  
Charles S., 389.  
Christiana R., 389.  
Damaris, 385, 387.  
Daniel, 387, 388.  
Eben, 387.  
Ebenezer, 385-387.  
Eleazer, 386-388.  
Eliezer, 385.  
Elijah, 386.  
Elizabeth, 385, 386, 389, 439.  
Elizabeth Hacker, 388.  
Elizabeth T., 389, 398.  
Ellen Rebecca, 389.  
Emma, 389.  
Enos, 385-387.  
Estes, 386.  
Esther, 387-389.  
Esther R., 388.  
Eunice, 385-387.  
Exercise, 385.  
Folger, 387.

Pope, *continued*.

Frances, 388.  
Frances Dinsmore, 388.  
Frank, 388.  
Frank A., 389.  
George, 385, 387, 389.  
George F., 389.  
George Henry, 389.  
George Swaine, 389.  
George W., 389.  
Georgia, 389.  
Gertrude, 385, 387.  
Hannah, 385-387.  
Hannah N., 388.  
Harriet, 387.  
Harriet A., 389.  
Harriet N., 389.  
Harriet Newell, 75.  
Harrison, 389.  
Henry, 386.  
Henry E., 75, 388, 389.  
Henry W., 389.  
Horace, 388.  
Horatio Gates, 387.  
Huldah, 386.  
James, 387-389, 398.  
James Franklin, 389.  
Jasper, 386, 387.  
Jerome, 385.  
Jerusha, 385.  
John, 386, 387, 463.  
John H., 389.  
John L., 389.  
John R., 388, 389.  
John T., 388.  
Jonathan Dean, 387.  
Joseph, 198, 316, 385, 386, 388,  
449, 457.  
Joseph N., 387.  
Joseph Wilton, 389.  
Joshua, 387.  
Laura C., 389.  
Lizzie, 389.  
Lois, 387.  
Lot, 388, 389.  
Lucretia, 386, 387.  
Lucy, 386.  
Lucy A., 389.  
Lucy M., 388.  
Lydia, 387, 388.  
Lydia C., 389.  
Lydia M., 387.  
Mabel Rose, 389.  
Margaret, 385-387.  
Maria, 389.  
Maria A., 389.  
Maria M., 389.  
Martha, 385.



Pope, *continued.*

Martha Jane, 388.  
 Mary, 385-388, 439.  
 Mary Ann, 388, 389.  
 Mary D., 389, 397.  
 Mary Elizabeth, 389.  
 Mary Ida, 389.  
 Mary Jane, 389.  
 Mary L., 389.  
 Mary T., 389.  
 Matilda, 387.  
 May Elizabeth, 400.  
 Mehitable, 70, 385-389.  
 Mehitable Carroll, 388.  
 Molly, 386.  
 Nancy, 386.  
 Nathaniel, 385.  
 Oliver, 386, 387.  
 Orlando Ebenezer, 388.  
 Perley Putnam, 386.  
 Peter, 388.  
 Phebe, 386, 387.  
 Philadelphia, 386.  
 Priscilla, 385.  
 Rebecca, 385.  
 Rebecca H., 388.  
 Rebecca L., 388.  
 Rebecca S., 388.  
 Robert, 385, 386.  
 Ruth, 385-387.  
 Sally, 387, 388.  
 Samuel, 385, 386.  
 Samuel A., 387, 388.  
 Samuel Carroll, 387, 388.  
 Samuel Lysander, 388.  
 Sarah, 385-388.  
 Sarah A., 388.  
 Sarah Nichols, 388.  
 Seba, 388.  
 Seth, 386.  
 Sophia, 387.  
 Stephen, 386-388.  
 Stephen F., 389.  
 Susanna, 385.  
 Theodate, 387.  
 Thomas S., 387-389.  
 Thomas Swain, 389.  
 William A., 388, 389, 397.  
 William Allen, 387.  
 William H., 389.  
 William Walton, 387.  
 Zephaniah, 386.  
 Poplin, N. H., 387.  
 Popper, Rebecca E., 401.  
 Porter, Abigail, 383.  
 Ann, 284.  
 Benjamin, 91, 354.  
 Eleazer, 383.

Porter, *continued.*

Elizabeth, 119, 284, 452.  
 Eunice, 373.  
 Ginger, 118, 251.  
 Hannah, 83, 91, 116.  
 Israel, 284.  
 John, 290, 305, 318, 460.  
 Jonathan, 354, 373, 457.  
 Joseph, 284.  
 Lydia, 305, 446.  
 Mary, 69, 117, 119, 354, 373, 431.  
 Mehitable, 354.  
 Nathaniel, 198, 385, 455.  
 Ruth, 354.  
 Samuel, 83, 116.  
 Sarah, 69, 280, 354.  
 William, 446.  
 Porter's River, 8, 21.  
 Portland, Me., 73, 74, 346.  
 Portland, Ore., 133.  
 Portsmouth, N. H., 74, 117, 279, 280, 436.  
 Postmaster general, 422.  
 Pote, Margaret, 368.  
 Potter, Hannah, 431.  
 Mary, 441.  
 Nicholas, 441.  
 Pottsville, Pa., 73.  
 Pound, The, 210, 211.  
 Pouomeneucant River, 8, 290.  
 Pousland, George F., 389.  
 Harriet A., 389.  
 Powell, Elizabeth, 306.  
 Poynton, Thomas, 337.  
 Pratt, Jane, 422.  
 Margaret, 91.  
 Mary, 280.  
 William, 280.  
 Preble, Agnes Deborah Taylor, 465.  
 Prentiss, Elizabeth, 349.  
 Prescott, Benjamin, 158.  
 Elizabeth, 158.  
 George Washington, 436.  
 Mary, 436.  
 William, 337.  
 Preston, Conn., 305, 384.  
 Preston, Francis Perley, 216.  
 Mary, 131.  
 Mary Elizabeth, 216.  
 Price, Ann Maria, 397.  
 Augustus E., 397.  
 Charles, 307.  
 Elizabeth, 356.  
 Hannah, 304.  
 Jane, 307.  
 Thomas, 356.  
 Walter, 319, 336, 377-379.  
 Prices, 257, 258, 291.

Pride, Elizabeth, 427.  
     John, 427, 457, 461.  
     Mary, 427.  
 Priest, Sarah, 232.  
 Prince, Anna, 248.  
     Daniel, 354.  
     Elizabeth, 248, 354.  
     Emma, 248.  
     Ezra, 248.  
     Henry, 345.  
     John, 337, 338.  
     Mary, 347.  
     Richard, 314, 316, 319.  
     Robert, 371.  
     Ruth Hardy, 345.  
     Sarah, 354.  
 Prisey, John, 153.  
     Sarah, 153.  
 Pritchard, Ruth, 251.  
 Proctor, Abigail, 356.  
     Elizabeth, 285, 308.  
     Hannah, 91, 242, 384.  
     John, 308, 354, 357, 383, 422.  
     Joseph, 131.  
     Lydia, 383, 394.  
     Mary, 357, 422.  
     Ruth, 354.  
     Sarah, 116, 131.  
     Thorndike, 91, 285.  
 Prospect Hill, Beverly, 13.  
 Prospect Hill, Peabody, 3.  
 Providence, R. I., 231, 268-273, 419,  
     435.  
 Provincetown, Mass., 79.  
 Psalms, Book of, 244.  
 Puckett, Thomas, 205.  
 Pulsifer, Benedict, 383.  
     Mary, 357.  
     Susanna, 383.  
 Punchard, Abigail, 383.  
     Emma Marion, 398.  
     William, 383.  
 Purchase, Abraham, 279.  
     Elizabeth, 343.  
     Ruth, 279.  
     Samuel, 53.  
     Sarah, 384.  
 Purdy, Mary Jane, 347.  
 Purington, Content, 396.  
     Sarah, 453.  
 Puritans, 60-62, 90, 100, 156, 160-  
     162, 165, 181, 232.  
 Pushee, Lucy, 345.  
 Putnam, Aaron, 384.  
     Abigail, 250, 296, 384.  
     Ann, 95.  
     Anna, 71.

Putnam, *continued*.  
     Archelaus, 251.  
     Bartholomew, 70.  
     Benjamin, 249, 250, 384.  
     Bethiah, 249.  
     Cornelius, 250.  
     Daniel, 296.  
     Ebenezer, 337.  
     Ede, 440.  
     Elizabeth, 70, 92, 154, 249, 250.  
     Elizabeth Bell, 74.  
     Emma, 439.  
     Eunice, 250, 386.  
     Frederick W., 37.  
     Hannah, 251, 385.  
     Holyoke, 250.  
     Israel, 251, 386.  
     James, 284, 353, 386.  
     John, 296, 323, 439, 450.  
     Joseph, 304.  
     Joshua, 247.  
     Josiah, 249.  
     Lydia, 70, 91, 248, 384.  
     Margaret Dale, 349.  
     Martha, 92.  
     Mary, 91, 92, 118, 304, 353.  
     Mehitable, 251, 385, 394.  
     Nancy, 386.  
     Nathaniel, 249.  
     Peter, 91.  
     Rachel, 119, 247, 296, 450.  
     Ruth, 247, 284, 439.  
     Samuel, 118.  
     Sarah, 71, 249-251, 346.  
     Susanna, 384.  
     W. H. A., 74.  
     William, 70.  
 Putnam's Hill, Danvers, 5.  
 Putney (Pudney), John, 316.  
     Joseph, 281.  
     Keziah, 451.  
     Mehitable, 281.  
     Sarah, 249.  
 Pynchon, Martha, 436.  
     William, 145, 167-169, 337.  
 QUAKERS, 296, 452.  
 Quarries, 13.  
 Quinepiack, Conn., 180.  
 Quiner, Priscilla Ellen, 398.  
 Quint, George W., 74.  
     Margaret M., 74.  
 RABY Castle, 359, 362.  
 Raccoon rocks, Manchester, 18.  
 Raddan, Elizabeth, 394.  
 Radipole Parish, England, 6.  
 Rainborow, William, 439.



- Raleigh, N. C., 75.  
 Raleigh, N. J., 347.  
 Ram Island, 2.  
 Ramsdell, Hannah, 434.  
     Mary, 394.  
 Rand, Ellen A., 358.  
 Randall, Abigail, 371.  
 Ranney, Elizabeth, 285.  
     Stephen, 285.  
 Rappahannock, Va., 252.  
 Ratcliffe, Philip, 219, 221, 223.  
 Rattlesnake Hill, Beverly, 22.  
 Rattlesnake point, Beverly, 22.  
 Ravell, Adam, 422.  
     Elizabeth, 422.  
 Raymond, England, 182.  
 Raymond (Rayment), Abigail, 119,  
     282.  
     Bathsheba, 355.  
     Benjamin, 354.  
     Carrie Slade, 349.  
     Daniel, 355.  
     Elizabeth, 87, 355.  
     Hannah, 355.  
     Hepzibah, 119.  
     Jane, 354.  
     John, 338, 355.  
     Jonathan, 119, 338.  
     Joshua, 355.  
     Judith, 355.  
     Lemuel, 355.  
     Mary, 355, 446.  
     Rebecca, 355.  
     Richard, 197, 240, 292, 314, 316,  
         352, 353, 355, 375, 451, 454, 459,  
         462.  
     Ruth, 446.  
     Samuel, 355.  
     Sarah, 132.  
     Thomas, 337.  
     William, 87.  
 Rayner, Abigail, 284.  
     John, 284.  
 Raynolds, John, 282.  
     Susanna, 282.  
 Rea, Aaron, 354.  
     Abel, 247.  
     Abigail, 353, 354.  
     Anna, 353, 354.  
     Archelaus, 354, 355.  
     Bartholomew, 353, 354.  
     Bethiah, 283, 353, 434.  
     Caleb, 354.  
     Caroline, 355.  
     Charles, 355.  
     Charles Samuel, 355.  
     Daniel, 197, 292, 315, 318, 352,  
         353, 355, 356, 428, 438, 448, 455,  
         459, 460.  
     Ebenezer, 354.  
     Elizabeth, 118, 353-355.  
     Emma, 71, 353, 354.  
     Eunice, 354.  
     Euphemia, 354.  
     Frances, 355.  
     George, 355.  
     George Campbell Smith, 355.  
     Gideon, 353, 354.  
     Hannah, 247, 353, 354.  
     Hephzibah, 118, 353, 354.  
     Isaiah, 354.  
     James, 354.  
     Jane, 354.  
     Jemima, 353.  
     Jeremiah, 354.  
     John, 353, 354.  
     Joseph, 354.  
     Joshua, 118, 316, 353, 354.  
     Judith, 354, 446.  
     Keturah, 353.  
     Kezia, 353.  
     Lemuel, 353.  
     Lydia, 353, 354.  
     Margaret, 354.  
     Maria March, 355.  
     Mary, 353-355.  
     Mary F., 355.  
     Mason, 355.  
     Mehitable, 354.  
     Mercy, 354.  
     Moses, 354.  
     Nathan, 354.  
     Pelatiah, 353.  
     Pilgrim, 353.  
     Rebecca, 153, 353.  
     Rosamond, 355.  
     Ruth, 253, 353, 354.  
     Samuel, 355.  
     Samuel George, 355.  
     Sarah, 353-355, 433, 445.  
     Sarah R., 355.  
     Uzziel, 353, 354.  
     William Archelaus, 355.  
     Zerubbabel, 353, 354.  
     Zerviah, 353.  
 Read (Reed, Reid), Caroline L., 78.  
     Edmund, 300.  
     Elizabeth, 96, 300.  
     Emma F., 401.  
     Hester, 449.  
     Isaac, 384.  
     Margaret, 300.  
     Martha, 300, 345, 383.  
     Mary, 218, 353, 426.

Read, *continued*.

- Nancy W., 347.
- Rebecca, 384.
- Richard, 449.
- Samuel, 301, 307.
- Sarah, 357.
- Thomas, 175, 300, 307, 315, 340, 352, 427, 454, 457, 460, 463.
- Reading, Mass., 84, 242, 247, 287, 345, 382, 385, 388, 393, 433, 451.
- Red Cross incident, 259, 260.
- Redington, Mary, 305.
- Reed's Ferry, N. H., 400.
- Reeves, Widow, 271.
  - Abigail, 395.
  - Asa, 395.
  - Freeborn, 241.
  - Hannah, 395.
  - John, 313.
  - Mary, 241, 420.
  - William, 420.
- Register of Deeds, 421.
- Rehoboth, Mass, 283.
- Renalds, Alexander, 371.
  - Henry, 313.
  - Mary, 371.
- Return (vessel), 377, 442.
- Revill, John, 168, 169.
- Revolution, War of the, 118, 242, 244, 251, 253, 357, 358, 369, 387, 432, 439, 440.
- Rhoads (Roads), Edmund, 431.
  - Elizabeth, 382, 431.
  - Elizabeth Adams, 358.
  - Hannah, 247.
  - John W., 538.
  - Thomas, 382.
- Rial Side, 83, 119, 289, 305, 404.
- Rice, Abigail, 73.
  - Louisa, 322.
- Rich, —, 243.
  - Bethiah, 279.
  - Obadiah, 279.
- Richards, Elizabeth, 158.
  - Joseph, 394.
  - Lydia, 394.
  - Mary, 69.
- Richardson, Abigail, 74, 243, 451.
  - Elizabeth, 247.
  - Hannah, 250.
  - Joseph, 243.
  - Solomon, 247, 451.
- Richmond, N. H., 422.
- Rickman, Isaac, 116, 138.
- Ringe, Thomas, 373, 457.
- Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, 73, 92.
- Rix, Bridget, 430.
  - Elizabeth, 427.

Rix, *continued*.

- Samuel, 427.
- Susanna, 252.
- Thomas, 315, 430.
- Roach, Francis, 432.
  - Mary, 393.
  - Mercy, 432.
- Robbins, Mary, 340.
  - Thomas, 313, 315, 316, 340.
- Roberts, Elizabeth, 74, 399.
  - Eunice, 236.
  - Thomas, 236.
- Robertson, Margaret Linton, 350.
  - Mary J., 399.
  - William W., 399.
- Robie, Joseph, 435.
  - Mehitable, 159.
  - Priscilla, 435.
- Robinson, Mrs., 464.
  - John, 79, 319.
  - Lucy Pickering, 351.
  - Martha, 385.
  - Mary, 390, 393.
  - William, 316, 464.
- Rochester, N. H., 74.
- Rogers, John, 228.
  - Margaret, 354.
  - N. Augusta, 77.
  - Silence, 383.
- Roiley, England, 107.
- Roots, Bethiah, 373.
  - John, 373.
  - Jonathan, 373.
  - Joshua, 373, 457.
  - Josiah, 373, 461.
  - Richard, 373, 429, 455, 458, 464.
  - Sarah, 249, 373.
  - Susanna, 373.
  - Thomas, 249, 373, 457, 461.
- Ropes, Abby Ella, 351.
  - Abigail, 154, 342-344, 346.
  - Abigail E., 351.
  - Abigail Pickman, 346, 348.
  - Abigail Woodward, 349.
  - Abraham, 343, 344.
  - Albert Gardner, 349.
  - Alice, 346, 349.
  - Alice Colby, 349.
  - Alice Putnam, 349.
  - Alma Theresa, 350.
  - Almira, 347.
  - Amelia, 347.
  - Ann, 342.
  - Anna, 350.
  - Anna Blanchard, 351.
  - Anna Theresa, 349.
  - Anne, 342-344.
  - Arthur E., 350.



*Ropes, continued.*

Arthur Newhall, 350.  
 Augusta L., 350.  
 Austin Tuttle, 350.  
 Benjamin, 342-345, 347, 350, 394.  
 Benjamin Augustus, 347.  
 Benjamin Barker, 349, 350.  
 Benjamin Gardner, 347.  
 Benjamin Mansfield, 345.  
 Bertha M., 351.  
 Bethiah C., 348.  
 Betsey, 346.  
 Caroline, 347.  
 Carrie Slade, 349.  
 Charles Arthur, 349.  
 Charles Augustus, 347, 349, 350.  
 Charles Fisher, 349, 350.  
 Charles Ripley, 349.  
 Charlotte, 345.  
 Daniel, 343, 344, 346.  
 David, 284, 342-344, 346, 348.  
 David A., 348.  
 David Nichols, 345.  
 Dorothy, 214, 342.  
 Ebenezer, 346, 348.  
 Edward, 348, 350.  
 Edward D., 350.  
 Edward Delhonde, 347, 350.  
 Edwin Chapin, 349.  
 Eleazer Wheelock Ripley, 347,  
 349.  
 Elihu Harrison, 347.  
 Eliza, 345.  
 Eliza Orne, 348.  
 Elizabeth, 342-346, 348-351.  
 Elizabeth Archer, 349.  
 Elizabeth Cleveland Orne, 348.  
 Elizabeth G., 347.  
 Elizabeth Grant, 345.  
 Elizabeth Graves, 349.  
 Ella H., 351.  
 Ellen H., 351.  
 Emilie W., 348.  
 Emily, 349.  
 Emma A., 350.  
 Esther, 350.  
 Etta, 351.  
 Eunice, 343.  
 Eunice Diman, 346.  
 Fanny Wilkins, 347.  
 Frances, 152, 347, 350.  
 Francis, 346.  
 Frederick Ripley, 349.  
 George, 240, 314, 316, 342-345,  
 457, 463.  
 George Augustus, 349.  
 George F., 349.  
 George Henry, 347, 349.

*Ropes, continued.*

George Nathan, 347, 349.  
 Gertrude, 350.  
 Grace Austin, 350.  
 Grace Frances, 349.  
 Hannah, 342-348.  
 Hannah Browne, 346.  
 Hannah Haraden, 346.  
 Hardy, 343, 345.  
 Harriet, 345.  
 Harriet Adeline, 351.  
 Hattie Reid, 351.  
 Helen, 351.  
 Helen Wilkins, 350.  
 Henrietta, 351.  
 Henry, 345, 347.  
 Henry James, 347.  
 Henry Samuel, 347.  
 Henry Tibbets, 349.  
 Isabella Brown, 348.  
 James, 344, 347, 349.  
 James Hardy, 351.  
 James Miller, 347, 349, 350.  
 Jane, 342-344, 346.  
 Jane Baker, 350.  
 John, 216, 342-344, 346, 348, 349.  
 John Bertram, 350, 351.  
 John Collins, 350, 351.  
 John F., 348, 350.  
 John Francis, 349.  
 John Henry, 350.  
 John Spencer, 350.  
 John Titcomb, 343, 344, 346, 348,  
 350.  
 Jonathan, 342-346, 348, 350, 351.  
 Jonathan Archer, 348.  
 Jonathan Haraden, 346.  
 Jonathan Millett, 345, 347.  
 Joseph, 342-346, 348.  
 Joseph Elson, 345.  
 Joseph Hardy, 347.  
 Joseph White, 349.  
 Lavinia, 349.  
 Lawrence Goodhue, 350.  
 Leslie Parsons, 350.  
 Lincoln, 349.  
 Lizzie Maria, 349.  
 Louis Wheelock, 349.  
 Louisa, 345.  
 Louisa King, 350.  
 Lucinda, 349.  
 Lucy, 345, 347, 350.  
 Lucy Goodhue, 350.  
 Lucy Houghton, 349.  
 Lucy Jane, 348.  
 Lucy Pickering, 351.  
 Lucy R., 351.  
 Lydia, 342, 343, 347.

*Ropes, continued.*

Lydia A., 350.  
 Lydia Burrill, 344.  
 Lydia Laurelia, 345.  
 Marcellina, 347.  
 Marcia Elizabeth, 345.  
 Margaret, 344, 350, 394, 396.  
 Margaret Dale, 349.  
 Margaret Linton, 350.  
 Maria, 346.  
 Maria Lucinda, 347.  
 Marian Cloutman, 349.  
 Marian Wilkins, 350.  
 Martha, 345.  
 Martha Seeth, 347.  
 Mary, 88, 216, 342-348, 350, 384, 432.  
 Mary Ann, 345.  
 Mary Anne, 345, 349.  
 Mary Archer, 349.  
 Mary Augusta, 347.  
 Mary Barbara, 342.  
 Mary Browne, 348.  
 Mary F., 347.  
 Mary Frances, 350.  
 Mary Goodhue, 350.  
 Mary Jane, 347, 348, 350.  
 Mary Pickman, 348.  
 Mary Prince, 349.  
 Mary Seeth, 347.  
 Mary Silver, 347.  
 Mary Theresa, 349.  
 Mary Torrey, 349.  
 Mary Wilson, 345.  
 Mehitable, 345.  
 Mercy, 346.  
 Miriam, 345.  
 Nancy W., 347.  
 Nathan Millett, 345.  
 Nathaniel, 337, 342-344, 346, 348.  
 Olive, 348.  
 Phebe, 346, 350.  
 Polly Pickman, 346.  
 Priscilla, 343, 344, 346.  
 Priscilla Cheever, 349.  
 Priscilla Lambert, 349.  
 Putnam Harris, 350, 351.  
 Rachel, 215, 348.  
 Rebecca, 342.  
 Reuben Wilkins, 347, 349, 350.  
 Richard, 342, 343.  
 Robert, 346.  
 Ruth, 284, 343, 344, 346.  
 Ruth Hardy, 345.  
 Ruth Maria, 346.  
 Ruth Robinson, 351.  
 Sally, 344, 346, 348.  
 Sally Fiske, 154.

*Ropes, continued.*

Sally Lang, 348.  
 Samuel, 342-346, 348.  
 Samuel G., 347.  
 Samuel George, 349.  
 Samuel Woodman, 349.  
 Sarah, 131, 342-347, 350, 351.  
 Sarah A., 348, 350.  
 Sarah Ellen, 350.  
 Sarah Evans, 348.  
 Sarah Fisk, 346.  
 Sarah Gertrude, 351.  
 Sarah Grant, 345.  
 Sarah Hardy, 345.  
 Sarah Hodges, 346.  
 Sarah Holmes, 347.  
 Sarah J., 351.  
 Sarah Nichols, 347.  
 Sarah Osgood, 347.  
 Sarah Putnam, 348.  
 Sarah S., 347.  
 Sarah Sophia, 347.  
 Seeth, 345.  
 Susan Ellen, 349.  
 Susan Howard, 347.  
 Susan Maria, 349.  
 Susanna, 344.  
 Susie Colby, 349.  
 Susie Kidder, 351.  
 Thomas, 342, 343.  
 Thomas Holmes, 345.  
 Timothy, 343, 345, 347.  
 Timothy Pickering, 345.  
 Walter Peirce, 349.  
 William, 131, 215, 342-346, 348-351, 432.  
 William Archer, 348.  
 William Augustus, 348.  
 William Bucks, 347.  
 William C., 349.  
 William Henry, 345, 348, 351.  
 Willis Henry, 349, 350.  
 Rose, Brackley, 393.  
 Hannah, 365.  
 Rachel, 393.  
 Richard, 131.  
 Ruth, 131.  
 Thomas, 365.  
 Ross, Caroline Emily, 466.  
 Killicress, 304.  
 Matthias Denman, 466.  
 Sarah, 304.  
 Roundy, Elizabeth, 354.  
 John, 354.  
 Rowell, Elizabeth, 74.  
 Rowland, Abigail, 95.  
 John, 95.  
 Mary, 296.



- Rowland, *continued*.  
 Richard, 296.  
 Rowley, Mass., 83, 215.  
 Rowley Village (Boxford), 390, 392.  
 Roxbury, Mass., 70, 76, 153, 242, 269, 355, 356, 401.  
 Roxwell, England, 107.  
 Ruck, Hannah, 433.  
 James, 441.  
 John, 316, 433.  
 Margaret, 433.  
 Martha, 441.  
 Ruggles, Charlotte, 345.  
 Joanna, 242.  
 Rumball, Daniel, 314, 316.  
 Russell, Abigail, 280, 284.  
 Benjamin, 252.  
 Christianna Rose, 358.  
 Elizabeth, 118.  
 Emily G., 76.  
 James, 284.  
 John, 358.  
 Ruth, 252.  
 Sarah, 247.  
 Rust, Henry, 215.  
 Margaret, 280.  
 Sarah, 215.  
 Rutland, Mass., 242-244.  
 Ryall, William, 119, 120, 128.  
 Ryder, Susanna Bartlett, 92.  
 Rye, N. Y., 347.
- SACO, Me., 282, 400.  
 Safford, Daniel, 442.  
 Elizabeth, 442.  
 Mary, 440.  
 Sarah B., 92.  
 Thankful, 248.  
 William, 248.  
 Sage, Emeline Augusta, 74.  
 Rebecca, 355.  
 William, 74.  
 Salart, Bethiah, 305.  
 Salem, Mass., 1-466.  
 Description of, 245.  
 Name of, 142.  
 Salem Cadets, 281.  
 Salem Gazette, 369.  
 Salem Iron Company, 249, 355.  
 Salem Neck, 2, 19, 37, 376-381, 407.  
 Salem Savings Bank, 347, 355, 399, 401.  
 Salem Village, 117, 249-251, 282, 337, 353, 418, 433, 438-440, 450-452.  
 Salisbury, England, 269, 294, 297, 303, 390.  
 Salisbury, Mass., 247, 434, 448.  
 Salisbury, Martha, 159.  
 Sallows, Abigail, 294.  
 Ann, 294.  
 Freeborn, 278, 294.  
 Grace, 294.  
 Hannah, 294.  
 John, 294.  
 Joseph, 294.  
 Martha, 294.  
 Mary, 294.  
 Michael, 293, 294, 302, 457, 461.  
 Peter, 294.  
 Robert, 278, 294.  
 Samuel, 294.  
 Sarah, 294.  
 Thomas, 294.  
 Sallow's brook, 15.  
 Salt, 137, 291, 302, 331, 363, 438.  
 Salt House point, 404.  
 Salter, John, 247.  
 Lydia, 247.  
 Saltonstall, Richard, 89, 125, 135, 144, 145, 168, 169, 192, 193, 202, 227, 429.  
 Samon, George, 241.  
 Remember, 241.  
 Sampler, 332.  
 Sanborn, Mabel L., 398.  
 Sanders (Saunders), Benjamin, 373.  
 Bridget, 373.  
 Elizabeth, 373.  
 Hannah, 373.  
 James, 373.  
 John, 241, 370, 373, 435, 455, 458, 463.  
 Joseph, 373.  
 Mary E., 78.  
 Nathaniel, 373.  
 Philemon, 433.  
 Sarah, 433.  
 William, 373.  
 Sanderson, Abby Haskell, 389.  
 Mary, 396.  
 Sandin, Mary, 307.  
 Sands, England, 131.  
 Sandwich, England, 440, 443, 446.  
 Sanford, Elizabeth, 157.  
 Robert, 157.  
 Sargent, Abigail, 354.  
 Epes, 367.  
 Katherine, 367.  
 Mary, 95, 421.  
 Nathaniel Peaslee, 421.  
 Richard, 95.  
 Satell, Nathaniel, 284.  
 Sarah, 284.

- Saugus, Mass., 237, 445.  
 Saul, Sarah A., 348.  
 Savage, Mary, 158.  
 Sawyer, Jacob, 386.  
     Mary, 386.  
 Saybrook, Conn., 157, 355, 412, 426,  
     434.  
 Scales, 212.  
 Scarboro, Me., 131, 437.  
 Scarlett, Anne, 304, 433, 435, 455,  
     458, 460, 465.  
     Benjamin, 305.  
     Joseph, 304.  
     Margaret, 304.  
     Mary, 304.  
     Robert, 304.  
 School, 159.  
 Scituate, Mass., 346.  
 Scollay, Abigail, 421.  
     James, 421.  
 Screddingham, England, 159.  
 Scruggs, Margaret, 304.  
     Thomas, 198, 210, 225, 303, 304,  
         318, 334, 335, 338, 352, 427, 428,  
         447, 455, 462.  
 Scudder, Elizabeth, 392.  
     Henry, 368.  
     John, 373.  
     Mary, 373.  
     Thomas, 316, 464.  
 Seal, Colonial, 120, 125, 129, 149.  
 Seaton Parish, England, 298.  
 Secretary of State, 422.  
 Secretary of War, 422.  
 Seers, Alexander, 391.  
     Mary, 391.  
 Selectmen, 317, 319.  
 Sempringham Church, 155-157.  
 Sermons, 161, 179.  
 Sewall, Marcia Elizabeth, 345.  
     Margaret, 158.  
     Mary, 248.  
     Stephen, 44, 377.  
 Sexton, Sarah Derby, 72.  
     Walter Kirby, 72.  
 Seymore, Jane, 342.  
 Shafflin, Alice, 390.  
     Elizabeth, 390.  
     Katherine, 374, 390.  
     Michael, 313, 319, 390, 457, 463.  
     Sarah, 390.  
 Shapleigh, Ida E., 401.  
 Sharon, Mass., 93.  
 Sharp, Abigail, 116, 390.  
     Alice, 116.  
     Edward, 116.  
     Elias, 116.  
     Elizabeth, 116.  
 Sharp, *continued*.  
     Experience, 116.  
     Hannah, 116.  
     Mary, 116, 119, 283.  
     Nathaniel, 116.  
     Rebecca, 116.  
     Ruth, 116.  
     Samuel, 105, 116, 120, 121, 125-  
         129, 135, 136, 140, 143, 147, 149,  
         171, 178, 189, 197, 241, 257, 267,  
         278, 289, 290, 296, 314, 378, 419,  
         435, 440, 454, 455, 459, 464.  
 Shatswell, Elizabeth R., 398.  
 Shattuck, Damaris, 68, 385.  
     Sarah, 68.  
 Shaw, Abraham, 357.  
     Anna, 243.  
     Benjamin, 247.  
     Ebenezer, 250.  
     Esther, 357.  
     Hannah, 247, 250, 385.  
     Jacob, 243.  
 Sheffield patent, 65-67, 89.  
 Shehane, Abigail W., 388.  
 Sheldon, Hephzibah, 242.  
     Jeremiah, 248.  
     Margaret, 241.  
 Shellheaps, Indian, 31, 32.  
 Shepard, Caroline F., 397.  
     Elizabeth, 355.  
     Emery H., 397.  
     Louisa A., 78.  
     Stephen W., 355.  
 Shepley (Shipley), Ane, 428.  
     John, 315, 428, 457, 463.  
     Lydia, 428.  
     Nathaniel, 428.  
 Sherburne, N. H., 72.  
 Shillaber, Benjamin, 347.  
     Jane, 347.  
     John, 95.  
     Mary, 95, 384.  
     Sarah, 250, 285.  
     William, 250, 384.  
 Ship building, 379.  
 Ship rock, 10, 11.  
 Shore, Jonathan, 284.  
     Priscilla, 284.  
 Short, Elizabeth, 369.  
     John, 369.  
 Shotley, England, 437.  
 Shove, Jonathan, 395.  
     Lucy, 395.  
 Shrewsbury, England, 234.  
 Shrewsbury, Mass., 247.  
 Shrimpton, Abiel, 430.  
 Shutesbury, Mass., 243.  
 Sibley, Abigail, 286.



*Sibley, continued.*

- Bethiah, 95.
- Hannah, 253, 286, 295.
- John, 197, 200, 253, 285, 286, 355, 356, 375, 402, 423, 455, 458, 460.
- Joseph, 286.
- Mary, 286.
- Nathaniel, 286.
- Rachel, 286, 356, 402.
- Richard, 225.
- Ruth, 286, 295.
- Samuel, 286.
- Sarah, 286.
- William, 286, 295.
- Sickness, 99, 102, 177.
- Silsbee, Bethiah, 252.
- Caroline, 347.
- Elizabeth, 215, 420.
- Hannah, 418, 420.
- Henry, 378.
- Jonathan, 252.
- Margaret, 434.
- Mary, 252.
- Nathaniel, 338, 420, 426.
- Silver, Isabella, 431.
- John, 431.
- Mary, 347.
- Sophia W., 281.
- Simpson, Gertrude, 350.
- James Edwin, 350.
- Sinclair, Elizabeth, 344.
- John, 344.
- Singing Beach, Manchester, 7.
- Singletary, Richard, 448.
- Thankful, 247.
- Skelton, Elizabeth, 157.
- Margaret, 157.
- Mary, 110, 157, 241.
- Samuel, 108-110, 120, 121, 128, 140, 147, 151, 152, 155-157, 162, 168, 169, 191, 197, 202, 227, 229, 237, 256, 289, 290, 314, 324, 334, 419, 459.
- Sarah, 157.
- Susannah, 110, 157, 252.
- Skerry, —, 85.
- Abigail, 434.
- Ann, 433.
- Anna, 393, 434.
- Bethiah, 434.
- Bridget, 390.
- Deborah, 434.
- Elizabeth, 433, 434.
- Ephraim, 433, 434.
- Francis, 198, 315, 319, 390, 393, 394, 433, 434, 457, 460.
- Hannah, 433, 434.

*Skerry, continued.*

- Henry, 198, 314, 319, 433, 434, 443, 462.
- Jane, 394, 434.
- John, 433, 434.
- Lydia, 434.
- Margaret, 394, 434.
- Martha, 433.
- Mary, 433, 434.
- Nathaniel, 434.
- Priscilla, 433.
- Samuel, 433, 434.
- Sarah, 397, 434.
- Skinner, Elizabeth, 236, 435.
- Hannah, 282.
- Mary, 344.
- Skinner's Company, London, 365.
- Slate, Elizabeth, 418.
- William, 418.
- Slaves, 269, 363, 364, 414.
- Slue, Dinah, 95.
- Samuel, 95.
- Small, Abigail, 295, 296.
- Amos, 295.
- Ann, 295.
- Anna, 295.
- Benjamin, 295, 430.
- Elizabeth, 295.
- George, 295, 296.
- Hannah, 295.
- John, 294, 295, 316.
- Joseph, 249, 295, 450.
- Lucy, 295.
- Lydia, 96, 249, 295, 450.
- Martha, 295.
- Mary, 295, 296, 450.
- Rachel, 295, 296.
- Ruth, 286, 295.
- Samuel, 295, 296.
- Sarah, 295.
- Stephen, 295.
- Thomas, 295.
- William, 295, 296.
- Smethurst, Hannah, 372.
- Mary Susan, 400.
- Tobias, 372.
- Smith, Mr., 428, 457, 462.
- Widow, 373, 457.
- Alice H., 399.
- Ann, 279, 433.
- Azariah, 370.
- Benjamin, 84, 420.
- Caroline Jameson, 399.
- Carrie, 389.
- Carrie S., 77.
- Catheran, 120.
- Catherine, 381.
- Edward, 153.

Smith, *continued.*

- Edward A., 77.  
 Elizabeth, 153, 243, 246, 279, 355.  
 Eunice, 373.  
 Exercise, 385.  
 George, 294, 295, 316.  
 Grace G. W., 401.  
 Hannah, 370.  
 Harry W., 389.  
 Hazadiah, 439.  
 James, 200, 294, 296, 302, 457, 461.  
 Jane, 443.  
 Jehoidan, 84.  
 John, 14, 16, 20, 40, 44, 53, 54, 86, 87, 152, 177, 186, 189, 213, 246, 269, 314, 355, 433.  
 Lorenzo A., 397.  
 Lucy A., 397.  
 Lyman A., 399.  
 Margaret, 386.  
 Mary, 152, 242, 296, 344, 355, 420.  
 Mary Ann, 397.  
 Mathew, 443.  
 Molly, 71.  
 Priscilla, 393.  
 Ralph, 112, 124, 151, 156, 177, 178, 228, 273.  
 Ruth, 439.  
 Salome, 431.  
 Sarah, 118, 366, 386.  
 Silas, 373.  
 Thomas, 352, 464.  
 Smithfield, R. I., 357, 452.  
 Snake Hill, Beverly, 21.  
 Snow, Elizabeth, 420.  
 Society, 333.  
 Soewamapenesett River, 8, 289.  
 Sollas, Grace, 391.  
     Hannah, 434.  
     Robert, 391.  
     Thomas, 315.  
 Somers, Conn., 371.  
 Somersetshire, England, 83, 94, 110, 135.  
 Somersworth, N. H., 387.  
 Somerville, Mass., 73, 76, 78, 348, 466.  
 South Brimfield, Mass., 439.  
 South Danvers, Mass., 77, 282, 388.  
 South Dartmouth, Mass., 76.  
 South Elmham, England, 429.  
 South field layout, 316.  
 South mills, 382.  
 South Pass City, Wyom., 399.  
 South Petherton, England, 402.  
 South Reading, Mass., 386, 387.  
 South River, 290, 407.  
 Southampton, L. I., 340.  
 Southcoat, Thomas, 89, 144.  
 Southold, L. I., 363, 374.  
 Southward, Abigail, 369.  
     George, 369.  
 Southwick, Daniel Holt, 396.  
     Elizabeth, 70.  
     Esther, 243.  
     Hannah, 250.  
     Isaac, 243.  
     John, 95.  
     Josiah, 392.  
     Lawrence, 198.  
     Martha, 73.  
     Mary, 95.  
     Phebe, 396.  
     Provided, 391.  
     Ruth, 392.  
 Sparhawk, Priscilla, 344.  
 Spencer, Elizabeth, 371.  
     Freegrace, 282.  
     Rebecca H., 388.  
 Spooner, —, 315.  
     Abby Garrison, 76.  
     Daniel, 76.  
     Elizabeth, 433.  
     Hannah, 433.  
     Thomas, 198, 241, 315, 319, 433, 464.  
 Spring Pond, 9.  
 Springfield, Mass., 357, 358.  
 Springvale, Me., 76.  
 Squire, John, 307.  
 Stacey, Hannah, 295.  
     Henry, 235.  
     Jane, 235.  
     Joseph, 95.  
     Lydia, 243.  
     Martha, 235.  
     Priscilla, 70.  
     Rachel, 295.  
     Samuel, 295.  
     Sarah, 95.  
 Stackhouse, Richard, 314.  
     Susan, 314.  
 Stafford, Mary, 271.  
     Samuel, 271.  
     Sarah, 271.  
 Stage point, 375.  
 Stallion, Margaret, 368.  
 Stalworthie, Mary, 383.  
 Standish, James, 249, 426, 454, 457, 461.  
     Miles, 101.  
     Sarah, 249, 426.  
 Stanley, Annie J., 406.  
 Stanmore, England, 270.  
 Starbuck, Eunice, 69.



- Starbuck, *continued*.  
   Mary, 68.  
 Starr, Mary, 392.  
   Robert, 306.  
   Susanna, 306.  
 Starucca, Pa., 422.  
 Stearns, Abbie, 74.  
   Edwin, 74.  
   Moses Moody, 74.  
   Rachel, 251.  
   Ruth, 74.  
 Stebbins, Lois, 357.  
 Steed, Isabella, 55.  
 Stephenson, Mary Browne, 401.  
 Sterling, Mass., 92.  
 Stetson, Mary, 346.  
   William, 346.  
 Stevens (Stephens), Caroline, 76.  
   Ebenezer, 71.  
   Elizabeth, 71, 430.  
   George, 76.  
   Isaac, 379.  
   James, 379.  
   John, 358, 434.  
   Joseph, 430.  
   Margaret, 358.  
   Mary, 379.  
   Matilda, 76.  
   Nancy, 396.  
   Philippa, 379.  
   Rebecca, 153, 353.  
   Ruth, 380.  
   Samuel, 353.  
   Sarah, 241.  
   Solomon, 396.  
   Susanna, 379.  
   Thomas, 173.  
   William, 379, 380, 462.  
 Steward, Hannah, 96.  
 Stewart, Anne, 441.  
   John, 358.  
   Susan Ellen, 358.  
   William, 441.  
 Stileman, Deborah, 279.  
   Elias, 197, 278, 279, 288, 314, 318, 418, 452, 454, 457, 459, 463.  
   Elizabeth, 279.  
   Hannah, 279.  
   Judith, 278.  
   Lucy, 279.  
   Mary, 279.  
   Richard, 278, 279.  
   Ruth, 279.  
   Samuel, 279.  
   Sarah, 279.  
 Stiles, Caroline F., 76.  
   Frank W., 76.  
   Hannah, 251.  
   Stimson, Patience, 246.  
   Sarah, 252.  
 Stocker, Emma E., 401.  
   Sarah, 344.  
   Thomas, 344.  
 Stocks, 204, 205.  
 Stodder, Hannah M., 396.  
   Mary Eliza, 397.  
   Simon, 396, 397.  
 Stone, Abigail, 107.  
   Elizabeth, 68, 305, 393.  
   Ellen, 404.  
   Eva S., 400.  
   Hannah, 217, 393.  
   Herbert A., 400.  
   John, 107, 200, 370, 404, 406, 457, 461.  
   Mary, 84.  
   Mary Barbara, 342.  
   Nathaniel, 84.  
   Robert, 217, 315, 382, 390.  
   Samuel, 68, 305, 342, 393.  
   Sarah, 382, 390, 393.  
 Stone's meadow, 302.  
 Stone's Plain, Peabody, 6.  
 Stoneham, Mass., 243.  
 Stoning, Mary, 248.  
   Samuel, 248.  
 Storm, 208.  
 Storrow, Louisa, 159.  
 Story, Joseph, 338.  
   Mary F., 400.  
 Story's Race Horse, 118.  
 St. Annis Parish, London, 79.  
 St. Buttolph, England, 381, 382.  
 St. Edmunds, Salisbury, England, 298.  
 St. Ewe Parish, England, 298.  
 St. James Church, 429.  
 St. James Parish, Barbadoes, 304.  
 St. John, N. B., 153, 389.  
 St. Johnsbury, Vt., 351.  
 St. Lawrence Parish, England, 79.  
 St. Petersburg, Russia, 345.  
 Stratham, N. H., 421.  
 Stratton, Ann, 437.  
   Anne, 437.  
   Dorothy, 437.  
   Elizabeth, 437.  
   John, 437, 464.  
 Striker, Hannah, 383.  
   Joseph, 383.  
 Strout, Frances Ellen, 75.  
   George William, 75.  
 Sturbridge, Mass., 92, 244.  
 Success (ship), 190, 193.  
 Sudbury, Mass., 358.  
 Summer Harbor, 246.

- Sumner, Mary, 439.  
 Sundial, 332.  
 Sunset rock, 11.  
 Suntaug Lake, 9, 302.  
 Sutton, Mass., 95, 247, 251-253, 295, 356, 358, 371, 374, 383.  
 Sutton, Elinor Putnam, 73.  
     Harry, 73.  
     Rebecca, 215.  
     Woolman, 215.  
 Swamps, 254.  
 Swampscott, Mass., 348, 401.  
 Swan, Elizabeth, 376, 386, 394.  
     Hannah Shale, 75.  
     Henry, 376.  
     Joan, 376.  
     Joseph, 393.  
     Robert, 394.  
     Sarah, 376, 393.  
     Thomas, 376, 386.  
 Swaney, Joseph B., 76.  
     Sarah Helen, 76.  
 Swansea, Mass., 197, 283.  
 Swasey, Benjamin, 345.  
     Hannah, 345.  
     Hannah Marie, 398.  
     John, 214, 314, 316, 373.  
     Joseph, 314.  
     Katherine, 373.  
     Sarah, 214.  
     Thomas Stevens B., 398.  
 Sweet, Widow, 464.  
     Isaac, 270.  
     John, 208, 238, 257, 290, 454.  
     Mary, 270.  
 Sweet's Cove, 238.  
 Swett, Hannah, 218.  
     Joseph, 218.  
 Swine, 209-212.  
 Swineherds, 212.  
 Swinerton, Abigail, 95, 439.  
     Antipas, 439.  
     Asa, 440.  
     Benjamin, 439, 440.  
     Betty, 440.  
     Ebenezer, 440.  
     Ede, 440.  
     Elisha, 440.  
     Eliza, 440.  
     Elizabeth, 249, 282, 438-440.  
     Emma, 439.  
     Esther, 282, 439, 440.  
     Hannah, 392, 430, 439, 440.  
     Hester, 439.  
     James, 439, 440.  
     Jasper, 439, 440.  
     Joanna, 439.  
 Swinerton, *continued*.  
     Job, 198, 250, 315, 316, 392, 438-440.  
     John, 392, 430, 435, 438-440.  
     Joseph, 439, 440.  
     Joshua, 282, 439, 440, 452.  
     Josiah, 440.  
     Lucy, 440.  
     Margaret, 435, 439.  
     Mary, 386, 439, 452.  
     Mercy, 439.  
     Phebe, 440.  
     Ruth, 392, 439, 440.  
     Samuel, 440.  
     Sarah, 248, 250, 439, 440.  
 Sword of Endecott, 175.  
 Symonds, Abbie, 400.  
     Abigail, 71, 393-396.  
     Albert G., 399, 401.  
     Albert Porter, 399.  
     Alice H., 399.  
     Alice N., 400.  
     Alice Stodder, 398.  
     Amanda Ingalls, 400.  
     Ann Maria, 397.  
     Anna, 393, 396, 434.  
     Anna S., 398.  
     Annie E., 398.  
     Annie G., 400.  
     Annie J., 401.  
     Apphia Chesler, 400.  
     Arthur, 399.  
     Arthur Frederick, 399.  
     Beatrice E., 401.  
     Benjamin, 392-395, 434.  
     Benjamin F., 397.  
     Benjamin R., 396, 398, 400.  
     Benjamin Ropes, 401.  
     Benjamin Shapleigh, 401.  
     Bertram F., 401.  
     Bertrand Ropes, 401.  
     Bessie Alice, 399.  
     Bessie May, 400.  
     Brandreth, 399.  
     Calvin, 396.  
     Caroline F., 397.  
     Caroline Jameson, 399.  
     Caroline M., 396.  
     Catherine, 392, 397.  
     Catherine F., 401.  
     Catherine T., 397.  
     Charles Edwin, 397, 399.  
     Charles F., 397.  
     Charles Henry, 399, 401.  
     Charles N., 399, 401.  
     Charles W., 396.  
     Charles Worthen, 394, 396.  
     Chester Starr, 401.



Symonds, *continued*.

Clara Griffin, 401.  
 Clarence Brooks, 400.  
 Clarence Exercise, 400.  
 Content, 396.  
 Dean A., 398.  
 Dean C., 396, 398.  
 Dolly Lawrence, 401.  
 Dorothy A., 401.  
 Dorothy P., 401.  
 Eben, 397.  
 Eben Baker, 399, 400.  
 Ebenezer, 393-395, 397.  
 Edith Danera, 401.  
 Edith F., 401.  
 Edith Florence, 401.  
 Edward, 396, 397.  
 Edward A., 397, 399.  
 Edward B., 397, 399.  
 Edward F., 397.  
 Edward Franklin, 401.  
 Eliza, 397.  
 Eliza Breed, 396.  
 Eliza E., 399.  
 Eliza G., 399.  
 Eliza J., 398.  
 Eliza R., 400.  
 Eliza S., 398.  
 Elizabeth, 70, 131, 385, 392-397,  
 399, 423.  
 Elizabeth Chester, 400.  
 Elizabeth R., 398.  
 Elizabeth T., 389, 398.  
 Ella Frances, 399.  
 Ellen A., 398.  
 Ellen M., 397.  
 Emma E., 401.  
 Emma F., 401.  
 Emma G., 399.  
 Emma Marion, 398.  
 Ephriam, 394-397.  
 Ephraim G., 396, 398.  
 Ephraim Mulliken, 396.  
 Ernest F., 400, 401.  
 Ernest Gardner, 401.  
 Ethel H., 401.  
 Eunice, 70, 395.  
 Eunice S., 399.  
 Eva May, 401.  
 Eva S., 400.  
 Fannie Augusta, 401.  
 Fanny, 396.  
 Fenton, 396, 398.  
 Flora L., 400.  
 Florence L., 401.  
 Frank Willis, 401.  
 Franklin Putnam, 400.  
 Frederick A., 399.

Symonds, *continued*.

Frederick Pond, 401.  
 George, 395, 396.  
 George A., 399.  
 George C., 398.  
 George D., 399.  
 George Dean, 396.  
 George E., 399, 401.  
 George Edward, 398.  
 George Elmer, 400, 401.  
 George Fillebrown, 398.  
 George Gardner, 399, 401.  
 George H., 396, 398.  
 George Horton, 400, 401.  
 George Putnam, 401.  
 George W., 396, 397.  
 Georgie Ednah, 401.  
 Gertrude M., 399.  
 Grace, 91.  
 Grace F., 398.  
 Grace G. W., 401.  
 Hannah, 393-395, 397, 434.  
 Hannah D., 396.  
 Hannah L., 397.  
 Hannah M., 396, 397.  
 Hannah Marie, 398.  
 Harriet, 398.  
 Harriet E., 401.  
 Harriet Elizabeth, 397.  
 Harriet Gardner, 400.  
 Harriet Maria, 398.  
 Harvey Danforth, 400.  
 Hattie Manella, 401.  
 Helen, 401.  
 Helen Eliza, 401.  
 Helen Maria, 400.  
 Helene, 401.  
 Henry A., 400.  
 Henry C., 397, 399.  
 Henry H., 399.  
 Herbert, 394, 396.  
 Herbert S., 401.  
 Horace F., 400.  
 Ida E., 400.  
 Jacob, 394, 396.  
 Jacob Putnam, 396.  
 James, 315, 385, 392-396.  
 James Alfred, 401.  
 James F., 400.  
 James Monroe, 396.  
 James William, 389, 399, 400.  
 Jane, 394, 434.  
 Jessie M., 401.  
 John, 44, 45, 198, 240, 314, 315,  
 383, 392-395, 423, 457, 464.  
 John D., 396, 397.  
 John H., 399.  
 John Jameson, 399.

Symonds, *continued*.

John O., 398.  
 John Pickering, 395.  
 Jonathan, 393-395.  
 Jonathan Shove, 397, 399.  
 Joseph, 70, 72, 393-398, 400.  
 Joseph Clifton, 400, 401.  
 Joseph Pope, 397, 399.  
 Joseph Warren, 397.  
 Josephine M., 400.  
 Julia A., 400.  
 Julia Rosamond, 400.  
 Laura E., 400.  
 Laura Jameson, 399.  
 Lavinia, 396, 397.  
 Lavinia E., 397.  
 Lavinia Florence, 401.  
 Lemuel Willis, 397, 399.  
 Leverett Vasmer, 400.  
 Lillian May, 401.  
 Lizzie F., 399.  
 Lizzie M., 399.  
 Lizzie Mary, 401.  
 Lois, 394-396.  
 Lois F., 399.  
 Louisa Carey, 398.  
 Louise M., 398.  
 Louise P., 401.  
 Lucinda, 399.  
 Lucinda B., 399.  
 Lucy, 395-397.  
 Lucy A., 397, 399.  
 Lucy Dale, 397.  
 Lucy Jane, 397, 399.  
 Lucy S., 398.  
 Lulu Alberta, 398.  
 Lutia Maria, 397.  
 Lydia, 394-396.  
 Lydia A., 397.  
 Lydia Augusta, 400.  
 Lydia Frances, 399.  
 Mabel Florence, 401.  
 Mabel L., 398.  
 Margaret, 344, 345, 394-396.  
 Margaret A., 398.  
 Margaret Ropes, 401.  
 Maria, 395.  
 Maria Margaret, 398.  
 Martha, 300, 398, 399.  
 Martha A., 398.  
 Martha Ervin, 400.  
 Martha L., 398.  
 Mary, 392-397, 399.  
 Mary Alice, 401.  
 Mary Ann, 397, 398, 400.  
 Mary Browne, 399, 401.  
 Mary C., 398.  
 Mary Cook, 397.

Symonds, *continued*.

Mary D., 389, 397.  
 Mary E., 397, 398, 400.  
 Mary Eliza, 397.  
 Mary Elizabeth, 389.  
 Mary Ellen, 398.  
 Mary Estella, 400.  
 Mary F., 400.  
 Mary Goldsmith, 401.  
 Mary J., 399.  
 Mary P., 397.  
 Mary Purington, 396.  
 Mary Susan, 400.  
 May Elizabeth, 400.  
 Mehitabel, 394, 398.  
 Nancy, 395, 396, 398.  
 Nancy L., 400.  
 Nathan Breed, 396.  
 Nathaniel, 70, 393-396.  
 Nathaniel A., 397.  
 Nathaniel Cleaves, 399.  
 Nathaniel D., 397.  
 Nathaniel Danforth, 396, 397.  
 Nathaniel G., 399, 400.  
 Nathaniel Gardner, 395, 396, 398.  
 Nathaniel Gerry, 396.  
 Nathaniel Griffin, 400, 401.  
 Nathaniel Perkins, 401.  
 Nellie G., 400.  
 Orin Clayton, 398.  
 Paulina, 396.  
 Phebe, 396.  
 Phylis G., 401.  
 Priscilla, 393, 394.  
 Priscilla Ellen, 398.  
 Rachel, 393.  
 Ralph, 401.  
 Ralph Orrin, 401.  
 Rebecca, 395.  
 Rebecca B., 396.  
 Rebecca E., 397, 401.  
 Rebecca Galloup, 398.  
 Rhoda, 396.  
 Richard N., 400.  
 Ruth, 392-394, 439.  
 Rutha P., 399.  
 Sadie L., 400.  
 Sally M., 396.  
 Samuel, 300, 392-395, 397, 442.  
 Samuel C., 397, 400.  
 Samuel T., 399.  
 Sarah, 70, 383, 393-395, 397, 398, 422.  
 Sarah Ann, 399.  
 Sarah Cox, 400, 401.  
 Sarah E., 397.  
 Sarah Ella, 400.  
 Sarah F., 400.



*Symonds, continued.*

Sarah Pew, 398.  
 Shove Shannon, 399, 400.  
 Sophia, 396.  
 Stephen, 396, 397, 400.  
 Stephen G., 397, 399.  
 Stillman Gardner, 398.  
 Stillman Lothrop, 396.  
 Stillman Morse, 400.  
 Susan, 396.  
 Susan B., 401.  
 Susan C., 398.  
 Susan Price, 398.  
 Susannah, 393-395, 442.  
 Thomas, 392-398, 400, 434.  
 Thomas Putnam, 398, 400.  
 Thomas Shatswell, 398, 400.  
 Thorndike, 394, 396.  
 Thorndike D., 396.  
 Timothy, 396.  
 Ursula, 394.  
 Ursula K., 394.  
 Virginia S., 399.  
 Walter, 400.  
 Walter H., 400.  
 Walter Shapleigh, 401.  
 William, 70, 393-395, 397.  
 William A., 399, 400.  
 William Allen, 396, 399.  
 William Edmond, 398.  
 William H., 397, 400, 401.  
 William Henry, 398.  
 William J., 401.  
 William P., 398.  
 William Phipps, 345, 395, 396, 398.

**TAFT**, Charlotte Wylles, 75.

Hannah, 357.

Japhet, 357.

Talbot (ship), 104, 110-114, 120, 121, 127-129, 132, 134, 151, 186, 190, 193, 330.

**Talby**, Difficulty, 362.

Dorothy, 362.

John, 240, 272, 316, 362, 363, 455, 458, 463.

**Tapley**, Elizabeth, 427, 452.

Gilbert, 214, 295, 381, 422.

Hannah, 295.

Jane, 422.

John, 427, 452.

Lydia, 295.

Mary, 369.

Sarah, 214.

**Tapley's brook**, 13.**Tarbell**, Cornelius, 282.*Tarbell, continued.*

Elizabeth, 282.

Jonathan, 243.

Mary, 243, 247.

Nathaniel, 384.

Rachel, 384.

Sarah, 251.

**Tarbox**, Mary, 382.**Tariff**, 364.

Tattershall, England, 108, 156, 157.

Taunton, Mass., 74, 283, 348.

**Tawley**, Elizabeth, 390.

Jane, 356.

John, 390.

**Taxes**, 291, 336.**Taylor**, Abigail, 242.

Esther, 282.

James, 242, 282.

Mary, 439.

Mary Ann, 398.

Mercy, 354.

Rebecca, 153.

Thomas, 420.

**Tayte**, A. Rufus S., 75.

Emma Martha, 75.

**Teague**, Lucy Jane, 399.**Tebbetts**, Henry, 346.

Sarah, 346.

**Telescope**, Doctor Holyoke's, 337.**Temple**, N. H., 242.**Temple**, Abram, 444, 457, 462.

Alice, 390.

**Tenney**, John, 83.

Susanna, 83.

**Tew**, Mary, 269.**Tewksbury**, Mass., 382, 397.**Texas**, 75, 350.**Thanksgivings**, 193, 224, 238, 243, 415.**Thatcher**, Anthony, 297, 298, 368.

Benjamin, 298.

Bethiah, 298.

Edith, 298.

Elizabeth, 298.

John, 298.

Judah, 298.

Lydia, 298.

Mary, 298.

Peter, 297, 298.

Rebecca, 298.

William, 298.

**Thayer**, Azel, 73.

Eliza, 73.

Nancy, 73.

**Thomas**, Elizabeth, 283, 371.

George, 427.

Hannah Augusta, 358.

- Thomas, *continued*.  
   Humphrey, 283.  
   Mary, 356, 427.  
   William H., 358.  
 Thomas' Hill, Danvers, 5.  
 Thompson, Anna, 376.  
   Caroline M., 396.  
   Cornelius, 431.  
   Edmond, 314, 376.  
   Esther, 376.  
   John, 376.  
   Jonathan, 235.  
   Judith, 431.  
   Maria Lucinda, 347.  
   Martha, 376.  
   Orin, 396.  
   Thomas, 376.  
 Thorndike, Alice, 308.  
   Ann, 308.  
   Elizabeth, 308.  
   John, 308, 334, 428, 429, 437, 452, 455, 457, 461.  
   Margaret, 308.  
   Martha, 308.  
   Mary, 308.  
   Paul, 58, 308.  
   Sarah, 308.  
 Thoron, Marie Louise, 93.  
 Throgmorton, John, 268, 271.  
   Patience, 268.  
 Throgmorton's Cove, Marblehead, 31.  
 Throop, Daniel, 283.  
   Dorcas, 283.  
   Mary, 283.  
 Thrower, Eleanor, 241.  
 Thurber, Abner, 422.  
   Lois, 422.  
 Thurculton, Manor of, 437.  
 Thurston, Richard, 452, 463.  
 Tibbals, Sarah, 418.  
 Tibbets, Barbara, 249.  
 Tidd, Joshua, 445.  
 Tidey, Maria A., 389.  
 Tidmarsh, Mary, 443.  
   Richard, 443.  
 Tileston, John B., 369.  
   Mary Wilder, 369.  
 Tillie, Hugh, 116, 135.  
 Time, Telling, 332.  
 Timor, Coast of, 388.  
 Tinker's Island, 9.  
 Titcomb, Sarah, 344.  
 Tobacco, 86, 122, 225, 226, 238, 291.  
 Tobasco, Mexico, 388.  
 Todd, Eliza Ann, 358.  
 Tolland, Conn., 217.  
 Tolman, Elizabeth, 429.  
   Thomas, 429.  
 Tompkins, Deborah, 426, 427.  
   Elizabeth, 426, 427.  
   Hannah, 426.  
   John, 315, 316, 353, 426, 427, 433, 464.  
   Katherine, 426, 427.  
   Margaret, 426.  
   Marie, 426.  
   Martha, 426.  
   Mary, 241, 353, 426, 427.  
   Nathaniel, 426, 427.  
   Priscilla, 252, 426.  
   Ralph, 198, 426.  
   Rebecca, 217, 426, 427.  
   Samuel, 426.  
   Sarah, 383, 426.  
 Tompson, Anna, 153.  
   Edm., 462.  
 Toomey, Mary T., 389.  
 Topsfield, Mass., 249, 251, 282, 295, 305, 306, 339, 354, 368, 371, 383.  
 Touzel, Mary, 285.  
 Town (Towne), Catherine, 392.  
   Edmund, 385.  
   Elizabeth, 353.  
   Hepzibah, 96.  
   Jacob, 392.  
   John, 353.  
   Lydia, 249.  
   Mary, 368, 385.  
   Nancy, 92.  
   Solomon, 249.  
   William, 316.  
 Town clerk, 255.  
 Town government, 317, 319.  
 Town head, Manchester, 3.  
 Town laid out, 313.  
 Townsend, Ann, 270.  
   Elizabeth, 270.  
   Hannah, 132.  
   Henry, 270.  
   John, 270.  
 Tozer, Susanna, 344.  
 Tracy, Daniel, 426.  
   John, 426.  
   Jonathan, 426.  
   Miriam, 426.  
   Samuel, 426.  
   Solomon, 426.  
   Thomas, 426, 461.  
 Trask, Abigail, 95, 96, 393, 439.  
   Amos, 96, 357.  
   Ann, 95.  
   Anna, 95.  
   Anne, 248.



Trask, *continued*,

Annie M., 77.  
 Benjamin, 248.  
 Bethiah, 95, 96.  
 Betsey, 96.  
 Christian, 83.  
 Dinah, 95.  
 Edward, 95, 96, 295.  
 Elias, 95, 96, 246, 439.  
 Eliza, 95.  
 Elizabeth, 95, 96, 281, 304, 393.  
 Esther, 95, 96.  
 Eunice, 96.  
 George, 95.  
 Hannah, 95, 96, 357.  
 Henry, 95.  
 Hephzibah, 96.  
 James, 95.  
 Joanna, 251.  
 John, 83, 95, 96, 254, 315.  
 Jonathan, 95, 96.  
 Joseph, 96.  
 Joshua, 96.  
 Keziah, 95.  
 Lucy, 96.  
 Lydia, 96, 225.  
 Margaret, 96.  
 Martha, 96, 339.  
 Mary, 95, 96, 243.  
 Mehitable, 96.  
 Nicholas, 95, 254.  
 Osmund, 281, 304.  
 Rebecca, 95, 357.  
 Rebecca Peirson, 96.  
 Robert, 95, 96.  
 Samuel, 95.  
 Samuel Beadle, 96.  
 Sarah, 94-96, 432.  
 Susanna, 95.  
 William, 94-96, 174, 175, 197, 198,  
 254, 255, 260, 266, 301, 317, 322,  
 335, 337, 338, 372, 378, 412, 419,  
 420, 424, 428, 449, 454, 459, 463.  
 Trask's Plain, 6.  
 Travis, Susanna, 157.  
 William, 157.  
 Trees, 14, 15, 225.  
 Treffrey, John, 298, 299.  
 Martha, 298.  
 Tring, England, 270.  
 Troffatter, Susanna, 382.  
 Trow, John, 338, 339.  
 True, Henry, 314, 316.  
 Trusler, Eleanor, 320.  
 Thomas, 313, 319-321.  
 Tryon, Mary, 418.  
 Tuck, Joan, 401.

Tuck, *continued*.

Thomas, 213, 314, 315, 399, 408,  
 449, 457.  
 Tucker, Ann Peal, 72.  
 Benjamin, 70.  
 Ebenezer, 216.  
 Emilie W., 348.  
 Eunice, 70, 74.  
 Frank P., 76.  
 Gideon, 338.  
 Ichabod, 154.  
 Jonathan, 70.  
 Lucy C., 216.  
 Lydia, 70.  
 Maria, 154.  
 Mary E., 76.  
 Nancy, 72.  
 Richard, 207.  
 Samuel A., 72.  
 Tufton, Jane, 56.  
 John, 56.  
 Joseph, 56.  
 Robert, 56.  
 Tufts, Augusta L., 350.  
 Lewis P., 350.  
 Mary, 71.  
 Richard, 71.  
 Tunison, Lydia, 387.  
 Lydia M., 387.  
 Tunis, 387.  
 Tunkhannock, Pa., 349.  
 Turland, Ann, 302, 314.  
 Turner, Widow, 455.  
 Elizabeth, 181, 441.  
 Eunice, 366, 367.  
 Habakuk, 68.  
 John, 68.  
 Mary, 68.  
 Nathaniel, 236.  
 Ruth, 68.  
 Turtle Hill, 21.  
 Turtle Pond, 21.  
 Tuttle, Grace Austin, 350.  
 Twiss, Daniel, 382.  
 Edward, 382.  
 Elizabeth, 95.  
 Hannah, 382.  
 John, 95.  
 Lydia, 253.  
 Mary, 386.  
 William, 253.  
 Twist, Abigail, 96.  
 Jonathan, 96.  
 Tyler, Thomas, 45.  
 Tyllly, John, 68.  
 Tyndale, John, 189.  
 Margaret, 189.

Tyng, Dudley Atkins, 159.  
Sarah, 159.

UNDERHILL, John, 172, 237, 268.

Underwood, James, 444.

Union City, Ore., 76.

Upton, Abigail, 295.

Benjamin, 346, 439.

David, 248.

Dorcas, 243.

Ebenezer, 247.

Edmund, 71.

Eliza J., 398.

Elizabeth, 357.

Ezekiel, 287.

Ezra, 248.

Hannah, 242, 248.

James, 347.

Jeduthan, 431.

Mary, 431.

Mehitable, 248.

Nathan, 357.

Paul, 247.

Phebe, 247.

Priscilla, 71, 346.

Priscilla Lambert, 349.

Ruth, 287.

Sarah, 71, 247, 248, 439.

Sarah Sophia, 347.

Tamison, 242.

William, 242.

Upton's Hill, Peabody, 4.

Usher, Hezekiah, 365.

Mary, 365.

Utica, N. Y., 72, 347, 389.

VALENTINE, Benjamin E., 388.

Elizabeth Hacker, 388.

Vane, Henry, 198, 287, 356-362.

Varney, Anna Dane, 423.

Content, 391.

Lucinda Dodge, 358.

Nathaniel, 391.

Solomon, 358.

Vassall, Samuel, 145, 167.

William, 145, 167-169.

Veils, 230.

Venn, John, 144, 145.

Venner, Alice, 425.

Hannah, 425.

Mary, 425.

Thomas, 319, 424, 425, 462.

Verrin, —, 316, 418.

Abigail, 304.

Adoniram, 304.

Bethia, 304.

Deliverance, 304.

Verrin, *continued*.

Dorcas, 303, 304.

Hannah, 304.

Hilliard, 181, 294, 304.

Jane, 269, 304.

Joanna, 304.

Joshua, 269, 272, 293, 304.

Mary, 279, 304.

Nathaniel, 304.

Philip, 198, 303, 304, 313, 314, 317,  
318, 352, 408, 428, 434, 437, 448,  
455, 457, 464.

Robert, 303, 304.

Sarah, 214, 304.

Very (Verry), Abigail, 214.

Alice, 374.

Bethiah, 215.

Bridget, 281.

Charles H., 77.

Edwin, 398.

Hannah, 281, 374, 432.

Isaac, 431.

Jonathan, 393.

Joseph, 374, 432.

Keziah, 95.

Lydia, 431.

Margaret, 431.

Mary, 253, 393, 394.

Mary C., 398.

Mary Eliza, 77.

Patience, 357.

Rebecca, 95.

Samuel, 214.

Thomas, 281.

Victoria, China, 92.

Vincent (Vinson), Mr., 417.

Abigail, 434.

Elizabeth, 434.

Hannah, 434.

Jacob, 434.

John, 434.

Lydia, 432.

Rachel, 434.

Richard, 434.

Sarah, 434.

Thomas, 434.

William, 434, 441, 457, 461.

Vining, Jane, 217.

Vollor, Abby Ella, 351.

William L., 351.

Voluntown, Mass., 357.

WAABAQUIN, John, 43.

Wainwright, Elizabeth, 283.

John, 283.

Waite, Harvey, 76.

Jane G., 76.



Waite, *continued.*

Lydia, 281.

Wake, John, 437.

Katherine, 437.

William, 437.

Wakefield, Elizabeth, 132.

Rebecca, 374.

Walcott, Alice, 131, 373.

John, 70.

Jonathan, 286.

Sarah, 70.

William, 131, 272, 373, 454, 458, 463.

Walden, Dorcas, 431.

Walden Hill, Peabody, 3.

Waldo, Jonathan, 343.

Mary, 343.

Mary Jane, 465.

Waldron, Anna S., 398.

Joseph E., 398.

Walker, —, 83.

Abraham, 390.

Elizabeth, 402.

John, 402.

Katherine, 392.

Percis, 390.

Richard, 352, 388, 390, 457, 463.

Sarah, 390.

William, 425.

Waller, Christopher, 241, 314.

Margaret, 241.

Matthew, 419, 461.

Rebecca, 419.

Sarah, 419.

Wallingford, Vt., 422.

Wallis (Wallace), Abigail, 434.

Augustus F., 77.

Elizabeth E., 77.

Lydia, 249.

Waltham, Mass., 242, 389.

Walton, Elizabeth, 79, 298.

John, 298.

Josiah, 298.

Martha, 298.

Mary, 298.

Nathaniel, 298.

Samuel, 235, 298.

William, 234, 298, 368.

Wampumpeag, 24, 26, 27, 293.

Ward, Abigail, 236, 285.

Bethiah, 214.

Elizabeth, 72.

Emma, 389.

Experience, 248.

Hannah, 158, 285.

Jane, 344.

Jehoaden, 243.

Ward, *continued.*

John, 158, 214, 294.

Joshua, 314.

Martha, 294, 368.

Mary, 95.

Miles, 217, 247, 285, 314, 342.

Samuel, 236.

Samuel Curwen, 344.

Sarah, 217, 342.

Warner, Elizabeth, 372.

John, 270.

Lorenzo D., 388.

Mary, 388.

Mary Elizabeth, 77.

Peter, 372.

Priscilla, 270.

Warren, Abraham, 303, 457, 464.

Deborah, 119.

Isabel, 303.

Mary, 303.

Warriner, Joseph, 418.

Ralph, 203.

Sarah, 418.

Warwick, Mass., 346.

Warwick, R. I., 270, 271.

Warwick (bark), 238, 363.

Washington, D. C., 76, 77, 92, 93.

Wasselbe, Bridget, 443.

Watch, 176.

Watch house, 176.

Waterbury, Conn., 75.

Waterman, Bethiah, 270.

Mehitable, 270.

Miriam, 426.

Nathaniel, 270.

Richard, 119, 127, 208, 269-271, 273-275, 352, 353, 355, 408, 428, 438, 454, 459, 460.

Susanna, 270.

Thomas, 426.

Wait, 270.

Waters, Abel, 96, 384.

Abigail, 383, 384.

Amos, 383.

Anne, 383.

Barbara, 383.

Bethiah, 214, 383.

Daniel, 383.

Ebenezer, 383.

Elias, 383.

Elizabeth, 69, 374, 383, 384.

Eunice, 70, 383, 384.

Ezekiel, 383.

Hannah, 383, 384.

Israel, 384.

James, 382, 383.

John, 69, 383, 384, 426.

- Waters, *continued*.  
   Jonathan, 383.  
   Lois, 389.  
   Lydia, 96, 383, 384.  
   Martha, 383.  
   Mary, 69, 242, 280, 344, 383, 384.  
   Mehitable, 383.  
   Mercy, 383.  
   Nathaniel, 69, 374, 383.  
   Phebe, 382.  
   Priscilla, 383.  
   Rachel, 383, 384.  
   Rejoice, 382, 383.  
   Richard, 316, 382, 383, 457, 463.  
   Ruth, 253, 383, 384.  
   Samuel, 214, 344, 383.  
   Sarah, 353, 382-384, 393, 426.  
   Silence, 383.  
   Susanna, 383.  
   William, 383.  
 Waters River, 8, 290.  
 Watertown, Mass., 182, 242, 280, 401, 426, 427, 429, 437.  
 Wathen, George, 241.  
 Watkins, Elizabeth, 241.  
   Thomas, 241.  
 Watson, Abraham, 421.  
   Elizabeth, 421.  
   Joan, 392.  
   Thomas, 314, 315, 319, 371, 391, 457, 460.  
   Timothy, 314.  
 Watts, Lulu Alberta, 398.  
   William J., 398.  
 Wayland, Mass., 358.  
 Weare, N. H., 249, 349.  
 Webb, —, 457, 462.  
   Annie, 77.  
   Daniel, 342.  
   Elizabeth, 342.  
   Francis, 135, 168, 169, 314.  
   Joseph, 346.  
   Martha, 215.  
   Mercy, 346.  
   Nathaniel Goyet, 215.  
   Priscilla, 281, 343.  
   Sarah, 295.  
   Susanna, 395.  
 Webber, Hannah, 241.  
   John, 242.  
   Mary, 442.  
   Sarah, 242.  
   William, 241.  
 Weed, Bethiah, 370.  
   Samuel, 370.  
 Weeks, Bethiah, 214.  
   Thomas, 241, 314.  
 Weights and measures, 212, 213, 293.  
 Weld, Barbara, 294.  
   Edward, 69, 158.  
   Elizabeth, 69.  
   Mary, 69, 158.  
 Wellington, Elizabeth S., 216.  
   Hannah, 422.  
   Samuel, 422.  
 Wells, —, 135.  
   Lydia, 342.  
   Martha, 433.  
   Richard, 433.  
   Sarah, 217.  
 Welman, John, 382.  
   Sarah, 432.  
   Timothy, 432.  
   Union, 382.  
 Wenham, Mass., 1, 13, 35, 36, 71, 72, 84, 88, 90, 94, 116, 119, 154, 246, 251, 282, 305, 313, 317, 338, 351, 363, 366, 417, 418, 422, 423, 428-431, 440, 441, 445, 446, 448.  
 Wenham Lake, 2, 9, 35.  
 Wenham swamp, 8, 18.  
 Wentworth, Phineas, 372.  
 West, Abigail Phippen, 73.  
   Benjamin, 439.  
   Elizabeth, 216, 303, 402.  
   Eunice, 343.  
   George, 92.  
   Joanna, 439.  
   Martha, 369.  
   Mary, 92.  
   Mehitable, 281.  
   Nathaniel, 337.  
   Phebe, 382.  
   Samuel, 216.  
   Sarah, 72.  
   Thomas, 58, 303, 382, 383.  
   Thomas Brintnall, 343.  
 West Beach, Beverly, 6, 9, 340.  
 Westcott, Amos, 271.  
   Catharine, 271.  
   Damaris, 271.  
   Jeremiah, 271.  
   Mary, 271.  
   Robert, 271.  
   Sarah, 271.  
   Stukely, 269-271, 273-275, 454, 457, 464.  
 Weston, Francis, 197, 198, 269, 271, 273-275, 318, 352, 353, 392, 424, 428, 452, 455, 459, 463.  
   Margaret, 353.  
   Mary, 391.  
   Thomas, 61.



- Wetherbee, Clara Griffin, 401.  
     George Henry, 401.  
 Wetmore, Eliza, 154, 338.  
     William, 154.  
 Weymouth, Mass., 95, 217.  
 Weymouth, George, 52.  
 Wharf, Bethiah, 96.  
 Wharton, Lord, 157.  
     Richard, 158.  
     Sarah, 158.  
 Wheat, Jane, 429.  
 Wheaton, Robert, 418.  
 Wheeler, Elizabeth, 253.  
     Eunice F., 76, 355.  
     Thomas, 316.  
 Whetcomb, Simon, 89, 138, 144,  
     145, 167-169.  
 Whichcote, Benjamin, 234.  
     Rebecca, 234.  
 Whipple, George Willis, 400.  
     Harriet Gardner, 400.  
     John, 270.  
     Joseph, 249, 439.  
     Lucinda, 349.  
     Lydia, 248.  
     Mary, 270.  
     Sarah, 249, 439, 446.  
 Whitcomb, Adaline D., 76.  
     Horace, 76.  
 White, Abigail, 307.  
     Ann, 95.  
     Anna, 154.  
     Daniel A., 338.  
     Daniel Appleton, 154.  
     Eliza, 154.  
     John, 62, 63, 66, 72, 78, 82, 85, 86,  
         89, 90, 97, 104, 135, 167, 197,  
         300.  
     Joseph, 337, 338.  
     Mary, 69.  
     Mary Wilder, 369.  
     Mercy, 432.  
     Nancy, 154.  
     Rebecca, 422.  
     Resolved, 307.  
     Sarah, 423.  
     Stephen, 338.  
 White Angel (ship), 232, 233.  
 Whitfield, Henry, 157.  
     Sarah, 157.  
 Whitheare, Abraham, 427.  
     Edward, 427.  
     Elizabeth, 427.  
     Isaac, 427.  
     John, 427.  
     Mary, 427.  
     William, 427.  
 Whiting, Mary, 243.  
 Whitlock, John, 314.  
 Whittemore, Anne, 243.  
     Elizabeth, 371.  
     Hannah, 358.  
     Nathaniel, 371.  
     Ruth, 243.  
     Stephen, 243.  
 Whittredge, Sarah, 71.  
 Wickes, Francis, 269.  
 Wicomico, Va., 233.  
 Wiggin, Lucy, 96.  
     Thomas, 222, 223.  
 Wight, Isle of, 110, 111, 132, 133.  
 Wigwam rock, 12.  
 Wigwams, 44, 45, 193.  
 Wilcox, Olive, 422.  
 Wilder, Elizabeth, 242.  
 Wildermarth, Mary Torrey, 349.  
 Wiley, Ruth Ann, 286.  
 Wilkes, Mary, 83, 314, 315, 402.  
     Thomas, 314, 315.  
 Wilkesbarre, Pa., 422.  
 Wilkins, Abigail, 247.  
     Daniel, 250.  
     Frances, 347.  
     John, 247.  
     Jonathan, 247.  
     Mary, 247, 250, 402.  
     Sarah, 214.  
 Wilkinson, Ellen, 74.  
 Will, Old, 5.  
 Will's Hill, Middleton, 5, 41.  
 Willard, Hannah, 372.  
     Samuel, 372.  
 William and Francis (ship), 449.  
 Williams, Doctor, 160.  
     Aaron W., 281.  
     Abigail, 214, 217, 279, 280, 432.  
     Alice, 154, 280, 437.  
     Ann, 279.  
     Anna, 280.  
     Anstiss, 280.  
     Benjamin, 279, 280.  
     Bethiah, 279.  
     Catherine, 281.  
     Charles, 280.  
     Charles Frederick, 281.  
     Daniel, 269, 279.  
     David, 280.  
     Ebenezer, 279.  
     Elizabeth, 153, 154, 279-281, 433.  
     Elizabeth D., 281.  
     Elizabeth W., 281.  
     Frances, 350.  
     Francis, 280.  
     Freeborn, 269.

Williams, *continued*.

George, 197, 279-281, 314, 352, 375, 421, 422, 454, 458, 460.  
 George W., 281.  
 Hannah, 280.  
 Hannah Hathorne, 281.  
 Henry, 279, 280, 316, 383.  
 Henry Lawrence, 281.  
 Henry Russell, 280.  
 Hilliard, 214, 217, 279.  
 Isaac, 91.  
 Israel, 280, 281.  
 Israel Porter, 281.  
 James, 227.  
 James S., 281.  
 John, 95, 154, 225, 279-281, 385, 433, 448.  
 John B., 281.  
 Joseph, 269, 270, 279, 385.  
 Joseph Warren, 280.  
 Joshua, 279.  
 Katherine, 280.  
 Lydia, 269, 270, 280, 281, 420.  
 Lydia W., 281.  
 Margaret, 280.  
 Marie, 279.  
 Mary, 91, 181, 217, 269, 279, 280, 304, 384-386.  
 Mary E., 281.  
 Mehitable, 281.  
 Mercy, 269.  
 Nancy, 281.  
 Nathaniel, 279, 280.  
 Nathaniel West, 281.  
 Patty, 71.  
 Polly, 280.  
 Priscilla, 281.  
 Providence, 269.  
 Richard, 279, 280.  
 Robert, 442.  
 Roger, 180, 197, 227-230, 256, 257, 260, 264-273, 276, 287, 438.  
 Ruth, 279, 280.  
 Ruthy, 281.  
 Samuel, 181, 225, 279, 280, 304, 286.  
 Samuel M., 281.  
 Samuel Porter, 280.  
 Sarah, 95, 279, 289, 385, 442.  
 Sophia W., 281.  
 Stephen, 154, 280.  
 Stillman Pierce, 350.  
 Thomas, 463.  
 Thomas Russell, 281.  
 Timothy, 280.  
 Tucker Daland, 281.  
 Willard, 281.

Williams, *continued*.

William, 241, 313, 432, 437, 463.  
 Williamsburg, Pa., 422.  
 Willington, Conn., 418.  
 Willoughby, Abigail, 392.  
 Bethiah, 441.  
 Elizabeth, 233.  
 Francis, 441.  
 Nehemiah, 392.  
 Thomas, 233.  
 Wilson, Anna, 95.  
 Dinah, 95.  
 Edward, 294.  
 Eunice, 372.  
 Jacob, 72.  
 John, 95, 201, 230.  
 Jonathan, 358.  
 Joseph, 372.  
 Lambert, 128.  
 Lucy Foster, 75.  
 Prudence, 358.  
 Robert, 243.  
 Sarah, 72, 243.  
 Wilton, N. H., 252.  
 Winchester, Mass., 350.  
 Winchester, N. H., 422.  
 Winchester, Agnes, 77.  
 Perez L., 77.  
 Winder, Ann, 83.  
 Windet, Peter, 181.  
 Windham, Conn., 79, 117, 118, 417, 418.  
 Windham, Me., 250.  
 Windmill, 184.  
 Windmill point, 85.  
 Windsor, Vt., 93, 132.  
 Wingate, Eunice, 421.  
 Mary, 421.  
 Paine, 421.  
 Winn, Damaris, 234.  
 Edward A., 398.  
 Martha A., 398.  
 Richard, 234.  
 Winslow, Edward, 64-67, 87, 177, 178.  
 Elizabeth, 71.  
 Kenelm, 64.  
 Magdalen, 64.  
 Rebecca, 298.  
 Winter Harbor, 246, 375-378, 427.  
 Winter Island, 2, 375-379, 381.  
 Causeway to, 378.  
 Winthrop, Mass., 76.  
 Winthrop, Adam, 189, 190.  
 Anne, 189.  
 Elizabeth, 90, 300.  
 Henry, 190, 193.  
 John, 45, 90, 167-169, 174, 177,



- Winthrop, *continued*.  
     178, 182, 188-194, 198, 201, 206,  
     219, 221, 228, 229, 232, 237, 288,  
     300, 438.  
     Judith, 439.  
     Katharine, 367.  
     Margaret, 189.  
     Mary, 189, 366.  
     Stephen, 190, 438.  
     Wait, 366.  
 Wirling, Frank E., 401.  
     Mary Goldsmith, 401.  
 Wise, Humphrey, 443.  
     John, 328.  
     Susan, 443.  
 Witt, Ann, 283.  
     Elizabeth, 246.  
 Woburn, Mass., 282, 350.  
 Wolcott, Elizabeth, 159.  
 Wolf Island, Wenham, 18.  
 Wolfboro, N. H., 72, 74.  
 Wolfe, Deborah, 279.  
     Hannah, 294.  
     John, 283.  
     Martha, 283.  
     Peter, 197, 283, 285, 375, 423, 424,  
     454, 458, 461.  
     Sarah, 283.  
 Wolftrap brook, 209.  
 Wolves, 208.  
 Wood, —, 318.  
     Hannah, 431.  
     John, 457.  
     William, 8, 13, 17, 19, 27, 41, 245,  
     246.  
 Woodbridge, Maria March, 355.  
     Patience, 436.  
 Woodbury (Woodberry), Abigail,  
     83, 214, 402.  
     Alice, 83.  
     Andrew, 315, 402.  
     Ann, 83.  
     Anna, 402, 403.  
     Benjamin, 402.  
     Bethiah, 445.  
     Christian, 83.  
     Dixie, 403.  
     Ebenezer, 83, 117.  
     Elizabeth, 83, 116, 354, 394, 402,  
     403, 436.  
     Hannah, 83, 116, 117, 370, 402.  
     Hugh, 107, 402.  
     Humphrey, 47, 83, 94, 375, 454,  
     457, 460.  
     Isaac, 83, 402.  
     Issacher, 214.  
     Joanna, 402.  
     Woodbury, *continued*.  
         John, 83, 86, 88, 93, 94, 96, 97,  
         116, 197, 198, 205, 236, 255, 266,  
         292, 301, 314, 318, 335, 337,  
         352-355, 394, 403, 418-420, 424,  
         428, 451, 454, 458, 459, 463.  
         Joseph, 402.  
         Judith, 402.  
         Lydia, 305.  
         Martha, 119.  
         Martha Ervin, 400.  
         Mary, 83, 107, 339, 402, 403.  
         Nathaniel, 402.  
         Nicholas, 402.  
         Peter, 83, 354.  
         Priscilla, 403.  
         Rebecca, 403.  
         Richard, 82.  
         Samuel, 402.  
         Sarah, 83, 216, 402.  
         Susan, 402.  
         Susanna, 83.  
         Thomas, 83, 116.  
         William, 83, 402, 428, 457, 460.  
 Woodman, Hannah, 372.  
     Jonathan, 372.  
     Rachel, 215.  
     Sarah, 372.  
 Woods, Marion Wallace, 77.  
 Woodward, Abigail B., 216.  
     Mary, 390.  
     Thomas, 390.  
 Woodwell, John, 181.  
     Mary, 215.  
     Matthew, 214.  
 Woolcott, John, 180, 181.  
 Woolen, Edward, 314.  
 Woolston River, 8, 289, 338, 428.  
 Woolridge, William, 130, 134.  
 Woonsocket, R. I., 400.  
 Worcester, Mass., 349, 387, 389,  
     465.  
 Worcester, Zervia Fidelia, 216.  
 Worling, Betsey, 96.  
 Wormstead, Elizabeth Barker, 358.  
 Werth, John, 68.  
     Miriam, 68.  
 Wrentham, England, 444.  
 Wrentham, Mass., 400.  
 Wright, George, 406, 407, 464.  
     John, 72.  
     Nathaniel, 145.  
     Priscilla, 72.  
     Richard, 205, 236.  
 YARMOUTH, England, 111, 130,  
     134, 296, 298, 390, 433, 440-443.

- Yonkers, N. Y., 347.  
York, Me., 113, 296.  
Yorkshire, England, 385.  
Young (Yongs, Younges), Christopher, 363, 375, 376, 421, 423, 461, 462.  
John, 89, 144, 402, 443.  
Joseph, 315, 375, 376, 423.  
Judith, 423.  
Mary, 366, 423.  
Mary J., 399.  
Prisca, 423.  
Sarah, 252, 423.  
Ypsilanti, Mich., 423.

















